

**A voyage round the world : including an embassy to Muscat and Siam in 1835, 1836, and 1837 / by W.S.W. Ruschenberger.**

**Contributors**

Ruschenberger, W. S. W. 1807-1895.  
Harvey Cushing/John Hay Whitney Medical Library

**Publication/Creation**

Philadelphia : Carey, Lea & Blanchard, 1838.

**Persistent URL**

<https://wellcomecollection.org/works/r6qte2c7>

**License and attribution**

This material has been provided by This material has been provided by the Harvey Cushing/John Hay Whitney Medical Library at Yale University, through the Medical Heritage Library. The original may be consulted at the Harvey Cushing/John Hay Whitney Medical Library at Yale University. where the originals may be consulted.

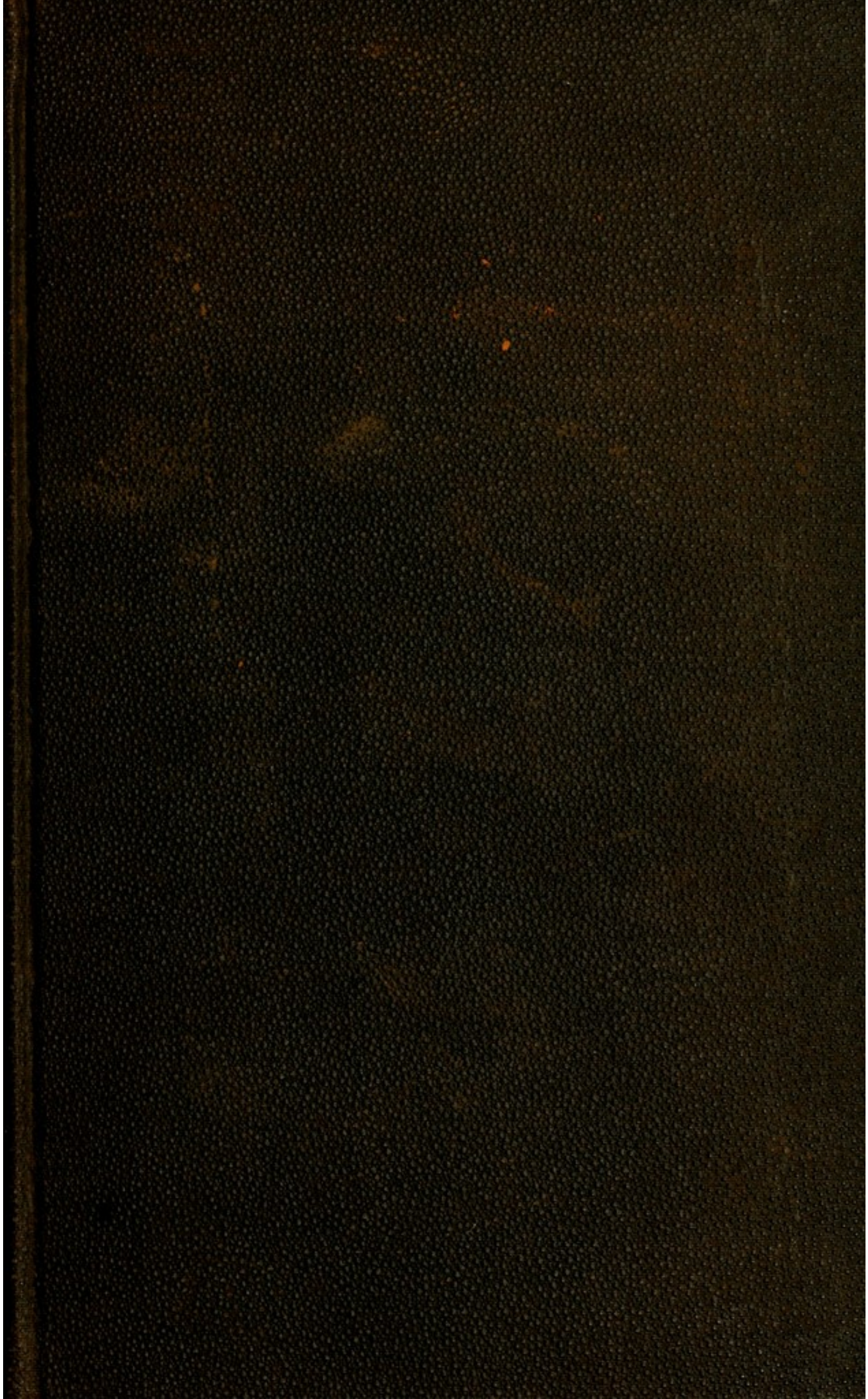
This work has been identified as being free of known restrictions under copyright law, including all related and neighbouring rights and is being made available under the Creative Commons, Public Domain Mark.

You can copy, modify, distribute and perform the work, even for commercial purposes, without asking permission.

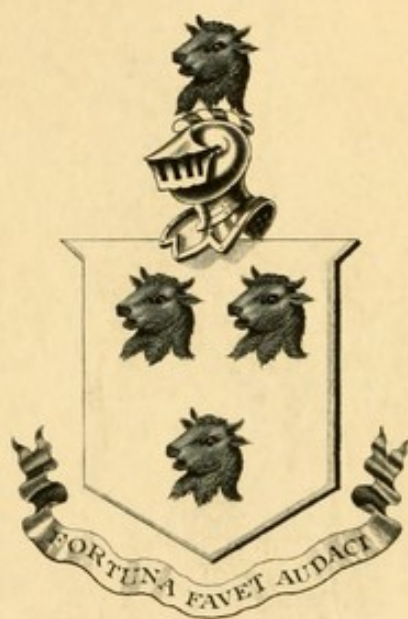


Wellcome Collection  
183 Euston Road  
London NW1 2BE UK  
T +44 (0)20 7611 8722  
E [library@wellcomecollection.org](mailto:library@wellcomecollection.org)  
<https://wellcomecollection.org>

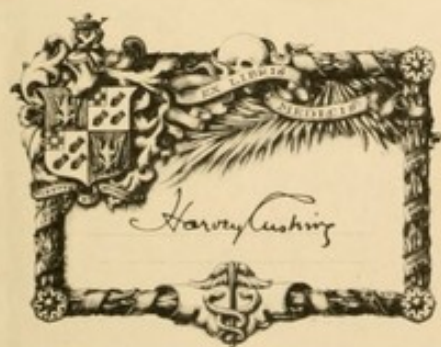






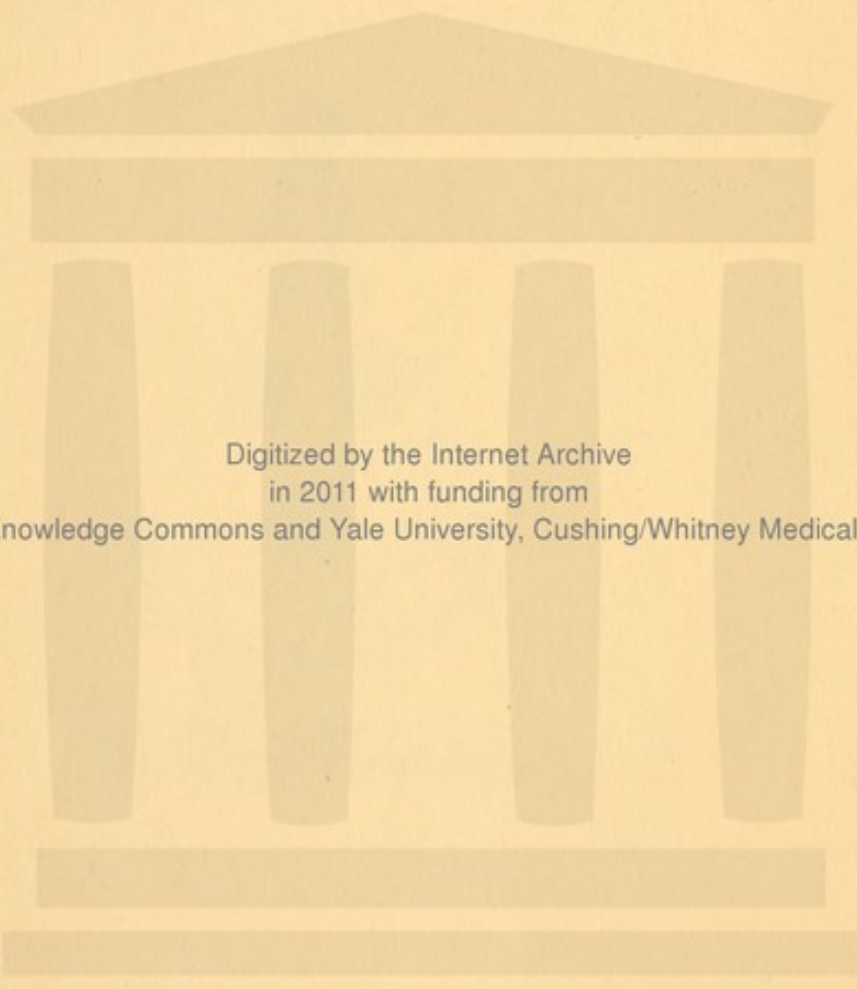


H. Clay Trumbull.

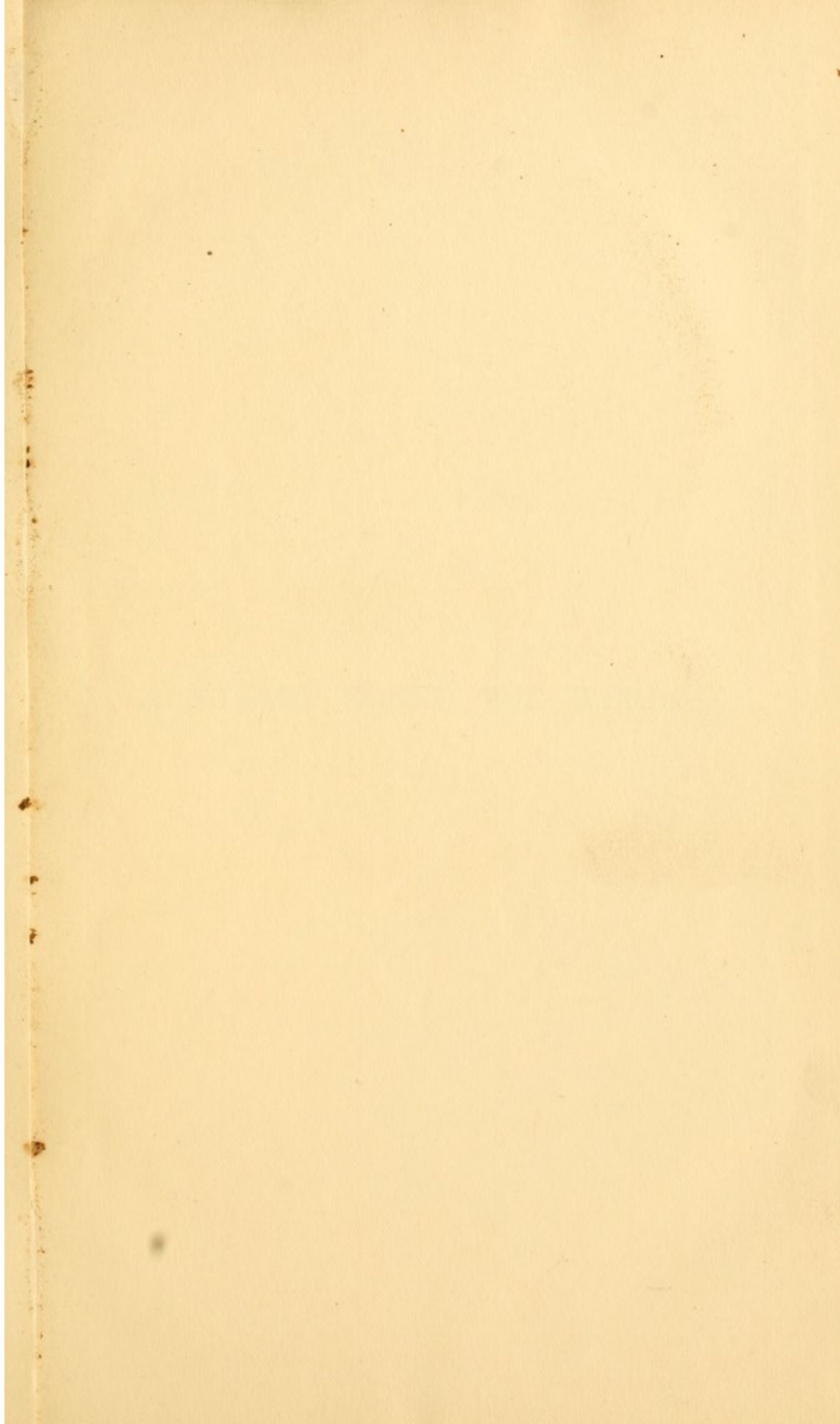


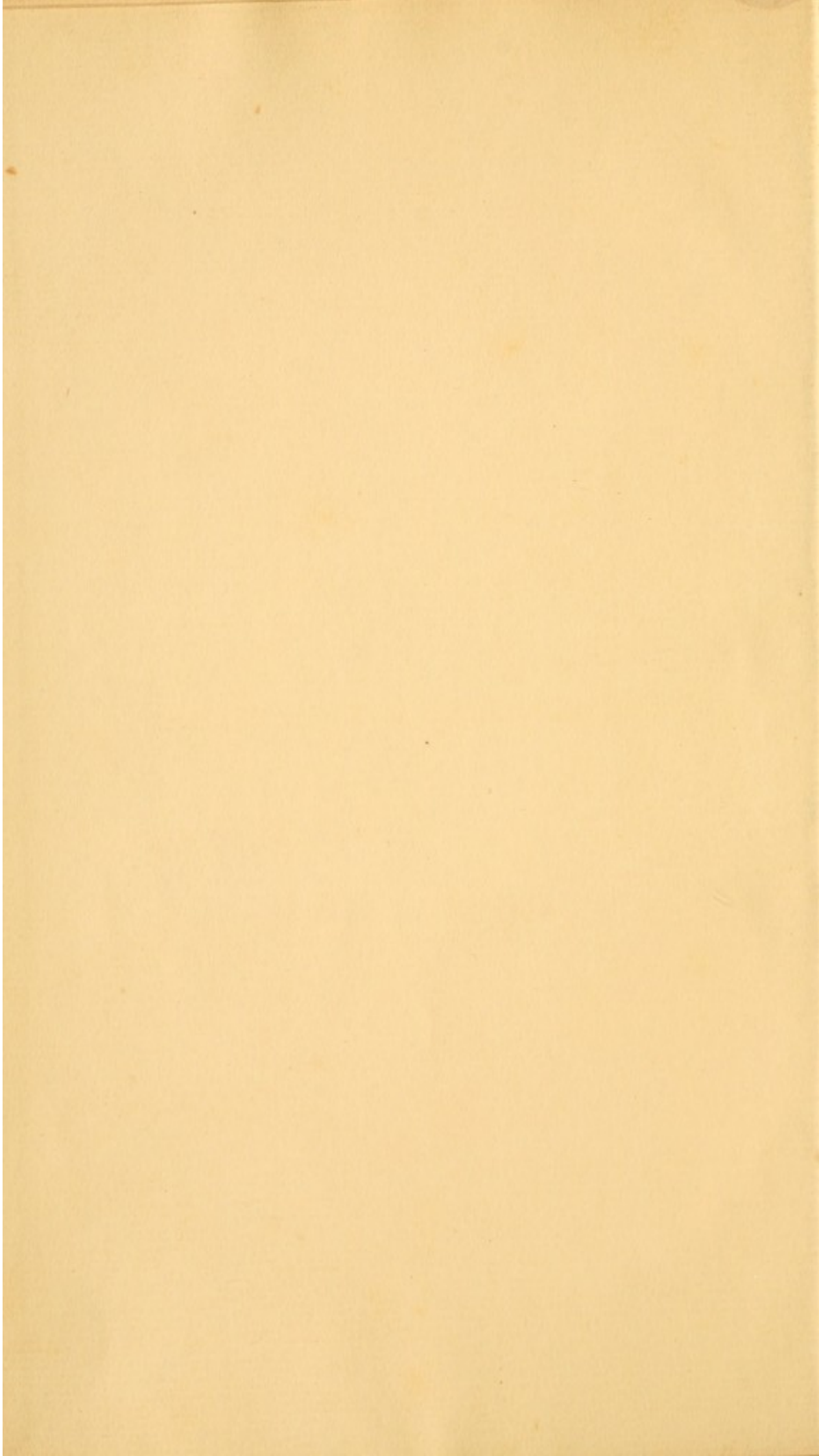
H

8, 5/1



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2011 with funding from  
Open Knowledge Commons and Yale University, Cushing/Whitney Medical Library







A VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD.

A TALEN ROUN THE BEAVER



A VOYAGE  
ROUND THE WORLD;

INCLUDING

AN EMBASSY TO MUSCAT AND SIAM,

IN

1835, 1836, and 1837.

---

BY

W. S. W. RUSCHENBERGER, M. D.

SURGEON, U. S. NAVY; HON. MEMBER OF THE PHILADELPHIA MEDICAL  
SOCIETY; MEMBER OF THE ACADEMY OF NATURAL  
SCIENCES OF PHILADELPHIA, &c.

AUTHOR OF "THREE YEARS IN THE PACIFIC."

---

"J'ai dit le bien et le mal avec le même franchise.—ROUSSEAU.

"Believe me, I speak as my understanding instructs me; and as mine honesty puts it to  
utterance."  
THE WINTER'S TALE.

---

PHILADELPHIA:  
CAREY, LEA & BLANCHARD.

---

1838.

---

Entered according to the Act of Congress, in the year 1838, by CAREY, LEA  
& BLANCHARD, in the Clerk's Office of the Eastern District of Pennsylvania.

---

---

GRIGGS & CO., PRINTERS.



TO

SAMUEL GEORGE MORTON, M. D.

CORRESPONDING SECRETARY OF THE ACADEMY  
OF NATURAL SCIENCES.

&c. &c.

DEAR SIR,

I beg you will receive the dedication of this volume, as a tribute of the esteem and respect of a friend, who, while he feels satisfied that he has spared no labor to make it worthy of being introduced to the world, under the sanction of your name, wishes it were more fitting your acceptance.

Very sincerely,

your friend,

and ob't. servant,

W. S. W. RUSCHENBERGER.

*Philadelphia, February, 1838.*

FAMULE GEORGE HORTON

CONSTITUTIONAL RIGHTS

1847

THE

I beg you will receive the thanks of the  
and of the citizens and respect to a  
he has stated that he has been  
of being introduced to the world under the name of  
some other it was not with any intention

Yours truly

Wm Lloyd Garrison

and all persons

Wm Lloyd Garrison

1847

## INTRODUCTION.



## ADVERTISEMENT.



THE following pages, besides the journal of an Embassy from the Government of the United States to the courts of Muscat, Siam, and Cochin-China, in the years 1835, 1836, and 1837, embrace sketches in Zanzibar, Arabia, Hindoostan, Ceylon, Java, Siam, Cochin-China, China, the Bonin Islands, the Sandwich Islands, the Californias, Mexico, &c.

The voyage round the world was performed on board of the U. S. Ship Peacock, commanded by C. K. Stribling, Esq., accompanied by the U. S. Schooner Enterprise, Lieutenant Commanding A. S. Campbell; both vessels being under the command of Commodore Edmund P. Kennedy.

Since this volume was put to press, a posthumous work, drawn up from the journals and letters of Mr. Roberts, written during the years 1832-3-4, has been published, in which may be found a history of the first negotiations with the courts of Cochin-China, Siam, and Muscat. Both works refer occasionally to the same subjects, but they are distinct, and in no way similar. Though the volume by Mr. Roberts possesses great interest, it will be found that the present one, in relation to the embassy is much more complete, and it is hoped the reader will find it not less amusing.

*Philadelphia, February, 1838.*



## VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD.

---

### INTRODUCTION.

VOYAGES of circumnavigation have been so frequent of late, this being the fourth within seven years by American vessels of war, that neither novelty nor originality of matter or manner can be looked for in this work, though few ships have pursued the varied and extensive track of the Peacock. I, therefore, only promise the reader news of the several remote countries visited in relation to their manners, political state, commerce and religion, upon which topics the best sources of information have been carefully consulted.

Let me caution the reader against expecting much in the way of light description and graceful anecdote; "No vamos à bodas sino à rodear el mundo," said Sancho, when he bade Mari Fernandez to prepare every thing for setting out in search of adventures. I will say with simple Sancho, "We are not bound on a party of pleasure, but around the world," and though we may not expect in these days to encounter giants and dragons, we may happen upon many pleasant adventures. Therefore, Reader, be gentle and generous, and bear in mind Sancho's remark; and when you encounter a dry statistical chapter, think it is one of the hardships of voyaging with us, and sustain yourself to the toil of reading it through, cheered with a hope of something pleasant thereafter, and the reflection, it will be for your good; and I will venture to assert, you will rise from the perusal improved in your knowledge, and, what is more important to me, without a disposition to blame the author for the little he has contributed to your amusement. That the volume contains no pleasant stories to divert, nor "strange tales of strange endurance" to move, is not his fault; for had events transpired during the cruise,



fitting for such chronicle, he would have been delighted to record them.

The volume may be charged with over-minuteness; but "There is nothing," says Dr. Johnson, "too little for so little a creature as man. It is by studying little things, we attain the great art of having as little misery and as much happiness as possible." Critics may find other points in the work to condemn; but we trust, some among our readers will derive amusement, if not instruction, from the following pages, written generally on the spot described, to bring into view of the home-staying, what, probably, they would have observed for themselves, had they been with the writer.

The success of the work must depend upon the public; the author has endeavoured to deserve it. He has written for no theory, nor sect, nor party; but has aimed at truth, and hopes in hitting his mark, he has inflicted no wound on the pride or feelings of any of his readers. As far as the nature of his task admitted, he has avoided egotism—"The time, place, persons, and all circumstances apologize for me; and why may I not be idle with others? Speak my mind freely? If you deny me this liberty, upon these presumptions I will take it."

In presenting to the public a history of the embassy to Muscat and Siam, it may be proper to state, what were the opportunities enjoyed by the author for obtaining the necessary information.

Mr. Roberts frequently expressed a wish that I would write the history of our cruise, and in order to enable me better to perform the undertaking, gave me free access to all documents in relation to the embassy, and on every occasion expressed his views and opinions on the several subjects which fell under our notice. Besides, he took great pains to assist me in procuring statistical information, which, owing to his official station, he was often able to obtain, when to others, perhaps, it might have been denied. To him I feel indebted, and with his many friends regret his loss to the country.

In the early part of his life, Edmund Roberts, of Portsmouth, N. H., had visited several of the countries which lie to the eastward of the Cape of Good Hope, and from information then and subsequently obtained, he inferred that those sections of the world offered a wide field to American enterprise and profit. But he was convinced, that voyages from the United States around the Cape of Good Hope, must continue to be limited to a few countries, and uncertain in their results, until treaties of amity and commerce should be formed between the government of the United States and several



powers of southern and Eastern Asia; in order to open trade with some, and with others to settle definitely the manner in which our merchantmen should be received, and the charges to which they should be subject. In this latter respect, the practice in many countries is very irregular, depending more upon the notion or whim of the minister at the time, than upon any established law.

Mr. Roberts communicated his views in detail to his friend, the Honourable Levi Woodbury, at that time Secretary of the Navy, who laid the subject before the President. It was determined after proper deliberation, that Mr. Roberts should visit the East, in capacity, of "Special Agent of the government," and obtain all the information he could, and negotiate treaties of amity and commerce with such Asiatic potentates, as he might find favourably disposed.

Early in the year 1832, Mr. Roberts sailed from the United States on board of the U. S. ship *Peacock*, then commanded by Captain David Geisinger, and visited Brazil, Buenos Ayres, Java, Manila, Canton, Singapore, Siam, Muscat, the Red Sea, &c. In May, 1834, he returned, bearing with him two treaties which he had negotiated, one with His Highness the Sultan of Muscat, and the other with His Magnificent Majesty, the King of Siam. These treaties were ratified by the President and Senate of the United States, in June, 1834, and Mr. Roberts was appointed to exchange the ratifications. The *Peacock* was again put in commission to carry him on his distant embassy, the history of which will be found in the following pages. "Le aconsejo en esto lo que debe de hacer como discreto si no lealo, y verà el gusto que recibe, de su leyenda."

PHILADELPHIA, *January*, 1838.



## CHAPTER I.

## VOYAGE TO RIO DE JANEIRO.

*June, 1835.*

WHEN I bade farewell to my messmates in February, 1834, I little thought to be named in March, 1835, a member of another mess—"bounden brothers every man"—to roam the ocean, scarcely knowing whither. Yet in one short year, the pains and privations of a long absence had dwindled into mere shadows of memory, and preparations were made for another cruise, not, however, without feeling how deeply parting sinks into the heart. "First partings form a lesson hard to learn;" and it is doubtful whether any one can teach himself to say farewell to home, to friends, to country, without emotion—

"There is a sort of unexpressed concern,  
A kind of shock, that sets one's heart ajar,"

which we cannot quite overcome, be the trial ever so frequent. At sunrise on the twenty-third of April, I was roused by the order, "All hands up anchor," delivered in the growling, imperative tones of the boatswain. The ship was speedily under sail. The city of New York, and its busy scenes receded fast from our view; the Narrows were passed; the bar was cleared, and at meridian the pilot bore away the cape letters. At sunset the land had faded away in the distance. Our hopes were all before us; and the past and the present were only remembered to contrast with the future.

"A Dios amada playa; à Dios hogares."

The United States ship Peacock, being not more than of six hundred tons burden, is the smallest of her class. She has a light spar deck which frees the guns from the encumbrance of rigging, and, in port at least, affords the officers a sheltered walk in very hot or



rainy weather, besides a more ample space for the hammocks of the men. In other respects the ship has no commendable quality. She is an indifferent sailer, very wet, and, both for officers and crew, the accommodations are very limited.\* She is armed with twenty thirty-two pound carronades and two long twelve pounders.

The ship being fitted in the winter, when cordage is inflexible as bar-iron, the rigging stretched very much on putting to sea, though every care had been taken in the outfit, and the seams opened in several places, so that whenever the ship laboured, she was uncomfortably wet. A few days after sailing, we encountered fresh gales, then the gun deck presented a scene of despair, and doubtless there were many regrets in mental reservation. The neophytes were swinging to and fro in their cots or hammocks, in obedience to the motions of the ship, wishing themselves safely on shore, free from the distressingly nauseating effects of the sea. How few would persevere in the choice of the profession, could they but escape in the midst of the first fit of sea-sickness. Yet, when once over, how strong are the ties which bind them to the ocean! Indeed, the love of a sea life is an acquired taste, and, like all acquired tastes, it is apt to be enslaving. On one occasion I passed a night, at a French boarding-house, with a naval officer who had spent seventeen years actually at sea. He was very ill, but feeling himself somewhat more comfortable than he had been, towards morning, he remarked, "After all, doctor, there is no place for a man when sick like being on board ship." Such was not the opinion of those "young gentlemen" who were now for the first time embarked upon the broad blue bosom of the Atlantic.

Sea-sickness is a penalty—a sort of initiation fee paid by every one who ventures upon the broad domain of Neptune. Many plans have been tried to alleviate the distress, beneath the influence of which the stoutest spirit quails, but no one of the many has been generally successful. In some individuals, nature speedily accommodates herself to the new circumstances in which she is placed; in others, whole voyages are not long enough to habituate them to the motion of the ship; the disease continues, with more or less intensity, according to the roughness or smoothness of the sea. A simple, and generally successful treatment, consists in keeping the head cooled by the application of ice or iced water, and swallowing nothing but the blandest articles of diet, as arrow root, barley or

\* For a list of the officers and crew, see Appendix.



rice water, &c. By this plan, the sense of fulness and constriction of the head, which characterize the invasion of the malady, will be relieved, and the patient will become comparatively comfortable. Ladies who cross the Atlantic in packet ships, where all the appliances of comfort procurable at sea are usually found, may find this hint not thrown out in vain.

From the day of sailing, nothing of importance occurred out of the usual routine of ship's duty. The passage was remarkable for a great deal of rain, and we experienced very few days of really very pleasant weather. On the 28th of May, being close to the equator, we had a beautiful annular eclipse of the sun, between the hours of eleven and twelve o'clock A. M. Although the thermomoter did not sink, the air was sensibly cooler, and the whole atmosphere much darkened, yet no stars were seen.

On the 10th of June, at sunrise we saw the coast of Brazil, stretching between Cape Frio and the harbour of Rio de Janeiro, the hills, or rather mountains, rising in broken outline in the gray of the morning. The light land wind was quickly succeeded by a gentle sea breeze. About three o'clock P. M. we descried a large sail under the land to the westward of the Sugar Loaf, which proved to be the United States ship *Natchez*, bearing the broad pendant of Commodore Renshaw. At a distance of five miles we exchanged signals; and, on hauling down our broad blue pendant and substituting a red one, as is the custom when a junior meets a senior commodore, we fired a salute of thirteen guns, which was promptly returned.

The breeze continued light, and fell almost calm as the sun sank lower, so that we moved along at a rate not exceeding two miles an hour. The sunset was a magnificent one, even for this tropical region. The soft tints of the sky changed from the lightest orange to a golden hue; from that to rosy, and then deepened to a blazing red, which last faded away into the soft gray of twilight, leaving the clouds no longer reflected upon by the sun, in their own sombre colours. The effect of these hues on the imagination was heightened by the bold and broken outline of the mountains, cast in strong relief, by a flood of light poured upwards from behind them as the sun sank. The moon was at her full, and as she rose, poured her silvery rays over the smooth surface of the waters; and the modest stars of the Southern Cross beamed forth in the calm purity of that religion of which this beautiful constellation is an emblem. The two ships of war, now slowly approaching each other, and with three or four small vessels, were standing in for the harbour. On board



of our own vessel, all hands were at their stations for bringing ship to anchor; and all were perfectly hushed, as if by a spell imparted by the quiet glories of the scene around.

At half past five, the ships had approached so near that a boat boarded us from the *Natchez*, and informed us, that having been advised of our sailing from New York by a vessel which had arrived, though she had sailed four days after us, the *Natchez* had been cruising off the harbor in expectation of our arrival. At eight o'clock we encountered the land wind, and were obliged to anchor outside of the harbor, where we lay very comfortably all night. The next morning we got under way, and about ten o'clock reached our anchorage opposite to the city. As we passed up the bay, every one was charmed with the beauties of the scenery; indeed, several officers recently from the Mediterranean, declared this bay to be incomparably more magnificent than that of Naples. In fact, nothing can be more romantic and diversified than the scenery around Rio de Janeiro; turn where you may, the eye rests upon a spot to contemplate and admire. But the sight is not the only sense which is delighted at Rio; there is a balmy sort of influence in the atmosphere which soon saps all industrious intentions, and induces a procrastinating disposition which is difficult to overcome. Every one seems rather disposed to indulge in the quiet animal enjoyments of eating, drinking, smoking, lounging and sleeping, leaving to slaves all kinds of manual labor, and hence the embonpoint amongst women and obesity amongst men of the Creole and Portuguese residents.





S K E T C H E S  
IN  
THE DOMINIONS OF THE SULTAN  
OF  
M U S C A T.

THE SULTAN

THE DOMINIONS OF THE SULTAN

M. U. S. A. T.



## CHAPTER II.

## VOYAGE AROUND THE CAPE OF GOOD HOPE TO ZANZIBAR.

*September, 1835.*

By the third of July the ship had been refitted, and to reciprocate civilities which had been extended to us, the officers of the ward-room, on the sixth, gave an entertainment on board. As is usual on such occasions the decks were dressed with bunting, flags, flowers and lights, supported and reflected by bright bayonets, cutlasses and pikes, disposed in the form of chandeliers. Music was obtained on shore, and suited well both feet and ears. About eight o'clock P. M. the company assembled, danced, walked, talked, ate, and *congéed* at three in the morn. People of several nations and sorts were present, civil and military, in black and in embroidered coats. The beauty of many of the ladies might be praised; but there was one, a Brazilian, scarcely sixteen, and already married, whose charms were declared beyond eulogy, by those who had 'seen balls and revels in their time.'

The night passed away gaily, and many flattering compliments to our taste were paid by our guests. They assured us, that it was the most brilliant affair that had taken place afloat in the harbor of Rio; several invitations were extended to the officers by Brazilians, an unusual circumstance, and we were informed one or two entertainments were to be given on its account.

On the 12th of July we put to sea, accompanied by the U. S. Schooner *Enterprise*, Lieutenant-Commandant, Archibald S. Campbell, but soon found her to be so indifferent a sailer, that it was determined by the Commodore to appoint a rendezvous and part company. In obedience to a signal she came close alongside, and the orders, tied in a piece of canvass and loaded with lead, were thrown on board. That night we parted.

Crossing the Southern Atlantic, attended by a common succession of fair and foul weather, we doubled the Cape of Good Hope and



entered the Mozambique channel, the scene of the first exploits of Vasco de Gama in the East; but we saw nothing of the "Flying Dutchman;" seeing, however, off the cape a huge animal whose enormous back, covered with sea-weed and barnacles rose several feet above the water, and had it remained quiet, every one would have marked it as a rocky islet of the ocean, but it sank in a few moments after it was discovered. What contributed much to the idea of its insular nature was the light green colour of the water, although we were too far at sea for soundings.

The south-west monsoon was drawing to a close, and in our passage through the Mozambique channel, we encountered currents and calms; the former in our favor, the latter, of course, against us. One of those calm nights was exquisitely beautiful; the sky was cloudless and so brilliantly starry, that its deep blue color was distinct. At the same time the surface of the ocean was tranquil, and like a polished steel mirror reflected the whole heavens, and our ship, seemingly suspended between the two, floated among the stars—

"These friendly lamps  
For ever streaming o'er the azure deep,  
To point our path and light us to our home."

One day, while becalmed, the shaded thermometer standing at 78° F. and great piles of motionless clouds, whose rolled-up edges, silvered by the beams of a mid-day sun, were reflected from the ocean, we observed numerous little animals of the zoophyte tribes drifting slowly past us. Amongst them were "Portuguese men-of-war," (*Holothuria physalis* Lin.) and disks of from a half inch to two inches in diameter, belonging to the family of Medusæ (*Medusa porpita* Lin.) Sailors are fond of observing animals of all kinds, and no sooner was their attention directed to those in our vicinity, than they began to fish for them with buckets, or tin pots attached by rope-yarns, or with tin pots seized to poles.

The first disk caught was compared to the passion flower. These animals are perfectly round, flat, very thin and beautifully radiated. Their color is of a yellowish white, and the edge is fringed with delicate blue threads from one to three inches long, according to the size of the disk. These threads or tentaculæ are, no doubt, the members with which the animal is provided for seizing its food. The possession of one begot a desire for more, and the dinggy—a small



skiff—was lowered, and, accompanied by Lieutenant H——, I put off from the ship. We caught many “passion flowers,” and several Portuguese men-of-war. The last is a transparent bladder of air, of irregular form, two or three inches long, somewhat corrugated on the top, and armed below by numerous short tentaculæ and one or two slender threads, several feet in length, set with diminutive blue masses, giving them the appearance of strings of fine beads. This appears to form the instrument of attack. The animal possesses the power of stinging, as our oarsman found; for his finger, after being touched by one, swelled and the pain darted to his shoulder. He compared the pain to that of a wound inflicted by a bee; it became so annoying, that we were obliged to set him on board ship, where he was speedily relieved by the application of aqua ammonia.

The ocean was filled with small animals darting in all directions; some flashing in the sun like rubies, and others, like hairs of glass. We observed floating on the surface, small white masses, about three inches long and one thick, resembling, at a short distance, froth or air bubbles. We found, on examination, they were attached to very delicate, violet-colored shells, belonging to Lamarck's genus *Janthina*. Over the vesicular buoy of this animal, the Portuguese man-of-war manages to cast his thread, and, like a spider entangling his prey in his web, separates the shell from its buoy, and feeds upon his spoil. When taken, the *Janthina* emits about a teaspoonful of a deep purple fluid, in order, perhaps, like the cuttle fish, to darken the water around, and thus elude the pursuit of his enemies. “Here, sir,” said Jack, handing me a shell, “Here sir, is one that a Portengal has been afoul of—he is spitting blood.”\*

Among other forms of animal life was one resembling a shield, an inch or two long, of a deep bluish color, and having a thin sail, transparent as glass, shaped like a Gothic arch, set diagonally and permanently across it. A slight shelly structure forms its basis; and from the under surface hang numbers of thread-like tentaculæ. Pieces of wood pierced by worms (*Teredo Navalis*) were also picked up.

While fishing for these various objects, remarking the millions of little animals floating, or darting about, only a few inches beneath the surface of the sea, we observed that in the course of five minutes,

\* I afterwards met with the *Janthina*, on the coast of Malabar, in the China sea, in the gulf of Siam and at the Sandwich Islands. Those seen at the last place were very much larger than any met with before.



the water became transparent, and nothing was to be seen, except here and there a stray man-of-war. Without any perceptible cause they had all disappeared; the Janthina had gathered in his float, and sunk into the depths of the sea, thence to arise again by inflating his vesicular buoy, through means which are yet secret to man. I am under the impression, the animal has the power of reproducing it, when by any accident it may be lost. A fish called the porcupine fish, from the skin being covered with numerous spines, belonging the family of gymnodontes (Cuv.) has an apparatus by which it is capable of distending itself with air until it swells almost to a globular form; when inflated, it turns upon its back and floats upon the surface, and were it not for the spines which are erected by inflation, would thus fall an easy prey to its pursuers. We caught several of the tribe. Two hours before sunset not a living thing could be seen in the water; the calm continued—

“The broad blue ocean and the deep blue sky,  
Looking with langour into each other's face.”

On this occasion, Commodore Kennedy stated, he had been once, for ten days, in so complete a calm, that the animalculæ died, and the ocean exhaled from its bosom, on all sides, a most insufferable stench. Instances of this kind illustrate the utility and necessity of winds and the agitation of the seas: absolute calms, continued for any considerable period, in the winds or waves, would prove equally fatal to all manner of animal life. The respiration of all animals, whether this function be carried on by lungs, or gills or other organs, is essential to their being. Those living on land breathe the atmosphere, and rob it, at each inspiration, of a portion of oxygen, which principle is necessary to existence; those inhabiting the deep derive the same principle from the waters, though by different means; and in both cases, the air, or water, thus deprived of its vital principle, must be replaced by fresh supplies, or in a very short time all the oxygen in their vicinity is exhausted, and the animals, whether of sea or land, must perish. But such catastrophes are guarded against, and we find no phenomenon of nature without its purpose; the soft zephyr, and gently undulating sea, as well as the hurricane and surging billow, equally in keeping with the great scheme of the universe, serve to prevent stagnation and consequently the death of all nature.

One afternoon becalmed in the Mozambique channel, in sight of the African coast, several sharks were seen in the neighbourhood of the

+ "doubts arising!!"



ship; and to gratify the antipathy which Jack takes every opportunity to indulge against them, a large hook, armed with two or three pounds of salt pork, and attached to a small rope, was thrown over the stern. Presently a large fish of the tribe approached, moving gracefully only a few feet below the surface of the transparent ocean, darting now in one direction and now in another, resting for a moment to survey the space around him before changing his course. He gradually drew near, attended by the pilot fish, sailing as usual, a few feet beneath him and following all his motions. At last the bait attracted his attention, and, urging himself forward by a single effort, he supinated his body, opened wide his jaws and closed them with a devouring, but fatal avidity upon the hook. Till this moment the officers and men had silently watched their prey, but now the fisherman jerked the line, and a half dozen exclaimed, "You've got him! you've got him!" In spite of violent struggles to escape, the fish was drawn close under the stern and his head raised above the water. Officers and men hung over the bulwarks, exultation beaming in their countenances, to catch a sight of the animal, which rested quietly glaring his great eyes upon his enemies. The next step, in order to get him on board, was to pass a bowline or noose round his body, which required dexterity; for whenever the rope touched the shark, he struggled so violently as to endanger breaking the hook. At last he was secured and was quickly seen floundering, and lashing his powerful tail upon deck. In an instant a dozen knives were gleaming around him; and he had been dragged scarcely to the mainmast, before the tail was severed from his body by successive blows of an axe. His abdomen was ripped up, and his heart cut out, laid palpitating for some time upon the fluke of an anchor. Still he floundered, and so powerful were his muscular exertions that several strong men could not control them. His huge jaws, armed with five rows of sharp teeth, were removed, his brain exposed and head cut off; and in five minutes, parts of his body still quick with life, were frying at the galley under the knife and fork of the cooks, while the fins and tail, like so many trophies were hung up to dry.

This fish was about ten feet long, and his jaws were capacious enough to bite off a man's leg; but it was a small one, if we may credit Blumenbach,\* who states that the white shark, "weighs sometimes as much as 10,000lbs, and even whole horses have been found in its stomach."

\* Elements of Natural History. London, 1825.



On every shark which I have seen caught, there is attached, generally under a fin, a remarkable fish, called a sucker or sucking-fish. It adheres to sharks or other bodies by a flat oval disk, having a soft skinny margin, and traversed by from twenty to thirty plates or scales, which may be elevated or depressed at the pleasure of the animal, and by which it exhausts the air and water beneath, and sticks with a firmness or power equal to the pressure of the water or air above. Hence, it was said, that it had the power of stopping a ship under full sail. This disk or sucker is situated on the back of the head, and gives to the fish the appearance of being reversed. Indeed, it swims with the back downwards. It is without scales and is of a dark lead color. Its size varies from a few inches to a foot or more in length.

There are shark fisheries on the eastern coast of Africa and in several parts of the Indian Ocean, for the sake of the fins, which are esteemed by the Chinese and some other people, as a delicate article of food. The flesh of the shark is dry and of an acid taste; indeed, I know of no deep-sea fish that is very good eating. The delight which sailors take in torturing and giving pain to the shark is surprising; and I have heard old officers say, they have never had a fair view of the fish, because it was always mutilated by the sailors the instant after being got on deck.

As remarkable as the fact may appear at first sight, there is no class of people who eat so few fish as sailors. And the reason is, they seldom obtain them. With the exception of flying-fish and dolphin, and perhaps a very few others, fish are not found on the high seas at great distances from land. They abound most along coasts, in straits, and bays, and are seldom caught in water more than forty or fifty fathoms in depth. To a certain extent this is true even of whales. Indeed, it is questionable whether fish inhabiting the profound depths of the ocean, if there be any such, ever approach the surface, for their organization must be in relation to the great pressure under which they necessarily live, and they would probably experience a similar inconvenience to that felt by persons who ascend very high mountains. Fish do not resort to the high seas, because they there meet with nothing, or at best very little upon which to subsist; the ocean being perfectly transparent and almost entirely free from vegetable substances and animalculæ of appreciable size; whenever these appear, we may be certain that land is not at a very great distance. On the contrary, it is in comparatively shallow water they are found, in company with the endless tribes of moluscous



animals; and they are in greatest plenty within the tropics, where the climate appears to be most favourable to their production. This being true, we might suppose that sailors, on coming to port would consume as much fish as those inhabiting the coasts; but, having been confined for many days to hard salted meats and hard bread, they find fruits and fresh beef much more to their taste than any fish, however savory they may be to the palate of the landsman or mere coaster.

Upon this subject, I suspect there is an erroneous opinion, pretty widely spread on shore, if we may judge from the following remarkable sentences. "The immediate action of fish," says an author of a local work on '*Boulogne sur Mer*,' which has been partly translated for 'Leigh Hunt's London Journal,' and copied in the first number of 'Waldie's Port Folio,' for August, 1835;—"The immediate action of fish on the animal economy is not direct, like that manifestly produced by any aliment in which *ozmazome* predominates; neither are the fluids and solids renewed, as by *gelatine* or *fibrine*; but in a manner much more calm. *To this property may, in a great measure, be referred the constitution of our seamen; it is also to the mild and tranquil digestion of this food, that we may attribute the uniformity of their actions and habits.*" With equal propriety might the peculiar characteristics of the Irish be referred to eating potatoes; but Paddy will blunder, feed him as you will.

"Some authors have written that fish produce obstinate cutaneous affections, ulcers, adynamic fevers and scurvy. We think that there has not been sufficient distinction made here between the salt and smoked fish, and fresh. Sharp seasonings may affect the skin and the vital fluids; we have often observed these effects; but scorbutic diseases and cutaneous affections, in general, are extremely rare among our (French) seamen; whence we conclude that fish is a wholesome food, proper in all cases not requiring a stimulating diet."

We passed out at the northern end of the Mozambique channel, without having seen any part of the island of Madagascar, between which and the eastern coast of Africa, the channel is situated. There we had a hasty glance at the Comoro Islands, and met with fresher breezes, which soon wafted us to Zanzibar. The Comoro Islands are four in number. The largest of the group is about ninety miles in circumference; its surface is broken into gently swelling hills and smiling valleys. It contains about thirty thousand inhabitants, originally from the African continent: they speak Arabic and pro-



fess the Mohammedan religion. They live chiefly on vegetables and milk, and are averse to labor. From their idleness they have acquired a haughty deportment, which is characterized among the higher classes, by allowing the nails to grow long, which they occasionally stain of a reddish yellow by way of ornament.

Previously to possessing Cape Town, and the establishment at St. Helena, English ships were in the habit of touching at these islands for refreshments, on their voyages to and from India. Here they met a kind reception, plenty of excellent fruit, water and provisions, and a salubrious climate. At first, these articles were paid for in cowries (*Cyprea moneta*) glass beads and other trifles; but afterwards, for their beeves, goats and fowls, the islanders demanded money.\*

At meridian, on the first of September, contrary to our anticipations, we found ourselves a few miles to the eastward, and in the latitude of the southern extremity of Zanzibar. We had been carried to the northward by a current, fifty miles in about fifteen hours; so that, in order to reach the port, which is on the western side, we were obliged to double the north end of the island. Falling to leeward, during the south-west monsoon is not unusual; the same accident befell the *Enterprise* a few days afterwards.

Zanzibar is an island situated about twenty-three miles from the African coast. It is forty-five miles long, with an average breadth of ten or twelve. As we coasted it along, we observed the eastern side to be skirted by coral, about a half mile from the shore, and though the sea rolled and broke over the reef thus formed, in a sheet of sparkling white foam for miles, within it was a strip of tranquil water. The island is low, gently undulated, beautifully verdant, crowned by trees of various kinds, and fringed with groves of coconuts. After gazing on the blue skies and blue seas for fifty days, such a sight carries with it an exhilarating and delightful influence, which one must experience to understand.

Late in the afternoon, we anchored about a mile from Tumbat, a small uninhabited island at the north-western end of Zanzibar. The next morning, at half past eight o'clock, we left our anchorage and spent the whole day beating along the island towards the town. We had a fine breeze, and the waters were as smooth as those of a river; but the haze of the atmosphere was too great to allow us a sight of

\* *Historia Politica de los Establecimientos Ultramarinos de las Naciones Europeas.* Tom. II. Madrid, 1785.



the African shore. The thermometer ranged from 75° F. to 80° F. and about noon there were several smart showers. We passed several coral reefs, and our keel scraped over two, neither of which is marked in the recent survey of Captain Owen, R. N. In relation to some particulars of the southern passage, I have heard the accuracy of his charts questioned; but in general, they are correct, and better than any heretofore published.

About four P. M. we were boarded by an Arab pilot in a crazy canoe, paddled by a negro slave, entirely naked, except a string about the waist. The Arab was rather more decently attired, wearing, in addition to the waistband, a large turban. He climbed the ship's side very agilely, and touching his breast with a finger, exclaimed, "Me pilot," and delivered from a corner of his turban a paper box, which, though labelled "Lucifer Matches," contained several testimonials from English and American ship masters, stating that "Hassan ben Sied was a safe pilot both in and out of the port." Without pausing to replace his turban he stalked aft, and squatted upon the taffarel, in the attitude of a frog, where he remained chewing tobacco, and by gestures directing the course of the ship. From him we understood the Sultan was in Muscat, and the only foreign vessel in port was an English schooner.

When Mr. Roberts took leave of the Sultan, in 1833, he expected to be at Zanzibar on the return of the ship to these seas; but a much longer time having elapsed than had been anticipated, the royal visit was over, and his Highness had gone to Muscat in the strength of the Monsoon, leaving us no choice but to follow him.

At sunset we anchored off the Sultan's palace at Metony, or Mtony, three miles from the town of Zanzibar. From our anchorage we saw two Arabian frigates and the masts of several vessels, called "däus." A boat boarded us in the evening from one of the frigates to make the usual inquiries; the rowers, ten in number, both approaching the ship and going away, kept chorus to a song chanted by the steersman.



## CHAPTER III.

## SKETCHES IN ZANZIBAR.

*September, 1835.*

EARLY on the morning after our arrival, Captain Hassan bin Ibrahim, of the Arab Navy, visited the ship and was soon followed by a boat load of fruit, fowls, and three great fat caponized goats, one of which weighed 130 lbs. which were presented in the name of "His Highness." Captain Hassan, besides acting the part of superintendent of the young Prince SEID CARLID, is considered as the agent for foreign commerce, which office was given him by the Sultan in 1832, and since that period he has transacted most of the American business at Zanzibar. In the afternoon he came again; indeed, during our stay he visited us daily once or twice, caring for all our wants and bestowing on us every mark of hospitable attention.

Captain Hassan is a native of Muscat and is perhaps forty five years of age. He was educated at Bombay and Calcutta, where he studied mathematics, the art of navigation and English, which he speaks like a gentleman and with but little accent. He has since made several voyages to Canton, Mauritius, the Persian gulf and the coast of Africa. The expression of his countenance is mild, thoughtful and benevolent; his manners are easy, and, like his costume, eminently graceful. His conversation is characterized by promptness and intelligence.

His turban, which he told us is like those worn by all in the service of "His Highness," was of cotton of a fine blue check, bordered and fringed with red. It consists of several twisted turns round the head, and the ends were left hanging, of unequal lengths, behind one shoulder. His upper garment was of a light sort of cloth, without collar or cape, perfectly plain, with wide, straight slashed sleeves; on each side of the breast, instead of buttons, hung long silk loops, by which to secure it over the chest. The color of



the "juma," as this coat is termed, usually worn by Captain Hassan, was dark green. It falls a little below the knees; and beneath it is worn a wrapper of pink silk, the sleeves of which are slashed and turned up with yellow satin; and when the arm was raised the white linen might be perceived. The wrapper was sometimes of white cotton, and sometimes of fancy colored silk; but of whatever material, it was always secured about the waist by a girdle of cloth of silver, twisted round the body, in the folds of which he carried a handkerchief and steel snuff box of Russian manufacture. Over this girdle is worn the sword belt, and the "khunger" or "jambea" a highly ornamented sort of dagger. From half way below the knee, his legs were bare and his feet were protected only by sandals, which are thick soles of undyed leather, fashioned after the general outline of the foot, and secured by a broad strap over the instep, and another narrow one, passing from its middle, betwixt the great toe and the one next to it, to be secured to the sole. These straps are ornamented with various colored knots and stitching; and the toe nails, as well as those of the fingers are stained with "hëna" (henna) of a reddish yellow color. Such sandals are adapted to the faith of the wearers, for they may shuffle them on and off without inconvenience, whenever devotion calls them to the mosque. Indeed, sandals and Islamism agree well together; the inconvenience of putting on and off christian shoes and boots would be sufficient to make even a Mussulman forego his prayers. Sandals force upon the wearers a shuffling, sliding-forward sort of gait, which is far from graceful. Such is the costume of an Arab gentleman in the present day, and it was probably very much the same in the earliest times of which we have any record.

The complexion of the Arab is somewhere between that of a North American Indian and the mulatto. The beard and mustache of the individual just mentioned were long, silky, black, and carefully trimmed. One day, speaking of the practice of dying the hair yellow, common among the inhabitants of Socotra, Captain Hassan told us that he himself was in the habit of dying his own beard black every two weeks, with an infusion of indigo leaves. They are carefully dried, finely powdered, and kept from the air in well stopped bottles. When used, a small quantity is infused in boiling water, and applied after becoming cold, and the hair kept from drying; at the end of two or three hours, being washed off with pure water, the hair or beard is found to be of a fine black color. The experiment



was tried on board by several individuals with some of the powders furnished by Captain Hassan, but without success.

Soon after breakfast I went on shore at Metony, the watering place, accompanied by Lieutenant G——, and found every thing new and interesting. The tropical vegetation, the wide-spreading mango trees, and lofty cocoanut groves, gently moved by the breeze, and animated by numerous birds singing and hovering round their nests, perched among the branches, afforded delight to us who had been so long confined in our sea-girt home. Our men, in white frocks and trousers, were rolling red casks to and from the watering place, and offered a strange contrast to the negroes, armed with light spears six feet long and bearing burdens upon their heads; their only garment being a piece of white or checked cotton cloth, tied above the hips and descending in folds nearly to the knee. The negroesses wear over their pendulous breasts, a similar cloth wrapped round the body, which reaches from the armpit to the ankle. We met several who had young infants suspended on their backs. The ornaments worn by these females are various; some have the rim of the ear pierced by a half dozen holes, into which are inserted buttons of wood, small sticks, or silver studs; some have the lobe or pendulous part of the ear slit and distended with a piece of round wood, an inch or more in diameter; some have large silver rings through the middle of the ear; some wear rose-formed silver buttons the size of a dime through the ala of the nose, just where it joins the upper lip, which at first sight may be mistaken for an ulcer; others wear thick silver rings upon the wrists and thumbs, and others, large bangles upon the ankles. In some cases all these ornaments are combined; and when not of silver, they are made of tin or some similar metal. They all appeared to be very cheerful; and they are certainly a most intelligent-looking race of negroes. After we had been wandering through the cocoanut groves a short time, a negro brought us cocoanuts, trimmed of the outside husk, and one end opened, and, signifying that we should drink, cried "gaima, gaima—good, good."—Each nut afforded a pint of slightly whitish fluid, which every one acknowledges who drinks cocoanut milk fresh from the tree, to be of a pleasant flavor.

We met two Arabs whose costume, to us, possessed a very picturesque appearance, particularly when viewed in connexion with the scenery around us. One was a smooth-faced youth, straight as an arrow, in a skull cap, a girdle and a pair of pure white breeches made very full, and looped up on the hips, exposing well proportioned limbs, which promised strength and agility. In other respects he was



entirely naked. His companion, whose long black beard, mustaches, and square shoulders showed him to be a full-grown man, walked a short distance ahead. The costume of this individual consisted of white breeches, large white turban, a frock buttoned straight upon the chest to the throat, girded above the loins, and hanging half way to the knee, and looped up on one side. He carried a Chinese umbrella, folded, in his hand. The sandals of both were similar to those already described. They saluted us as they passed by, gracefully raising the hand to the head; they were of the better order, and as they disappeared in the shady grove, recalled to mind Mad. Celeste in the character of the "Wild Arab."

While standing under some lofty cocoanut trees with our guns, two Arabs came up; both dressed in white. One was a fine-looking man with a sparse beard and mustaches, wearing a large turban and a loose gown, buttoned to the throat. A long curved sabre, in a leathern scabbard, hung close under the left arm by a strap over the same shoulder, which was retained in its position by another buckled round the chest. A leathern belt over the girdle sustained in front a broad 'khunger' with a hilt of rhinoceros horn; two gourd-shaped powder pouches of leather, one containing coarse powder for loading, and the other fine for priming; a small box, containing flint, steel and cotton spunk; two small reed chargers, and a chunam box. He carried, in his right hand, a long-barrelled matchlock, whose invention is dated many a day ago. His companion was similarly attired, but wore, instead of a turban, a greasy skull cap. His arms were a 'khunger,' a long, straight, two-handed sword; and a round shield of rhinoceros hide, a foot and a half in diameter, which hung at his back, from the left shoulder.

Both parties were equally curious in the examination of the arms of each other. Their sabres were fine blades, with edges keen as razors; the matchlock, though it had seen its best days, was to me entirely new. The barrel was very long, and the inlaying of gold and silver ornament was still visible; it was secured to a shattered stock by numerous brass bands; the touch hole was large, and beneath it was a large uncovered pan to hold the priming. A curved piece of iron, two inches long, slit at the end, played in a mortise, cut diagonally through the stalk; this contrivance which is under the control of a trigger near the breech, serves to guide the match to the priming; the match, about the size of a whip-cord, is wrapped in numerous turns round the stalk.

We compared our powder, and the fineness of ours surprised them.



We showed them the accuracy of our double-barrelled fowling pieces, and proposed by signs that the Arab should charge the matchlock with our ammunition, to which he readily assented. He first tore off a strip of a rag which hung from the strap of his gun, passed it through an eye in one end of the ramrod and wiped out the barrel. He next stopped the touch-hole with a piece of paper and introduced the load. He then struck fire and inflamed the match, which he introduced beneath a sort of batton on the breech, where it remained until the paper was withdrawn from the touchhole and the priming put into the pan, which he moistened with his tongue, to prevent the powder from falling out. The match was now placed in the iron slit mentioned above, and the piece was in a state for immediate use. Let any one compare the matchlock with a modern percussion gun, and the process of loading, and he must be struck with the progress of improvement, and comprehend how comparatively inefficient fire-arms must have been, when first brought into use.

The Arab stepped forward, and deliberately aiming at a little bird, perched on the top of a high cocoanut, pulled trigger and brought it to the ground; but the pleasure he would have derived from this display of skill was dashed by an accident which in his eye seemed to be without remedy. On taking down the matchlock, he looked at it in sorrow, for the instrument was incapable of resisting the force of Dupont's best sporting powder; the bushing was entirely destroyed, and the pan was blown off from the barrel. Both Arabs searched the grass for the lost pan but without success. The marksman conveyed to us, by signs, an idea of the great loss he had sustained and showed us his gun was now useless. We told him, as well as gestures could convey our meaning, that we would carry it on board, and in two days bring it to him again, completely repaired. When he comprehended us, his countenance lighted up with joy, and, seizing our hands, kissed them in token of gratitude. He resigned to us the matchlock, which, at the end of two days, Lieutenant G—— returned very much improved. Our armorer had bushed it, made a new pan, and polished the brass bands; and the Arab was so much pleased, he kissed the hand of Lieutenant G—— again and again; indeed, his "shooting-iron" as a sailor termed it, was in a better condition than before the accident.

The Sultan's palace at this place, Metoney, is composed of two square buildings, the walls of which are of coral rock, and pierced by square windows. They are two stories high, have flat roofs and stand very close together; in fact, they are united by a sort of round



balcony or tower, which rests upon wooden pillars and is crowned by a peaked roof, the eaves of which are only a few feet above its floor. It is resorted to in hot weather to enjoy the breeze, and at appointed times, as some part of it faces towards Mecca, for the purpose of prayer. In front, is planted a flag staff, where floats the blood red flag of the Sultan from sunrise until sunset. In the rear of the building are several offices and a small cemetery. A few lowly hovels, thatched with leaves and tenanted by slaves, are the only dwellings in sight. The whole are shaded by mango and cocoanut trees, presenting a most agreeable scene.

The palace is now occupied by the young prince, SEID CARLID, who is governor of the island, though no more than sixteen years old. On the fourth of September, he received Commodore Kennedy, Captain Stribling and Mr. Roberts, who speak in terms of praise of his courteous manners and princely bearing.

Watering is a slow and difficult task at present, but in future the difficulties will be removed, in a great measure, by the construction of an aqueduct, near the palace, and which is now nearly finished. When the tide is out, which rises nine feet, the stream is too shallow to float a cutter, and this is the time when the casks should be filled to secure the water fresh; therefore, it is necessary to wait the ebbing and flowing of the tide, to get in and out with a boat, or roll the casks over the sand. The men are exposed to the heat of the sun, and are apt to be seduced into eating too freely of cocoanuts and fruits, and to drink an intoxicating liquor obtained by fermenting the sap of the cocoanut tree, which is almost always followed by cholera or fever.\*

One day, on shore, we met a half dozen negroes, moving gaily along the beach to the sound of a rude sort of drum, composed of a hollow cylinder of wood, about a foot in diameter and fifteen inches long, having a dried serpent's skin stretched over one end of it. The open end was held against the breast, while the other was beaten with the palms. After he had played, and danced in a rude and lascivious manner, we gave the musician some bright pins, which were to him objects of great curiosity.

Wandering near the beach, to the northward of Metony, we found numbers of human bones, and even entire skeletons, exposed upon the surface of the ground. We were told, they belonged to persons who 'did not pray' when alive. On the eastern side of the island, there is a spot where the dead bodies of slaves are carried and cast upon the sea shore, to become the prey of beasts and carrion birds.

\* Owen's Voyages.



## CHAPTER IV.

## SKETCHES IN ZANZIBAR.

*September, 1835.*

THE harbor of Zanzibar, or, as it was anciently called, Zenjibar, and Zanguebar, is formed by four small islands, consisting of a coral basis, covered by a thin soil, which supports a growth of shrubbery. These islands are much undermined and sea-worn; and the channels between them are intricate, from numerous beds of coral and sand, which are inhabited by several species of molusca. Among those most sought after are the harp shell, which is found in the fine sand, generally enveloped in folds of the animal by which it is formed. It is this circumstance which preserves the beautiful polish of the shell, preventing other inhabitants of the deep from fixing their equally curious, but less sightly structures upon it. The same is the case with most of those shells, which are admired for the highness of their polish and the brilliance of their colors.

About ten o'clock one morning, we landed on the beach in front of the custom house, where a number of Arabs and negroes, from motives of curiosity, had assembled to meet us. The immundities of the vicinity declared most palpably the filthy habits of the people.

The custom house is a low shed, or rude lock-up place, for the storing of goods; and connected with it, is a wooden cage in which slaves are confined, from the time of their arrival from the coast of Africa until they are sold. A sale of the poor wretches takes place every day at sunset, in the public square, where they are knocked off to the highest bidder. The cage is about twenty feet square, and at one time during our short visit, there were no less than one hundred and fifty slaves, men, women and children locked up in it. The number imported yearly, is estimated at from six to seven thousand. There is an import duty levied upon them, of from a half dollar to four dollars a head, depending upon the port in Africa from which they are brought. Some individuals on the island own as many as two thousand, valued at from three to ten dollars each. They work



for their masters five days in the week; the other two are devoted to the cultivation of a portion of ground, allotted to them for their own maintenance. They cultivate chiefly cassada, a fusiform root known in Peru as *yuca*, which, with fish, forms their entire food.

Under the shed of the custom house were several fine-looking men, tall and straight, and of a lighter complexion and smoother skin than the Arabs. Their costume is highly picturesque. The head is shaved back to the crown, and the hair is permitted to grow long behind, but the tress is folded on top of the head and concealed beneath a red or white turban, made high, somewhat in the shape of a bishop's mitre; it is laid in fine transverse plaits, instead of being twisted like that of the Arab, and in the centre of the lower edge is a small knot, the form of which distinguishes the sect to which the wearer may belong. The dress consists of a white robe, which sets close about the neck like a collarless shirt, and is gathered about the hips in such wise, by the help of a girdle, as to leave the lower part of the thigh and leg bare. Behind the limb, it is folded from opposite sides, so as to form an acute angle, the point being uppermost. The sleeves are straight and large. The feet are protected by sharp-toed slippers, the points of which turn up over the top of the foot. Such is the attire of the Banyans, a race of people who are, among Mussulmans, what the Jews are among Christians, a thriving, money-making class. They are despised by the Arabs, and are obliged to submit to insult and indignity, without being able to retort, or avenge themselves, even if their religion permitted, which inhibits them, the shedding of blood; their diet consisting of milk, ghee or butter, and vegetables. Captain Hassan informed me, he had never heard of a murder committed by any of them, though he had known of frequent instances of their being slain by the Arabs.

The features of the Banyan are regular, and the expression of the countenance is placid and benevolent; their figures are straight and well-proportioned. They are the principal store-keepers on the island; there is estimated to be about three hundred and fifty of them at Zanzibar. They occupy small shops, or holes, raised a foot or two above the street, in which they may be seen, sitting on the floor with their knees drawn up, noting their accounts. Their knees serve them for a desk whereon to rest their paper; and a pointed reed and a thick black fluid, for pen and paper. They leave their families in India, and are absent from them for four or five years together, at the expiration of which they return for a year or more.

When Vasco de Gama and his followers first doubled the Cape of



Good Hope, the greater part of the commercial wealth of India was in the hands of the Banyans. They were celebrated for their frankness. A very short time sufficed them to transact the most important business. They usually dealt in bazaars; the vender told the price of his goods in a subdued voice and in few words; the purchaser replied by taking his hand, and by a certain manner of doubling and extending the fingers, explained what abatement he wished in the price. The bargain was often concluded without speaking a word; and, to ratify it, the hand was again taken in token of its inviolability. If any difficulty occurred, which was rare, they preserved a decorum and politeness towards each other, which one would not readily imagine. Their sons were present at all contracts, and they were taught, from their earliest years, this peaceful mode of conducting business; scarcely had reason dawned upon them, before they were initiated into the mysteries of commerce, so that in some cases, they were capable of succeeding their fathers, at the early age of ten years.

The Banyans held some Abyssinian slaves, whom they treated with singular humanity; they educated them as their own children or relations; instructed them in business; advanced them funds; and not only allowed them to enjoy the gains, but also permitted them to dispose thereof to their descendants.

Their expenses were not in a ratio to their wealth; compelled, by the principles of their religion, to abstain from viands and strong liquors, they lived on vegetables and fruit solely. They never departed from their economy, except when they established their sons; on which occasions, large sums were spent in feasting, music, dancing and fireworks; and they boasted of the expensiveness of their weddings. The Banyan women had the same simple customs. All their glory was to please their husbands; they were taught, from their earliest years, to admire conjugal respect and love, and with them, this was a sacred point in religion. Their reserve and austerity towards strangers, with whom they never entered into conversation, was in accordance with such principles; and they heard in astonishment of the familiarity that existed between the sexes in Europe.\*

Such were the Banyans three centuries gone by, and we have reason to think, they have not been entirely changed.

Near the custom house, we met Captain Hassan, who conducted us to his house, and, on the way, pointed out a large building, now

\*Establecimientos Ultramarinos. Tom. III. Madrid 1786.



erecting by the Sultan as a palace for himself. The walls are of coral rock, cemented by lime, obtained by burning the same substance. We passed an old fort, built by the Portuguese, and several guns of different calibre, but all so time worn as to be useless.

The entrance to Captain Hassan's dwelling was through a door which opened from the street into a small, dirty yard in which were several jackasses, two or three dogs and half a dozen lounging slaves. A dark, rough stone stair-way conducted us to an open court in the second story, which was forty feet long by twenty wide. The floor was of hard plaster or "chunam." At one end of the court were some neglected flowers, growing in pots; two small rooms, occupied by servants opened on one side, and on the other was a paved corridor, furnished with Windsor chairs and a table, above which hung a "punka," or large fan of cotton cloth, stretched over an oblong frame of wood. Besides these articles, there was a bureau at one end with a clock upon it, whose features at once declared its place of origin to be New England. A cage full of small doves, and a glass lamp shade were suspended from the ceiling, and the wall was ornamented by several English prints of rural subjects. Two small apartments for all purposes, opened upon the corridor, from which, after we were seated, brandy, water, wine and glasses were brought out and placed upon the table. We were invited to drink, and were offered cigars by a Mr. Ross who has lately established himself at the Captain's as physician to the young prince.

After chatting a half hour, we took leave, and wandered through the narrow, dirty, streets, which wind across each other much after the fashion of the threads in a tangled skein. We soon found ourselves subjects of curious observation, and presently we were followed by a half dozen Arabs, who manifested a kindly disposition to gratify our curiosity, in respect to the things around us. Mehammet Hammis, a boy of fourteen, of very dark complexion, though descended of Arab parents, and a young man named Abdallah, attached themselves to our suite. Both of our new friends spoke English very well; the former had been instructed by his father, a man of pretty extensive business, but now absent, and the latter had been on board of one of the vessels, under the command of Captain Owen when surveying the coast. Abdallah was marked by the small pox, and the expression of his countenance was that of active cunning, while young Hammis's possessed a look of open shrewdness. Both wore checked turbans and white gowns; and Abdallah carried a long two-eged sword under the left arm.



Though the number of persons we met was not great, they filled the narrow lanes through which we were passing. Negroes armed with spears, Arabs bearing swords, dirks and round shields of rhinoceros\* hide, and unarmed Banyans, under high, red turbans, met us at every step, passing in one direction or another. Many Arabs of the lower class, except a girdle and a cloth hanging from the hips, were naked; but few were without arms. I have never before seen a finer display of straight figures and athletic limbs, nor more cheerful countenances, than those presented in the streets of Zanzibar. The color of the Arabs here, is almost as deep as that of the negroes, but these are not so jetty as those from the western coast of Africa.

Upon several of the doors were pasted, slips of paper upon which were written in Arabic, sentences from the Koran. The people were all actively employed. Before some of the houses, on raised terraces or porches of mud, men were weaving cloth for turbans by hand; others were making, of gum copal, colored red, various ornaments worn in the ears, and beads for the "tesbia," or Islamic rosary, which consists of ninety nine black and three red beads, and except the cross is like the rosary used in the Romish church. At one door sat a woman, cross-legged, stringing beads for sale; she was remarkable for the large white metal bangles on the ankles, large bracelets, and a succession of small silver rings in the rim of the ear, as well as for the under eyelids being stained black. At the corners of the streets were armourers at work, whose appearance carried the mind back to the early ages. There were generally two men together. Both squatted upon a terrace of mud, a half dozen feet square, shaded by a rude shed of cocoanut leaves. A hole in the centre served as a furnace, to which a continuous blast of air was directed by very primitive means. Two goat-skin bags, having at one end, an opening or slit, like a purse-clasp, each lip of which encloses a rod, while the other communicates with the fire by a tube, form the bellows. The blower, squatting near, holds a bag in either hand by its mouth, alternately filling and blowing them out. As he draws back one arm, he relaxes the grasp of his hand, permitting the mouth of the bag to open and fill with air; next, he closes and presses it towards the fire by straightening the arm; while, at the same time, the other one is drawn back. the grasp relaxed as at first,

\*Mr. Bakewell, in the third American edition of his geology, p. 306, would lead us to believe that the rhinoceros belongs to the extinct species of animals.



and so on, by turns, in rather quick succession. The smiths were chiefly occupied in making arrow and spear heads.

Among the strange things which attracted our notice, were the young children, carried in the arms or on the backs of their nurses. Their faces were marked with black lines; two over the forehead and one over the nose, which were crossed vertically by three others, and in the squares, thus formed, were black spots, giving them the appearance of young Harlequins. With few exceptions, every one we saw was the subject of umbilical hernia.

Wells are numerous through the town; they are all square, and few of them are more than fifteen feet deep. They have no barrier around them, and their walls are not carried above the surface of the ground; their vicinity is disgustingly filthy, and the water itself is thick as that in a puddle, which may be attributed to the want of rain for the past seven months. Children were seen slowly filling earthen jars, by the aid of cocoanut shells, having holes in their sides and cords attached, and bearing them away upon their heads.

Places of interment are frequent, and are not enclosed. The tombs are simply low walls, four or five feet long, fancifully terminated above, plastered with lime, and without inscriptions. Some of them are ornamented with pieces of porcelain thrust into the plaster. Mehammet informed us that the bodies of Moslems are buried without coffins, but those of 'Christians were put into boxes.'

Our new friends conducted us to a mill for the manufacture of oil. The mill or press consists of a wooden mortar, with a conical cavity, about four feet deep, and not less than three feet in diameter at the top, which was encircled by a broad flat rim. Around the walls of this mortar, and closely pressing them, rolled a pestle, six inches in diameter; one end was secured at the bottom of the mortar, and the other to a heavy beam of wood, to one end of which a camel was harnessed, on the other was suspended a weight. There were two of these mills under the same shed, and four camels. In one they were pressing the oil from the cocoanut; and in the other, from a small flat seed, called 'sesim.' The sesim oil is used for lamps, but is very inferior to that of the pulp of the cocoanut, which burns with a clear bright flame, when the atmospheric temperature is above 70° F. but below that degree, it becomes solid. It is an article of export to England; and is the only oil used in a great part of the East. The camels, when at work, are blindfolded, to prevent them from attempting to thrust their heads into the mill, which they are apt to do for the sake of the oil-cakes, which are given to them freely.



From the oil press, Abdallah carried us to his dwelling, and, spreading mats upon a raised terrace of earth in his hovel, invited us to be seated. While he was absent in search of harp shells, which are caught and sold, in great numbers, by the natives to foreigners, several Arabs collected about us, and there was a mutual examination of sword blades. Those worn by us bore no comparison as respects excellence of temper to those of the Arabs, and they were not backward in pointing out the difference. Holding the sword vertically in the hand, they suddenly flexed the wrist, and in this way caused the blades to vibrate from hilt to point for several seconds; but when ours were subjected to the same experiment, they remained almost motionless, like bars of lead:—indeed, they are more for show than use; for every officer, in case of necessity, supplies himself from the ship's armament, with weapons that will bear service. Our whole dress was closely examined by these people, but nothing excited so much wonder in them, as our gloves, which they were anxious to purchase.

We next visited an Arab merchant, named Hamira, who speaks English intelligibly, and transacts a good deal of English and American business. We entered a small yard, on one side of which was a shed, filled with piles of teak wood, and ascended a flight of rough stone steps to the second story; and, passing through a door-way, closed by a curtain of green baize, found ourselves in an open court about twenty-five feet square. The left side of the court was occupied by two apartments, used as kitchen and servants' room; and that in front of the entrance, by other rooms, tenanted by the family. That in which we were received, was about ten feet broad, and perhaps, twenty-five or thirty long; but its whole extent was not visible, because one end was screened by a curtain hanging from the ceiling. The walls were hung with sabres, daggers, shawls, turbans, &c., and the furniture, placed without any regard to order, consisted of three large chests, a table, Chinese chairs and a writing desk. This room communicated with an inner apartment, which we soon discovered was sacred to the females; for curiosity, not less probably in the Arabian than in ladies of other countries, induced them to peep at us from behind the door, which was ajar.

We found Hamira with his two sons and several friends squatted round their noon-day meal, which was spread upon the floor. On the outer threshold reposed the sandals of Hamira's guests; for in place of showing respect, by uncovering the head, as is the custom among Christians, the Arabians do it by baring the feet. Those before us



were attired in skull caps, loose white gowns, and girdles in which they wore a 'jambea' or 'khunger.' This formidable weapon, without which an Arab is seldom seen, is about two and a half inches broad at the hilt, which is of Rhinoceros or buffalo horn, ornamented with silver or gold, and gradually tapers to a point. The blade is two-edged, and at a point beyond the middle forms an angle of about one hundred and twenty degrees. The sheath, generally made of scarlet, and sometimes of dark-colored cloth, is ornamented, like the hilt, with silver or gold. The 'khunger' is worn in front of the waist, sustained by a strap, which is often richly embroidered.

As we entered, Hamira rose and welcomed us to his house, and, placing chairs for us, immediately ordered cocoanuts to be brought. He and his friends at once opened one or two for each of our party, and we found them very refreshing after our stroll in the sun. The dinner was cleared away by the servants, and Hamira talked with us upon various subjects. Speaking of his countrymen, he said, at the same time, shaking his head, "Ah! Arab man plenty bad, plenty bad; him cheat you all times, he can."

"The law allows every Arab four wives, pray, Hamira, how many have you?" asked one of our party.

"Me no got wife now—she die. Now me got one concubine. That very bad, have more than one woman; one wife or one concubine. Suppose you have more, they always fight; suppose live in same house, they fight; suppose live in different house, they fight, and the man can no be happy. The woman very bad for that." Captain Hassan, on the occasion of our speaking upon this subject, expressed the same opinion, and said very few Arabs had more wives than one.

Hamira opened one of his chests, and exhibited sundry boxes of old watches and trinkets; Cashmere shawls, and a small tin kettle, filled with vials and papers of medicine. He showed us also a copy of the Bible and New Testament, in quarto, in Arabic, which, he told us, he had read, saying, "Him very good book, but me like Koran better."

Afterwards he offered us quantities of luscious mangoes, and some oranges: the latter, however, were sour. While eating the fruit, (our only dinner that day,) Hamira received a letter, which, on account of its form, attracted our attention. It was folded up across the whole sheet, so as to be about an inch wide, and then doubled in the middle, the two ends being bound together by a riband of paper, and sealed with paste. When we sailed for Muscat, the letters sent by us were folded in the same manner, or rolled up as hard as possible,



and the edge pasted, the latter form is in use, almost exclusively, among the Banyans.

On descending to the yard, we entered a small room at one end of it, in which a half dozen children were seated on the floor, *à la Turque*, reciting lessons, at the top of their voices, in a most unpleasantly nasal and monotonous manner, to an old white-bearded pedagogue, who sat upon the ground hugging his knees. Each pupil was supplied with a board, eight inches broad, and a foot and a half long, on which they were learning to write by the aid of a pointed stick. The only books to be seen were two large copies of the Koran, bound in red velvet, and supported on stands two feet high, so that when they read it, the sacred volume is higher than the girdle, seated as they were. The children were committing verses of it to memory, and after the recitation was over, the book was carefully wrapped in a cloth and carried up stairs. The pedagogue would not allow us to touch it. The Koran is held in the greatest reverence and esteem among all Mohammedans. "They dare not so much as touch it without being first washed or legally purified; which, lest they should do by inadvertence, they write these words on the cover or label, 'Let none touch it, but they who are clean.' They read it with great care and respect, never holding it below their girdles. They swear by it, consult it in their weighty occasions, carry it with them to war, write sentences of it on their banners, adorn it with gold and precious stones, and knowingly suffer it not to be in the possession of any of a different persuasion."\*

After reaching the street, we stood talking with Hamira for several minutes, and he appeared to be somewhat impatient of our delay. Chairs were presently brought out, and he said, "Suppose you sit down one little, while me go pray—me come back very quick." He was equal to his word: his absence did not exceed five minutes.

Towards sunset we walked to the place of embarkation. Near the old castle a number of persons were collected, waiting for the opening of the court of Justice: its sessions are held, every afternoon after prayer time, at the castle gate, in the open air. It is composed of the governor and three judges, they are very patriarchal-looking gentlemen with long white beards, dirty white gowns and great sabres under their arms; and, to judge from appearances, one would conclude, they had lived from the time of Moses, without washing their vestments or trimming their beards. Two of them were seated upon

\* Sale's Koran, Philadelphia, 1833.



some boards, beneath a shed, amidst a group of people who seemed to be interested in their remarks. Under the same shed was a beautiful leopard, in a cage, which had been caught only a few days. Such is the simplicity of the court! In the street were several groups of Banyans unarmed, naked negroes, leaning on their spears, and fierce-looking Arabs, resting on their matchlocks, with the left leg crossed behind the right one—all waiting, with seeming indifference, like men of leisure, the arrival of the governor, Prince SEID CARLID. But we could remain no longer, and at sunset returned on board, satisfied that the town of Zanzibar and its inhabitants, possess as few attractions for a Christian stranger as any place and people in the wide world.

---

## CHAPTER V.

### SKETCHES IN ZANZIBAR.

*September, 1835.*

LIKE many islands in the Indian ocean, as well as the Pacific, Zanzibar owes its origin to the labors of a marine animal of diminutive size. When we reflect upon the minuteness of the animals which form coral, and compare with their tiny bulk, the stupendous results of their labors and the hardness of the substance which they produce by a secreting process, we are struck with wonder; and, vainly inquire,—Whence do these animals derive the material for the production of such vast beds of calcareous matter, that they can build up, for hundreds of fathoms in the depths of the ocean, islands capable of sustaining thousands of human inhabitants? So vast are the quantities of calcareous substance produced by the molusca tribes, that learned men have supposed all the lime found in the earth is derived from their organization and its functions, which seem to be almost inscrutable. The extent of coral formation, without reference to the immense quantities of shells, formed by other molusca, would be sufficient for such a theory; but it is not our purpose



to discuss so interesting a question, and we therefore refer our readers, for information on this subject, to the writings of geologists.

The labors of the coral insect present us a variety of formations; some of them solid as rock, which is used at Zanzibar, as well as in other parts of the world, for architectural purposes; some are found resembling trees and plants, and others grow up in the form of fans, irregularly reticulated, and elastic in structure. Their colors are as various as their forms; but the white, which is also solid, or nearly so, most abounds, and is the sort usually found as the basis of coral islands.

The formation of coral islands is interesting. Scarcely does the structure of this ant of the sea, outtop the surface of the ocean, probably from some volcanic mass upheaved from the bottom, before it becomes covered with soil, which is more or less valuable, according to circumstances. Vegetable remains and seeds are first cast by the waves upon the growing island, which, in time, decay and form earth; in this the seeds take root, and the plants, in their season, perish, and their destruction adds to the soil. Thus, every year produces new accessions, until, as in the present instance, a rich loam, lying deeply on the coral basis, sustains flowers, shrubs, and forest trees, and we behold the island clothed in a luxuriant and beautiful vegetation.

According to Captain Owen's chart, the island of Zanzibar extends between five degrees, forty-three minutes, and six degrees, twenty-eight minutes of south latitude. The latitude of the town, also called Zanzibar by foreigners, but often designated by the inhabitants under the names Hamûz, or Moafilè, or Baur, (which names, however, pertain rather to sections than to the whole town,) is six degrees, ten minutes south, and the longitude thirty-nine degrees and ten minutes east from Greenwich.

Among the vegetable productions of Zanzibar, besides several sorts of hard wood, suited for building and cabinet work, we may mention the cocoanut, mango, jacca, copal, colombo, tobacco, cloves, nutmeg, cassada, banana, &c. &c.

The cocoanut, which belongs to the extensive family of palms, grows in every region within the tropic belt of the globe, and is always a prominent feature in tropical scenery. Its trunk, which is supported by numerous small fibrous roots, rises gracefully, with a slight inclination, from forty to sixty feet in height; it is cylindrical, of middling size, and marked, from the root upwards, with unequal circles or rings, and is crowned by a graceful head of large leaves.



The wood is light and spongy, and therefore cannot be advantageously employed in the construction of ships or solid edifices, though it is used in building huts; vessels made of it are fragile and of little duration; but its fruit, at different seasons, its branches, and its leaves are applied to many useful purposes. The sheath, covering the lowest or first leaf, is used for a sieve; the leaves are used in thatching, for making umbrellas, fans, sails, and even nets, and the very young ones may be substituted for paper. The fruit, or cocoanut, has a filamentous bark, or covering, two or three inches thick, known in commerce as coir, or kyar, is manufactured into coarse fabrics, and cordage; and it also serves for caulking, and is exclusively used for this purpose throughout the east. The nut contained within this bark is about the size of a small melon, and the shell is converted into cups and other utensils; the pulp, lining the shell, is a wholesome aliment, and yields an excellent oil, used both in cooking and for burning, and, lately, means have been discovered in England of manufacturing it into candles; the oil-cake becomes the food of animals, and, in times of scarcity, of the poor. The centre of this great nut is filled with a clear, somewhat sweet, and cooling fluid, which is equally refreshing to the laborer and traveller. When the nut becomes old, or attains its full maturity, the fluid disappears, and the hollow is filled by a sort of almond, which is the germinating organ; sometimes a calculous concretion is found in its centre, to which peculiar virtues have been attributed. But these are not all the uses of the cocoanut. By cutting off the stems of the bud, before the flowers blow, a white liquor exudes from the cut extremity, which is usually received in a vessel tied there for the purpose; it is called "toddy," and is a very common and much esteemed beverage. By fermentation it is converted into vinegar, which, by distillation, yields a fiery spirit; and, fermented with lime, affords a sort of sugar.\*

The copal is described as a large tree. It yields a gum, used in the manufacture of varnish; it is found about the roots, whence it is dug up in large quantities, and is often obtained from places where the tree had grown many years before. The gum is exported to the United States, there manufactured into varnish, and in that form brought round the cape of Good Hope and sold in India.

Among the animals on the island are goats, sheep, Guinea fowls, and domestic fowls, which are very cheap (about a half dollar per

\* *Establecimientos Ultramarinos*, Tom. 1, Madrid, 1784.



dozen;) leopards, lizards, scorpions, several kinds of serpents, among which is a large species of coluber, vulgarly designated a *boa constrictor*, which is, I believe, peculiar to America; but the most important is the zebu (*bos indicus*) which is held sacred by the Banyans and other Hindoos; it resembles the ox, but differs from it in being of inferior size, in having small, short horns, and in having a fleshy hump over the shoulders, which is appreciated as a delicious morsel. There are also many birds of beautiful plumage; and the groves, and shores abound in varieties of the moluscan tribes.

The climate is warm, and very insalubrious for Europeans, Americans and even unacclimated Arabians. The island is generally undulated, and is crossed by three principal ridges or hills, the highest of which may be five hundred feet above the sea. In the bottoms of the valleys thus formed, are found, particularly at the close of the rainy seasons, marshy plains and swamps, attributable to drainage from the hills. In the neighborhood of these low, damp grounds, dysenteries, diarrhoeas, intermittent, and fevers of a malignant character prevail, particularly at the change of the monsoons; that is, from March till May, and from October till December. Those periods are also the rainy seasons. Almost all those of our crew who were employed in watering the ship, were attacked with cholera, after getting to sea, and one who slept on shore suffered severely from fever. In this respect, Zanzibar is little better than the whole east coast of Africa, if we may credit the accounts of voyagers from the earliest to the present time.\*

At present the population of Zanzibar is estimated at 150,000 souls, of which from ten to twelve thousand reside in the town. This population is made up of Sowâlies, or, as they pronounce it most gutturally, *Zuaichlies*, Arabs, East Indians, free negroes and slaves, the last being about two-thirds of the whole. The free negroes are estimated at 17,000. When the island was wrested from the hands of the Portuguese, they gained their freedom by flight; but, for a certain time were forced to lend personal service to the Sultan, from which they are at present exempt in consideration of a yearly tax of two dollars a head. The Sowâlies are of an African tribe, and do not speak Arabic well; indeed, Captain Hassan assured me, he could with difficulty understand them, and on important occasions, wherein any of them were concerned, he always employed an interpreter.

On his return from Calicut, on his first voyage around the cape of

\* Owen's Voyages along the east coast of Africa, as well as the voyages of the early Portuguese and English navigators.



Good Hope, Vasco de Gama visited Zanzibar, in February, 1449. At that time it was inhabited by Arabs, or Moors, who are represented as of "no great force, but carry on a good trade with Mombassa for Guzerat calicoes," and "with Sofala for gold." At present, the commerce is very considerable, and, as Zanzibar will become the great commercial depôt of the eastern coast of Africa, is destined to increase. The American trade is chiefly from Salem, Mass. They obtain here gum copal, ivory, and hides, for which they give American cottons and specie. The American cotton manufactures have taken precedence of the English, not only at this place and in many parts of the East, but on the Pacific coast of America. It is in vain the British endeavour to imitate our fabric by stamping their own with American marks, and by other means assimilating it; for the people say, the strength and wear of the American goods are so superior, that, lest they be deceived, they will no longer even purchase from Englishmen. Speaking of the competition with British commerce in India, Lieutenant Burnes, in his interesting "Travels into Bokhara," says: "The most formidable rivals are the Americans, who have only lately entered on this trade. At present, they land most of their cargoes on the east coast of Africa, from which they find their way to Muscat and Persia. Hitherto, they have only sent white goods, and with them they have spread an opinion, which was repeated to me by the Armenian merchants of Isfahan, that their cloths are superior to the British, because the cotton is produced in their own country and not injured from pressing. It is said to wear and wash well; and, if this cloth were introduced more extensively, the merchants assure me that it would have a good sale: very little of it has been hitherto imported."

The foreign vessels which visited Zanzibar from the 16th of September, 1832, until the 26th of May, 1834, amounted in all to forty-one sail; viz.

Nation.	Number of vessels.					Tonnage.
American,	-	-	32	-	-	5497
English,	-	-	7	-	-	1403
French,	-	-	1	-	-	340
Spanish,	-	-	1	-	-	319
Total			41			7559

Of the American vessels, four were whale ships; twenty were from Salem, three from Boston, three from New York, and two are set down from Majungo (Madagascar) and Cape Delgado.



The number of native vessels visiting the island is very considerable. They are called 'dâüs,' (Anglicè *dows*) and do not differ in the present day, from those described by the early Portuguese voyagers. They vary in size from five, to three or even four hundred tons burden. They are extremely sharp at the bow; the deck being at least one third longer than the keel. The planks, in the smaller sizes, are sewed together with coir rope; the seams are caulked with cocoanut husks and the bottom is paid over with a composition, consisting of lime and oil or tallow, called chunam, which possessing the property of hardening under water, protects the wood from the attacks of marine worms. They have a single mast, stepped a little ahead of the centre and raking forward, upon which is set a square sail of very coarse material. They have an open poop on the stern; the rudder is very large, and often secured by ropes only. These vessels are met with all over the Indian Ocean, and I am inclined to believe that very little improvement has been made in their construction from the period when the Roman and Venetian merchants supplied Italy with the spices and gums of the East by the way of the Red Sea. At that period these dâüs carried the products of all Asia, the silks of Persia, and India, the gems of Ceylon, and the spices of the Archipelago, up the Red Sea to the port of Berenice, the remains of which still exist. "Berenice, a town which connects the history of ancient Egypt with that of the Macedonian and Roman power in Africa, and at the same time indicates one of the channels through which commerce was carried on between the remoter parts of Asia and the nations of Europe. According to Pliny, it was through Berenice that the principal trade of the Romans with India was conducted, by means of caravans, which reached the Nile at Coptos, not far from the point at which the present shorter road by Cosseir meets the river. By this medium it is said that a sum not less than £400,000 was annually remitted by them to their correspondents in the East, in payment of merchandise, which ultimately sold for a hundred times as much."\*

"It is well known that Berenice was built by Ptolemy Philadelphus, a little after the establishment of Myos Hormus. Situated in a lower part of the gulf, it facilitated navigation by enabling mariners to take advantage of the regular winds. The inland route between Coptos and Berenice, was opened with an army by the same

\* "View of Ancient and Modern Egypt," by the Rev. Michael Russel, L. L. D. Gibson's Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire.

60h.

Gibson's



prince, who established stations along it for the protection of travellers. This relation which is given by Strabo, agrees with the Adu-litic preserved in Cosmas, which records the Ethiopian conquests of Ptolemy Euergetes, who seems to have adopted the commercial plans of his father, and to have endeavoured to extend them. The Romans, when they conquered Egypt, immediately perceived the importance of these arrangements; Berenice became the centre of their Eastern trade, and Myos Hormus sunk to a subordinate station."

A party of twelve officers landed early one morning at Metony, where, according to previous arrangement, we found Captain Hassan, with three horses and an ample number of donkeys. In a few minutes we mounted, and set off, each of us followed by a young slave, whose business was to flog the beast whenever occasion required, the captain of the castle, a tall Abyssinian eunuch, who had been promoted by the Sultan for faithful service, dressed in a loose suit of bright red cloth, acted in the capacity of steward, and guide to the party. Our seats proved to be rather less than intolerable, and we mutually laughed at each other's expense. For the first half mile, our road lay along the beach, and then through cocoanut groves, two or three miles, sometimes ascending hills and again descending into little vales. On every hand were highly cultivated spots, and here and there peeped forth a hut, shaded by the mango, loaded with its delicious fruit. Our march was quite picturesque, led as it now was by the Abyssinian, whose long jetty legs were drawn up and closely embraced his donkey, which he urged on to be at Tayef in time to receive us, his red mantle streaming behind and flapping in the breeze, at every spring of the animal. The path was only wide enough for two to ride abreast; but from an ungovernable propensity of our nags, we trotted on single file, a runner following each one, beating the beasts along with good-will. The negroes were all naked, with the exception of the waist-cloth, and most of them had their heads smoothly shaved; they could be only compared to so many monkeys.

A broad road, leading through long vistas of dark green clove trees, very carefully cultivated, showed that we were now on the grounds of Tayef, formerly Izimbanè, an extensive plantation belonging to the Sultan of Muscat. We rode on, highly delighted with the view, and reached the house just in time to escape a shower of rain, and there found the Abyssinian captain ready to receive us. We alighted at the outer gate, and crossing a large yard, entered the mansion by a flight of wooden steps. It is a one story building, about fifty feet square, having, in front, a pyramidal roofed observatory or veranda,



beneath which, there is a kind of porch. The front door opens upon a small court, from which, on the opposite side, we entered a cheerless room, extending the whole length of the house, and lighted by several large windows. Cut glass chandeliers hung from the raftered ceiling; and on shelves, in flat recesses about eight inches deep, arched at the top, there was a display of glass, and French China ornaments. At one end of the apartment, were two or three large pine boxes, upon which lay the mirrors they had contained, partially hid by cotton cloths. Near the centre was an oblong mahogany table, supported by an antiquated claw foot; the rest of the furniture consisted of Chinese arm-chairs. One half of the floor was laid with squares of marble, and the other was covered with chunam.

Cocoanuts were opened and offered to us in profusion, and the stalk of the young coconut, divested of its outside, was given us to eat; its taste resembles that of raw chestnuts.

Being a little refreshed after our donkey-jolting, we sallied forth to view the plantation. The house stands in the centre of a yard about one hundred and twenty feet square; its walls are of coral, about seven feet high, and enclose several out-buildings for slaves, and, near the mansion, a small garden, in which were flourishing, together, the rose-bush and nutmeg tree. As far as the eye could reach over a beautifully undulated land, there was nothing to be seen but clove trees of different ages, varying in height from five to twenty feet. The form of the tree is conical, and the branches grow at nearly right angles with the trunk, and they begin to shoot a few inches above the ground. The plantation contains nearly four thousand trees, and each tree yields, on an average, six pounds of cloves a year. They are carefully picked by hand, and then dried in the shade; we saw numbers of slaves standing on ladders, gathering the fruit, while others were at work clearing the ground of dead leaves. The whole is in the finest order, presenting a picture of industry, and admirable neatness and beauty.

It is pretty generally known that the Dutch, for nearly three centuries, have been deriving great commercial advantages by their exclusive possession of those islands in the Indian Archipelago which produce the nutmeg and clove trees. In order to appropriate these spices to themselves, they either destroyed or enslaved those people who possessed them. They uprooted numberless trees, and even burned the fruit which they had already prepared, lest, by bringing a large quantity into the market, the price might be reduced, though it was in their own hands. Such barbarian avarice excited the in-



dignation of many, who longed to foil and afterwards laugh at their policy.

M. Poivre, who had visited many parts of Asia, in the character of naturalist and philosopher, availing himself of the official station he held as Governor of Mauritius, or Isle of France, sent to the least frequented of the Moluccas in search of those precious plants. Those whom he had commissioned were successful in the enterprise, and, on the 27th of June, 1770, returned to the Isle of France, with four hundred and fifty nutmeg and seventy clove tree stalks, ten thousand nutmegs in blossom, or ready to blossom, and a box in which clove seeds were planted, many of which were above the earth. Two years afterwards, he obtained even a larger supply.

Some of the plants were sent to the Sechelles, to Bourbon and to Cayenne, but a greater number were retained in the Isle of France. All those distributed to private individuals perished; and in spite of the care of skilful botanists, a most unremitting attention and considerable expense, only fifty-eight nutmeg and thirty-eight clove trees were saved. In 1775, two of the latter bore blossoms, which became fruit in the following year, but it was small, dry, and light. Little hope of final success was entertained, and it was thought, at the time, the Dutch had been unnecessarily alarmed.\* However, it appears that the enterprise and industry of the cultivators were rewarded in the end, and they had the pleasure of seeing these spice trees flourish in their new location.

They were introduced into Zanzibar, from Mauritius, in 1818, and are found to thrive so well that almost every body on the island is now clearing away the cocoanut to make way for them. The clove bears in five years from the seed; of course time enough has not yet elapsed for the value and quantity of Zanzibar cloves to be generally known; and it may be said, the clove trade is still in the hands of the Dutch. It has been a monopoly ever since they obtained supremacy in the Moluccas; in their possessions, the cultivation of the tree is restricted to the single island of Amboyna.

Cloves are now 55 per cent. dearer than when first brought round the cape of Good Hope, and are sold to the consumer at an advance of 1258 per cent. on the first cost of production. The price for Molucca cloves, in the eastern market, is from 28 to \$30 per picul of 133lbs.; for those from Mauritius, 20 to \$24 per picul.†

A smart shower compelled us to return to the house, rather too

\* *Establecimientos Ultramarinos*, Tom. III. Madrid, 1786.

† *Chinese Repository*, vol. II. Canton, 1834.



soon for the arrangements of our host. On entering the saloon, we found our Abyssinian upon one knee, with a large salver before him, on the floor, upon which was an entire, baked goat, buried in a quantity of cold fowls, piled up around it.

They had been brought from town for the occasion. The worthy captain of the castle was tearing the goat in pieces, with his huge black hands, and, piling it on plates, which were conveyed to the table by several assisting slaves. In a few minutes, the arrangements were complete, and the table was literally heaped up with cold meats, sweetmeats and millet cakes. We took our seats, and, though the feast differed in many minor points, the absence of salt being one, from what we are accustomed, we made an excellent meal, our appetites being whetted by the early morning ride. We were served by a host of slaves, and Captain Hassan did the honors of the house in a most gentlemanly and graceful manner. Our drink consisted of sirup and water, here called sherbet, and cocoanut water exclusively.

The *déjeuné* ended about half past twelve o'clock; from that time till four P. M., we spent in walking, smoking, and talking. Among other subjects, phrenology was mentioned, and after describing the science in general terms, Captain Hassan submitted his head to examination, by way of illustration. A few minutes afterwards I found him in the court with his turban off, feeling his own head; on perceiving me he appeared to be somewhat confused, and said, "It is very strange—you have told me truly, but I can discover nothing by which you have found out these things."

At half past four o'clock P. M., we were again mounted, and attended as we had been in the morning. After a ride of six miles, we reached Metony, at sunset, all of us delighted with our excursion. We took leave of Captain Hassan on the beach; and I am sure we shall long remember the kindness and attention so liberally extended to us, while at Zanzibar by that gentleman. Nor shall we soon forget the Abyssinian, who, on bidding us farewell, begged the captain to say that he would be happy to serve us whenever it might be in his power.

At Zanzibar the ship was supplied with fresh provisions and every thing in the greatest abundance, for which Captain Hassan would receive no remuneration, saying that it was all done by the orders of His Highness, the Sultan of Muscat.

*Postscript.* After a passage of sixty-three days, the *Enterprise* arrived on the 14th of September, and sailed again on the 20th.



During her stay, she met with the same attention and hospitality which had been extended to the Peacock, and her officers speak of Captain Hassan in the highest terms of praise.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

### VOYAGE FROM ZANZIBAR TO MUSCAT.

*October, 1835.*

ON the morning of the eighth of September, we bade farewell to Zanzibar; but the wind was so unfavorable that we anchored, towards sunset, close to Tumbat. We landed, but found only a closely growing vegetation, and no other inhabitants than pirates—a race of crabs, so named by sailors, from the circumstance that they dwell in the shells of other animals, which they expel, and then usurp their place. Near the remains of a fishing hut, there were great numbers of them, moving about briskly, and dragging after them their stolen homes wherever they went. The island is of a coral formation, thinly covered with soil, which is sufficient, however, to sustain a growth, even to the water's edge.

Early the following day, we weighed anchor, and, standing to the northward, soon passed the fertile island of Pemba, on the west side. Its extent is less than that of Zanzibar, but it is represented to be far more rich in its agricultural productions. Before sunset, the land had faded away in distance, and we were sailing gaily on the bosom of the Indian Ocean.

When we had crossed the equator into the northern hemisphere, almost every night, the sea presented to us a beautiful spectacle. Every ripple, every spray dashed from the bows, and every breaking wave seemed to be on fire. The light thus thrown out from the waters, was pale, like that from phosphorus in slow combustion; occasionally, it illumined our sails, but was not sufficient, at any time, to read by. This appearance is owing to diminutive masses of ani-



mated matter, resembling jelly; they are transparent as glass, and when touched, emit light like the fire-fly. The agitation caused among them by the motion of the sea, the passage of a ship, or fish, provokes this emission of light. Sometimes our wake was comparable to a stream of fire; fish might be followed in their quick motions through their element, which were traceable by flashes of darting light, and the wave dashed into spray by our advancing prow fell down in a dazzling shower, like diamond sparks.

The night of the twentieth was very pleasant. The sea during the day was remarkably green, and though we sounded at sunset, we found no bottom at a hundred fathoms. In the evening a land bird flew on board, and about ten o'clock, P. M., two small birds, together with some sea-weed, were caught; but in spite of these indications, we did not suspect ourselves to be near land; and, placing full confidence in our meridian observations, which placed us sixty miles from the shore, we swept along towards our destined port, steering north half east, with the wind to the southward and westward, with studding sails set 'low and aloft.' Our sense of security well nigh proved fatal to us all.

About twenty minutes past two o'clock, on the morning of the twenty-first, all hands, except the watch on deck, were roused from sleep by a horrid noise, caused by the ship's bottom grinding and tearing and leaping on a bed of coral rocks! When she struck, the ship was sailing at the rate of seven and a half miles the hour, and her progression was not suddenly and fully arrested, but she ran on for some minutes after the helm had been 'put up'—the wind was on the larboard quarter, and consequently off shore. When I reached the deck, it was starlight, the breeze was fresh, and neither land nor breakers could be any where seen; by shifting the helm, the wind had been brought on the starboard side, and the sails no longer opposed to it, by their surface, were fitfully flapping and slashing as the wind swept past them. The ship rolled with an uncertain, wavering motion, grinding and tearing the coral as her sides alternately came against it. The uncertainty of our situation, threatened as we were with destruction, the crashing of coral, the darkness of the night, the wallop, wallop, of the sails; the fast succeeding orders of the officer of the watch, and the piping of the boatswain and his mates, produced an impression not easily described nor forgotten. There was an appearance of confusion, but every thing went on with as much regard to rule as if the catastrophe had been anticipated. Every one asked, 'Where are we?' but no one knew;



nor was it easy to explain at this time, by what means we had got on shore. The chronometers, hitherto confided in, were now suspected; and some called in question the accuracy of the charts. This was in the first moment of excitement, when we might have supposed there would have been some manifestations of fear, but there were none. Just at this moment, we had a fine example of the effects of habit. When every body was hurrying on deck, a young gentleman who had been for a long time a valetudinarian was seen completely dressed, coming up amongst the last, with a cloak hanging over his arm. On being asked what he was about to do with it, the thermometer standing at 80° F., he replied, "Going ashore in the boat, I shall catch cold from the night air."

As the ship no longer moved forward, but lay floundering from side to side, all sail was taken in, and an officer was sent to ascertain in what direction was the deepest water. In the mean time the boats were hoisted out, and an anchor placed in one of them; and, on the return of the officer who had been sent to sound, it was carried about three hundred yards to the southward, where there was sufficient depth to float us, and there let go, with the view of heaving off the ship. As the most speedy way of lightening her, about five thousand gallons of water were pumped overboard, but it was in vain.

The first gleam of day discovered a low sandy desert, about three miles to the eastward of us, trending north and south, the extreme points in sight bearing east half south, and west half north. The water was in spots, of a bright green, from its shallowness, but dark where it was deeper. The work of lightening the ship was continued. A raft was constructed of spare spars, and loaded with provisions, and several tons of shot were thrown overboard. When the tide began to fall, to prevent the ship from rolling entirely over, a large spar was placed with one end resting on the bottom and the other secured to the side, so as to give effectual support, or shore her up.

About ten o'clock, A. M., a large canoe, the stern and bows rising high, propelled by a thin square sail, and manned by four men, approached the ship. We sent an unarmed boat towards her, and an indifferent interpreter, a distressed Pole, named Michael, who, according to his own account, having travelled over land from Poland to Bombay, spoke passable Arabic, Italian and Dutch, but neither French nor English. When near enough, he hailed the Arab, who manifested strong repugnance to communication. While our boat



pulled rapidly towards him, he carried the tack of his sail forward and hauled the sheet close aft; then his wild companions stood up, and we could see their broadswords flashing in the sun as they flourished them over their heads, in a manner not to be misunderstood; our boat, therefore, returned, without opening any amicable intercourse, and the canoe anchored close to the shore.

Later in the day, an officer was sent towards the beach, to ascertain the state of the tide. Immediately on perceiving our boat near the shore, an Arab sprang from the canoe and ran along the sand, brandishing his sword, intimating that he would offer opposition to the landing.

At meridian, we found our latitude to be  $20^{\circ} 20'$  north, and the longitude  $58^{\circ} 52'$  east. We were now all of opinion that the ship was on the island of Mazeira, which, according to the charts, lies about ten miles from the coast of Happy Arabia; it is thirty-five miles long, and ten or twelve broad; it trends south-west and north-east. About one o'clock, P. M., four large canoes were seen, approaching from the northward. They joined company with the one above mentioned, and then all anchored close to the ship, now very much careened from the falling of the tide. Three of the canoes were large, with two masts, and might be termed *däus*. In this fleet, besides several negro rowers, we counted twenty-nine fighting men, each one wearing a 'khunger' in his girdle, and there were spears, and broadswords and matchlocks enough in sight to fill their hands. A spear or two was stuck up in the after part of each canoe, where there was a sort of poop, affording a place of shelter from the sun.

After anchoring, several persons left the canoes in which they had come, and assembled on board another, which was paddled near to the ship. A tall old man, with a white beard, stood up, and, throwing up his naked arms, and nodding his head, hailed us; from his gesture, we gathered that he demanded to know whether we would cut his throat, if he should come on board, and he certainly manifested that he placed very little confidence in us. After a few minutes' consultation, they came alongside, and two of them climbed on deck.

From the lawless and vagrant character of the Bedouin Arabs, of this part of the coast, as well as from the behaviour of the canoes, we suspected that they designed an attack, with the object of plunder; and so soon as they began to anchor, the crew armed themselves with pikes and cutlasses, and lay concealed, for the most part, behind the bulwarks. Some few, however, might have been seen grinding their pikes and cutlasses, and, as they mechanically ran their fingers over



the edge to ascertain its keenness, casting their eyes ever and anon upon the canoes.

When the two Arabs entered at the gangway, the decks were filled with armed men, whose eyes naturally followed the strangers as they moved aft, bowing and shaking hands with every individual they met, but in a manner that illy concealed their own trepidation, arising from the scene into which they had been so suddenly and so unexpectedly introduced, nor were the glances of our men calculated to allay any fears they may have entertained. On reaching the after part of the quarter deck, where the Commodore and Captain awaited them, they squatted themselves upon an arm chest, and the old man talked away at a rapid rate, apparently unconcerned whether understood or not.

Their costume consisted of a large turban, a waist-cloth, hanging nearly to the knees, and a girdle, in which was stuck the 'khunger.'

The elder of the two was very talkative, and had rather a cunning expression of face, while the younger was more taciturn. His figure was slight, but every one expressed, in strong terms, admiration for his beauty. A thick fell of curling black hair, which reached to the shoulders; keen, dark hazle eyes, regular features, smooth dark skin, white teeth, and above all the intelligence of his countenance, imparted to the beauty of his face a feminine character, but the jetty mustache and curling black beard, stamped him as a young warrior. They partook of sea biscuit and sugar, but owing to the incapacity of our interpreter, Michael, we obtained from them very little satisfactory information. According to his version, they stated that Mazeira was ruled by a Sultan, who would forward a letter for us to Muscat, if we should send on shore and request him to do so: Or, they themselves would convey a letter for a thousand dollars. They inquired how much money we had on board, and said forty more dâus were coming.

In a few minutes, they left us. The young warrior removed the khunger from his girdle, and secured it by the folds of his turban to one side of his head, and then lowering himself by a rope down the ship's side, dropped into the sea and swam gracefully to his canoe, followed by his companion. Soon afterwards, they all weighed anchor and stood away to the southward.

Towards sunset, when the tide had risen, efforts were again made to heave off the ship, but without even affording us a hope of success. Our situation was every hour becoming very critical. We were satisfied, that the Bedouins had not paid us their final visit, but were inclined



to believe they would soon appear in greater numbers, to attack the ship, and though we were more than a match for them, at this moment, when the ship was on an even keel and the crew not very much fatigued, in the course of a very few days the case would be different. The sea was so smooth, we did not apprehend that the ship would soon go in pieces, nor did we think there was any danger of a gale at this season; but our supply of water was inadequate to our necessities for more than a few days, and incessant labor must soon exhaust the forces of the crew. We might be under the necessity of landing, as our boats were not sufficiently numerous to carry us all to Muscat, and in that case, we had little to anticipate from the hospitality of the Bedouins; for

“ The good old rule sufficeth them;  
They shall take who have the power;  
They shall keep who can.”

The prospect of getting the ship afloat was distant, and as the surest means of obtaining relief, the second cutter was equipped, with a crew of six picked men, and despatched early the next morning, to Muscat, under the command of Passed Midshipman, William Rogers Taylor. Thinking that his services would be more valuable in Muscat, with the Sultan, than they could be on board, Mr. Roberts volunteered, and accompanied Mr. Taylor, bearing with him the treaty. This expedition was by no means without peril; for, although little was feared from sailing the ocean in an open boat, at this season, there was much to be dreaded from the Arab pirates, who have made this section of the coast their home, from time immemorial. But the danger which awaited those who remained on board, and those who embarked for Muscat was probably equal; and, making it purely a question of safety whether to go or stay, would have required, at that time, considerable deliberation.

On Tuesday morning, the 22d, soon after the departure of the second cutter, the work of lightening was continued, and we saw, with feelings of regret, one half of our guns cast into the sea. The upper spars and sails were sent down from aloft, and on renewing our efforts to heave, at the top of the tide, we discovered, with pleasure, that the ship moved. This infused new life into all hands. The men broke forth in a song and chorus, to which they kept time as they marched round the capstan, or hauled the hawser in by hand.



"Heave, and she must go," sang one, as a leader, in a high key, and all the men answered, in chorus,

"Ho! cheerly."

"Heave, and she will go,"

"Ho! cheerly."

When she moved more easily, those at the capstan sang, to the tune of "The Highland Laddie,"

"I wish I were in New York town,  
Bonny Laddie, Highland Laddie," &c.

At two o'clock, P. M., we anchored in three and a half fathoms water, yet the distance was so great to where it would be safe to make sail, we were by no means sure of getting off, for incessant labor was wearing out the crew, and it was with difficulty the anchors were made to hold.

About nine o'clock in the morning, two of the canoes which had visited us the day before, anchored close to the ship, and the Bedouins on board of them sat, shaded by their mantles, silently watching our motions. They held up to us a piece of plank; whether it belonged to our own or some other unfortunate vessel we did not know. At the end of an hour they left us, and anchored close to our raft, where they were joined by a third canoe. When we anchored, the raft was half a mile directly astern; and in a little while we discovered them robbing it of light spars, and they probably would have taken off other things, had they not been alarmed by the discharge of several muskets. In an instant the launch was manned by volunteers, and shoved off, under the command of Lieutenant Goddard, who was accompanied by Mr. Jacob Caldwell, Second Master, and Passed Midshipman B. S. B. Darlington. The canoes hauled close upon a wind, and stood to the southward and westward, while the launch pulled rapidly in a direction to head them off. It was some time before the canoes came within range of our guns; and when they did, our own boat was somewhat in the way; nevertheless, a gun was fired, and a shot dropped very near to them, but without any other effect than to induce them to take on board the spars which they had in tow. Owing to the wind being adverse, the launch did not get nearer than within long musket shot; but from this distance she fired several volleys. In all, four guns were fired from the ship, but fell short of their object; and we saw the savages triumphantly bearing off their prize, without our being able to prevent it.

In the afternoon, a kedge anchor was carried out, but, the wind



being fresh, we had the misfortune to break, or part the hawser, and were obliged to let go both anchors. This accident caused us to drift into more shallow water; and it was dispiriting, because it rendered a great part of the day's toil to be repeated. In the night, when the tide, which flowed and ebbed about six feet, fell, the ship struck very heavily, and we found her leaking at the rate of a foot an hour. Although her whole frame trembled under these shocks, the seamen were so completely wearied, and overcome by sleep, "chief nourisher of life's course," that it was with great difficulty they could be roused, when it became necessary to "shore up" the ship. Nor were the slumbers of the officers less profound. Though they were fully aware of the peril which surrounded us, the mind was but little occupied by apprehension; on the contrary, three officers spent an hour that evening in the ward room, discussing the probabilities of the next presidential election, and other subjects not less foreign to our situation. Even when our chances were mentioned, the topic frequently became ridiculous, by some one picturing a messmate, in the capacity of a slave to a Bedouin chief, driving his camels over the desert, or carrying water, or performing menial services, in which case the *figurante* was always represented as giving constant offence by his awkwardness. And, indeed, there would have been more truth than poetry in these improvaticinations, had we been cast on shore, for slavery, until redeemed, was the lightest evil we should have met with.

The next morning, (the twenty-third,) while busied in getting the kedge, which had been lost the evening before, five large canoes made their appearance from the southward, and manœvoured in such a manner, as to leave no doubt, that they intended to cut off the boats employed; and the officer, commanding them, at the instance of the men, sent to the ship for arms. However, three shot, well directed from the ship, caused the canoes to haul their wind, and we saw them pass behind the low land, which proved to be a small island of sand. Had the Arabs succeeded in their bold attempt, we should have been deprived, in a great degree, of the means of saving the ship, and, in the event of her going into pieces, of saving our own lives.

Having laid out a kedge well to windward, the shore being to leeward, and hoisted up the topsail yards, with the sails furled upon them, we hove up both anchors; finding one of them broken and useless, it was thrown away. We commenced hauling in the hawser, which was watched with intense anxiety; for had it broken, our



hopes would have been almost at an end. Fortunately it held. The ship was now well off the shore, but the depth of water was only three and a quarter fathoms. The topsails were let fall, and spread with great celerity; at the same instant the "back rope" of the kedge was cut, and we were once more, under the influence of our canvass. At six o'clock we had beat off shore ten or twelve miles, and anchored in six fathoms water, with the island of Mazeira in sight, clearly showing us, that we were between it and the main. During the night, we dragged our anchors, but brought up again on giving more cable. Early on the twenty-fourth, we got underway, and beat out of the gulf of Mazeira. At sunset, the southern extremity of the island was astern, and a last cast of the lead gave us thirty fathoms, in an open sea, after having been grinding the coral for fifty-six hours!

It is due both to officers and men—and it illustrates the great advantage of discipline—to state, that from the time of getting on shore until getting off, there was not the slightest irregularity in the method of carrying on the duties of the ship, although, in a time of so much excitement, the reverse might have been expected. The orders were given in the usual manner, and obeyed with cheerful alacrity by the men, although nearly worn down by continued and severe toil. To this circumstance, and to the active and well directed efforts of the crew, we are alone indebted for our escape from total shipwreck.

The island of Mazeira, is a pile of dark, arid rocks, rising, perhaps, five or six hundred feet above the level of the sea, without a single spot of verdure upon it. The sand lay in drifted wreaths in the gorges, imparting to it a most desolate and inhospitable appearance.

The following letter will explain the cause of our misfortune, and may serve to protect others, when cruising in this region.

"I certify that during the period I have navigated the Arabian coast, and been employed in the trigonometrical survey of the same, now executing by order of the Bombay government, that I have ever found it necessary to be careful to take nocturnal as well as diurnal observations, as frequent, as possible, owing to the rapidity and fickleness of the currents, which, in some parts, I have found running at the rate of three and four knots an hour, and I have known the Palinurus set between forty and fifty miles dead in shore, in a dead calm, during the night.



"It is owing to such currents, that I conceive the United States ship of war Peacock run aground, as have many British ships in previous years, on and near the same spot; when at the changes of the monsoons, and sometimes at the full and change, you have such thick weather, as to prevent the necessary observations being taken with accuracy and the navigator standing on with confidence as to his position, and with no land in sight, finds himself to his sorrow, often wrong, owing to a deceitful and imperceptible current, which has set him with rapidity upon it. The position of Mazeira Island, is laid down by Owen many miles too much to the westward.

Given under my hand this 10th day of November, 1835.

S. B. HAINES.

Commander of the  
Honourable East India Company's }  
surveying brig Palinurus. }

To sailing master,

JOHN WEEMS, U. S. Navy."

After doubling Cape Ras al Had, we encountered calms. On the morning of the 28th, we met the "Sultanè," a small Arab sloop of war, bound to our relief, with Mr. Taylor and the boat's crew on board. Captain Hammet bin Soliman of the Sultanè, with a pilot who spoke English, and two servants, came on board of the Peacock, bringing with them presents of dates, fruit, zebûs and goats.

It was nearly calm all day, and we did not enter the cove of Muscat until the afternoon of the twenty-ninth. Early that day we had the pleasure of receiving Mr. Roberts on board, accompanied by Captain Seid bin Calfaun, with whom he put off from shore so soon as the Peacock hove in sight. Just before reaching the anchorage, we were welcomed into port, by salutes from all the forts and ships of war in the harbor, which were properly acknowledged on our part.

When the second cutter left the ship, on the morning of the twenty-second, in order to avoid meeting with piratical dâus, she stood seaward, and to the surprise of every one on board, after a few hours, descried the island of Mazeira. They altered their course, and stood out of the gulf of Mazeira, by the southern end of the island. They were chased that day upwards of five hours by a piratical dâu, and only escaped by the coming on of night. As the sun sank, the wind and sea rose so high that the boat was two or three times in imminent danger of being filled with water. During the



day, the sun was intensely hot, and, blistered the skin wherever it was exposed; and at night, the dews were very heavy. Combined with these annoyances, were the narrow limits of the boat, which prevented them almost from changing their position, or lying down to sleep, and the provisions which they carried, got wet with salt water.

On the night of the twenty-fifth, they anchored in a small bay, a little to the southward of Muscat, that they might not pass their port, and the next morning, after a harassing voyage, of one hundred and one hours, or four days and five hours, reached their destination, hungry, and almost exhausted by fatigue and watching. It is worthy of remark, that only one of the party suffered any illness in consequence of this exposure; Mr. Taylor experienced a slight indisposition of two or three days, of a nervous character.

Immediately after their arrival, Mr. Roberts repaired to the house of Captain Seid bin Calfaun, the Sultan's interpreter and translator of English, and forthwith despatched him to inform the Sultan of the perilous situation of the Peacock, and request him to send to her assistance a vessel with a supply of water, &c. As soon as the sad tale was heard, "His Highness" ordered Captain Hammet to have the Sultanè, at that moment, unrigged, or, as the nautical phrase is, "stripped to a girtline," equipped, and supplied plentifully with water and provisions, and to sail the next day for Mazeira. An order was despatched to the governor of Zoar, a large town near Ras al Had, and about one hundred miles to the southward of Muscat, to proceed himself, with four dâus and three hundred men, for the protection of the crew and property of the Peacock, until the Sultanè should arrive; and, to prevent any mistake, the governor of Zoar was furnished with an American flag, which he was to display on approaching the ship, and with a letter from Mr. Roberts to the Commodore, explaining the object of this little squadron. An armed dâu was ordered to be prepared, with a further supply of provisions and water, to sail in two days; and couriers, with armed escorts, were sent to the governor of Mazeira, and to the principal Bedouin chiefs on the main, declaring that "His Highness" would hold them responsible with their heads for the loss of a single life belonging to the Peacock's crew, or for any property that should be stolen by any individual of their several tribes. A troop of three hundred and fifty Bedouin cavalry, on duty without the walls of the city, were ordered to proceed to the coast, to protect any of our crew who might be



forced to land, and to escort them to Muscat. Within an hour and a half the couriers had departed; in less than that time, the Bedouins bestrode their Arab steeds and were on the road; and the sloop of war, furnished with every necessary, sailed the next afternoon, having on board the cutter's crew and Mr. Taylor, to whom "His Highness" had given her in temporary command.

On the same afternoon, Mr. Roberts had an audience with the Sultan. "His Highness" received him in the divan, which fronts the harbor, in a most cordial and friendly manner, and evinced much sympathy in our misfortune and sufferings. Every sort of aid which could be devised was proffered and insisted on; not only by "His Highness," but also by his two sons; by the Ouâli, or governor of Muscat, and by the whole divan, or council, which was present; to the members of which Mr. Roberts had been personally known on his former visit. The Sultan then pointed out, from his chair, a sloop of war, which, he said, in case of the total loss of the Peacock, should carry her officers and crew to the United States; and, in order that the business of the embassy might not be delayed, another sloop of war, or frigate, was offered, to carry the envoy wherever it were necessary, and, after the conclusion of his mission, to convey him to the United States. A house, with every necessary appliance, was ordered to be prepared for the accommodation of Mr. Roberts; or the cabin of a frigate in the harbor, as he might prefer it, in consequence of the very oppressive heat of the city, both of which were respectfully declined, until the fate of the Peacock should be ascertained.

On the 28th, "His Highness" visited Mr. Roberts, at the house of Captain Calfaun, which was considered by the Arabs the highest honor the Sultan could confer on any individual. As another mark of "His Highness'" favor, the table of Mr. Roberts was supplied from the palace, with the best the city afforded.

Though not in chronological order, I will state, at this time, another instance of the munificent kindness of this Arab prince. When the guns were thrown overboard, a buoy was attached to each, with a view to recovering them; but when we anchored in six fathoms water, the guns were at least ten miles from us; and our boats were not sufficient to weigh them very readily, particularly in the face of a swarm of pirates, from whom we could expect little forbearance, and therefore they were abandoned. The Sultan, however, had decided that we should not lose them. He had them weighed, and sent



them to us at Bombay, where they were received, with the following letter, brought by a captain in the navy, after we had obtained others, from the stores of the Honorable East India Company.

*Muscat, November 6th, 1835.*

From SYED SYEED bin SULTAN,

To Commodore E. P. KENNEDY.

Sir,

My much esteemed friend,—I hope the Almighty God will preserve you, and keep you in good health and prosperity.

I send you this letter to inquire after your health, prosperity, and so forth.

The vessel which we sent to the spot where the United States ship Peacock grounded, has returned this day, and brought eleven guns and ten broken spars. The anchors and chain cables, as soon as we can get them, we shall send to you.

We have shipped on board of the *grab* called the Lord Castle-reigh, eleven guns, to be delivered to you; the freight has been paid here by me; please to receive them. We deem it unnecessary to send the spars, as they are of no use.

Written by me, His Gracious Highness' most loyal subject,

SEID bin CALFAUN.

By order of His Highness, SYED SYEED bin SULTAN.

The following letter from Commodore Kennedy was written to His Highness, in reply, to express our grateful sense of his kindness.

To his Highness, SYED SYEED bin SULTAN,

*Sultan of Muscat.*

May it please your Highness;—I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt, by the Bagelah, of the eleven lost guns of the Peacock, owing to the untiring and indefatigable exertions of your Highness.

I shall not fail to make known to my government, the heavy debt of gratitude previously incurred to your Highness, for the truly friendly and prompt measures which were adopted, when it was made known by Mr. Roberts that the Peacock was stranded, and in great distress, near the island of Mazeira.



My country can never forget the numerous acts of kindness received at your Highness' hands, and which were marked by a promptness which deserves the just admiration of the world.

Your Highness will please accept the homage, respect, and gratitude which every officer and man on board the Peacock personally feels for your Highness' never-ending exertions in rendering so many prompt, and more than friendly, acts, for our benefit; and no one can more sensibly feel it than the undersigned, who has the honor to subscribe himself, with the highest considerations of esteem, respect, and gratitude,

Your Highness' most obedient,  
and humble servant,

EDMUND P. KENNEDY,  
Commanding the naval forces of  
the U. S. on the East India  
and Asiatic station.

U. S. Flag Ship Peacock, *Bombay Harbor, Dec. 1st, 1835.*

P. S. Your Highness' letter, by the Bagelah, which brought the guns, has been received; in which your Highness signifies your intention of recovering, if possible, the chain cables left by the Peacock at Mazeira. I entreat your Highness, that if, by your Highness' continued generous exertions, they should be found, you will not take the trouble to send them to Bombay, as I will have sailed hence before they can arrive; but I beg that your Highness will cause them to be put to use in any manner in which they may be serviceable, until they shall be called for.

Respectfully,

E. P. K.



## CHAPTER VII.

## SKETCHES IN THE DOMINIONS OF THE SULTAN OF MUSCAT.

*October, 1835.*

As we drew near to Muscat, sailing close to the high rocky shore, the first indication of the place which presented itself to view, was a strong castle with towers, perched on one of the heights. We entered the cove, which is small and shut in by rocks of granite, from one to three hundred feet high, running in ridges, composed of numerous conical peaks, the whole resembling those diagrams, which, in books of geography, serve to represent the comparative elevations of the different mountains of the earth. These peaks are every where crowned with small castles, or watch towers, which not only command the harbor, but the city itself, which is almost hidden from the anchorage, in a sort of rocky nook, the Sultan's palace, a plain three story mansion, and the custom house being the only buildings visible from the shipping. The dark side of the rugged granite is unrelieved by a single spot of green, all is barren, and offers a thousand opposing surfaces and points, which, by reflecting the sun's rays, make this one of the hottest places in the world. In the months of January and February, the thermometer ranges at about 50° F., but in July and August, it fluctuates between 90° and 115°. When we complained of the heat, (91° F.) they told us, they considered it cool weather; and, indeed, most of the Arab gentlemen wore upper garments of broad cloth.

In June, 1821, when the cholera carried off 10,000 of the Sultan's subjects, the heat was almost insupportable, and the wind was like a flame of fire. At midnight, the thermometer stood at 104°. "On the fore-castle of the Kent, the heat was so intense, that the tube of a thermometer, graduated only to 122°, was completely filled by the expansion of the mercury," and we may therefore, conclude, as Ma-



jor Downing certainly would have done, that had the thermometer been longer, it would have been hotter.\*

The harbor is formed by a small island, consisting of a huge mass of granite two hundred feet high, situated so near the main as to only allow the passage of small vessels. The Peacock was anchored in front of the opening thus formed, for the sake of the sea breeze, which usually sets through it into the cove.

In the harbor were several Arabian ships of war, and numerous merchant dāus, which are actively engaged in trade between this port, and various parts of the Persian gulf and the Indian ocean. The first view is wildly picturesque; the numerous forts remind us of the success which crowned the Portuguese arms in the East, under Albuquerque and his immediate successors, and the numerous canoes plying between the shipping and the shore, tell us that Muscat is still a place of active commerce. Canoes were seen, propelled by two Arabs, one in the bow and the other at the stern, with a dozen passengers packed in the bottom, one in front of another, and all facing the same way, their turbaned heads and shoulders appearing between the gunwale and a long narrow awning. Towards evening, the fishermen were often seen returning from their day's toil to the cove; while one man steered the canoe, another stood erect in the bow, holding his outstretched turban between his feet and hands, thus converting it into a bellying sail, and the light bark fled briskly before the wind. When the moon rose, the scene wore a romantic aspect. The sentinels, at the watch towers and at the castle turrets, cried the "all's well" to each other, every half hour; and, occasionally, the voices of boatmen broke the silence of night, singing in cadence to the dip of the oar.

We had scarcely anchored before our decks were crowded with visitors; some came through motives of curiosity; others for the sake of profit, by supplying our necessities; but many came only to congratulate us on our narrow escape from shipwreck, assuring us at the same time that of a great number of vessels which had been stranded at Mazeira, the Peacock was the only one they had known to get off.

At four o'clock, P. M., the day after our arrival, all those officers whose duty permitted them to leave the ship, accompanied Commodore Kennedy and Mr. Roberts, to visit the Sultan. We landed at the embouchement of a short canal which empties into the cove, a few

\* Asiatic Journal, for 1822.



hundred yards to the right of the palace, at the foot of a lofty rock, crowned by a fort. The landing place was thronged with Arabs, to see the novel sight of twenty American officers, in full health, and high spirits, contrasting strangely with their own tawny, meager looks. We walked to the house of Captain Calfaun, and thence proceeding through the narrow crowded streets, entered the palace from the bazaar. We passed through a small open court, and were received by a well-dressed guard of about twenty Sepoys, who presented arms as the Commodore passed them. The Ouâli, or governor of Muscat, who was at this point, now conducted us out to the veranda, or divan, where we were met by the Sultan, and his eldest and third sons. As Captain Calfaun named us in order, he shook each one by the hand, and motioned us to a seat. We remained standing, in two lines, on opposite sides of the divan, until His Highness reached his chair, at the upper end of the apartment. Captain Calfaun stood on the Sultan's left, during the whole interview. The princes, and other Arabians present, left their sandals at the threshold, and walked to their respective places barefoot.

The divan, which, overlooking the sea, has the advantage of being airy, is about fifteen feet wide, and thirty long. It was furnished with fine Persian rugs and Chinese chairs. Here His Highness usually administers justice, and receives foreign and state visitors.

The Sultan wore a high turban of cotton, finely checked, blue and white, and a black cloth mantle, with large straight sleeves, bound round the neck with a slender silk cord, of red and white, which terminated in tassels. Beneath the mantle were a white tunic and girdle. In his hand he carried a large sabre, in a black scabbard, mounted in gold; and the only ornament was a large ruby, set in silver, which he wore on the little finger of the left hand. His feet and legs were bare, having left his sandals at the threshold. This costume set off his fine figure and manly countenance. Compared with the Arabs generally, his head, and indeed his whole person, are remarkably large. He has a large mouth, filled with fine teeth; he wears his white mustache clipped close, which runs in a line to join his whiskers, which are gray, but his beard is perfectly black. He is about fifty years of age, and his manners are polished and graceful.

He congratulated us on our escape from shipwreck, and asked how much the ship leaked, and inquired for several officers who were in the Peacock on her first visit. He offered to supply us with guns and cables from his own ships, to replace those we had lost. Speaking of the Bedouin Arabs, he remarked, that they were a lawless and



warlike people, without possessions, the richest of them owning perhaps a date tree or two, who wandered over the country bearing their tents with them. They are naturally robbers, and are very expert in the use of arms. A Bedouin, with no other weapon than a sword, will bury himself up to the armpits in the ground, and, under these very disadvantageous circumstances, keep off as many men, armed with spears, as may choose to attack him in front.

He inquired about the state of parties in France, and observed that the French would never have a king equal to Napoleon.

He told us that his third son was to be married on the following Friday, and said that Arab boys generally married between the age of twelve and fifteen years, and he thought it best they should marry young.

Coffee was served, in small China cups, which held less than a wine-glassfull; it was thick, very strong and fragrant, and sweetened with sugar candy. The servants were dressed in white, with turbans like that of the Sultan, except they were not so high, and in their girdles, which were of cloth of gold, they wore khungers with richly ornamented hilts. After coffee, sherbet was handed in finely cut glass goblets.

The audience lasted about fifteen minutes. On taking leave, His Highness said he would be happy to render any assistance to the ship, to any individual on board, and, indeed, to any individual belonging to the United States.

Before returning on board, we visited the Sultan's stud. We saw twenty-nine horses, worth from one to two thousand dollars each; they were tethered on a short strip of beach, between high rocks, and overlooked by a castle in which the treasures of His Highness are said to be kept. Only two of these animals were remarkable for beauty; the rest were not worthy of particular notice. The great attention paid by the Arabs to the breed and genealogy of their horses, is too well known to require remark.

The city of Muscat is situated in  $23^{\circ} 45'$  north latitude, and  $58^{\circ} 41'$  east longitude. It lies embosomed amongst rocks, and is secured on all sides by substantial walls, but without ditches. Its population is not less than twenty thousand, including Arabs, Banyans, and a few Persian merchants, but there is neither a European or Christian resident in the place. It is now the capital of the province of Aman or Oman, which name Moore has rendered familiar to most English ears; but I doubt whether a visit to this place would not have stifled the inspiration of the poet and deprived the world of



the splendid tale of Lalla Rookh. Rostak was formerly the capital, and is now spoken of by the Arabs in terms of high praise.

In the year 1508 the Portuguese, under the celebrated Albuquerque, made themselves masters of Muscat, and retained possession of it until 1650, when they were forcibly ejected by the Arabs. While in the possession of the Portuguese, they built most of the numerous forts and watch towers, which we now see, to secure themselves against the frequent attacks made by neighboring princes to dislodge them. Two buildings were pointed out to us which had been Portuguese churches: one of them was used as a storehouse, and the other was for many years the residence of the governor.

The city is irregularly laid out, and, with two or three striking exceptions, the houses are but mean edifices. They all have flat roofs. The streets are narrow, and are, at all times, thronged with people, who are seldom seen without a khunger in the girdle, or a two-edged sword, suspended from the left shoulder, and a round shield, of rhinoceros hide at the back. But arms seem to be worn as much for ornament as use, and we must not infer from this fashion that bloody brawls are common. The bazaar, which includes the greater part of the town, consists of narrow filthy lanes, having stalls of earth raised above the common foot-way, filled with a great variety of wares. Mats are stretched over the streets or lanes from the tops of the houses, to shelter the merchants and their goods from sun or rain. At the stalls are displayed baskets of grain, parched corn, pepper, senna leaves, cloves, and dried rose buds; coarse cotton, glass beads, glass bracelets, bangles and sticks or pencils of antimony, used for shading ladies' eyelids; to say nothing of great piles of 'holwah,' and other sweetmeats, all of which variety is sometimes found in the shop of one merchant. Here sit the Banyans amidst their wares, distinguished by their high red turbans, sleek skins and demure countenances, selling to the lordly Arab of the desert, who deports himself towards them like a monarch towards his slaves. At this time, great numbers of Bedouins were in town, sauntering about with matchlocks over their shoulders, their flashing dark eyes arrested by every thing that appeared worthy of attention. These Bedouins, in spite of their dark skins, and darker characters, are the handsomest race of men I have ever seen.

Just at the entrance of the bazaar is a low shed, occupied by barbers. It is curious to witness them shaving, without lather of any kind, the heads submitted to their tonsure; or, with tweezers, dexterously plucking out the straggling hairs which mar the outline of the beard or mustache.



Blind beggars are numerous in the streets, and, in spite of the commendation in the Koran to give alms, and the declaration which Mohammed is said to have made, "that whoever pays not his legal contribution of alms duly, shall have a serpent twisted about his neck at the resurrection,"\* they receive but little, and are left in a most pitiable condition. They sit on the ground, with a hand extended, while the other is pressed across the breast, beseeching charity, in most lugubrious tones. I asked a sailor, who belonged to the boat which was sent from Mazeira to Muscat, what sort of a place the city was. "I hardly know, sir," he replied; "it is all what they call a bazaar, and a dirty hole it is; and the people seem to be dying like rotten sheep."

"What seems to be the matter?"

"I don't know; but they are sitting about in the dirt, and groaning as if they were in great pain."

"What did you think was the cause of their groaning?"

"I don't know; but they looked as if they were starving to death." And I thought, when I encountered the beggars, Jack's description was very well borne out by the facts.

Females are occasionally seen in the streets, but always carefully concealed in flowing robes, and their faces, in obedience to the precepts of the Koran, are hid by veils, or rather dominos, which are often secured behind the head by a silver chain. Their costume consists of a sort of silk gauze, generally yellow, made in the form of a loose robe, worn over pantalettes, which set close at the ankles, which are ornamented, as among Jewish females of old, with bangles of silver, or metal resembling it. The feet are cased in stockings and slippers of some gay color, or they are bare, with a number of rings on the toes. The breast is protected by a spencer or jacket, with short sleeves, which are tastefully bespangled and tinselled. The silk robe is worn over the head, after the fashion of the mantilla in Spain.

Ladies visit a good deal amongst themselves, but no males, except certain relatives,† are admitted into their society. "Women," said an Arab gentleman to me one evening; "Women spend their whole time in perfuming, dressing, and decorating themselves. They are

\* Sale's Koran.

† The Koran commands women not to show their charms to any persons, except "to their husbands, or their fathers, or their husband's fathers, or their sons, or their husband's sons, or their brothers, or their brother's sons, or their women, or their *captives*, which their right hands shall possess, or unto such



fond of dress, and are generally very expensive creatures. A gentleman's wife must have at least four Cashmere shawls, a green, a blue, a red, and a white; then she must have a ruby or a diamond ring for every toe, as well as for every finger, and few wives have not from two to seven thousand dollars' worth of jewelry to wear on particular occasions. Then they are so jealous, there is no living. Our law allows us four wives, and as many concubines as one pleases; and it is necessary to have some as servants to your wife. For that reason, every gentleman has three or four Circassian or Abyssinian slaves, who soon become as jealous as the wife herself, if they do not enjoy a reasonable share of their master's attention, which they usually seek with great assiduity, because if they have issue, they are free, for no man is willing that his offspring should be considered slaves, which they must be, if the mother remain in a state of bondage. Indeed, in my own house, they sometimes get into such quarrels, that I am obliged to absent myself for days from the whole of them."

"When a man marries," continued the gentleman, "he does not see his destined bride until after the marriage ceremony has been performed; but, to gain some knowledge of the lady, he depends upon the report of some old woman, generally a servant in his family, whom he sends to make her observations. In this way, he gets a pretty good description of the lady's personal charms, and he must trust to luck for the rest. If satisfied with the report, he then makes proposals, through a priest, who asks the lady whether she is willing to take such an individual for a husband, and on gaining her consent, the father is informed of it, but he, as well as all her male relations, are careful to absent themselves at the time of the wedding."

Though so carefully secluded, intrigue and faithlessness amongst women is very rare, because the disgrace attached to the crime, extends not only to her immediate family, but also to the whole tribe to which she may belong. Another check is that the husband can put away his wife, at any moment, by saying simply, I "divorce you;"—and terrible are these words in the ears of a woman;—after which they are no longer man and wife; he gives her the property

men as attend them, and have no need of women, or unto children, who distinguish not the nakedness of women." "Uncles not being here particularly mentioned, it is a doubt whether they may be permitted to see their nieces. Some think they are included under the appellation of *brothers*; but others are of opinion they are not comprised in this exception; and give this reason for it, viz: lest they should describe the persons of their nieces to their sons."—*Sale's Koran*:



she may claim as her own, and sends her back to her father's house. After that, he cannot again see her face, unless the marriage ceremony be again performed. In this way, a man may separate from his wife three times, but cannot marry her a fourth time, until after she has been the wife of another. "Ye may divorce *your wives* twice; and then either retain *them* with humanity, or dismiss *them* with kindness." "But if *the husband* divorce her a *third time*, she shall not be lawful for him again, until she marry another husband."\*

Beyond the city gates, there is a very considerable population, living in huts, constructed of reeds and mats. Here, too, we found two or three *caffés* of rude character. They may be compared to cages; the walls are made of stout reeds, or split bamboo, lashed together crosswise, and the roofs are thatched with palm leaves. The furniture and fixtures consist of wooden forms for the guests to lounge upon, while they smoke a sort of pipe, called a hubble-bubble, in which the smoke is drawn through water, and a stone counter, behind which the host is always seen in attendance, either making or dispensing coffee which is served very hot, in small bowls, without cream or sugar.

In this suburb there are a few scanty gardens, whose existence depends upon irrigation from wells, which is effected with very considerable labor. A derick, or shears, composed of three pieces of timber, is erected over the well; at the top is a pulley or block, and to one end of the rope, leading through it, is attached a leathern bag, and the other is secured to a yoke on the neck of an ox. To enable the animal to apply his force more effectually, an inclined plain is cut from the top of the well, descending sufficiently deep into the earth to ensure that the descent of the ox will raise the leathern bag to the top of the well; on reaching that point, it is so contrived that the bag empties itself into a sort of reservoir, whence it is distributed

\* Sale's Koran.

"The Mahometan who has thrice sworn to divorce his wife, religion punishes by not allowing him to take her again till she has shared the bed of another man. The faulty person, who is thus unpleasantly circumstanced, endeavours to elude the law. He chooses a friend on whose discretion he can reckon; shuts him up with his wife in presence of witnesses, and tremblingly awaits the result. The trial is a dangerous one. If, when he quits the room, the obliging friend declares that he divorces her, the first husband has a right to resume her; but if, having forgotten friendship in the arms of love, he should say that he acknowledges her as his wife, he takes her away with him, and the marriage is valid."—*Savary in Sale's Koran.*



by conduits. A slave attends to drive the animal up hill again, to the top of the well, and the bag descends and is filled; this toil is continued all day long.

The wells about Muscat were originally dug at the expense of individuals, and by them bequeathed to the public. The Sultan supplies an ox and a slave for each, and those who use the water pay a tax in grain. Water supplied to ships is carried from the well to the boats in skins, which are there emptied into the casks.

---

## CHAPTER VIII.

### SKETCHES IN THE DOMINIONS OF THE SULTAN OF MUSCAT.

*October, 1835.*

NOT far from Muscat, to the northward and westward, there are several towns built on the shore, in sight of each other. They are called Calboo, Douha, Ryam, Small Moutrah, Moutrah, Arbach, and Showtyfè. One day, during our stay at this port, we visited Moutrah, which is the largest. It contains 18,000 inhabitants, and, in appearance, is quite as large as Muscat, from which it is distant two miles. It is situated on a deep bay, and is built on a sandy plain, and has no more vegetation in its vicinity than Muscat itself.

Our guide, Mehamet, led us directly to the bazaar, which, as in Muscat, occupies the principal thoroughfares, where we saw several Banyans weighing a diminutive dried fish, about two inches long, and packing them in bales for exportation. This species of fish literally fills the waters of Oman. They sometimes appeared in dense strata about the ship, so thick as to completely hide the cable from view, which was distinctly seen when they were not present. In one place they were making 'holwah,' in great copper pans, in which the materials were stirred with sticks, as they boiled, by naked Arabs, who were sweating profusely over their toil. 'Holwah' is a very favorite sweetmeat, constituted of sugar, almonds and butter or ghee, pro-



perly mingled; but we found it far from agreeable. The articles exposed in the bazaar for sale, were similar to those seen in Muscat; beads, bracelets, cottons, sticks of antimony, (the sulphuret) rosebuds, sandals, senna leaves, &c. At several stalls, the only store-room was a large chest, set fast in masonry. Here we saw several Beloches, burnishing sword blades, which they held fast upon the ground with their feet, while they rubbed them with burnishers. Parched corn, used as a sort of frosting for sweetmeats, was preparing, by toasting it with sand, in a copper pan over the fire, and then separating them with a sieve. Here sat, amongst his drugs, a long, skinny-fingered apothecary,

“Famine in his cheeks:

Need and oppression staring in his eyes:

Contempt and beggary hanging on his back”—

here he squatted, with herbs and simples spread on the ground, weighing out the quantities of a written prescription, upon which, from time to time, he cast his eyes as he slowly proceeded. Not far from him, was an old Arab, leaning on a staff; his beard swept upon his breast, and naturally was silvery gray, but was now dyed a bright yellow; nor was it as unsightly as one would suppose. Negro women ape the customs of their lighter colored mistresses, and screen their sooty countenances behind black dominos, little suspecting their peculiar laugh, all hearty as it is, is enough to betray their complexion.

The only Banyan woman I saw, was dressed in a mantle of yellow silk, pantalettes of white and blue stripe, gathered full at the ankle, over which was a pink frock, extending from the neck below the knee, and without cincture. A gold chain, or rather collar of broad links, encircled the neck; and, besides several gold chains over the neck, and ear-rings, she wore, through one side of the nose, a gold ring, not less than two and a half inches in diameter: it had a broad plate on one side of it, and, to keep it out of the way of the mouth, it was looped up by a thread, which passed over the forehead.

Followed by a crowd, we walked through the bazaar, and entered a town, which is walled in within the precincts of Moutrah, and inhabited by a tribe from Sinde, who profess the Mohammedan faith, but live entirely separate from the Arabs. They are named Beloches, and in the estimation of the other followers of the Islamic religion, stand next to the Banyans, who are amongst the most degraded people in the East. The meanest Arab would not give his daughter in



marriage to a Beloche, no matter how worthy: such an act would be sufficient to eject him from his tribe, and send him forth an outcast upon the world. The Beloches are industrious, and have some skill in the humbler branches of the mechanical arts. Their number, in Moutrah, is estimated at 2000. They are without a chief, and are subject, equally with the Arab inhabitants, to the Ouâli of Moutrah.

The only gate of the Beloche town opens upon the beach, and shuts, in an arid plain of about half a mile square, which is bounded in the rear by bleak and barren rocks. The huts are constructed of palm leaves, and are arranged without regard to order. None of them is more than ten feet high; some have round, and some have conical roofs, and all are enclosed in small yards, the fences of which are also of palm leaves. In one corner of the town, stands a small white mosque, with two small turrets in front; and near it is a graveyard, filled with white tombs and the humbler graves of the poor, marked by fragments of coral, sprinkled over them.

The sun was pouring his meridian rays upon the white earth; no one was abroad, save two or three boys, who were drawing water for a half dozen camels, which, they told us, belonged to the Sultan; the profound stillness was only broken by the occasional sound of the weaver's shuttle, not very actively plied.

The loom is of very rude fabric, and the warp, instead of being in a frame or upon a roller, was stretched along the ground, and secured by the weight of two or three stones. The weaver, with only a band of cotton about his loins, sat in a hole hollowed in the ground, deep enough to bring him in a position convenient to the loom. His hut had a flat roof, with two walls, one behind him, and the other on his side, between him and the sun. This contrivance for weaving reminded us of the descriptions of the looms used by the ancient Jews.

Mehamet led us into a Beloche hut, to procure for us a drink of water. We found the interior very clean and lined with mats. At one end of the apartment was a mat, stretched on a square frame, elevated above the ground so as to fulfil the office of a sofa. An elderly woman, who sat upon the floor, in a silk frock and mantle, smoking a hubble-bubble, very courteously motioned us to the seat, and quickly brought us a China bowl of cool water. In a moment after, a young woman entered, leaving her wooden sandals on the threshold; they were kept on the feet by a small peg or button, that stood perpendicularly between the great toe and the one next to it. She wore a domino, a black mantle over the head, a pink silk frock, with long loose sleeves, over striped pantalettes, and her feet were stained with hêna.



She wore several gold ornaments on the neck; five silver bracelets on each arm; two silver rings on each thumb, and one on each fore and little finger. In a few minutes she removed her domino, which was black, bordered with tinsel, and discovered a ring through her nose, with a long pendant reposing on the nether lip. Had it not been for this savage ornament, and the dark stain of antimony on the lower eyelid, which gave her countenance a sleepy expression, her face might have been thought comely, in spite of its dark complexion.

In the same town of Moutrah, there is still another small town enclosed, which is inhabited by a tribe called Lawatias, who do not admit even the Arabs to pass their gate; "because," said Captain Calfaun, "their wives and daughters go unmasked." They are estimated to be a thousand in number.

Amongst the numerous Arabs who daily visited the ship, was Halil bin Hammet, son of the late governor of Zanzibar. Halil is about fourteen years of age, and is looked on as a youth of very wild and eccentric habits. He was usually accompanied by two handsome Bedouin soldiers, whom he appeared to have attached to himself, either by kind treatment or generosity. Halil generally dressed in white, with a girdle of cloth of gold, beneath which was a leathern belt, filled with beautifully chased silver chargers, each having a stopper secured by a chain of the same metal. He wore a turban that showed him to belong to the tribe of the Sultan, and his khunger was richly ornamented with gold. In these chargers he had some very coarse gunpowder; but getting a sight of some of excellent quality, he importuned every officer for "barouta"—gunpowder, and when he obtained any, he emptied a charger into a paper to receive that which was presented to him. He ran from one part of the ship to another, examining every thing, but was much more interested by viewing various kinds of arms, than any thing else. He visited us daily, and managed at each visit to get three or four of his chargers filled with gunpowder, his first attempt to obtain it, was by demanding, and when a small quantity was offered, he refused it with great indignation. Finding, however, this plan unsuccessful, he assumed an humble manner, and petitioned for "barouta," in most courteous and winning tones. To all appearance, he freely parted with his khunger, but asked for it when about going away; yet he sold his turban off his head, to a gentleman on board, and supplied its place on the spot with his girdle.

Amongst various articles brought on board for sale, were khungers, and swords, some of which were of Persian manufacture, but



most of them were made in England for this market. The attar of roses, and of jasmine flowers, were brought off in considerable quantities, but neither of them is manufactured in Arabia; they are brought from Constantinople, both by way of the Red Sea, and over land to Persia, and down the Euphrates, and thus find their way to all parts of India, being articles much used by the wealthy every where in the East.

The officers were invited to dine with the Sultan, on the second of October. At four o'clock P. M. the Ouâli, with Captain Calfaun, came on board, in three boats, each manned by from eight to twelve Lascars—sailors, from the coast of Malabar—and carried Commodore Kennedy, Captain Stribling, Mr. Roberts, and a large number of the officers, on shore, and conducted them to the palace. We entered a part of the building, still unfinished, and passing through a small court, in the centre of which was a lime tree—every green leaf is remarkable in this sun-scorched capital—ascended flights of wooden stairs, which terminated in an open court, on the third floor. Here we were met by the Sultan and his two sons, arrayed as we had first seen them; and each of them shaking us individually by the hand, we entered an unfurnished hall or anteroom, which opened upon the court. Numerous servants, dressed in white, wearing richly mounted khungers, in their girdles of cloth of gold, were on either hand, standing respectfully, without their sandals. They saluted us with the graceful Arab salâm, as we passed into the dining hall.

This apartment is plain in its appearance. The walls have several flat recesses a foot deep, crossed by shelves, on which were placed a variety of cut glass, and French porcelain. At the upper end of the room, hung prints of the naval engagements between the U. S. Ship Constitution, and H. B. M. Ship Guerriere, and between the U. S. Ship United States, and H. B. M. Ship Macedonian. Several mirrors, and prints were suspended upon the side walls. The floor was covered with Persian rugs. The dinner was already spread before us, upon three tables, which were not uniform, either in height or dimensions, and therefore joined badly; shawls of camel's hair served as table cloths, and the whole decoration was befitting a ball supper.

So soon as we had assembled near the table, His Highness stated, that on such occasions as the present, it was not his custom to sit at table, but to retire and leave his guests to unrestrained enjoyment; nevertheless, if it were our desire, he would conform to our fashion. Mr. Roberts replied, that it was not our wish to break



through any of the usages of our Arab friends, and though His Highness were absent, we should not forget him. The Sultan then salamed and withdrew. We took our seats, and the Ouâli and Captain Calfaun joined the servants in waiting, apparently emulous to exceed them in polite attention, and the duties of their place.

The dinner was served on white porcelain, and the knives and forks were from our own messes on board, the Arabs seldom requiring any other instruments than their fingers, wherewith to despatch their food. The repast spread before us, which was cold, and sufficient in quantity for two hundred Englishmen, who are the great eaters in this world, (see, Captain Basil Hall's account of the enormous breakfast eaten by himself at the City Hotel, New York,) consisted of two sheep, stuffed with dates, prunes, and cajoo nuts, and roasted whole; fowls, dressed and cooked in a similar manner; joints of roast meat; several kinds of sweetmeats; rice, dressed with sugar and turmeric, resembling curry in appearance; lozenge-shape cakes, an inch thick, made of milk and rice, some white, some yellow; sweet cakes or bread, an inch thick, and of the size of a plate; mangoes, from Barhein; grapes; custard apples, (*annona squamosa*,) &c. Different sorts of sherbet, lemonade, and new milk, were the only fluids upon the table. All these good things were so crowded and mingled together, that it required considerable tact to safely extricate a selected dish from amongst its many neighbors. It was truly a temperance feast, and most things were very much to our taste and satisfaction.

“ Steward and squire, with heedful haste,  
Marshall'd the rank of every guest;  
Pages, with ready blade were there,  
The mighty meal to carve and share.”

At the close of the banquet, coffee was served in China cups, supported in stands of cut glass, each stand holding three cups. After this, Captain Calfaun and a slave took the handkerchief of each guest, and poured upon it a plentiful supply of attar of roses. They were followed by a slave, bearing a golden *arrosoir*, in the shape of a Florence flask, having a long neck and perforated extremity, like that of a watering pot, with which he dashed a quantity of rose water where the attar had been poured. This done, the Sultan entered, and remarked that we had partaken so sparingly of the feast that he thought it would be well to send the remains of it on board ship.

We took leave of His Highness and the two princes, at the



head of the stairs, and were accompanied to the boats by the governor and Captain Calfaun.

On Monday, the 5th of October, His Highness, accompanied by one of his sons and Captain Calfaun, visited the ship. He was received with a salute of twenty-one guns, and manned yards; and on his taking leave, which he did at the end of a half hour, the same ceremony was repeated. On landing, he requested Lieutenant C. C. Turner, who commanded the boat which carried the Sultan on shore, to wait a few minutes, that he might send him a present from the palace. Mr. Turner expressed his acknowledgments for the Sultan's proffered kindness, and at the same time explained to him that the constitutional law of our country forbade all its officers to receive presents from any sovereign or prince.

## CHAPTER IX.

### SKETCHES IN THE DOMINIONS OF THE SULTAN OF MUSCAT.

*October, 1835.*

THE dominions of the Sultan of Muscat are not very clearly defined, though they are of very considerable extent. On the coast of Africa, he claims all the coast, and circumjacent islands, from Cape Delgado, situated in ten degrees of south latitude, to Cape Guardafui, in eleven degrees and fifty minutes north. In this range we find the ports of Monghow, or Mongalow, Lyndy, Mombassa, Quiloa, Melinda, Lamo, Patta, Brava, Mokdeshà, or Magadosh, (the Magadoxa of the Portuguese,) and the islands of Mafeea, or Mowfea, Zanzibar, Pemba, Socotra, &c. At a very early period, a tribe of Arabs, called Ammozzadi, meaning subjects of Zayde, migrated from the neighborhood of Barhein, in the Persian gulf, and soon afterwards built Mokdeshà and Brava, of which settlements the former was the metropolis. The first Arab settlers separated, and a part of them mixing with the Caffres, became Bedouins. Those who remained at Makdeshà were the first who enjoyed the profits of the gold mines of



Sofala, which they accidentally discovered. Thence they spread themselves to the southward, and obtained possession of Quiloa, Mombassa, Melinda, and, besides the islands above named, those of Comoro and others. Quiloa became their chief plantation; whence they established other settlements, particularly on the island of Madagascar.

Such is the account of the settlement of the east coast of Africa, given in a collection of early voyages, chiefly extracted from "Purchas' Pilgrims" and Hackluyt's collection. The first navigators who doubled the cape of Good Hope found that the inhabitants spoke Arabic, and professed the religion of Mohammed; this will account for the practice of circumcision, and other Moslem customs, of several tribes in Caffraria and Southern Africa, described by the Rev. S. Kay in his very interesting "Travels and Researches in Caffraria."

In southern and eastern Arabia, he claims, along the coast, from cape Aden to cape Ras el Had; thence northward as far as Busso-rah, in latitude  $29^{\circ} 30'$  north, all the coast and islands of the Persian gulf, including the pearl fishery and islands of Barhein, as far as Sinde, on the eastern side. All this extent of territory is not garrisoned by his troops, but is considered as tributary to him. Besides, he rents sulphur mines in Persia, and several estates in GAMBROON.

The commercial value of these possessions, and the revenue derived from them, we have no means of ascertaining. The pearl fishery of Barhein was once estimated to be worth, annually, more than three millions of pounds sterling; but, at present, does not, probably, yield one tenth of that sum. The fishing season lasts from April until October, and extends over a space of twelve or fifteen miles. Arabs are the only people engaged in it.

The pearls of Barhein are not so white as those of Ceylon, or of Japan; but they are larger than those of the former, and of a more regular form than those of the latter place. Their color inclines to yellow, but they possess an advantage over others, in maintaining their lustre; while the white ones, particularly in hot climates, in the course of time, lose their brilliance. The shell, known as nacre, or mother of pearl, is applied to many purposes, in all parts of Asia. The pearls of irregular form and size pass to Constantinople and Turkey; the large ones are worn as ornaments in the hair, and the small ones are employed in embroidery. The perfect ones are sent to Surat, and all parts of Hindoostàn. There is little fear of much diminution in their consumption or price, in the east. They are the



passion of the women, and a superstition increases the sale of this product of the sea. There is not an individual of them who does not deem it a matter of religious importance to pierce one pearl, at least, on the occasion of his nuptials. Let the meaning of this mysterious custom be what it may, amongst a people whose policy and morals are enveloped in allegories, and amongst whom religion itself is but an allegory, this emblem of virgin purity is advantageous to commerce. Those pearls which have not been recently bored, are used in decoration; but they will not answer in the bridal ceremony, at which there is required at least one fresh pearl.\*

The exports from Muscat are, wheat, dates, horses, raisins, salted and dried fish, Mocha coffee, and a great variety of drugs. The productions of eastern Africa, the Red Sea, the south-east coast of Arabia, and the countries bordering on, and accessible from the Persian gulf, are generally found in the market. The articles imported in exchange are rice, cotton and woollen goods, iron, lead, sugar, and some spices. Being, from its situation, the key to the Persian Gulf, vessels from all its shores resort here; from this circumstance, it may become a place of deposit and sale of merchandise destined for the markets of Bussorah and Persia. Trade is carried on between Muscat and the Red Sea, the east coast of Africa, the Persian gulf, Mauritius or Isle of France, many parts of continental and insular India, and China; but to what extent, I have no means of ascertaining, though it is very considerable. There is here an insurance company, all the members of which are Banyans; and, "notwithstanding," said an Arab merchant to me, "that the Koran requires the Moslem to trust in God alone, for success in all transactions, the merchants of Muscat usually insure their ships and cargoes, before committing them to the perils of the great deep."

The exports from the east coast of Africa, are gum copal, ivory, tortoise shell, rhinoceros hides and horns, bees' wax, cocoanut oil, ox hides, rice, millet, ghee, colombo root, aloes, gum Arabic, and a variety of other drugs. It is his possessions in Africa, which give value to the treaty just concluded between the government of the United States and the Sultan. Those countries have become an *entrepôt* for American cottons, which find their way thence up the Red Sea and Persian gulf, and thus to the markets of Persia, where they are preferred over the English fabrics.† American merchant

\* *Establecimientos Ultramarinos*, Tom. II. Madrid, 1785.

† Burnes' *Travels in Bokhara*.



vessels are seldom seen in the port of Muscat, one only having anchored there in the last seven years.

The monarch of Muscat is commonly, but erroneously, spoken of under the title of Imâm, which is a name given to Islamic priests, and when applied to a prime or chief, signifies a sovereign Pontiff. Soon after the accession of the Sultan, the people were desirous of creating him Imâm, an officer whose duties include the direction and management of religious, as well as temporal affairs; but he was too wise to accede to the wishes of his subjects, because it would have obliged him, according to the usage of the country, to lead a life of piety and poverty, without the power of openly enjoying his wealth. This I was told by Captain Calfaun, one evening at his house, when I met a son of the Sultan's uncle. "That man," said Captain C.—, "may wander in any part of Arabia, unarmed and without danger; he has only to declare himself the son of the last Imâm, and his person is sacred." This individual is the only one of the Sultan's tribe who has the right of wearing his turban approaching in height to that of His Highness; the material of which the turban is made distinguishes the tribe, but none, except those of a royal lineage, may wear it above a prescribed height.

Syed Syeed bin Sultan, the sovereign of Muscat, is one among the most distinguished princes in Asia. During a long minority, the administration of the government was confided to an Imâm, an uncle of the young monarch, who was unwilling to resign, when his ward became of age, and, in order to remove him out of his way, conducted him to a fortress near Rostak. There the young Sultan was informed by his friends, that the regent intended to cause his death; and, to frustrate this ambitious design, he one evening requested to see his uncle. No sooner was he in his presence than Syed Syeed stabbed him with his khunger. The regent, wounded as he was, scaled the wall, and, mounting a swift horse, fled. The friends of the young prince told him, his work was but half done, and if his uncle escaped alive, his throne would be insecure. He at once mounted and followed his relative, whom he found stretched beneath a tree, unable to proceed from loss of blood. He there pinned him to the ground with his spear, and hastening to a neighboring stronghold, knocked loudly at the gate, and called for assistance, stating that his uncle was dying not far off. Of course the regent was found dead. The Sultan returned to his friends, and the next day hastened to Muscat, and reached there before the news of the regent's death. He immediately summoned the captains of the fortresses, and



when they were all present, he required that they should deliver up their respective commands, to such persons as he should name, under pain of immediate death in case of refusal. He appointed successors from his own tribe, and, has since observed the same policy in filling all offices in his government. In this manner, he obtained possession of the throne, in 1807, but held it as a tributary to Sa-houd Abdallah, the chief of the Wahabites, until 1816, who was that year subdued and conducted to Constantinople by the famed Ibrahim Pasha, and there publicly executed.\*

The Sultan is a brave warrior, as well as a pious Moslem, having lately made the pilgrimage to Mecca. Several years ago, when the government of British India was engaged in suppressing Arab pirates, (the Joassames) who infested the Persian gulf, he acted in alliance with the English.† He is the Haroun al Raschid of his time, and is as munificent as he is brave. Not long since, he sent a line-of-battle ship, called the *Liverpool*, to Bombay, as a present to the Honorable East India company; which, being declined, he sent to England, with his compliments, to William IV. The present was accepted, and a suitable gift sent in return; and in compliment to the Sultan, the ship was named the *Imâm*.

The Arabian Navy, under a blood red flag, at present, consists of seventy-five vessels, (built on the coast of Malabar,) carrying from four to fifty-six guns each. His principal officers were educated at Bombay or Calcutta, and his ships are in effective discipline.

The Sultan has two wives; the last one he wedded is a daughter of the Shah of Persia, and besides these, he has not less than twenty concubines, from Circassia, Georgia, and Abyssinia. He has seven sons; but the birth of a female child not being an event to rejoice for amongst the Arabs, passes without notice: the number of his daughters is therefore unknown.

A large portion of the Sultan's time is occupied at the divan, above mentioned, in hearing petitions, and administering justice in criminal cases. All litigation involving property is decided by four judges. There are no lawyers in the place, and the parties only advise and counsel with their friends. Theft is not common, but instances of personal quarrel are frequent, and are often decided on the spot, by an appeal to the *khunger* or sword. Murder is a capital offence, unless the relatives of the deceased are willing to commute the sentence

\* The History of the Ottoman Empire by Edward Upham, Esq. M. R. S. A. Philadelphia, 1833.

† Crichton's History of Arabia, in Harper's Family Library.



for money; in which case, they usually accept of one thousand dollars. Duelling is unknown, and Captain Calfaun expressed his astonishment that such a silly custom should prevail amongst sensible or rational people. "If a man insult you, kill him on the spot; but do not give him the opportunity to *kill*, as well as *insult* you."

The Arabs are of small stature, and have small heads. They are proud, hospitable, and taciturn; nor are they "moved with concord of sweet sounds," and, therefore, according to the immortal Shakspear,

*"Are fit for treasons, stratagems and spoils."*

Conversation, properly so called, is not common amongst them; which may be considered as an evidence of want of civilization. They are said to be cheats, and not trustworthy, by those who have dealt with them. It is not fair, however, to stamp the national character from what one sees or hears in the commercial cities of any country. Men, in all countries, morally lose by the constant practice of trading, particularly when it is in a small way, and are apt to make good bargains whenever they can; and, I suspect, it will be found, that the passions of man are the same all the world over, and generally swayed by his interests.

A most inflexible observance of the precepts of their religion, is a principal feature in the character of these people; for nothing will prevent them from praying at the appointed hour. The officer who came on board of the ship, before we arrived, never omitted prayer at noon, and at four o'clock in the afternoon. He never hesitated to signify it was his hour, and, spreading out his turban on the quarter-deck, turned his face towards Mecca, and went through his genuflexions and prayers with the same formality that he would have observed in a holy temple of the Prophet. One day, he had occasion to take medicine, but did not swallow it, till he had muttered a prayer, which, in his mind at least, increased the beneficial qualities of the potion, and then, with a look of pious resignation, drained the dregs.

That the important duty of praying "might not be neglected, Mohammed obliged his followers to pray five times every twenty-four hours, at certain stated times; viz. 1. In the morning, before sunrise: 2. When noon is passed, and the sun begins to decline from the meridian: 3. In the afternoon, before sunset: 4. In the evening, after sunset, and before the day be shut in: 5. After the day is shut in, and before the first watch of the night. For this institution, he pretended to have received the divine command, from the throne of God him-



self, when he took his night journey to heaven: and the observing of the stated times of prayer is frequently insisted on in the Koran, though they be not particularly prescribed therein." It is requisite, while they pray, that they turn their faces towards Mecca, and for this reason, that quarter is marked in the mosques by a niche, or by the situation of the doors opening into the galleries of the steeples. Those who are scrupulously pious, prepare themselves for prayer, either in a mosque or any place that is clean, and utter a certain number of praises or ejaculations, (which are counted on a string of beads) with certain postures of worship. "The Mohammedans never address themselves to God in sumptuous apparel, though they are obliged to be decently clothed; but lay aside their costly habits and pompous ornaments, if they wear any, when they approach the divine presence, lest they should seem proud and arrogant. They do not admit their women to pray with them in public; that sex being obliged to perform their devotions at home, or if they visit the mosques, it must be at a time when the men are not there: for the Moslems are of opinion that their presence inspires a different kind of devotion from that which is requisite in a place dedicated to the worship of God."\*

Education is not much attended to in the Sultan's dominions; children generally are only taught to read and write and recite passages from the Koran. The wealthy send their sons to Bombay, Calcutta, and occasionally to Persia, for instruction. Physicians study their profession in the latter country, but are not considered by the Arabs themselves trustworthy as surgeons. In this section of the East the Persian language is what French is in Europe, a court language, which all the educated speak. Some of those who have been educated in British India pay considerable attention to English. I saw in the house of one gentleman the novels of Scott and Cooper. As yet, the engine of knowledge and civilization, the press, has not been introduced into Muscat; and it is to be regretted, because under the government of so rational a monarch as Syed Syeed bin Sultan, it would be a perennial fountain of blessings and benefits to his subjects.

The coins used at Muscat are the "Shaka" of copper, valued at from 72 to 80 for a dollar. The small copper "gazee" is valued at 20 for one "Mahomedee," which is of silver, and valued at eleven for the dollar. But Spanish, Persian, and most of the coins of the east, are in free circulation.

On the morning of the tenth, we waited upon His Highness to take

\* Sale's Koran; Preliminary Discourse.



our final leave. We found him sitting in his divan, dictating to his secretary, who was seated on the floor with writing materials beside him, using his knee for a desk. During the interview, which was short, the Sultan, while the interpreter was speaking, turned to the secretary and spoke to him as if he were continuing the dictation.

"As you are about to leave us, Commodore," said His Highness, "I beg you will reflect whether there may be any thing farther that I can do for you; if there is, you have only to name it." He farther asked what should be done with the guns in the event of raising them. He next inquired, from what date the treaty should take effect, and Mr. Roberts begged His Highness to name the day, but he left it entirely to the decision of Mr. Roberts, who, after some hesitation, expressed his opinion that it should take effect from the day of its ratification by the President and Senate of the United States, namely, the 30th of June, 1834, more than a year past. The Sultan remarked, that it would then be necessary to refund a part of the duties which had been paid at Zanzibar since that time; nevertheless, as such was the opinion of Mr. Roberts, it should be in force from that date; and added, that it made no difference to him, because the customs at Zanzibar were farmed for \$110,000 a year to Banyans, who were aware, when making their bargain, that the treaty would take place, though they did not know at what time, and, therefore, had paid less, expecting the early ratification by the United States. This concession, which puts some hundreds of dollars into the pockets of our New England merchants, by whom the trade is chiefly carried on, filled the measure of the Sultan's liberality; for I believe it is not customary to consider the provisions of treaties binding, until after the exchange of their ratification by the governments between which they are negotiated.

Coffee and sherbet were served, as on former occasions; and we took leave, deeply impressed with a sense of gratitude for the kind exertions made by His Highness in our behalf, when in imminent peril, not only of shipwreck, but, also, of slavery, and even cruel death, had the ship been entirely lost. We shall ever entertain a lively recollection of his generous, benevolent, and noble conduct towards us upon this, as well as on all occasions; and we most sincerely hope that the government of the United States will take into consideration the debt of gratitude we owe, and make a handsome and appropriate acknowledgment to "His Gracious Highness," at an early period.

Both Mr. Roberts and the Commodore embraced this last opportunity of repeating our thanks to His Highness, for his many atten-



tions and acts of kindness, and we parted, filled with admiration of the many noble virtues which adorn the sovereign of Muscat.

The Governor of Muscat, Syed bin Calfaun bin Ahamed, was present, and left the palace with us. We returned to the house of Captain Calfaun, where Mr. Roberts wrote, at the request of the Sultan, the following letters:—

“To Masters and Supercargoes of American vessels at Zanzibar, or other ports within the dominions of His Highness, the Sultan of Muscat.

*Muscat, 10th October, 1835.*

“GENTLEMEN;

The commercial treaty negotiated by me, on the part of the United States, with His Highness Syed Syeed bin Sultan, the Sultan of Muscat, having been ratified and exchanged between the contracting parties, it is understood and agreed between His Highness and the United States, that the said treaty went into effect on the 30th day of June, 1834, being the day on which it was ratified by the President and Senate of the United States. All vessels, therefore, which have paid any higher rate of duties than is set forth in the said treaty, or any charges subsequent to the said 30th day of June aforesaid, are entitled to be refunded by the collectors of the customs of the various ports of His Highness for such overcharge.

Your obedient servant,

EDMUND ROBERTS,

Special Agent from the Government  
of the United States to the  
SULTAN of MUSCAT.”

“To Captain Hassan bin Ibrahim.  
Zanzibar.

*Muscat, October 10th, 1835.*

SIR;

I have the pleasure to inform you that the treaty contracted between His Highness, the Sultan of Muscat, and the government of the United States, went into full operation on the 30th day of June, 1834, being the day on which it was ratified on the part of the President and Senate of the United States. All vessels or merchandise, therefore, which have paid, subsequently to that period, any higher



rate of duties, or charges, than is set forth in the said treaty, a copy of which is placed in your hands by the Sultan, will be refunded by the collectors of the customs for any such overcharge. I have written, at the request of the Sultan, a letter similar to this, addressed to American Masters and Supercargoes, which will be forwarded to Zanzibar by the first conveyance.

Captain Hassan will please accept the good wishes of the undersigned for his health, happiness, and prosperity.

EDMUND ROBERTS."

"To American Masters and Supercargoes.

*Muscat, October 10, 1835.*

GENTLEMEN,

His Highness, Syed Syeed bin Sultan, of Muscat, wishing to prevent any collision between the government of the United States and His Highness, has requested me to make known to all Masters and Supercargoes, belonging to vessels of the United States, that the port of Mombas, in East Africa, being in a state of rebellion, is blockaded by His Highness' ships of war, and will so continue until it is again reduced to submission; and, therefore, no vessels will be permitted to enter said port, during the continuance of such blockade.

I have the honor to be,

very respectfully,

your obedient servant,

EDMUND ROBERTS,

Special Agent of the United States to the

SULTAN of MUSCAT.

After concluding these letters, we were informed that the Ouâli awaited to receive us. His house is a large one. We were led through a hall, where a crowd of servants salamed as we passed, and were ushered into a large room, on the second floor, with a lofty ceiling, and lighted by circular windows, glazed with panes of various colors. The floor was covered with fine Persian rugs, and the flat recesses, which we found in all the houses of Muscat, were ornamented with glass and French porcelain. In the centre of the room stood a table, covered with a camel's hair shawl, and loaded with dishes of cucumbers, grapes, almonds, quinces from Gambroon, holwah, confections of several kinds, and large tumblers of sherbert.



After partaking of this entertainment, coffee was served, in enamelled cups, of Persian manufacture, borne on stands of cut glass. Our handkerchiefs were then sprinkled with orange flower water, from an *arrosoir* of silver, and held over censers in which frankincense was burning.

The governor now conducted us to the house of his brother, where, pretty nearly the same ceremonies were observed. The rooms, however, were more gaudy, being furnished with rich rugs, and small ottomans, each one covered by silk or satin of a different color. The silver, *arrosoir*, the censers, and even the enamelled cups of Persia, resembled those we had seen at the governor's, so much, that it would have been difficult to distinguish one from the other. We took leave, and were accompanied to the boat by the governor and Captain Calfaun. There we shook hands; good wishes were mutually and heartily bestowed, and we parted.

It is a universal custom, amongst the nations of Asia, to make gifts to each other on all occasions of friendly intercourse; and, in negotiating treaties, the nature and value of the presents is always a point of grave consideration between the contracting agents. In conformity with this usage, a variety of articles was presented to the Sultan by the United States, amongst which were a sword and altagan, with gold scabbards, and mountings, Tanner's map of the United States, an American flag, a set of American coins, several rifles, a number of cut glass lamps, a quantity of American nankin, known as Forsyth's nankin. &c. &c.

#### A TREATY OF AMITY AND COMMERCE

BETWEEN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA, AND HIS MAJESTY  
SYED SYEED BIN SULTAN OF MUSCAT AND HIS DEPENDENCIES.

ART. I. There shall be a perpetual peace between the United States of America and SYED SYEED bin SULTAN and his dependencies.

ART. II. The citizens of the United States shall have free liberty to enter the ports of his majesty, Syed Syeed bin Sultan, with their cargoes, of whatever kind the said cargoes may consist, and they shall have liberty to sell the same to any of the subjects of the Sultan, or others who may wish to buy the same, or to barter the same for any produce or manufactures of the kingdom, or other articles that may be found there. No price shall be fixed by the Sultan or his officers, on the articles to be sold by the merchants of the United States, or the merchandise they may wish to buy, but the trade shall be free on



both sides, to sell, or buy, or exchange on the terms and for the prices the owners may think fit; and whenever the said citizens of the United States may think fit to depart, they shall be at liberty so to do; and if any officer of the Sultan shall contravene this article, he shall be severely punished. It is understood and agreed, however, that the articles of muskets, powder, and ball can only be sold to the government, in the island of Zanzibar; but in all other ports of the Sultan, the said munitions of war may be freely sold without any restrictions whatever to the highest bidder.

ART. III. Vessels of the United States, entering any port within the Sultan's dominions, shall pay no more than five per cent. duties on the cargo landed, and this shall be in full consideration of all import and export duties, tonnage, license to trade, pilotage, anchorage, or any other charge whatever. Nor shall any charge whatever be paid on that part of the cargo which may remain on board unsold and re-exported. Nor shall any charge whatever be made on any vessel of the United States, which may enter any of the ports of his Majesty, for the purpose of refitting, or for refreshments, or to inquire the state of the market.

ART. IV. The American citizen shall pay no other duties on export or import, tonnage, license to trade, or other charge whatever, than the nation most favored shall pay.

ART. V. If any vessel of the United States shall suffer shipwreck on any part of the Sultan's dominions, the persons escaping from the wreck shall be taken care of, and hospitably entertained at the expense of the Sultan, until they shall find an opportunity to be returned to their country, (for the Sultan can never receive any remuneration whatever for rendering succor to the distressed;) and the property saved from such wreck shall be carefully preserved and delivered to the owner, or the Consul of the United States, or to any authorized agent.

ART. VI. The citizens of the United States, resorting to the ports of the Sultan, for the purpose of trade, shall have leave to land and reside in the said ports without paying any tax or imposition whatever for such liberty, other than the general duties on import, which the most favored nation shall pay.

ART. VII. If any citizens of the United States, or their property, shall be taken by pirates, and brought within the dominions of the Sultan, the persons shall be set at liberty, and the property restored to the owner, if he is present, or to the American Consul, or to any other authorized agent.



"ART. VIII. Vessels belonging to the subjects of the Sultan which may resort to any port in the United States, shall pay no other or higher rate of duties, or other charges than the nation the most favored shall pay.

"ART. IX. The President of the United States may appoint consuls to reside in the ports of the Sultan, where the principal commerce shall be carried on, which consuls shall be the exclusive judges of all disputes or suits, wherein American citizens shall be engaged with each other. They shall have the power to receive the property of any American citizen dying within the kingdom, and to send the same to his heirs, first paying all his debts, due to the subjects of the Sultan. The said consuls shall not be arrested, nor shall their property be seized, nor shall any of their household be arrested, but their persons and property shall be inviolate. Should any consul, however, commit any offence against the laws of the kingdom, complaint shall be made to the President, who will immediately displace him.

"Concluded, signed and sealed, at the Royal Palace in the City of Muscat, in the Kingdom of Aman, the twenty-first day of September, in the year one thousand, eight hundred and thirty-three of the christian era, and the fifty-seventh year of the Independence of the United States of America, corresponding with the sixth day of the moon, called "Jamada Alawel," in the year of Al Hajra, (Hegira) one thousand, two hundred and forty-nine."

The ratification of the above treaty, on the part of the United States, bears date, June 30th, 1834. The following certificate is appended to the copy of the treaty, in the possession of the State Department.

"This is to certify, that on the thirtieth day of September, Anno Domini, one thousand, eight hundred and thirty-five, corresponding to the sixth day of the moon, called "Jamada Althani," in the year of Al Hajra, one thousand, two hundred and fifty-one, EDMUND ROBERTS, a special agent of the United States of America, delivered and exchanged a ratified copy of a treaty, signed at Muscat, in the kingdom of Aman, on the twenty-first day of September, one thousand eight hundred and thirty-three of the christian era, corresponding to the sixth day of the moon, called Jamada Alawel, in the year of Al Hajra, one thousand, two hundred and forty-nine.

"In witness whereof, I have hereunto set my hand and seal, at Muscat aforesaid, on the sixth day of the moon, called "Jamada Althani," in the year Al Hajra, one thousand, two hundred and fifty-



one, corresponding to the thirtieth day of September, one thousand eight hundred and thirty-five of the christian era.

SYED SYEED BIN SULTAN.

The above treaty is written upon parchment in the Arabic and English languages; its provisions are binding from the date of its ratification by the government of the United States.



SKETCHES IN HINDOOSTAN.



SKETCHES IN HINDOOSTAN.



## CHAPTER X.

## SKETCHES IN HINDOOSTAN.

*October, 1835.*

Just as the sun set, on the tenth of October, we fired a farewell salute, and, with a gentle land breeze, bade farewell to the barren rocks of Oman, anxious to be far away from its 'green waters,' beneath a less ardent sky. Our passage was marked by light airs, calms, and sultry weather. On several occasions, while crossing the Arabian sea, we remarked the phosphorescence of its waters at night; and when about two hundred miles to the southward of the classic Indus, we were visited by several beautiful land birds. In the sultry calm, which generally prevailed about mid-day, we saw a number of yellow water snakes, marked by bright black bands, floating lazily upon the mirror-like bosom of the sea. And, on two or three nights, we saw Halley's comet, which had been so long anticipated by astronomers.

On the evening of the twenty-second, we descried the lighthouse of Bombay, and, after firing in vain for a pilot, dropped anchor in sight of a large fleet of fishing-boats. Early the following morning, we were again under way; a pilot boarded us, and about midday the ship was fast to the moorings assigned to her. We had the pleasure to find the *Enterprise* had been waiting our arrival several days; and the officers of the two vessels allowed but little time to elapse before they met.

"Of all places in the noble range of countries so happily called the Eastern World," says Captain Basil Hall, in his amusing '*Fragments of Voyages and Travels*,' "from the pitch of the cape (of Good Hope) to the islands of Japan, from Bengal to Batavia, nearly every hole and corner I have visited in the course of my peregrinations, there are few which can compare with Bombay. If, indeed, I were consulted by any one who wished, as expeditiously and economically as possible, to see all that was essentially characteristic of the orien-



tal world, I would say, without hesitation, 'Take a run to Bombay; remain there a week or two; and having also visited the scenes in the immediate neighborhood, Elephanta, Carli, and Poonah, you will have examined good specimens of most things that are curious or interesting in the East.' "

The harbor of Bombay is formed by a number of islands, situated in the vicinity of the main, which shut in a beautiful sheet of water, of several miles in extent. The land is generally not very high, and the island of Bombay itself, though studded with some few hills, is low and marshy. There is a sufficient depth for the largest ships, and a tide that rises and falls seventeen feet.

From the anchorage, there is nothing striking, either in the appearance of Bombay, or of the harbor, except its extent; and after reading the paragraph quoted above, one feels a very considerable degree of disappointment, to see nothing but an extensive fortress, of no great height, built of hewn stone and darkened by time; nothing appearing above it, except one needle-like spire of a presbyterian church. With what degree of allowance we are to receive the impression conveyed by the said paragraph, in relation to the scenes on shore, is a matter we may not at present decide; yet, we certainly did not anticipate much from the picture after a glimpse of its setting. Perhaps the warm colors in which travellers so commonly draw pictures of places they visit, too readily fire the imagination, warmed by the anticipation of seeing new countries, and betray the judgment into too exalted notions; thus bringing disappointment upon the visiter and discredit upon the traveller, whose description he may have read, without, however, the traveller being really to blame. I have sometimes ventured to think, in these book-writing times, that books of travel are often 'got up' as a pleasant recreation for the home-staying, rather than with a view to afford them a substitute for travel, by presenting accurate portraits of places visited. The writers seem to be satisfied that the world had rather be amused than instructed, and to care little whether their works serve or not, as guides to those who may follow in their track; but I do not accuse them of obedience to the trite command, "Never spoil a story for the sake of the truth."

About five o'clock in the afternoon, when the sun's rays were not so intense as at midday, we pulled for shore, and made our way to the 'new bunder.' Near the shore, rode a crowd of small craft at anchor; in their construction, resembling the *däus* of east Africa and Arabia. Their beaks and stems are high, their masts rake for-



ward, and every one had a square box, or a platform slung over the side amidships, on which might be seen a half-naked Hindoo, performing ablution or other personal service. A most common sight on board these craft about this hour, was that of a knot of half naked sailors, intently engaged in a minute and mutual inspection of heads; but they never would be taken on this account for phrenologists. These vessels were from Goa and other places on the Hindoostanee coast. The numerous boats, plying to and fro, their hulls shaped like a half melon, carried latine sails, which appeared to us very large, until we observed, they make up in spread what they want in density or closeness of texture.

Scarcely had our feet touched the inclined plain or slip of stone, terminating the long mole, called the 'new bunder,' before a half dozen palanquins were offered to our acceptance, the bearers importuning us, much after the fashion of porters and hackney-coachmen on the arrival of a steamer at the wharves of New York or Philadelphia. A palanquin is an oblong box, seven feet long, two and a half wide and four high, having sliding doors or blinds on either side, by which the passenger is admitted, and which may be left open or closed at his pleasure. The interior is lined with calico and trimmed with silk curtains; a thin mattress or cushion covers the floor, on which he reclines: at the head there is a pillow, and at the foot a shelf for the accommodation of hat, &c., and a round pillow to place beneath the hams. A thick pole, about five feet long, secured by iron staunchions, projects from each end: by means of these the carriage is borne on the shoulders of four bearers of brawny frames, who, with the exception of a turban and kummerband, or cloth tied about the loins, go naked; they travel as fast as a horse ordinarily trots; the motion is tremulous and wearying, until one becomes accustomed to it.

The evening being pleasant, we preferred walking; besides, I felt, I must confess, a repugnance to be carried about on the shoulders of men; a prejudice I did not entirely get rid of while at Bombay. As we pursued our walk along the bunder, we saw numerous equipages, and noticed a small house for the accommodation of custom-house officers on the look out for contraband. It was a novel sight to see kummerbanded Hindoos, turbanded Banyans, and lofty capped Parsees in white, sitting in English-built buggies, driving active horses, having a Hindoo, in a white costume, running alongside with a hand on the shaft, or just ahead, ever and anon crying out, "paish," to warn foot passengers out of the way. Buggies, phaetons, stanhopcs



and palanquins, were passing in and out of the castle as we entered it. The castle or fortress has a double ditch or fosse, and two walls; the entrance, therefore, is over two drawbridges, and through two gates, at both of which are English sentinels, who are particular in giving the appropriate military salutes to passing officers.

The night was held as a festival, in celebration of the Hindoo new year. About seven o'clock, we strolled through several streets to the bazaar, which we found crowded with people from all parts of the East. The whole place was brilliant with lamps of cocoanut oil, generally constituted of a tumbler half full of water with the oil floating thereon, suspended in a glass globe. Nothing can be more amusing to a stranger than this scene. The illumination was brilliant and the crowd great. Here were stalls filled with tobacco and arecanuts, which the shopmen were cutting with shears, into small pieces; next, a tippling shop where arrack was sold, conspicuous in the bright lamp-light, by the red color of the barrels; and then perhaps a stall filled with confections. In the crowd were numerous children, borne on the arms of their attendants, decorated with tinsel and silk skull caps of various colors; and, from the dark pencilling of the eyelids with antimony or soot, looking grotesquely enough. Presently we halted in a crowd, gazing at a huge mask in a Chinaman's shop, that was so contrived as to open and shut the eyes and mouth in continuous succession. All seemed to be a dumb show; no one spoke above his breath; there was no hum of human voices, such as would arise from such a moving mass of heterogeneous human beings in any part of the christian world.

We strolled about for an hour, elbowing our way, first to one side and then to the other, at each moment beholding something novel. Fatigued at last by our wanderings, we turned our ways to the new bunder and embarked.

The next day I employed, as "dubash," a Parsee of polite exterior, and accompanied him to examine several houses which were to rent, with the view of establishing on shore as many as could not be otherwise accommodated, while the ship should be in dry dock undergoing repair. I had scarcely landed, before I was in a palanquin, accompanied by a Hindoo, who bore a Chinese umbrella, with which to protect me from the sun wherever I might go. This functionary, who is termed a "Mussòl," I found, on many occasions, to be a very useful *attaché*. My Parsee dubash carried his own parasol, and walked near the palanquin, pointing out every thing we passed. After looking at several establishments, I found one in



“Rampart Row” that suited us. The dubash was left to make the necessary arrangements, and the following day, at five o’clock P. M. according to promise, we found our house furnished, supplied with servants, and dinner on the table.

One cannot conceive easily the mode of living in Bombay. The dubash was the right hand man—the *fac totum*, who supplied every thing we desired. Our little establishment required a butler or steward, whose business was to take care of the pantry and table: he was a Parsee, and for his religion’s sake, would not meddle with fire, nor drink out of any thing belonging to us; and his own cup, which was of a sort of brass, he did not touch with his lips, but when he drank, held back his head, and poured into his wide open mouth a stream of water. The cook was a half caste Portuguese, and, though there was a cistern of fine water at hand, he required a man, who was of the Parboo caste, to draw it for him, besides a Hindoo, to perform the duties of a scullion, and keep the glass lamps in order. Fuel was supplied by women; and two came every day to sweep the street before the door, and to remove all immundities from the premises. Besides these menials, each one of us had his mussòl and palanquin bearers, as occasion required.

The ship was docked, and we found the injury so extensive, that it was necessary to put on a new false keel, and caulk and copper the bottom, for which every facility was kindly offered by the officers of the Honorable East India Company. The dock yard is extensive, and contains all the necessary appliances for repairing ships. There are two fine docks, each one capacious enough to contain three vessels at the same time; but, owing to the bar at their entrance, not capable of receiving the largest size ships of war, without the laborious and tedious process of buoying them over the bar, by the aid of camels and casks. Bombay has many claims to celebrity for her ship-building and naval arsenal. The builders and mechanics are generally Parsees, who are said to be assiduous and skilful; but owing to their peculiar manner of working, do not accomplish in the same space of time so much as Europeans usually do. The feet are as much employed as the hands; and the carpenter sits upon the ground, holding the plank or wood, upon which he was at work, between his feet, while the hands manœuvre the plane or saw, as occasion may suggest.

Having taken proper precautions against mosquitoes, the tormenting little bores of humanity in the East, we slept soundly in our new lodgings, and the next day set about seeking information relative to



the place of our sojourn; but, never in the whole course of our wanderings, in different parts of the world, have we found it more difficult to obtain local knowledge. Those persons who, we presumed, possessed information, of the kind we sought, either had it not, or were not free to communicate it; and many of those to whom we were so bold as to address questions, either looked puzzled, or gave indefinite and evasive answers. Yet we were happy in being very kindly and very hospitably entertained, but do not think it becoming to individualize, by making public acknowledgments for private courtesies.

The periodical press of Bombay affords little matter of general interest. The Bombay directory, which is irregularly published, contains an almanac and the official registers, and some of the laws relating to *the Company*. "The Oriental Christian Spectator," published monthly, at the "American Mission Press," is interesting to the friends of the missionary cause, in all parts of the world. The "Bombay Government Gazette" appears weekly, on a sheet of foolscap size; its columns are filled with notices and proclamations, in the English, Hindoostanee and Mahratta languages. The "Bombay Gazette" and the Bombay Courier," are bi-weekly, and twice as large as the last. Then, there is the "Price Current," and a weekly paper, entitled "Bombay Hurkaru and Vurtuman," edited by a Parsee, in the Hindoostanee language.

The "Bombay Gazette" for October 24, 1835, contains the following polite notice of our arrival, which may be interesting to Americans, as it is in a slight degree indicative of the notions entertained of them by Englishmen generally, though not universally.

"The arrival of the American ship of war in this port, reminds us of some rumors which were afloat last season, regarding the object of American ships of war in the Indian seas, and particularly, of their making Muscat their chief destination. The burden of those rumors was, that the Americans were wishful to establish a factory at Muscat, and had applied to the Imaum for a license for that purpose. It was even said, that their application was in so far successful, until a remonstrance on the subject had been forwarded to the Imaum by the Admiral. Whether Jonathan's views are to be directed to the same purpose on this present occasion, we have no means of ascertaining; although, from his known perseverance, we should not be surprised to find the affirmative to be the fact."

The preceding pages of this work show, pretty clearly, what weight *the Admiral's* remonstrance had with the Sultan of Muscat,



and will explain to the editor of the "Bombay Gazette" 'the object of American ships of war in the Indian seas,' should the volume, by any chance, fall in his way. At an interview of some British officers with "His Highness of Muscat,"—it may have been on the occasion of presenting the above named remonstrance,—they spoke to him disparagingly of the United States, and said they formed an insignificant nation, in the eyes of Europe. "How can that be?" replied the Sultan: "I see in my ports ten of their ships for one of yours, and I have read, they flogged you in two wars."

I am not surprised that the editor of the "Bombay Gazette" should so far mistake the policy of the government of the United States as to imagine that we are desirous of establishing factories abroad. I have seen this notion alluded to, and expressed, by several English writers, whom we would have supposed better informed in the matter. As an instance of the prevalence of this notion, I may be excused for adding the following sentence, quoted by Stephen Kay, in his interesting "Travels and Researches in Caffraria," before quoted, from the "South African Quarterly Journal" for 1830. "Should this bay (Delagoa) fall into the possession either of the Americans, the French, or the Russians, it would be most ruinous, not only to the Cape colony, but to our East India possessions and commerce, either in peace or war; and in war, as being one of the finest ports in the world, whence inimical enterprises might issue at pleasure."

We can assure all those gentlemen, they have nothing to apprehend from us, on the score of foreign factories and colonies, at least for the present: being entirely opposed, both in principle and practice, to the system of monopolies, our motto will be, for centuries to come,

**"FREE TRADE, AND SAILORS' RIGHTS."**



## CHAPTER XI.

## SKETCHES IN HINDOOSTAN.

*November, 1835.*

THE small island of Bombay, situated on the Malabar coast, in latitude  $18^{\circ} 56'$  north, and longitude  $72^{\circ} 57'$  east, being about ten miles in length, and three in breadth, gives its name to the whole presidency of Bombay. It is separated from the island of Salsette, on the north, by a narrow strait, half a mile wide, called the river Mahim, which is crossed by a causeway, or viaduct, which connects the two islands. Bombay castle, which stands on the southern end of the island, is eight or ten miles distant from the main land. The island is generally low and level, and is traversed by fine Macadamized roads. The soil is fertile during a great part of the year, but, being frequently flooded in the rainy season, the climate is unhealthy: the most prevailing diseases are intermittent and typhoid fevers, and dysentery. For a long time after it was first visited by Europeans it was regarded with horror; few persons had courage to reside where the climate was so fatal, that it was a proverbial saying, "The life of man was equal in duration to that of two monsoons." When first taken possession of, the fields were overgrown with bamboos and palms, and were manured by decayed fish; and marshes and pools infected the atmosphere with their exhalations. These destructive miasms would have driven the English away, had it not been that the island has the best harbor in all Hindoostan; the only one, except that of Goa, capable of admitting ships of the line; they secured to themselves this important matter, and, by opening and draining the country, succeeded in depriving the climate, in a very great degree, if not entirely, of its insalubrious qualities. Now, instead of



marshes and pools, the island presents the aspect of an extensive and well cultivated garden.

There are few springs on the island. Fresh water is supplied from large cisterns, or tanks, which are filled by the rains; but it is not considered wholesome, nor does it preserve well at sea; therefore, vessels carrying passengers usually call at Ceylon, in their way to Europe, for this important article. A singular disease is said to arise from the use of Bombay water; an insect, or worm, is conveyed from it into the system, which, after a time, makes its appearance upon the surface of the body, in a vesicle, frequently as large as half a hen's egg. When this vesicle is opened, the extremity of a white thread-like worm is perceived, surrounded by a gelatinous fluid. To remove the disease, the end of the animal is seized, and gradually wound on a dossil of cotton wool, a few turns being taken daily until the whole is extracted. It is necessary to proceed thus cautiously; for, if the animal be broken, it retires to make its appearance at some other point, when the same steps are to be taken. The animal occasionally attains several feet in length, and it causes severe pain to the patient; a servant on board suffered many weeks from one, which first made its appearance in the calf of the leg.

The walls of Bombay are about three miles in circumference. The streets are Macadamized, and cross at irregular angles. The houses are lofty, many being five or six stories high; and they are built, generally, in the Portuguese style. The town contains one indifferently kept inn, several churches, two circulating libraries, a company library, which is a branch of the Asiatic library, and a reading room. The public buildings are the Town Hall and Mint; the former has a pretty portico, which is disfigured by a great flight of steps; it stands on one side of an open square, in the centre of which there is a monument and cenotaph, in commemoration of Lord Cornwallis, which receives votive offerings, in the form of garlands and flowers, such as are given to the deities of the Hindoo system of worship. The theatre has been recently disposed of, and converted to other purposes.

The population of the island has been variously estimated; but in the most recent report we find it set down at 230,000 souls, who occupy 20,786 dwellings, grouped into the several towns designated, Bombay castle, Dungaree, Mahim, Byculah, and Colabah. But the following census of 1828, given in the "Asiatic Journal" for March, 1829, will give, probably, a better idea of the varieties of the human race, living on the island of Bombay.



## CENSUS OF THE ISLAND OF BOMBAY.

English	938	Portuguese	8,020
Parsees	10,738	Jews	1,270
Armenians	39	Moors	25,920
Hindoos	82,592	Mabars	3,005
Chinese	48	Military	10,000

Floating population, 20,195.

To this is added an Anglo-Asiatic population of pure European descent, estimated at 5,000, including English and Portuguese: there are no less than nineteen different languages spoken upon this piece of land, which contains little more than eighteen square miles.

Bombay is the centre of the trade of western India, and is an entrepôt for the countries bordering the Red Sea, the east coast of Africa, Arabia, the Persian gulf, a large part of the Indian Archipelago and China. European and American vessels therefore find cargoes here from the greater part of India, which consist of drugs, spices of various kinds, Batavia and Goa arrack, Cashmere shawls, cornelians, agates, cotton wool, &c., for which the English "Company ships" and "free-traders" exchange cotton and other European manufactures. The amount of cotton imported into Great Britain from all India, in 1823, was 180, 233,795 pounds' weight. The export from Bombay, from the first of January to the 23rd of October, 1835, was 66,871 candies of 784 lbs. each; equal to 52,426,664 pounds. Of this 41,100 candies went to Great Britain; 24,565 to China, and 1,206 to France. Perhaps it will not be exceeding the truth to estimate the export of cotton wool, at 75,000 candies a year.

The chief trade with China is in sandal wood, cotton wool and sharks' fins, for which teas and Chinese manufactures are returned. Many fine ships employed in this trade, are owned by Parsees and native merchants. The extent of the English trade is very great, but I have no definite data in relation to it.

The trade between Bombay and the United States does not exceed, at present, six or eight vessels a year. They carry out a few articles of provisions, tobacco, &c., their masters or supercargoes being furnished with letters of credit, which authorize them to draw bills on London for the amount of funds they may require. They purchase drugs, elephants' teeth, dried fruits, &c., which find their way hither in native vessels from the various countries before mentioned. Large quantities of copal are carried to the United States, where it is manufactured and again returned in the form of copal varnish and sold at a large advance.



The rate of exchange in November, 1835, for bills on London at six months sight, was two shillings for each rupee, or ten rupees to the pound sterling, dollars at that time being worth two and a quarter rupees each.

Accounts are kept by merchants in rupees, quarters and raes; but the government keeps its accounts in rupees, annas and pice. The coins now in circulation, issued from the mint at Bombay, are the whole, half, and a quarter rupee of silver, and the half and quarter anna and pice of copper. The relative value of these coins is, as follows:

5 Raes (an imaginary coin)	}	make	{	1 Pice
5 Pice				1 Anna
16 Annas or 80 pice				1 Rupee
100 Reas				1 Quarter Rupee
400 Reas or 4 quarters				1 Rupee

There is no gold coinage in circulation.

There is a post-office, and a mail carried over the greater part of India; and recently mails have been sent to Europe in a steamer, up the Red Sea to Suez, and thence by way of the Mediterranean. Should this be continued, which is doubtful, it will be the means of drawing India much nearer to Europe; the average passage from England to Bombay, by the way of the cape of Good Hope, is 121 days, but by the new route it may be reduced to forty-five.

“The government of Bombay and its dependencies is by law vested in a governor and three counsellors, who are, in respect to the native powers, to levying war, making peace, collecting and applying revenues, levying and employing forces, or other matters of civil or military government, under the control of the government general of Bengal; and are, in all cases whatever, to obey their orders, unless the court of directors shall have sent any orders repugnant thereto, not known to the government general, of which, in that case, they are to give the government general immediate advice. The court of directory appoint the governor and members of the council, and likewise the commander-in-chief of the forces: the latter is not, *ex officio*, to be of the council, but is not disqualified from being so, if the court of directors shall think fit to appoint him; and, when a member of the council, he takes precedence of the other counsellors. The civil members are to be appointed from the list of civil servants, who have resided twelve years in the service of India. The method of conducting business at the council board is as follows:—matters propounded by the President are first proceeded upon: he may adjourn the discussion of



questions put by other members of council, but not more than twice. All orders are expressed as made by the governor in council. The governor has power to act contrary to the opinions of the other members of the council, taking upon himself the whole responsibility. On such extraordinary occasions, the governor and counsellors are to communicate to each other their opinions and reasons by minutes in writing, and to meet a second time; if both retain their first opinions, the minutes are entered on the consultations, and the orders of the governor are to be valid, and put in execution.”\*

The island of Bombay was formerly under the Mogul dominion, but ceded to the Portuguese in 1530, by whom a fort was erected on the south-east extremity of the island, its fine harbor indicating it as a desirable place for establishing a factory. In 1661, the island was ceded by Portugal to Great Britain as a portion of the Infanta Catherine's fortune on her marriage with Charles II. The mortality of the king's troops was so great, and there being no advantage derived by the crown from the possession of Bombay, the expenditure being greater than the receipts, His Majesty, in 1668, transferred the Island to the Honorable East India Company, in free and common soccage as the manor of East Greenwich, for which the East India Company became bound to pay the annual rent of £10, in gold, on the 30th September each year. In 1681, Bombay was a dependency of Surat; but in 1683, it was erected into a Presidency, and in 1686, became the head station of the company, on the western side of India. Until the beginning of the eighteenth century, the settlement of Bombay languished, in consequence of the ravages of the plague and other causes, which induced the Mogul's admiral to invest it, in 1668, by whom it was very closely pressed, Mahim, Mazagon and Sion being captured, and the governor and garrison besieged in the fort. Submission being made to Aurengzebe, he withdrew his forces from the settlement. In 1776, the island of Salsette, 18 miles long and 14 broad, was obtained by cession from the celebrated intriguer Ragoba, or Rogonath Rao, on condition of restoring him to the supreme power as Peishwa or head of the Mahratta confederacy.

On the downfall of the Mysore dynasty in the south of India, it was deemed necessary by the Marquis of Wellesley, to crush the domineering power of the Mahrattas under Dowlut Rao Sindiah, Holkar and the Rajah of Berar; and, in the war which followed, the battle of Assaye, 23d September, 1803, may be said to have given

\*Milburn's Oriental Commerce. London, 1825.



supremacy to the British influence in the west of India. On the termination of hostilities in December, 1803, with Sindiah, the valuable districts of Broach (1600 square miles) in the province of Guzerat, having the gulf of Cambay on the west, was ceded to the Bombay Presidency; as was also the strong fortress of Ahmednuggur, in the province of Aurungabad, which had been previously captured by General Wellesley, in August, 1803, with some other places of minor importance. In 1816, Mandavie, the chief sea port of Cutch, latitude  $22^{\circ} 50'$  north, longitude  $69^{\circ} 33'$  east, together with Angar, were ceded by the governing power to the East India company, and placed under the sway of the Bombay Presidency.

The ambitious and treacherous designs of the Peishwa in 1817, against the British, by whom he had been elevated to power and supported in his dominions so long, was the means of extending yet more the territories under the Bombay Presidency. The war waged by the Marquis of Hastings, against the Mahrattas and Pindaries, settled the fate of western India, and in 1818, the northern and southern Concân, 12,270 square miles; Kandeish, 12,430 square miles; Poonah, 20,870 square miles; Dharwar, 9,950 square miles, and various territories, &c., in Guzerat, became the dominions of the British in India; the whole of the Bombay Presidency now forming an area of 64,938 square miles, and a population of upwards of seven millions of souls.

The northern and southern Concân, forming the more southern sea-coast territories of the Bombay Presidency, extend along shore from Dumaun to Malabar, about 220 miles by 35 miles inland, embracing an area of 12,270 square miles, and presenting a congeries of steep rocky mountains, rising in some places to the height of from 2000 to 4000 feet, as abrupt as a wall, while most part of the table land, to the eastward, is of difficult, if not of impracticable access for wheeled carriages. The Ghant in general gradually declines towards the sea, possessing in some places fertile rice tracts, irrigated by numerous mountain streams. The coast is indented with small bays and shallow harbors or coves, with rocks, ravines and chasms; the island of Bombay containing  $18\frac{1}{2}$  square miles, including Colabah and Old Woman's Island, being little more than a cluster, or double bank of once detached whinstone rocks, through which the sea and Goper river flowed, but of which, the retreating ocean, from the western side of India, has now permitted the consolidation into an islet, by means of two sand-belts at the northern and southern extremity of each ledge of rocks, and these natural causeways, now changing into rock, are rendered more secure by the construction of



artificial dams, by which, at spring tides, the ingress of the sea is prevented. There are no rivers of magnitude on the Concan coast. When ceded to the British, in 1818, almost every hill had a fortification, and every rock of an inaccessible nature a fortress, all of which are now rapidly crumbling into decay.

The districts of Surat, 1850 square miles; of Broach, 1600; of Ahmedabad, 4600; of Kaira, 1380 square miles, all in the province of Guzerat, cover an extensive portion of wild sea-coast, as well as hilly, jungly and mountainous country, with many fertile tracts, cultivated and waste, watered by several noble rivers, such as the Nerbudda, Taptee, Mahy, Mehindry and Sabernutty; but not available for commerce like the Ganges. The Bombay government possesses a political control in the rich mineral provinces of Cutch, a district abounding in coal and iron, and evidently indebted for its origin to a volcanic eruption at some distant period.

The north-west quarter of the ancient district of India, termed the Deccan, is under the administration of Bombay, and affords in its general features, a complete resemblance to the European kingdom of Hungary, and like the latter, though of exceeding fertility in some places, yet in many parts, owing to the mountainous and rocky nature of the country, it is exceedingly barren.

The collectorates of Poonah and Ahmednugger, embrace an area of 20,870 square miles, of an irregular country; elevated 2000 feet above the level of the sea, intersected by many rivers and streams, flowing through the most lovely valleys that the sun ever shone on, overtopped by hills 1000 feet high, of the trap formation, with the scarped summits peculiar to that species of mountain, and crowned by natural fortresses of a highly picturesque aspect.

Candeish, another British district in the Deccan, of 12,430 square miles in extent, is an extensive, fertile and well-watered place; interspersed with low barren hills, at the base of which run numerous, ever purling, limpid rivulets, flowing from the table land into the Taptee: a large extent of country is still under jungle. The only remaining territories of the Bombay Presidency are the collectorates of Dharwar, Sattarah and the southern Jagheers containing 9,950 square miles, situated in the south-west quarter of the Deccan. The western districts in the vicinity of the Ghauts are extremely rugged; the eastern tracts are less Alpine, affording more level country where the rocks, which in some places stud the surface, are buried in a rich black mould. The Ghauts along this district are not so much broken into masses, but present to the view continuous lines of mountainous forests; and along the course of the principal



rivers, Keishna, Toombuddra, Beema, and Gutpurba, the country is exceedingly rich and picturesque.

It will be seen from the foregoing, that a large portion of the British dominions in the east is made up of the possessions of princes, who, either themselves or their descendants, now enjoy stipends paid to them out of the public revenues. These princes first became connected with the English by subsidiary alliances and ceded territories, in return for military protection—others lost their dominions by the chances of war, while some territories were taken under control from the absolute incapacity of the rulers, or their tyranny, which, in mercy to the unhappy sufferers, the English, (kind souls,) could no longer permit to exist. The princes of the first and last classes are formally installed on the Musnud, allowed to exercise sovereignty over the tenants on their household lands—they are exempted from the jurisdiction of the British courts of law, have their own civil and military functionaries, with all the insignia of state, and a British Envoy usually resident at their court, whose duties chiefly relate to their pecuniary affairs, or the ceremonies of sovereignty. The following is an abstract, in round numbers, of their stipends.

When granted.	Titles of Princes.	Stipend in Rupees.*
1803	Emperor of Delhi and Family,	15,00,000
1801	Soubahdar of the Carnatic,	11,65,400
—	Families of former Soubahdars,	9,00,000
1798	Rajah of Tanjore,	11,83,500
1770	Soubahdar of Bengal,	16,00,000
—	Families of former—ditto,	9,00,000
1795	Rajah of Benares,	1,43,000
1799	Family of Hyder Ally and Tippoo,	6,39,549
—	Rajahs of Malabar,	2,50,000
1818	Bajee Row,	8,00,000
1818	Chimnaje Appah,	2,00,000
	Vinaeck Row,	7,50,000
	Zoolfikur Ali,	4,00,000
	Himmut Bahudoor's descendants,	60,000
	Benaeck Row and Seeta Bacc	2,50,000
	Govind Row of Calpee,	1,00,000
	Nawab of Masulipatam,	50,000
	Total Rupees,	1,08,91,449
	Or, at the rate of 2½ rupees per dollar,	\$4,840,644

\* One hundred thousand make a *lac*, and the table is pointed in accordance with this mode of reckoning.



Nearly one half of the East Indian territory is held by governments in subsidiary alliances with the British government, the general terms of the treaties with whom, are, on the side of the English, protection against external enemies, and on the other, a submitting in all political relations with foreign states, to the arbitration and final adjudication of the British government; a specific force is furnished by the East India Company, and a territory equivalent to the maintenance of the troops ceded by the former. The subsidizing state is also bound to keep on foot a specific contingent force to act in subordinate co-operation with the subsidiary. The protecting power is not to interfere with the internal arrangements of the protected states, but, in cases of exigency, it reserves the right, in general, to assume the whole of the resources of the protected state. The subsidiary force is liable to be called out to protect the legal succession to power, but not to be employed between the head of the government and its zemindars, or chiefs.

The following is given as a list of the Princes, the military protection of whose territories is undertaken by the British government.

Princes.	Their Capitals.	Territory in Sq. Miles.
King of Oude	Lucknow	25,300
Soubahdar of the Deccan	Hydrabad	108,800
H. H. the Quikwar	Baroda	36,000
Sindia and others	Gualior	42,400
Holkar and others	Indore	17,600
Rajah of Nagpore	Nagpore	62,270
Ras of Cutch	Bhooj	6,100
Rajah of Mysore	Mysore	29,750
Rajah of Travancore	Travancore	9,400
Rajah of Cochin	Cochin	

Total population, 15,000,000.

Two of the foregoing (Oude and Mysore) can scarcely be styled stipendiary, the former being almost entirely dependent on the British government, and the latter recently ordered under the direct management of the Madras Presidency, owing to long misgovernment. The charges include revenue collection, political, judicial and police, maintenance of provincial battalions, customs, mint, &c. The balance remaining after these deductions, go to the purpose for which the territories were granted,—namely, the military protection of the government which assigned them.

Besides the foregoing governments, there are several minor prin-



cialties with whom engagements or treaties have been entered into, agreeably to the peculiar circumstances of each, but with general stipulations applicable to all; namely, that the protected state maintain no correspondence of a political tendency with foreign powers without the privity or consent of the India government, to whom the adjustment of its political differences is to be referred: they are perfectly independent in their internal rule, but acknowledge the supremacy of the India Government, when the interests of both powers are concerned: the troops of the protected state act in the field in subordinate co-operation to the British forces, the latter being empowered to avail themselves of natural or other advantages, in the allied country, against an enemy when necessary. No asylum for criminals or defaulters is to be afforded, but every facility given to effect their apprehension in the state. Europeans not to be employed without British permission. According to the resources of the protected state, a tribute is required, or a military contingent to be kept in readiness, or service to be rendered according to the means of the protected power. The states thus protected, but without subsidiary alliances, are, 1. Siccim and the Sikh and Hill states; 2. The Rajpoot states; 3. Jaut and other states on the right bank of the Jumna; 4. Boondelah states; 5. States in Malwa; 6. States in Guzerat; 7. States on the Malabar coast; and 8. The Burmese frontier.

States not under the British protection, are Scindia, the Rajah Dholapore, Barree, and Rajah Kera, (formerly Ranee of Gohud) Rungeet Sing of Lahore, the Ameers of Scind, and the Rajah of Nepal.

The British Feudatory Chiefs, so far differ from the former class, that while the protected chiefs had treaties concluded with them as independent powers, the *feudatory* have had their allegiance transferred to Great Britain by their feudal superiors, or by the event of war. In most cases the lands which they held as a life tenure, have been converted by the India government into a perpetuity, and the chiefs are permitted a supreme control on their own lands. Among the number of these chiefs, may be mentioned the Putwardhun family, of which there are nine chiefs—the Soubahdar of Jansi, chief of Jauloun and Calpee, family of Angria (the Mahratta pirate,) numerous tributaries in Kattywar and in Guzerat, the Rajahs of Shorapoor and Gudwal, the Seedee of Jinjeera and other Abyssinian chiefs. Independent of these states the East India company's government have treaties with other surrounding nations; viz. with Persia the Company are in alliance, and have a resident at the court of the sovereign.



With Cochin China, Siam, Caubul, Nepaul, and Ava, the intercourse of the company is principally of a commercial nature, but they have residents stationed at Nepaul and Ava; with the Sultan of Muscat, and with other chiefs on the western shores of the Persian gulf, the Company have treaties for commercial purposes, and with a view to the suppression of the slave trade, and of piracy in the gulf. In order to secure the fulfilment of these treaties, the Company have established political agents on the shores of the Persian and Arabian gulfs.

Before closing the subject, it may be desirable to mention an independent chief of great talent, wealth and power, with whom the British government is on terms of friendly alliance; I allude to Runjeet, or Ranajit Sing, whose country includes not only what is called the Punjaub, and the whole of the lovely and important valley of Cashmere, but also considerable tracts of territory beyond the Indus, from Tatta in the south, to Thibet on the north, and from Caubul on the west to beyond the Sutlej on the east. This formidable potentate possesses an army of six thousand regular cavalry, forty-three thousand three hundred irregular horse, twenty-three thousand infantry, organized and commanded by Frenchmen, several excellent brigades of horse, (fifty-eight guns,) and foot (one hundred and forty-two,) artillery; nine mortars; 305 swivel guns on camels; 108 guns in different forts; an immense arsenal at Amritsir, and a vast treasury (his annual revenue in rupees 18,000,000) at Govind Garrow.\*

CENSUS of the Bombay presidency, from a table of statistics of the Deccan by Lieutenant Colonel Sykes, and other documents laid before Parliament.

Collectorates.		Square Miles.	No. of Villages.	Houses.	Population.
Deccan.	Bombay,	18	—	20,786	230,000
	Poonah,	8,281	1,897	114,887	558,313
	Ahmednuggur,	9,919	2,465	136,273	656,376
	Khandeish,	12,527	2,738	120,822	478,457
	Darwar,	9,122	2,491	187,222	838,575
	S. Jagheerdars,	2,978	917	—	778,183
	Sattara, do.	6,169	1,703	—	736,284
	Concan, S.	6,770	2,240	—	656,857
	Concan, N.	5,500	—	—	387,264
	Surat, &c.	1,449	655	108,150	454,431
	Broach,	1,357	400	55,549	239,527
	Ahmedabad,	4,072	728	175,926	528,073
	Kaira,	1,827	579	127,201	484,735
Total population of the Bombay Presidency,				- - -	7,037,075

\* The New Bombay Directory, for 1836.



In the Deccan, which includes an area of 48,987 square miles, and a population of 3,285,985, the average number of mouths to the square mile is 67.08, and the proportion of males to females about 100 to 86; the Mussulmans form only from 6 to 8 per cent. of the whole population, the Mahrattas from 60 to 70 per cent., the Brahmins from 5 to 10 per cent., the Rajpoots from 3 to 6 per cent, and out-castes, &c., from 9 to 10 per cent.\*

The government of the Bombay Presidency, and of British India in general, it is asserted, is administered with benevolent mildness and equal justice; and the native subjects enjoy greater security in their property and citizen rights and privileges than they did previous to the conquest. In the present day, there are few who have reason to complain of the severity of the government, whatever may be their treatment by private British residents. Various evidence may be gathered from the "Asiatic Journal" that the English adventurers in India, who have embarked upon their own resources, are not all members of the moral and respectable classes which distinguish their mother land. They are complained of as rapacious, cruel, and insubordinate, particularly in those sections of country wherein indigo is cultivated. Indeed, were we to look at those districts alone, we might question whether the condition of the mass of population has been improved by the change of rulers; the yoke of Britain bears almost as heavily as that of their former princes. It must be borne in mind that the natives, however capable they may be, are not eligible to any very important office under the government. In fact, the best educated and the most influential amongst them are merely used as convenient instruments to collect revenue for the British; particularly in those provinces which are tributary to the government.

We might ask whether it would not be sound policy, as well as justice, to make the natives feel it their interest to support the government, and teach them, that upon its stability must depend their hopes and fortunes. "I cannot comprehend how giving men those interests in the state, without which no state can have any real value in their eyes, can increase their wish, any more than their power, to destroy it. I have heard of common sailors making off with the ship and cargo, but never of the proprietor joining in such an act. I never heard even of an Irish gentleman robbing himself and running away."†

\* The New Bombay Directory, for 1836.

† Curran.



The facts connected with the rise and progress of the British dominion in the east must fill with admiration those who will contemplate them. From a charter of exclusive trade, first given in the year 1600, to a few "merchant traders," which was renewed from time to time, has risen an empire of almost indefinite extent, and in which, with great reason, the English glory not a little. Of the wrongs and insults heaped upon the Asiatics, by the British, in their many conquests; of the cunning policy they pursued, and of the many instances of treachery practised by them, it is not our purpose to speak. The ends may justify the means; or, we will be satisfied by being told that necessity was, on all occasions, the reason for culpable acts, though an elegant writer assures us, that *necessity* is urged as the excuse and apology of tyrants for their vilest deeds. Let them boast, with the Marquis of Hastings, that "The influence and authority of the British nation extend from Ceylon to the mountains which border upon China, and from the confines of Ava to those of Persia, over ninety millions of subjects."\* In the new world we envy them not their power nor possessions in the east. On the contrary, we wish them success in teaching the creed of political liberty to the oriental world, equal to that which crowned their efforts in the west. And may few centuries roll away, ere knowledge and christianity elevate the debased Asiatics to the exalted level of their British rulers, and enable them to enjoy rational liberty, without subsidizing foreign troops to protect them from themselves!† The dominion of the British in India may be contemplated in the light of a political mission, sent with the benevolent purpose of disseminating true knowledge, and of teaching how men may enjoy most freedom at the least cost of feeling and treasure. To this it will come in the end. And then may England be as proud of this child as she now ought to be of the United States, the most precocious of her offspring. Let a free and well conducted press pour forth its fertilizing streams of knowledge upon the fallow mind of the vast multitude, and they will acquire that love of free agency which God has planted in the human heart, and soon rally round a flag that promises to lead them to independence of the foreign yoke which now represses their best energies. The time may come, however distant it may appear, when both insular and continental India will be free and independent; but that time cannot arrive until the mysterious and superstitious

\* Crawford's Embassy to Siam and Cochin China.

† Vide, Sir John Malcolm's Political History of India.



rites of the Boudhist, or Hindoo and Mohammedan creeds shall have faded away before the lights of christianity and true knowledge. Christian missionaries are sowing now the seed which will produce a harvest of worldly freedom, if not "crowns of glory and mansions in the sky."

There are several circumstances which are tending to the amelioration of India. Education is as freely and as extensively imparted to the people as possible; but the country is drained, or rather draining of money constantly, by those who accumulate wealth here to spend in England, which will lead the Company to give up their charter, and it will be found that the dominion of India will not be worth the cost of preserving. It is beyond our means to estimate the amount of money annually sent from India to England, to pay the numerous pensions and the allotments of those in active service, for the support of their families at home. The country must feel effects similar to those experienced under the absentee system in Ireland; and it can be no pleasing reflection to philanthropic England to think that the country containing 100,000,000 of inhabitants is poorer this day, than when it was before she swayed its destinies.

---

## CHAPTER XII.

### SKETCHES IN HINDOOSTAN.

*November, 1835.*

ON the first day of November, being Sunday, we visited St. Thomas's church. It contains within its walls some pretty monuments, erected to the memories of individuals who have ended their days in India. Lines of punkas, or great fans, suspended from the ceiling, were moving to and fro to cool the worshipful and worshipping congregation, who sat in ornamented and cushioned pews; entirely forgetting, we thought, that commandment, which inculcates keeping holy the Sabbath-day. Hindoos were on the outside of the temple,



pulling cords, which, passing through the walls, are attached to the punkas, and thus out of sight, managed to keep up a circulation of air. This is certainly a luxury at prayer; but does it square with keeping holy the Sabbath day, in which "thou shalt do no manner of work; thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy man-servant nor thy maid-servant, thy cattle nor the stranger that is within thy gates." How can we expect Hindoos, or others, to abandon the creeds of their fathers, to embrace that of christianity, while they see nominal Christians, performing merely the ceremonies of the religion which they urge upon them, and at the same time, even in the very temple, disregarding one of its chief precepts. These poor Hindoos cannot be so low in intellect, as to be uninfluenced by example.

To use a technical phrase, there is "quite a revival" in religious matters at Bombay: religion, morality, and temperance are the order of the day; and if their precepts be observed, we should hope therefrom a happy result.

After the sermon, which was so wretchedly delivered that we would not undergo a similar infliction, the parson published the banns between a spinster and a bachelor. Beyond these, I observed nothing essentially different from what we are accustomed to see in churches of similar denomination in our own country. The salary of the minister is 14,400 rupees, or \$6,400 per annum, which, if the situation were open to competition, should secure, with equal nicety, better talent than has fallen to the lot of the present incumbent. This is one of many of the improprieties of the onerous church system of England, which is carried out and kept up, throughout her immense dominions, without much regard to expediency.

The rides about Bombay are pleasant, and offer to the stranger an endless variety of subjects for remark. One afternoon we rode out to Nonparel, to see the country residence of a well known Parsee merchant. We passed out of Church gate, upon an open common or esplanade of a mile or more in extent. To the right, were numerous tents, belonging to the officers of the native regiments, and to the left, bungalows or permanent tents, surrounded by small gardens, tenanted by officers and their families. At the hour of five o'clock P. M. every day, the road is crowded with equipages of all kinds, hurrying to the country, or simply for a drive before dinner, the usual hour for which is seven o'clock.

The first vehicle we passed was a buggy, in which sat two Parsees, and at their feet a Hindoo driver, who ever and anon cried "paish" to some pedestrian, or water-carrier, loaded with two bright copper



vessels of water, suspended within a foot of the ground by cords from the ends of a bamboo, which was balanced over the shoulder. Then the poor fellow, entirely naked, except the langôty, (a string tied about the hips to support a *delantal*, in front;) bent forward and with an effort, hurried out of the way to one side of the path. The collarless white muslin frock, reaching to the knee, over short white pantaloons; the long sharp-toed slipper; the high, purple or chocolate-colored cap, figured with white flowers, the lofty bearing and mustached upper lip which characterize the Parsee; the skull cap, white frock, the light white drawers, and dark skin which mark the Hindoo driver, contrast curiously in the stranger's eye, with the English harness and vehicle in which they ride.

Next came a barouche, containing four English ladies, driven by Hindoos, and behind stood two Hindoo footmen in red frocks. This dashing equipage was followed by a crazy old gig crowded by three sleek Banyans in red turbans. Then we met a cart, drawn by water-buffaloes, bearing a hogshead which poured water into a trough behind, pierced with holes, from which it issued in numerous threads, to lay the dust, which otherwise would make riding any thing but agreeable.

Numerous Hindoo females, in a sort of spencer, closely fitted over the breast, with tight sleeves, reaching half way to the elbow, and a calico cloth of dark color, wrapped twice round the body, falling in full drapery about the limbs, and the end passed backwards under one arm, then over the shoulders so as to cover the head, were seen picking up buffalo dung, which is dried and used for fuel. The females, who are the hewers of wood and drawers of water in India, are seen along the road, engaged in the most laborious employments. Some are bearing great jars of water on the head; some, baskets of fish; some are sweeping the road, and others more distant from the town, are reaping grass. Notwithstanding their menial occupations, like the Jewish damsels of old, they display a fondness for flowing robes and tinkling ornaments; almost all wearing bangles of white metal upon their ankles, glass rings upon their arms, ear-rings and nose jewels.\* They are occasionally seen, however, with the dress

\* There are many things seen every day in the East to remind us of the descriptions, and of the allusions to ancient manners and customs, to be found in the sacred writings. Isaiah tells us, Chapter III., that "Because the daughters of Zion are haughty, and walk with stretched-forth necks and wanton eyes, walking and mincing as they go, and making a tinkling with their feet," the Lord will smite them. "In that day the Lord will take away the bravery of



or robe tucked lightly between the limbs, the legs bare above the knee, and the bosom scarcely hidden, offering no very attractive sight to the recently arrived European of either sex.

When we had nearly crossed the esplanade, we came up to a tank or great well, surrounded by men and women; some were pounding clothes with stones to make them clean; some were scouring their copper water vessels, and others filling them. Some were moving away and others arriving; and as often as I passed the spot, whether in the morning or at the close of the day, the same scene was presented.

We entered the town of Dungaree, which being inhabited by Asiatics, is *par excellence* usually called the "native town." The streets were alive with people of every caste, male and female, old and young. Here we met two-wheeled vehicles, called hackeries, crowded with natives, or rather Asiatics, drawn by buffaloes, whose horns were ornamented with red paint. One of these hackeries, consisted of a platform of straw, above the wheels and extended beyond them, upon which sat the passengers *à la Turque*; another, was a kind of cart with a small triangular body, shut in by curtains, and generally occupied by females. Besides the laboring women already mentioned, we occasionally met females of a better order, attired in bright colored silk robes, but barefoot, and loaded with "tinkling ornaments" on the ankles and rings on the toes.

The houses are ancient in appearance, and disfigured by small wooden verandas, and pieces of wood, painted red and blue, jutting from the walls. The roofs are of red tiles. The order of architecture is a non descript, partaking something of the Portuguese. The larger dwellings are three or more stories high, and have some claims to style. But altogether the scene at Dungaree is too complicated in its *dramatis personæ* for successful description. The strange costume of the females, and their unbecoming employments; the absence of costume in the males; the variety of equipages; the runners trotting ahead of the horses, like pioneers to clear the way; the incessant cries of "paish;" the hackeries and the watering carts; buffaloes laden with skins of water, following its venders; Bramhūn priests in

their tinkling ornaments about their feet, and their cauls, and their round tires like the moon; the chains, and the bracelets, and the mufflers; the bonnets, and the ornaments of the legs, and the head-bands, and the tablets, and the ear-rings; the rings, and nose-jewels; the changeable suits of apparel, and the mantles, and the wimples, and the crisping pins; the glasses, and the fine linen, and the hoods, and the veils."



yellow robes; naked devotees smeared over with clay or dust; occasional droves of long horned, lazily moving buffaloes; all these, mingle in streams, setting in opposite directions through the almost endless street of Dungaree, and put description at defiance. There is no grandeur, nothing that recalls to mind those pictures of eastern magnificence which are so apt to seize upon the imagination and dwell in the memory. On the contrary, the scene is of poverty and wretchedness, brought into strong relief by the occasional appearance of the equipage of some dashing English nabob and his flaunting liveries. Whatever may be the elegance and condition of society among the English conquerors in the east, there can be little doubt, that the mass of the people are poor and miserably wretched, if they possess one single spark of that feeling, which we are accustomed to consider as a common attribute of humanity. Where the officers of the government, whether civil or military, in spite of their extravagant salaries, manage to get plunged into debt, a man must suffer for the common comforts of life who receives at most the paltry pittance of two or three rupees, less than a dollar and a half a month, which is true in the case of the common laborers. Yet they do exist on a little curried rice and fish. Clothing they have little, nor do they seem to desire more. In most instances their dwellings are sorry hovels, scarcely adequate to shelter pigs, at least in the rainy season. Can energy of character be looked for amongst a people so badly fed and so poorly lodged? The Sepoys employed by the Honorable Company, receive seven rupees (three dollars and ten cents) a month, out of which they are obliged to supply themselves with uniforms.

Continuing our ride, we passed a long row of coppersmiths' shops, and about five miles from Bombay, the church of Bycullah, the residence of a greater part of the American missionaries. Two miles farther brought us to the house of our Parsee friend, situated near Nonparel, a dwelling, or palace of the governor of Bombay. Our friend's retreat consists of two buildings. One is about one hundred feet long by forty broad, and is one story high. It forms a long saloon, with a tessellated marble floor, having a range of dormitories on one side. In the centre is a divan, and around the walls are numerous sofas, mirrors, and lamps. The other building is two stories high, almost as large, and stands at right angles with the first; so that a broad veranda is continuous along the back of the first and in front of the last. From its ceiling are suspended many lamps, for which articles every body in Bombay seems to have great admiration. The second story is handsomely furnished with pier-tables, mirrors, sofas,



and a fine carpet. To this establishment are attached a garden, stables, coach houses, &c., in keeping with the whole. In the neighborhood are several other mansions, greater in extent and much more magnificent in every respect.

In one of our rides we stopped at the entrance of a Hindoo temple, in the middle of the town of Dungaree, into which crowds of natives were entering, being a holiday, in consequence of an eclipse of the sun. We passed through a small gate, and found ourselves in an area, enclosing a square tank, each side of which was about a hundred yards long. On one side was a broad pavement, and on its margin next the water were two white square pillars, twenty-five or thirty feet high; on the left was a row of low huts, containing idols, into which we were not allowed to enter. One of these idols was a three-headed black bust, which a Hindoo told me was "God Almighty," and another next to it, was "God Almighty number two." In front of the first was an image of the Nūndee, represented lying down. I gave the man a piece of silver, which he immediately bestowed into the hands of an officiating priest for the latter.

The air was filled with pigeons flying to and fro, alighting occasionally on the temples; but they were evidently alarmed at the din caused by a concourse of men and women, plunging and splashing in the tank, for the purpose of ablution, believing that an eclipse renders them unclean, and during its continuance they observe a rigid fast. Many resort to the sea, which they think is equally efficacious in removing the impurities to which they deem themselves subject.

At the end of the pavement, opposite to that at which we entered, was a sort of hut, covered with branches and thatch, beneath which sat a Bramhūn devotee. Excepting a very small allowance of langōtee, he was entirely naked. His hair, beard and face were matted and smeared with mud, and his body and limbs covered with dust. He appeared to be sixty years of age, and looked more the demon than the saint. His left arm was shrivelled and bent at the elbow, and on the outspread palm, which was turned upwards, rested an earthen pot, in which was growing a small plant. Around it were placed sticks; a wooden spoon to receive alms was secured across it, and a string of brass bells ornamented the bottom. The whole was attached to the hand by a cotton bandage. The devotee was sprightly. He has a pair of cunning dark eyes, and his face is free from that sullenness of expression, which, in general, distinguishes religious enthusiasts. He reports that he has held the flower-pot, in the position above described, for twenty-five years; nor has he in that time, cut



either his hair, his beard, or his nails. By the practice of such austerities he hopes to attain absorption into nature, the perfection of Hindoo beatitude, while he secures in this world the respect and homage of all who approach his temple. The finger nails were very long and twisted like rams' horns. I attempted to measure that of the thumb, but he would not allow me to touch it, but permitted a Bramhūn to do so for me. It was ten inches and three-quarters in length. I bestowed a piece of silver in the alms' spoon, for which he returned thanks, or perhaps invoked Shivū's blessing.

To attain a state of perfect apathy of the feelings and of the passions is the great aim of the Hindoo devotee. A gentleman told me, that one of these wretches, who was entirely naked in the street, was pointed out to him by a native triumphantly, as the most pious man in India; because, forsooth, he was so destitute of shame, that covering for his body was rejected; the earth was his bed, the sky his canopy, and the food he consumed was bestowed in charity—"But," inquired my informer, "suppose the charitable were to refuse to feed him, what would he then do?"

"That is supposing an impossibility, for no man would so far risk offending the gods as to refuse his mite to a Bramhūn so truly pious."

A few yards farther on, was another devotee, smeared with mud, but of not more than thirty years of age. He was standing near a fire, resting one foot on a stone, and blowing a great conch-shell trumpet. His swelled cheeks, and red, starting eyes; his posture, the fire and the crowd standing near, dappled with the light of the flame, for it was now past sunset, and they were lighting up the temples; the almost deafening roar around us, added to a horrible stench, rendered the whole scene more like what one would imagine pandemonium to be, than a temple of worship. Every moment seemed to increase the crowd and the noise, and we quitted the orgies in feelings of deep disgust.



## CHAPTER XIII.

## SKETCHES IN HINDOOSTAN.

*November, 1835.*

ON the 17th of November, we attended the levee of the Governor, Sir Robert Grant, held at the town hall, where we saw a number of the officers of the army and navy. At two P. M. the native officers were received separately, this part of the presentation being what is termed a "darbar." The ceremony was an agreeable sight, from the variety of handsome uniforms present on the occasion.

On the twentieth we attended, by invitation, an examination of the native female schools, under the superintendence of the American mission, and under the immediate care of Miss Farrar. We arrived about ten o'clock A. M. Many English ladies, and several officers of the civil service had already assembled. Notwithstanding an eclipse of the sun, which, it was feared, might cause parents to retain their children at home, not less than a hundred and fifty little girls of from six to twelve years of age, and of different castes, were present. The native teachers, who are of all castes, were in their best attire. One of them, a Banyan, wore a red turban composed of a bandage or fillet two inches wide; the turns of which, after covering the top of the head, were laid one over the other sixty times, like a riband, so as to form a rim three inches wide, which set diagonally on the head. A yellow silk robe, hung full from the hips, like a petticoat about the legs, and a red Cashmere shawl, worth perhaps one hundred dollars, was folded square over the shoulders. A pair of very broad-toed red slippers completed this truly picturesque costume of the pedagogue, who bore no resemblance to the severe, black-coated gentry of the tribe who were wont, in old times, to infuse at once, terror and learning by the use of the birch.

Besides Europeans, several Hindoos, and one old Mohammedan, but none of the parents of the children, were present. The Asiatics



manifested very little interest in the examination; what their opinions were on the subject, I did not ascertain.

The children were strikingly different, in appearance, from any I have before seen collected on similar occasions. Their complexions were from the light yellow brunette of the Parsee, approaching to white, to the almost black of the Hindoo castes. Their heads were remarkably small, and many were nearly naked; while others were gaily dressed and decorated with bracelets, bangles, ear-rings, nose-jewels, finger-rings and toe-rings of gold or silver. Many wore bright colored silks, richly embroidered; but one little girl of eight years old, who was very small for that age, drew our attention on account of her costume. It consisted of a blue satin spencer, almost hidden in gold needlework, and a silk petticoat, between the top of which and the bottom of the spencer, were disclosed two inches of naked skin. Rings of gold encircled her wrists and ankles, as well as every finger and toe, to say nothing of those which were pendent from her ears and nose. In addition, a silk mantle or scarf was flung negligently over the shoulders.

The little girls commenced the exercises by singing a hymn in the Hindoostanee language; after which they read in classes, and readily replied to the questions put to them. Some read short descriptions of animals, represented on cards. Their needle-work was exhibited and praised by the ladies present. The examination terminated very satisfactorily, and I was fully impressed, that the plan of educating native females must succeed, and, in the course of time, be attended with very beneficial results throughout India.

The great obstacles against which the missionaries have to contend, are the prejudices of caste. These are incredibly strong. Those of different castes will not, on any account, eat with each other, and the exercise of humanity and benevolence is confined to the distressed of their own respective sect exclusively: their charity begins at home, and generally ends where it began. The following anecdote, extracted from the "Bombay Gazette" for February 25th, 1835, is sufficiently illustrative of this inhuman prejudice.

"On Thursday last the remains of a Brahmin woman were discovered at Mahim by the offensive smell coming from a house by the side of the public road. On examination, it was found to be a woman, from forty to fifty years of age, who had lived at Mahim for several years, and was known by the people of the place to have been for a long time in indigent circumstances. The neglected state the house was found in, and every thing about it, showed the greatest



wretchedness and privation. The deceased being a Bhutnee Brahmin, and subsisting on charity, her not being seen for several days, did not attract any attention, and when discovered the features were scarcely recognisable.

"It was said, she was an out-cast from her own tribe, on account of her having, after the death of her husband, married a Mussulman, and to this was attributed her state of destitution."

I have long entertained the opinion, that the little success attending the missionary labors in general, is owing to the demonstration of too much religious zeal on their part, without any attempt to show the worldly advantages attending on a full belief in christian doctrines. Greater success might be anticipated, if the minds of the mis-believers were first prepared by instruction in general knowledge, before attempting to convince them of the religious errors in which they live. We are not aware of more than three or four distinguished instances of conversion to christianity, effected by missionaries, where the individuals have been through the remainder of their lives intrinsically pious. Next to the love of his native home, there is nothing a savage or heathen entertains so strongly in his bosom as his religion, no matter what may be its tenets. It seems plausible to suppose, that a man must be first capable of appreciating positive facts before he can comprehend abstract truth; therefore, his prejudices may be most readily removed by such knowledge as will lead the mind to a contemplation of things beyond the immediate vicinity of his home; things which may be turned to account in this world of ours. I am happy to find, that Major General Sir John Malcolm has expressed a similar opinion. "It appears, however, to be generally admitted by the most able as well as pious of their members, that no rational hope can be entertained of success in propagating Christianity until a foundation has been first laid by a more general diffusion of knowledge. This conviction has been acted on for the last twelve years."\*

The present plan of instructing native female children, and for the execution of which Miss Farrar is entitled to high praise, is judicious.

It is to the influence of woman that most systems of religion owe their propagation; France is indebted to Clotilda the wife of Clovis for the establishment of christianity in her dominion. Though woman be lauded for her sweetness, her docility, her capability of accommodating herself to all circumstances and assuming every tone, we must not always expect to find her all complaisance, all submission, and in

\* The Political History of India. London, 1826.



all obedient; on the contrary, it is a part of her nature to resist control, to dispute empire with an obstinacy proportioned to her means, and sometimes against all reason—*Ce qu'une femme veut, Dieu le veut*—therefore, let the women once enlist fairly in the cause, which is their own, for christianity is the only religion which places them upon an equality with men, and the creeds of Bramhū will fall before the advancing of the cross.

In a very few years, by education, females must be raised from the abject condition of being the hewers of wood and drawers of water to a level with, if not superior to their lords and masters. Children will receive instruction from their mothers, and grow up free in a measure at least, from the besetting and blighting prejudices which now prevail; and in a second generation the same will be true, even to a greater extent. Already the feeling against caste has received a shock, and the little girls associate together, without much repugnance, and their parents, for the sake of what they learn from their worthy instructors, suffer them to attend the schools.

Our missionaries bear, and I believe most deservedly, a very high character, amongst the English at Bombay, who declare them to be far more active and successful than their own countrymen. And I can but regret, that the authors of the "History of British India," as well as Bishop Heber, should have passed them by unnoticed, when speaking on the subject. The extensive printing establishment, where the manual labor and composition of types are performed by natives, at present under the management of Mr. Webster, speaks volumes for them. It is the source of great numbers of school books and tracts, as well as translations of the sacred scriptures, into several languages of the East.

However strongly opposed many may be to foreign missions, and blame the zeal with which they pursue their labors, I think it cannot be denied by the unprejudiced, that the missionaries have sacrificed much of worldly comfort, if not aggrandizement, to devote their lives, distant from their homes, to the benevolent purpose of setting misbelievers in the true road to worldly happiness at least. It must be evident to the dullest comprehension, that most of them have capacities and energies which would procure for them more of this world's wealth, amidst their friends, in the most blessed country on the face of the globe, than they attain by taking up the staff and scrip of a missionary. They are content, with an humble subsistence, to pass through existence, exposed to the influence of insalubrious climates, to the wear and tear of mind and body, incident to their profession, and but too often to the world's contumely and misrepresentation.



## CHAPTER XIV.

## SKETCHES IN HINDOOSTAN.

*November, 1835.*

EVERY day we were visited by borahs or pedlars, offering various articles for sale; amongst which were quantities of cast off military clothes and worn English books, generally from the libraries of officers who had returned to England, or whose necessities exceeded their means. This not unfrequently happens, in spite of very large salaries, from the very extravagant modes of life which young men fall into on their arrival in India. We have known of a commendatory letter, in the possession of a man, declaring him to have been the *head* servant of a gentleman, who signed himself an Ensign in one of the native regiments.

Jewellers brought their wares, cornelian and agate necklaces from Cambay, diamonds from Golconda, and other trinkets. But what we most admired were ladies' work boxes, card cases, &c., beautiful in their workmanship, particularly when we see the few tools employed in their manufacture. The exterior of these little fabrics is covered with mosaïc, composed of minute pieces of ivory, ebony, white metal like silver, and a composition of glue and dust of a fine wood, while the interior is lined with odorous sandal wood.

Trafficking with these pedlars was the source of much diversion to our little mess; for invariably, after the most solemn protestations, that they were losing by the bargain, they received often less than half of the price first demanded. On these occasions, our Dubash was present, as he said to "protect master," but in fact with an eye to his own interests; for he always insisted that all claims should be cancelled by drafts upon himself. And when they were presented, he took the liberty of deducting from one to ten per cent., according to circumstances, for prompt payment. This is a perquisite of the Du-



bash, who, from the mode of making purchases of borahs, exercises amongst them a considerable patronage, and influence, often equally advantageous to both parties.

Among other daily visitors were numbers of female beggars. One young woman with fine eyes and white teeth, bearing an infant astride her hip, and leading a child four years old by the hand, was wont to come every two or three days; and when alms were bestowed, she first touched her forehead with her hand and then the ground, at the same time the elder child bent forward its little head to the earth and embraced my feet, exhibiting a most touching and graceful sense of gratitude for our small pittance. My right hand man, Cowasjee, told me not to give to any beggar, because he or she would direct all the beggars in town to the house, and we should have no peace. Generosity is certainly becoming in a beggar; and what can be more generous than pointing out to others the source whence we have derived succor? No one can be happier than your true professional beggar, if he possess the splendid imagination which has been set down as an attribute of the cloth.

“Les gueux, les gueux,  
Sont les gens heureux;  
Ils s'aiment entre eux.  
Vivent les gueux!  
Des gueux chantons la louange.  
Que de gueux hommes de bien!  
Il faut qu' enfin l'esprit venge  
L'honnête homme qui n' a rien.”

One morning a tall, slender Hindoo, with an intelligent face, loitered before the door as if he wished to see or ask for something. He had on a kummerband, much worn, and a cotton skull cap, from beneath which hung a profusion of black curls. His scanty costume showed, at a glance, that he differed from all of his caste I had before seen. They are deficient in muscle, and their lower limbs are remarkably small, almost without calf; but the individual before me presented that clean developement of the muscular system which would arrest the attention of a student of anatomy, or a statuary. Though small, every muscle and sinew were in strong relief. Quickly perceiving that he had attracted notice, he sprang forward with a smile, bowing almost to the ground, and extending the right hand, in which he held an earthen jar, and at the same time, touched his forehead with his left. He was accompanied by a man, carrying a bag, and a



boy with a rude drum slung over his shoulder. When the master spirit made his bow, the man squatted upon the ground, and the boy began beating his instrument.

"Heh! heh! heh!" grunted the Hindoo in quick expirations, as he glanced his sparkling eye over the ground, and cut a caper which set strings of bells on his ankles to jingling. Up into the air flew the earthen jar, which was received on the back of the right hand, where it was kept dancing for a moment, and then on the extended arm while the other was a-kimbo. Into the air it flew again, and was caught between the shoulder blades, and there seized and laid upon the ground.

"What is all this, Cowasjee?"

"Master, please see *jongleur* from Madras?"

"Certainly—let us see all the wonders of India."

"Heh! heh! heh!" ejaculated the *jongleur*, dancing with two broad-bladed swords resembling an apothecary's spatulas, which he tossed in the air, catching them in the hand opposite to that from which they had been thrown, at the same time dancing to the rapid beating of the drum. A third sword was handed to him, and the three were kept in motion, the bells on his ankles jingling in time to the music.

A stout bamboo, ten feet long, having a block or foot piece, secured four feet from one end, was handed by his companion. By this time a number had assembled to witness the performance. The *jongleur* very politely requested more room, and the assemblage retired to a sufficient distance. He ran about ten yards and sprang upon the bamboo pole, placing his feet upon the block, and, holding the end close to his breast, stood erect; balanced nicely on this single stilt six feet from the ground, he managed to jump round with perfect facility.

At the conclusion of this, as he did at that of each feat, he made his bow and then knelt upon the ground. He now rested the point of a sword upon his forehead, and while nicely balancing it, he put fifteen or twenty small beads into his mouth, then folding his arms behind his back, strung them on a horse-hair, aided only by his lips and tongue. While this certainly difficult performance was acting, his companion rang two bells and sang some Hindoostanee or Maharatta verses, the intonation of which brought to mind the *Llaravis* of Peru. After this, he performed several feats of balancing various small articles on his nose, lips, and chin; then he tossed a stone ball, six inches in diameter, thirty feet into the air, and caught it between



his shoulders, where it struck with a force apparently sufficient to knock him down. He then caused it, by the action of his muscles, to roll over the shoulders and up and down the arm, in a manner to give it the appearance of animation. He next swallowed a sword, and while it was in his throat, folded his arms over his chest and danced for several minutes. He concluded the exhibition by slipping between and beneath the eyelids, a button to which was suspended a small bag, containing the stone ball, weighing at least six pounds. This he raised from the ground, and for a moment swung it from side to side, like a pendulum, but it seemed to give him pain. For all this entertainment he received a half rupee, and a few pice from the bystanders, and went his ways apparently well satisfied with his gains.

One morning two Hindoos spread a rug before the door, and drew from baskets which they carried, two cobras di capello, or hooded snakes, five feet long; two dark colored snakes of the same size, and a coluber, here called, incorrectly however, *boa constrictor*, twelve feet long, all alive. The coluber appeared languid, and only interested us on account of his size; but the cobras, which, from their venomous character, attracted most attention, erected their heads and spread their hoods, while the other two began to run off, but were quickly brought back. The cobras struck several times at their keepers, who were careful to avoid their bite, though, after irritating them in various ways, they seized them by the tail and placed them on the ground beneath the rug. One of the *jongleurs* sat himself, cross-legged near it; the black snakes now began to wind themselves round his arms and over his shoulders, and gazed steadfastly in his face, while his companion squatted at a distance, where the coluber had coiled himself in the sun, and was apparently asleep. The chief snake-charmer, after caressing the snakes which were crawling so harmlessly over his naked body, put them on the ground, and, rolling his eyes upwards, as if internally communing with himself, muttered a few words. He then very cautiously raised up the rug and shook it, but both cobras had disappeared. He gazed about with a look of inquisitive stupidity, and hastened to a basket, and removed the cover, and, to our surprise, both the missing snakes reared up their heads. In the same fashion he charmed them away from the basket. His tricks were performed admirably, and well worth the pice bestowed upon him by the spectators.

On two or three occasions we were amused by most ludicrous exhibitions of monkeys, that danced, and fought together with sticks, at the bidding of the showman.



For two or three weeks we were daily entertained, just after breakfast, by one or another of these *jongleurs*, who performed while we enjoyed our morning cigar; for we did not take the spiced hookah, or hubble-bubble, so much esteemed by many Anglo-Asiatics. These showmen abound in Bombay, and, indeed, in all the chief cities of British India, and are well worth seeing once, particularly if the stranger have no social calls, as, unfortunately, was our case, to fill up his time more agreeably. While at Bombay we saw nothing of its English society, which, we were informed, is sufficiently large and refined to make a little scandal charming amongst the ladies.

I observed that the Hindoos wore a little spot of paint, or mud, the size of a dime, on the forehead—that some had lines, some stains of clay on the face, and, noticing the same occasionally on my mus-sôl, but not every day, I asked him what it meant.

“All Hindoo man, master, put that on his head; then master know him been to church; not to master’s church, but to Hindoo-man church.”

Upon further inquiry, I learned it is a custom among this people to rob the idol before which they worship of a little paint, or clay, and make therewith this religious sign upon the forehead, the form of which varies according to the caste. Most of the Banyans draw a line from the root of the nose directly upwards over the forehead, or transversely above the eyebrows. Those denominated Gentoos and Parboos\* make round spots, just above the root of the nose, each one adhering constantly to the same form.

Munchirjee, our dubash, like all of his race, was very intelligent, active, and fond of talking. When questioned on the subject of his religion, he said, “Your Honor knows, that the Parsees have no longer a home or a country; they are strangers in the land. We believe in one God, and that Zoroaster was his prophet—he is our Christ. We worship fire, water, the sun and moon, because they are the most prominent works of God, and we look upon them as his attributes, and believe that the worship of them will be acceptable. We may kindle fire, but must not extinguish it. We are enjoined not to touch with our lips the vessel we drink from, and always to wash after eating. For this there is no reason, except that such is our law. Strictly, we ought not to eat meat, but we only refrain from

\* The words Hindoo, Gentoos, Parboos, all originally signified black, and were applied first by the Persians to the several nations of India.



pork and beef. At seven years of age we are invested with the 'custie,' or string of goats' hair, which encircles the body twice, and we never put it on or off without prayer. We believe in future rewards and punishments, and that the latter are proportioned to the magnitude of our sins in this world."

One day he brought me an illuminated Persian manuscript, full of plates, exhibiting the various kinds of punishment which awaited those who committed certain offences. Dragons, serpents, scorpions, and tigers are represented attacking the victims in the Parsee hell, urged on by demons; while paradise is pictured, in the same work, full of palaces and gardens, and its inhabitants arrayed in the most gorgeous apparel. One plate represents the burying-ground and the funeral of a great man. The body is borne in an open palanquin, and deposited on a stone grating, which covers the grave, where it remains exposed to the weather, and birds of the air, until the bones drop through into the pit below. The burying-ground is laid out in three concentric circles, within an outer wall. In the exterior circle males are deposited, in the next, females, and children in the third. There is a deep pit, or well, in the centre, wherein the bones are deposited after all the flesh has decayed away. The sacred fire, which is never permitted to expire, is kept at the entrance of the ground, and all persons, except Parsees, are excluded from its holy precincts, as well as from their temples of worship. Many Parsees have private places of interment and private temples.

Munchirjee thought all religions nearly the same, and that men followed the faith in which they are educated, declaring that a Parsee had never been known to become a Christian. He admired the English custom of educating females, because it made them good companions, worth talking to, and capable of rendering a man's house a pleasant home.

Parsee females are rarely seen abroad. The men are fond of dissipation and mirth, and, when they possess the means, of making frequent entertainments, spending the night in feasting and drinking, and viewing the performance of dancing girls, provided for the occasion. They are acknowledged to be the most intelligent race in India, and are ranked next to the English. Their complexion is light yellow, their beards are sparse, and they generally wear a light moustache: their heads and stature are larger than those of any of the other races seen at Bombay, where one meets the Arab, and the Jew, whose costume is in the Turkish fashion.

Of their fondness for style, we had an opportunity of satisfying



ourselves by visiting the mansion of a wealthy merchant of the tribe. We found it extensive, five stories high, and magnificently furnished from the manufactories of England, France and Asia, in all a voluptuous fancy might suggest. The terraplan is occupied in counting-rooms, and the second and third floors, in drawing-rooms, parlors, boudoirs, and dormitories. A kind reception awaited us, and we were pleased with the attentions extended by the daughters of our host, one of seven and the other of ten years old. The eldest wore a blue satin spencer, closely fitting her shape, with tight sleeves, reaching to the elbow, where the edges were embroidered and fringed with gold bells. A mantle of yellow satin was wrapped round the body, hanging in rich drapery about the person and limbs, while one end was flung gracefully over the head after the fashion of the Spanish mantilla, but not in a manner to conceal the numerous pearl earrings, I think five in each ear, and a pearl of price pending from her nose. She stood, listening to our conversation, with her arms folded, resting on one foot, while the other was advanced a little beyond her robe, to display a large emerald ring on the toe next to the great one; her soft dark eyes, rendered more pensive by pencilling the lower lids with antimony, were directed towards us. The costume of her sister was of a similar character, but she was yet too young to manifest so much pride of dress or desire of approbation. Both were attended by their affianced husbands, two intelligent boys, one of eleven and the other of fourteen years of age. The elder couple were to be married in the course of the year.

We made frequent visits to the counting-house, or office of Messrs. Jehangeer and Monockjee Nowrojee, Parsee merchants, who transact all American business at Bombay. They always greeted us kindly, and rendered all the services we required at their hands. Their office is a low building, situated a little back from the highway on one side of the "Green." In front are always seen a number of palanquins and their naked bearers, lounging upon the ground in the shade, awaiting their masters. In a small front yard, planted with trees, we saw a number of boxes with the seams or joints pitched, into which they were packing a variety of drugs. Clerks and coolies were seen busy in taking account of, and weighing them, while a number of women were seated on the ground, under a shed, sorting gum Arabic, myrrh, assafœtida, nut galls, gum copal, &c., by picking out the larger pieces, or sifting the smaller fragments from the dust. On the left is a wooden platform, raised a foot or two from the ground, upon which were seated a half dozen clerks *à la Turque*, using their



knees as a desk, with small chests of coin before them. This is the bank of the house, where money is paid, changed or received. Several Parsee and Banyan merchants, and as many dubashes, bearing umbrellas under their arms, were loitering about the door, ready to do the bidding of their masters. Monockjee, the younger partner, dressed in a white muslin frock, the high cap of his tribe, full pantaloons of scarlet silk over fine white socks, and long pointed shoes, sat in a well cushioned chair, beneath a small punka, kept waving over his head, conversing with two or three American or European supercargoes, who were reclining on sofas around him. Such was the scene I now allude to, and such it appeared every day.

At our request the shawl merchants and venders of Persian rugs were sent for, and in a few minutes twenty coolies, bearing on their heads great bundles, done up in white muslin, passed into an adjoining room, followed by half the number of Eastern merchants, and a half dozen brokers, or appraisers. The bundles were speedily untied, and a thousand shawls from Cashmere were revealed to our inspection, each merchant drawing forth and exhibiting his goods, lauding their beauties and qualities in the Hindoostanee, no matter whether understood or not. The scene is an exciting one, for they all talk at once. One throws a splendid shawl over his shoulders, and struts to the light to show it off, at the same time looking backwards, and calling attention to its points; while another, holding a shawl upon his outstretched hands, leans forward over his pack, looking you in the face, beseeching you to feel how soft its texture, to examine the border and the beauty of its colors. One is bewildered with such a display, and I can imagine that a young lady might be crazed at the sight. Here were long shawls, square shawls, large and small, of pure white, green, blue, yellow, orange, red and black; some having four colors so nicely quartered, that, by care in folding, they might be made to show for as many different shawls. All were brilliant in color and beautifully embroidered.

The prices of the shawls vary from one hundred, to six thousand rupees, and of the scarfs, three yards long by a quarter wide, from six to twenty rupees, according to quality. The merchants always demand two or three times these prices, but to adjust all differences on this subject, it is referred to a broker or appraiser, whose opinion is received as final. When the matter is about being decided, the merchant and broker take each other by the hand, beneath the shawl under consideration, and for a few moments look each other in the face, the former with an inquiring gaze, the latter with an air of in-



difference. In this manner intelligence is mutually conveyed in silence. Sometimes the broker ends the communication by tossing the shawl to the merchant with a gesture of contemptuous derision; or, by literally forcing it into your hands, announcing the price to be paid, while the merchant, as if unwilling to part with it on such terms, still retains his hold upon it, but almost always yielding to the appraiser's decision in the course of a few moments. In our case, Monockjee, whose word seemed to be law, very kindly told us to select whatever suited our fancies, and he would "settle the price."

Cashmere shawls are manufactured in the valley of Cashmere alone, whence they are sent to Surat, Bengal, or to other parts of India, and find their way through these channels all over the world. The manufacture gives employment to 50,000 men, and activity to 16,000 looms. The wool of which they are made is not produced in the country, but is brought from Thibet, where it is an article of extensive traffic, regulated with great jealousy; it is originally of a dark gray color, and is bleached in Cashmere. The yarn of this wool is stained with such colors as may be deemed best suited for sale, and after being woven the piece is once washed. The borders, which usually display a variety of figures and colors, are attached to the shawls after fabrication, but in so nice a manner, that the junction is not discernible. The shawls usually consist of three sizes, two of which, the long and small square, which are in common use in India, are the sorts usually sent to England; the other, long and very narrow, with a large mixture of black color in them, are worn as a girdle by many of the Asiatics. They are generally sold in pairs, and the price varies according to the quality, and is considerably enhanced by the introduction of flower work. For the English market, those with colored grounds and handsome rich borders and flowers are most esteemed; the plain white shawls being closely imitated in England, are seldom in demand. According to Mr. Starchey, not more than 80,000 shawls are made, on an average, at Cashmere, in one year.\* From the first of January, to the seventeenth of October, 1835, the number exported from Bombay, was 3,419.

It may not be out of place to add here a word or two in relation to the history of the Parsees, before taking a final leave of them.

In the seventh century, the Mohammedans dethroned the last king of Persia, of the dynasty of the Sassanides. Many of his vassals, discontented with their conquerors, took refuge in Khuzistan, whence,

\* Milburn's Oriental Commerce.



at the end of a hundred years, they went to Ormuz, and soon afterwards sailed for India, and arrived safely at Diu. Dissatisfied with this asylum, they again committed themselves to the waves, and were borne to the smiling shores of Guzerat, the peninsula formed between the Indus and Malabar, or, rather, between the gulfs of Cutch and Cambay. The Prince commanding there, would not consent to receive the wanderers, except on condition that they would reveal the mysteries of their faith, give up their arms and speak the language of the country; that their women should appear unveiled in public, and their weddings should take place at night-fall, in conformity to the usage of the place. As these terms of capitulation required nothing which was in opposition to the religion they professed, the refugees at once accepted them.

Laborious habits, contracted and perpetuated through necessity, made them prosperous. Sufficiently wise to avoid interference in the affairs of the government and in war, they enjoyed profound peace in the midst of many revolutions. This circumspection, connected with their well being, served to increase their number. They always formed, under the name of Parsees, a separate people, establishing it as a rule for themselves never to meddle with the Indians, and to maintain those religious principles for the sake of which they had been obliged to leave their country. These principles are those of the celebrated Zoroaster, though now somewhat modified by time, ignorance and avarice.

The Guzeratees imbibed, from their example, a portion of their industry and activity. Fields of grain, of sugar and of indigo, spread over the face of the country; and silk and cotton fabrics were made in the greatest perfection.

The Parsees enjoyed great respectability of character. They were well made, robust and indefatigable; they were capable of all kinds of labor, but excelled in agriculture, and in marine architecture. Such was their mildness and rectitude, that there is no instance of their being cited before a judge for any act of violence, or breach of contract. Serenity of mind was pictured in their countenance, and their cheerful disposition displayed itself in conversation. They were fond of poetry. They had no temples, but morning and evening, they assembled on the high-ways, or near some fountain, where they worshipped the rising and setting sun. Instead of burying their dead, as was the custom with the Indians, they were exposed upon high towers to become the food of birds of prey. They were generous towards all classes of men, without regard to their religious opinions;



and they often displayed their charity and benevolence by purchasing slaves, and, after instructing them in some useful art, giving them their liberty. Their number, their union and their wealth, made them at times suspected by the government, but suspicion could not long exist against a people so peaceful and moderate in all their conduct.\*

From Guzerat they have been carried, by their spirit of commercial enterprise, to all parts of India; and wherever found, are remarkable for the traits of character which distinguished them in the land that gave them an asylum from the persecution of the followers of Mohammet.

---

## CHAPTER XV.

### SKETCHES IN HINDOOSTAN.

*November, 1835.*

IF I were permitted to offer a word of friendly advice to my reader, I would say, 'should your fortunes ever lead you to this part of India, never leave it without visiting the islands of Elephanta and Salsette. You will be paid for your pains by the sight of what may be looked upon as remains of a by-gone world, beheld in the statuary, contained in the monolithic excavations found upon the above named islands.'

The island, called by the natives Garipora, and Elephanta by the Portuguese, (the first Europeans who visited it,) from the great sculptured elephant near the place of landing, lies about six miles east north-east from Bombay castle. It is one mile square; its surface is mountainous and has a long valley crossing its centre.

One morning, at half past six o'clock, our party, under the guidance of Captain Roberts, embarked in two bunder boats, for the far famed island of Elephanta. The bunder boat is a large launch, with snug stern sheets, roofed over and shut in with blinds, and

\* *Establecimientos Ultramarinos*, Tom. III. Madrid, 1786.



furnished with comfortable lounges. Our boat was manned by nine Mussulmans, in white turbans, blue frocks, and striped pantaloons. The oars were straight poles with pieces of round plank at their extremities. After a pleasant sail of an hour, we landed and walked up the valley which was partly covered with rice fields. About half way across the island, on the left, there are two minor caves, now half choked up with earth and rubbish. One presents a mass of rock, projecting from the hill-side, with an open space between it and the level ground, about six feet high and fifty or more long. On making our way to it, through the thick growing shrubbery which conceals it from the by-passer who follows the beaten track, we were satisfied that this projecting rock had been supported by columns, forming a portico, from which a door opened into a large square room. On each side of the door way is the statue of a 'dorpāl' or warder, and over it are sculptured a number of minor Hindoo deities, all more or less mutilated. At either end of the portico is a small chamber or excavation.

After walking nearly a mile we found ourselves in front of the celebrated monolithic temple, but were disappointed as well as surprised to find, that instead of descent, there is a gentle ascent to its entrance. The side of a hill, about one hundred feet high, has been cut through its dark rocky structure, into a perpendicular wall or face of sufficient width, leaving on either hand a spur of rock, or jamb, now covered with green sward and clambering plants, forming a kind of area in front of the cave. Between these spurs, is the opening, fifty-five feet from east to west, and about seventeen feet high. The entablature of naked rock, originally supported by two pilasters and two columns, of which one only is standing, rises many feet perpendicularly; and its summit, which is also the verge of the hill, is crowned by grass and shrubbery, and several vines hang down over its face, to the opening. Before the cave lie several broken pillars, and rubbish, from behind which, to our right, eddied upwards a column of smoke, proceeding from the temporary kitchen of our servants, who had been despatched hither the evening previous, with the implements and essentials of breakfast.

We stood for some minutes in admiration of the view before us. The rows of pillars, dimly seen in the interior of the cave, leads one to fancy he is viewing an extensive hall or saloon. The first impression is of wonder, accompanied by a sort of mental effort to conceive the labor and time, an excavation so vast, into the solid rock, must have cost; and on farther examination, one is struck with the



proportion preserved in its relative parts, and with the modern form of the door frames.

The terraplan of the temple is nearly in the form of a cross. The floor has been cut in medallion figures; the roof, or ceiling, which is flat, varying in different places, from fifteen to seventeen and a half feet in height, had been once white, but is now covered with dust. The distance from the front entrance to the opposite wall is one hundred and thirty and a half feet; and from the east to the west entrance, both now closed by a modern wall, is one hundred and thirty-three feet. The roof was supported by sixteen pilasters and twenty-six pillars, planted in rows, but not equidistant, of which fifteen are still standing, the rest having been thrown down and mutilated. The bases, or lower third of the pillars, are square; the corners are surmounted by small figures of Garrish and Hartik, gods of the Hindoo mythology. All the pillars are written over, more or less, by English visitors, who have left their names to record their presence.

The back wall, which is parallel with the front, is divided into three square compartments, the centre one of which is a deep chapel, or square niche, almost filled by a colossal bust. The figure has three heads, one facing front and the others to opposite sides, together with the neck and shoulders, leaving one to imagine that the lower part of the statue is buried beneath the floor of the temple. The right hand and part of the arm are seen, as if pushed up through the earth, grasping a cobra di capello, which, with spread hood, appears to be gazing in the face which looks eastward. The height of the bust is seventeen feet ten inches, and is the best piece of statuary in the cave; its elaborate workmanship and fine proportions have been eulogized by all visitors, while they have found fault with the other figures, which are wanting in anatomical correctness. Such is the celebrated trimûrti, or triformis, which the Portuguese spared, under the idea that it was a representation of the holy trinity, when, in their zeal to destroy the idols and worship of heretics, they mutilated the temple, by firing great guns into it.

In the lintel of the door-frame of this chapel are two mortices, in which the pintals of a great door might have turned. On each side of the door-way is the statue of a warder of gigantic size.

The compartments, or rather panels, on the right and left, contain groups of figures, representing Shivû and Parvûti, the chief god and goddess of Hindoo worship, for an account of which the reader is referred to "Ward's View of the Hindoos," which should be read before visiting any of the temples of this people. In front of the



chapel and panels there is a vestibule, and at either extremity of it a small square chamber, the doors of which face each other. They contained nothing but rubbish; they were the only parts of the cave which we, who are not enthusiastically antiquarian in our tastes, required lights to examine. Beyond these rooms, both to the right and left, still keeping along the back wall, are panels filled with the figures of gods.

Near the middle of the western side of the cave there is a room twenty feet square; each of its four walls is pierced by a door-way, approachable from the main temple by three steps, and guarded by warders. In the centre of this apartment is a stone, about seven feet square, of the same rock as the temple, pierced by another stone, of much finer and smoother structure, about fifteen inches square at the base, and three feet high. This is the "lingü," one of the forms of Shivü, which is symbolic of the procreative attribute, seen throughout nature, and is adored as the power emanating from Brümhü alone, the creator of all things. Stones of different texture are used in the "lingü," to be, in a measure, typical of the two sexes. On the top of the vertical stone, which is rounded at the summit, we found fresh flowers, and a few grains of rice, the recent offering of some poor Hindoo.

The phallus of the Greeks and the lingü are strikingly alike, and perhaps they may have a similar, if not the same origin, both being *simulacra membri virilis*, the mention of which, among the ancients, never conveyed any impure thought or lascivious reflection, though Mr. Ward asserts that such is not the case among the Hindoos.

On both the eastern and western sides of the principal cave are open courts, formed by closing up the ancient entrances by modern walls, as above stated. Both of these courts lead to smaller caves, now partially filled with water, in one of which is another lingü and a group of gods, sculptured in bas-relief; but it is not my purpose to attempt to give any thing more than a general idea of this truly astonishing work.

Of the degree of genius and art displayed in this temple, and the figures around it, very different opinions have been expressed; some are disposed to rate them very high, and speak in rapturous terms of the execution and design of several of the compartments. "To me it appears," says Mr. Erskine, with whom I fully concur, "that while the whole conception and plan of the temple are extremely grand and magnificent, and while the outline and disposition of the



several figures indicate great talent and ingenuity, the execution and finishing of the figures, in general, (though some of them prove the sculptor to have great merit,) fall below the general idea, and are often very defective. The figures have somewhat of rudeness and want of finish; the proportions are sometimes lost, the attitudes forced, and every thing indicates the infancy of the art, though a vigorous infancy."

After a hasty survey of the temple, we were summoned to breakfast. The table was spread just within the cave, near the eastern side, where a vacant niche served us for a side board—the same, we were told, used by the pic-nic party which Captain Hall has celebrated.

By twelve o'clock our examination, but not our curiosity, was over, and I stretched myself upon a sofa: however, unlike Captain Hall, my imagination was not sufficiently warmed, or my slumbers were too deep, to have the honor of a visitation of the trimûrti or any of Shivû's tribe.

After dining gayly and sumptuously in the temple, on a "chowder," prepared under the superintendence of one of the party, after the fashion of New England, on occasions of the kind, we bade adieu to this curious ruin of Hindoo antiquity, to prevent the farther mutilation of which, a propensity peculiar to the English and their descendants, the government has stationed a sergeant, who dwells hard by, as curator of the once holy precincts.

On the morning of the 24th I had the pleasure of joining Major William Miller (of the artillery) at Parel, with Commodore Kennedy, Captain Stribling, and Mr. Roberts. At six o'clock, A. M., we set out in carriages for Salsette, to visit the monolithic caves of Kenery. On this occasion we were the guests of Major Miller, whose urbanity and unremitted attention throughout the excursion will long be, with us all, a subject of pleasing recollection. The day was pleasant, and our road led through several villages and over a viaduct thrown between the two islands, offering many pretty landscapes to the view. At eight o'clock, A. M., we reached Vehar, or Clareabad—Claretown—so named in honor of Lord Clare, where we had an accession to our party, which now numbered eight gentlemen, besides not less than thirty servants, variously employed. They had been sent forward the evening before, and a part of them had already set off for the caves, bearing on their heads tables, chairs, and all the materials for breakfast.

We soon followed, either on horseback or in palanquins, over an



irregular bridle path, winding through thickets or jungle, sometimes descending vales, and again rising gentle slopes. Vegetation was rife every where. Palms, and the wide-spreading banyan, were often passed; and we saw several palms which appeared to be growing out of the top of the latter kind of tree. The distance from Clare-abad to the caves, in a direct line, is three and three quarter miles, but the winding of the road increases it to at least five; the whole distance from Bombay is about twenty miles; quite far enough to ride for an appetite to breakfast.

We alighted at the foot of a large tree, in a deep ravine. There was no appearance of the caves, for vegetation was so luxuriant that even the path to them was concealed. The ascent is steep, and over a kind of shingle, composed of fragments of loose stones, resembling the bed of a mountain torrent. When we had mounted, perhaps a hundred feet, we emerged suddenly in front of the caves. The first sight of the two boldly sculptured columns, supporting a plain, solid entablature, over which there is hollowed out an oblong square, is strikingly picturesque, being hidden from view, during the ascent, by overshadowing shrubs and trees. Within these are two ante-rooms, each about thirty-five feet broad by twelve deep, and beyond them an unfinished apartment, perhaps twenty-six feet in depth. The front screen is pierced by three doors, with as many windows above them, and the wall which separates the second ante-room from the inner chamber has three doors in it, and over the central one, a large open arch, rising nearly to the roof. Beneath it are small holes, resembling those intended to receive joists. In this cave all is plain, without figure or ornament.

From this an irregular excavation is continued to the principal temple. It contains two "dhagopes," solid masses of stone, in the form of a cupola, which are other forms of the lingü, as well as numerous figures of Boudha, and minor deities, sculptured in relief upon the walls; for a minute and accurate account of which, as well as of those in the other caves, the reader is referred to a paper on the subject, by Mr. Henry Salt, published in the first volume of the "Transactions of the Literary Society of Bombay." In the same volume may be seen the result of an examination of Elephanta, by William Erskine, Esq.\*

Immediately adjoining the irregular excavation stands the great

\* In making up this general account of the caves, both papers referred to in the text have been freely used, particularly for the measurements.



cave, which, from its resemblance to a Gothic building, or from a tradition that it was converted to that use by the Portuguese, is commonly called the "church." There is in front of it a small tank, hewn out of the living rock. An ascent of a half dozen steps leads to a portal, which was once either arched over or higher than at present, as the broken figures on each side sufficiently show. This opens upon an area, unequally square, which form they were compelled to adopt on account of the shelving of the rock; for, in other parts, the architects have consulted regularity in the general plan. On each side of the area stands a lofty column; one of which is connected to the rock. The capital of that on the right sustains three lions *couchans*, and the pedestal is ornamented with carvings, in relief, while that on the left is surmounted by dwarfish figures. The whole space of the farther end of the area is occupied by the front facing of the cave, which is divided by plain columns, into three square portals below, and five windows above. They open into a vestibule, at either end of which stands, in a recess, the arch of which is made to appear, as if supported by fluted columns, a statue of Boudha, twenty-three feet high, carved from the living rock. These gigantic bodies stand in such bold relief as almost to lead one to believe they were placed there. In spite of being out of proportion, their air, size, and general arrangement; the laziness of the attitude, the simplicity of their drapery, the suitableness of their situation, and the plainness of the style in which they are executed, contrasted with a want of taste in the ornaments around, contribute to give them an effect of grandeur and expression, not always attainable even by the best sculptors. The screen is covered with a variety and a great number of rudely executed figures. In this vestibule there are two inscriptions, which, we were informed, have been satisfactorily made out. Three door-ways lead from the vestibule into the principal cave, which, in its greatest extent, is eighty-three feet long by thirty broad, and is circular at the farther end. A close colonnade, consisting of thirty-four pillars, runs round the whole, at six feet from the wall. From the top of the columns springs a circular arch, roughly cut, which opens into the vestibule, and forms the roof of the centre compartment or nave. The roof of the aisles, formed between the wall and colonnade, is flat, and of the height of the pillars, which is fifteen feet. At the farther extremity of the nave is a solid dhagope, forty-nine feet in circumference. The regularity and effect of the temple are marred by the unfinished state of the columns, one half of them being plain shafts. The figures on the tops of those



finished consist chiefly of lions and elephants, but they are small, and by no means well executed.

Long before we had finished our examination, which broke in upon the repose of hundreds of bats, suspended in clusters from the vaulted roof, and set them flitting about over head with a roaring noise, breakfast was smoking on the table, set in the vestibule. Our morning ride gave a zest to the good things before us; such as the worshippers of Boudha never dreamed would profane the precincts of his holy temple.

Having leisurely despatched our meal, we turned our steps to the eastward, and followed a path which ascends from the church into a deep ravine, nearly a mile in extent, on both sides of which are numerous caves; some consisting of two or three plain chambers, which communicate one with the other; and some of very considerable extent filled with figures of gods. There is one, called, I believe, the Durbar cave, seventy feet long by thirty wide, which has a veranda in front. It contains eleven chambers or dormitories, which communicate with the principal hall; on the whole, bearing a close resemblance to a caravanserai, or a Spanish inn. So numerous are these caves, that the place has obtained the name of the "City of Canorin." In fact, the whole hill seems to have been a temple for religious worship; its sides are cut into steps, now time and weather worn, leading to various excavations, a description of which would be equal in tedious detail to that of the houses individually of a large town. In the bottom or bed of the ravine, there are several tanks of clear water; indeed, small tanks of water are very common throughout this monolithic city, and in some of them we saw fish. On the eastern side of the hill, there is a terrace commanding a fine view of the surrounding country. The soil upon the hill is very thin, and only sufficient to sustain scattering blades of rank grass and a few cactus plants.

About four o'clock P. M., when the sun's rays had become less intense, Commodore Kennedy and Mr. Roberts entered their palanquins, preceded by the attendants on foot, bearing tables, chairs, and baskets of fragments and utensils of our household, and we bade farewell—*vale, vale longum vale*—to the temples of Kenery and the city of Canorin. We reached Clare-abad at sunset, and soon were seated round the social board. The wines were cooled with ice from the United States, lately brought here for the first time. The usual mode of cooling wine in India, is to sew a flannel covering over the decanter or bottle, and wet it with a solution of nitre.



In pursuance of arrangements made in the evening, at daylight the next day, we mounted and struck across the country to Ambolee, (a scattering village consisting of a Portuguese church and a few huts,) to visit the caves of Jogheyseer. After a pleasant ride of four miles, we alighted at a house prepared for our reception; where we found, that the Commodore and Mr. Roberts had already arrived. And what seemed almost incredible, the servants were also there with their loads of furniture, and were busily preparing breakfast, in the same easy manner as if they had been long domiciliated on the spot.

The caves of Jogheyseer are about two miles in a north-easterly direction from the village, and we found it a pleasant morning walk from the place of our bivouack. Over their western entrance, almost concealed by shrubs, is a natural arch, formed by the branches of a banyan tree, which stretching across the path, have taken root on the opposite side, giving it a very picturesque appearance. A descent of seven steps leads to an ante-chamber, divided by two pillars and three pilasters on each side, into three compartments. The figures on the walls have nearly disappeared under the crumbling hand of time; but still enough remains to show, that the frame and cornice of the door, opening into the principal cave, were once finished in a variety of sculpture neatly executed. The great cave is one hundred and twenty feet square. Eighteen feet inwards are twenty pillars, forming an inner square; within which, there is a chamber twenty feet square, containing a lingü. On the eastern side there is a small cave, separated by an unfinished court, open to the sky; and on the south side runs a veranda, supported by ten large columns. These temples were wet and very damp, and the sculpture, which has been well executed, is falling fast to decay. From the number of bats that have possessed themselves of these caves, we may infer they are not now very frequently visited.

After breakfast we again set forward for Bandora, distant eight miles, and our Mussòl ran ahead of the horse, and continued to do so nearly all the way to Bombay, resting only while crossing the ferry between the islands, and an hour at Parel. He must have run at least eighteen miles, barefoot and under a burning sun. The country between Ambolee and Bandora is level, and generally planted with rice. At intervals are erected crosses, time-worn in appearance, the work of the first Portuguese settlers, to guard them against the heresies of the land.

Bandora is a quiet, pretty village, full of gardens and cocoanut trees, situated nearly opposite to Mahim, from which it is divided by



the strait flowing between the islands of Salsette and Bombay. Our carriages were ferried over in a short time, and we soon rode through Mahim, a pretty hamlet almost entirely shaded by groves of cocoanuts. A drive of three miles brought us to Parel; and we reached Bombay for dinner, delighted with the excursion and with what we had seen.

After an examination of the several caves and temples of Elephanta, Kenery, and Jogheyseer, several questions of a speculative nature present themselves to the mind. Who and what were the people who excavated them? How far had they advanced in the arts of civilization? Are there no traces of a similar style of architecture in other ruins on the face of the globe? Were the laborers slaves or freemen? Was not the rock in a soft state when the caves were sculptured?

Many of the figures have so much the appearance of having been moulded of clay, that we are led to infer that the rock was not so hard and unyielding as at present. Frequent but unsuccessful attempts have been made by visitors, to carry away mementos of Hindoo antiquity, as is proved by the number of mutilated figures every where seen in these temples. Our systematic and patient labor with chisel and hammer was rewarded with only a few imperfect fragments. It seems probable that the rock was soft when it emerged from the waters. "In a manuscript account of Malabar, ascribed to the Bishop of Virapli, the seat of a celebrated Roman Catholic seminary, the writer observes, that, by the accounts of the learned natives of that coast, it is little more than 2300 years since the sea came up to the foot of the Jukem or Gaut mountains; and this he thinks extremely probable, from the nature of the soil, and the quantity of sand, oyster-shells and other fragments, met with on making excavations. It is not unreasonable to believe that the whole coast was elevated by subterranean agency; for, so recently as 1805, the bed of part of the sea and of the Indus was permanently changed by an earthquake, near Cutch, on the coast of Bombay."\*

Where are they now, who did so much in honor of their gods?— who toiled as if they thought—

"What speaks of Heaven should by no means be brittle,  
But strong and lasting, till no tongue can tell  
Their names who reared it."

And now 'no tongue can tell' who carved the living rock into emblems for the worship of high Heaven.

\* Bakewell's Geology. New Haven, 1833.



It seems, that originally the Hindoos acknowledged but one great first cause—the architect divine. Observing men, perhaps priests, remarked at an early period, the three great leading features in the phases of nature to be creation, duration or preservation, and decay, which they individuated and personified, under the names of Bramhū, Vishnū, and Shivū. As in other countries, poets seized upon these leading ideas, and begot from them minor attributes; which, to make more tangible to the unthinking, as well as to please the allegorical taste of the times, were also personified, until the number of gods extended almost to infinity;—stated by Mr. Ward to be 330,000,000. For the lives and deeds of this host of deities, we are indebted to the extravagant imaginations and wild fancies of their historians, who were believed, at least by the *profanum vulgus*, because they told what was incredible—“Rien est si fortement cru comme ce qui est incroyable.”

In the early period of its prevalence, the Hindoo system was probably pure and elevated in its character; but as men became vicious they grew vulgar, and sunk the rites and ceremonies of the faith to a level with their own minds; until the present time, when we see their idols, composed of wood, and sheltered in hovels, instead of brass and stone, placed in temples, hewn from the living rock; and in a style that betokened a comparatively advanced state of civilization as well as great populousness. But there is nothing in these temples, to tell us in what age or in what dynasty they were completed. “One fact,” says Mr. Erskine, in his account of the cave-temple of Elephanta, already referred to; “One fact is worthy of notice, that a greater number of magnificent cave-temples present themselves in a small space on this coast, than are to be met with in any other part of India. The caves of Elephanta, those of Kenery, Ambolee, and some others on the island of Salsette, the fine cave of Carli, on the road by the Bor Ghaut to Poonah, the still more extensive and magnificent ranges at Ellora, not to mention some smaller cave-temples in the Concân, and near the Adjanta pass, are all on Mahratta ground, and seem to show the existence of some great and powerful dynasty, which must have reigned many years to complete works of such labor and extent.”

“It has long been an object of inquiry among scholars, to discover the channel through which civilization, science, and an acquaintance with the liberal arts, first reached the valley which is watered by the Nile. Without analyzing the numerous hypotheses, which have been successively formed and abandoned, or repeating the various con-  
jectures, it is sufficient to observe, that the valley of the Nile, from its position, was the most favorable for the reception of civilization, and the most likely to be the seat of the first civilization.”



tures which have, age after age, amused the ingenuity of the learned, we shall state at once, as the most probable of the opinions that have been entertained on this subject, that the stream of knowledge accompanied the progress of commerce, along the banks of those great rivers which fall into the Persian gulf, and thence along the coast of Arabia, to the shores of the Red Sea. There is the best reason to believe, that these passes or natural defiles, which connect the sea just named with the river of Egypt, witnessed the earliest emigration of colonists from Asia; who, in the pursuits of commerce, or in search of more fertile lands, or of mountains enriched with gold, found their way into Nubia and Abyssinia. Mean time, it is probable, a similar current set eastward across the mouths of the Indus, carrying arts and institutions of a corresponding character into the countries which stretch from that river to the great peninsula of Hindoostàn.

“The most obvious confirmation of the opinion now stated, may be drawn from the striking resemblance which is known to subsist between the usages, the superstitions, the arts and the mythology of the ancient inhabitants of western India, and those of the first settlers on the upper Nile. The temples of Nubia, for example, exhibit the same features, whether as to the style of architecture, or the form of worship, which must have been practised by them, with the similar buildings which have been recently examined in the neighborhood of Bombay. In both cases, they consist of vast excavations hewn out of the solid body of a hill or mountain, and are decorated with huge figures, which indicate the same powers of nature, or serve as emblems to denote the same qualities in the ruling spirits of the universe.

“As a farther proof of this hypothesis, we are informed that the Sepoys who joined the British army in Egypt, under Lord Hutchinson, imagined that they found their own temples in the ruins of Dendera, and were greatly exasperated at the natives for their neglect of the ancient deities, whose images are still preserved. So strongly, indeed, were they themselves impressed with this identity, that they proceeded to perform their devotions with all the ceremonies practised in their own land. There is a resemblance, too, in the minor instruments of their superstition,—the lotus, the lingam, and the serpent—which can hardly be regarded as accidental; but it is, no doubt, in the immense extent, the gigantic plan, the vast conception which appear in all their sacred buildings that we most readily discover the influence of the same lofty genius, and the endeavor to accomplish the same mighty object. The excavated temple at Guerfeh Hassan,



for instance, reminds every traveller of the cave of Elephanta. The resemblance, indeed, is singularly striking; as are, in fact, all the leading principles in Egyptian architecture to that of the Hindoos. They differ only, it has been observed, in those details of the decorative parts, which trifling points of difference in their religious creeds seem to have suggested to each; but many even of the rites and emblems are precisely the same, especially those of the temples dedicated to Iswara, the Indian Bacchus. In truth, in most respects they are so much alike, that the same workmen might almost be supposed to have superintended the execution of them in both countries. In India, and in Egypt, the hardest granite mountains have been cut down in the most striking, if not the most beautiful, fronts of temples adorned with sculpture. In both countries, large masses of rock have been excavated into hollow chambers, whose sides are decorated with columns and statues of men and animals, carved out of the same stone; and in each, are found solid blocks of many hundred tons weight, separated from the adjoining mountain, and lifted up into the air. By whom and by what means these wonderful efforts have been accomplished, is a mystery sunk too deep in the abyss of time ever to be revealed. To Greece, neither country is indebted for any part of its architecture, while she has evidently taken many hints from them. Except at Alexandria and Antinöe, no edifice strictly Grecian, appears in Egypt. But we need only compare the monolithic temples of Nubia with those of Mahabulipoor, the excavations of Guerfeh Hassan with those of Elephanta, and the grottos of Hadjur Silsili, as described by Pococke, with the caverns of Ellora, to be convinced that these sacred monuments of ancient days derived their origin from the same source.”\*

\* Russel's View of Ancient and Modern Egypt.



SKETCHES IN CEYLON.



## ARTICLES IN EXHIBITION



## CHAPTER XVI.

VOYAGE ALONG THE COAST OF HINDOOSTAN, AND SKETCHES IN  
CEYLON.*December, 1835.*

AT sunrise on the fourth of December, accompanied by the *Enterprise*, we got under way and bade farewell to the British capital of western India, leaving few behind to regret our departure, or from whom we separated with emotion. A large number of the officers and men were suffering from fever, brought on by exposure, during their night watches, to the land winds, which came to us loaded with miasmata, exhaled from the marshy lands over which they blew. Scarcely an individual on board escaped attack, and for three months the sick list numbered nearly one-fourth of the crew; and though severe in its symptoms, it yielded in every case to the treatment adopted; which, together with all that belongs to the medical history of the cruise, the author hopes to lay before the profession at some future day.

For the benefit of the regular land and sea breezes we kept close to the land, fanning gently along on our way. The coast of the Concan presented diversified and various landscapes of an undulated country near the beach, with a back ground formed by the ranges of the Ghaut mountains rising, blue in the distance, towards the clouds. At long intervals white dwellings were indistinctly perceived, peeping from beneath green groves of cocoanuts, and, near the shore, the white sail of the fisherman's canoe was seen shining brightly in the sun. On the sixth we passed the site of Goa, and of Calicut on the eleventh, places that have attracted no little attention, from having been



the first among the conquests of the Portuguese in the east. The breeze was so light, and the sea so smooth, that canoes came alongside, laden with vegetables, fruits, live birds in cages, baskets made of rattan and various little articles, which were offered for sale at moderate prices, by dark colored natives, dressed in very small kummerbands, and broad-rimmed, low-crowned hats of cocoanut leaves. Among the birds were several of a species called "miners," remarkable for having a comb and gills of bright yellow, finely contrasted with the shining black of their plumage: they partake somewhat of the character of the parrot, inasmuch as, it is said, they may be readily taught to repeat words. Their natural note is comparable to the voice of a young pig.

In the afternoon we passed Cochin, which was a considerable place when the Portuguese first made themselves masters of it, but was afterwards despoiled by the Dutch, and is now of little note. From this place the port-register was sent on board, and we were requested to record the name of the ship, and any news we might bring. Vessels bound to the southward and eastward from Bombay, are obliged to keep close in to the shore for the sake of the wind; and the plan of boarding them *en passant* must frequently give news at places not often visited by vessels directly from the westward of the cape of Good Hope. A register was sent on board from Alipee, a town a little to the southward. Canoes boarded us from Cochin, with vegetables, fruit, parrots, monkeys, &c., their masters being, like our former visitors, dark Indians, with the difference of their wearing white turbans instead of hats.

As we approached cape Comorin the breeze grew strong, and we passed the southern extremity of the Indian peninsula at a much more rapid rate than we sped along the coasts of Concân, Canara and Malabar, which presented us with a variety of landscape views which I may not stop to describe. On the night of the 14th, we had a refreshing shower, the first since leaving Zanzibar, and about ten o'clock the light-house of Colombo, distant twenty miles, was descried from the fore top-sail yard, but we were not regaled by the spicy odors from "India's utmost isle," which, certain travellers tell us, announce the vicinity of Ceylon long before it may be discerned, even by the best telescope from the mast-head of the loftiest ship.

The following morning came with clear sunshine and a gentle breeze. The shores of Ceylon were seen to be low, and clothed in verdure to the water's edge; but, a few miles back, ranges of moun-



tains rose among the clouds; and one solitary cone, towering nearly seven thousand feet above the level of the sea, stood an excellent land mark for ships approaching the roads. It is known as Adam's Peak, and is sixty miles to the eastward of Colombo. Tradition has brought down to our times several legends in relation to this lofty peak, upon the top of which there is an excavation or impression in the rock, resembling the track of a human foot of colossal dimensions. The Boudhists say, it is the last foot-print their god left on the island when he stepped across the waters into the kingdom of Siam; hence it has become a holy place—a spot for worship and pilgrimage, and to which great numbers yearly resort from different parts of the island as well as from the peninsula of India. The difficulty of the ascent is so great, that very few Europeans, unanimated as they are, by the holy fervor that swells the pilgrim's breast, have ever attempted it; and the priests have manifested great repugnance to those few who have achieved the task, remaining on the summit during the night, saying such an act would bring some terrible misfortune upon Ceylon. The Mussulmans, however, insist that the foot-print is of our primogenitor Adam when he passed to the continent over the gulf of Manaar, striding from island to island of a group now known as Adam's bridge. According to their sacred writings, the paradise where Adam and Eve were created was in the seventh heaven; and when they forfeited, through the machinations of Satan, their claims to a continuance of their blissful condition, they were expelled from heaven by the command "Get ye down, the one of you an enemy to the other, and there shall be a dwelling-place for you on earth." When thus ejected from paradise, Adam fell upon the island of Ceylon or Serendib, and Eve near Joddah, the port of Mecca, on the Red Sea, and their separation lasted two hundred years. At the end of that time, the angel Gabriel conducted Adam, after his repentance, to a mountain near Mecca, where he found and knew his wife, and afterwards retired with her to Ceylon, and continued to propagate the species.\*

As we drew near to the spot, which the above tradition should make memorable, we discovered the fort and town of Colombo, almost hidden by groves of cocoanuts and shade trees: the most visible objects were the light-house and flag-staff, which, being white, are in admirable contrast with the all-pervading green foliage. Here and there the corner of some white bungalow or more humble dwelling,

\* Sale's Koran.



peered from beneath the trees, and the weather-worn towers of a mosque and a Dutch church, rose high, and stood out sharp against the mountain back ground; but these were scarcely perceivable, before we reached the anchorage, which is in an open roadstead, exposed to fresh gales during the prevalence of the south-west monsoon.

A pilot boarded us about ten o'clock, and in an hour afterwards both vessels anchored about a mile from the shore—the first American men-of-war that have entered the port—and the Peacock saluted the place with twenty-one guns, which were quickly responded to from the fort.

When within four or five miles of the land, our attention was drawn to a number of canoes of a peculiar construction, which glided over the water at a rate far exceeding that of any vessel I had before seen. They are called “dhonies,” and at a short distance, so trifling is their breadth, they might be compared, without fear of contradiction, to a plank set edgewise upon the water, urged forward by an oblong sail. The dhony used by fishermen, is from fifteen to twenty feet long, a foot or two wide at the bottom, but much narrower at the top. The basis of the vessel, is a log of light wood, hollowed out after the fashion of the more ordinary canoes, and, like them, sharp at both ends. Thin planks, a foot or eighteen inches wide, are set edgewise upon the log, along the margin of its excavation and bent round, forming a sort of bulwark, and very much increasing the depth of the boat; but such is its extreme narrowness, that the slightest preponderance of weight on one side or the other, would turn it over, if left without some contrivance to prevent such an accident. Therefore, to make the dhony available for marine navigation, a solid log of the same wood, pointed at both ends, but of less diameter, and of little more than half the length of that which forms the hulk, is placed parallel to it, at about ten feet distant, and connected to it by arching poles, composed of several pieces of bamboo lashed together, and secured at right angles at either end of the canoe and log; thus forming an out-rigger, which enables the dhony to carry, in perfect safety, a spread of sail which, otherwise, would be out of all proportion. The sail is oblong, very thin, and is set from the mast by a sprit and controlled by a sheet. Those dhonies which approached us carried two men, one sitting in the bow and the other in the stern. Both were of very dark color and entirely naked, with the exception of a narrow riband of cotton cloth passed round the loins and between the legs, very much after the fashion of what surgeons call a T bandage. And instead of sitting al-



together in the canoe, one leg was swinging carelessly over the side;—indeed, both limbs could with difficulty be placed side by side within the bulwarks. In one dhony there was an additional passenger; a boy of about fourteen, who was squatting on the out-rigger, casting water upon the thin sail with half of a cocoanut shell, to increase its capacity for holding the wind. When struck by a squall of sufficient force to threaten an upset, one of the dhony-men rushes out upon the out-rigger, and by his weight preserves the equipoise of the vessel.

Such is the dhony of the fishermen who seek their prey with hook and line, while their fleet barks are under sail; at least in this manner they catch a delicious fish sometimes styled the 'Ceylon Salmon,' from a resemblance in size and flavor to the one from which it gains the cognomen. But there are other vessels called dhonies of much larger dimensions; some of thirty or forty tons burden, constructed of planks stitched together, which navigate all around the island, and venture to the coasts of Malabar and Coromandel. Both the bow and stern are sharp, and rise high out of the water, and they have conical or tent-formed deck, made of rattan or similar material, and secured to the gunwale to cover the cargo. Their out-riggers, however, do not preserve the same ratio of size as in the canoe. I have seen some of these small dhonies with three masts, bearing triangular sails of a most graceful cut, tapering aloft to thin points, gliding by the cocoanut groves with a fleetness, buoyancy and ease, befitting the chariots of sea-nymphs and peris, rather than the marine vehicles of the naked persons of dark-skinned Cingalese or grasping Moormen.

The smoke of the salutes was still seen rolling in clouds before the gentle breeze when we left the ship for the town. There were two English vessels in the roads: the usual number at one time does not exceed four or five; and during the south-west monsoon the harbor is entirely deserted. On a small point, which forms a haven, only capable of sheltering vessels of not more than a hundred tons, stands the custom-house, a neat edifice, not very large, with a pretty corridor running round the lower story, surmounted by a sort of piazza and balustrade, from which there is a good view of the roads. Doubling close round this point, which is rocky and perhaps twenty feet high, the boat floated on a smooth surface, and we came in sight of a narrow wooden jetty projecting some yards from the shore for the convenience of landing. On the left side of this lake-like little harbor was a number of the large dhonies above described, securely



moored by four or five wooden anchors, in shape of our metal ones, but owing their weight to a number of stones lashed to the shank and flukes—an extra one hung from the bows of each vessel, and the cables led over the stern. On the right was a grove of trees (*Hibiscus populneus*) of beautiful foliage, thickly sprinkled with large yellow flowers, which at a short distance might be mistaken for fruit. In front of us, amongst the Hibiscus trees were piles of timber, and we now and then caught the glimpse of a naked Indian, poised on the elevated end of a log, which he was slitting into planks. On the jetty was a number of Ceylonese hoisting out the lading of a boat by a derrick. We observed all these things *en passant* just before we stepped from the gig.

The islanders were encostumed differently from any individuals I had hitherto seen in the east; some had on vests, left unbuttoned, exposing their naked bodies and arms, and all wore a cloth of indescribable pattern, in gay colors, wrapped about the waist, and hanging below the knees like a petticoat; but the most peculiar feature in the dress of the men was their long hair turned up in a feminine knot, and secured to the back of the head with a tortoise shell comb.

At the door of the Master Attendant's office, which stands on the left side of the way, not far from the arched entrance of the fort, we were met by a Ceylonese, or rather Cingalese, whose long hair was secured in a knot on the back of his head by a large comb. He wore a dark green cloth coat, armed with a profusion of large jet buttons, and long button-holes, which may have been cut after the Portuguese fashion of three centuries ago, for it had little or no collar at all, and the breast had a gentle swell that ended at the knee in a very latitudinous tail. His white vest was secured from the throat, half way down his person, with jet buttons; and, to descend to farther minutiae, a pair of loose pantaloons of dark color, not long enough to conceal his bare ankles, and a pair of sharp-toed slippers, completed the costume of a very polite individual, in spite of his dark skin, and, to us, strange habiliments.

Captain James Steuart, the Master Attendant, who visited the ship at the earliest moment after our arrival, conducted us to pay our respects to Sir Robert Wilmot Horton, the Governor and Captain-General of Ceylon. We walked through the arch-way and turned to the left, into a street, a hundred yards long, principally occupied by store-houses and guard-rooms of soldiers on duty. The healthful looks of H. B. M. troops, met at every few yards throughout the



fort, were the very best evidence of the salubrity of Colombo, when it is recollected that most of them have been exposed to the influence of its climate for seven years.

Passing a thick wall, we came upon a green esplanade, the margins of which, on two sides, are planted with shade trees. Near this parade ground stands a pile, built in the Dutch style, called the "King's House," which is the residence of the governor. Part of the edifice was being repaired. Not long since, the whole tile roof of the main building slid off, and exposed the palm-leaf thatching. Under a lofty portico an English sentinel was pacing back and forth, and within the threshold a porter, in a most theatrical garb, met us, and announced our names. In a few minutes His Excellency received us, in a most hospitably courteous manner, in a long hall that opened upon a fine corridor, or, as it is termed in the east, veranda, that looks upon a garden at the back of the house, which is almost hidden on all sides by trees of beautiful foliage.

After the interview, which impressed us very favourably of the governor, I visited the Colombo library, which contains about ten thousand volumes, ranged in a long airy hall, furnished with chairs, sofas, and tables, upon which may be seen the best daily journals and the leading periodicals of England and India. It is freely open to strangers, and the librarian is ever ready to wait upon the visitors.

Captain Steuart had procured for me an invitation to witness a battle between a mangouste and a cobra di capello, among the most poisonous serpents of India, at the house and under the direction of Dr. J. Kinnis, Staff Assistant Surgeon and Superintendent of Vaccination in the Colombo district. At the appointed hour I was kindly welcomed by the doctor, and was introduced to several ladies and officers of H. B. M. Army. Dr. Kinnis is a lover of natural history, and devotes a part of his leisure to its study; and to facilitate this end, keeps a number of living animals in his house, which, with a collection of drawings relating to the science, were exhibited in turn. My attention was first directed to two cobras of small size, not more than a foot long, placed separately on plates, with glasses turned over them, and two others of the maximum size were together in a wooden case with a glass door. These were destined to contribute to the sports of the day. In the back part of the house we saw two mangoustes, one half grown, the other an adult, kept in separate cages; several monkeys, of different species; two civet cats; several parrots, and other species of birds, and



a pair of pretty gold fishes, all alive, and apparently acquainted with their master.

Every thing being ready, the young mangouste, not much larger than a kitten, the adult not exceeding an ordinary weazel in size, was brought from his cage, caressed by the doctor, who, raising one of the glasses, seized the snake by the back of the neck, between his finger and thumb, and then liberated it upon the floor. The snake did not appear to be quick in its movements, but stood, with elevated head and outspread hood, directing a sluggish stare, first to one side and then another. The little mangouste was now taken by Dr. Kinnis and soothed after the manner that is commonly used to encourage dogs to a contest, and then placed on the floor, four or five feet from the serpent. The animal fixed his small eyes steadily upon his enemy for a moment, and cautiously approached a few steps, when the snake, now on the alert, quickly struck his head at him, and the mangouste as quickly retreated about as far as he had advanced. In an instant the gaze of the two combatants was fixed on each other; and in the next, the mangouste moved forward a few steps, and then rushed like lightning upon the cobra, and, seizing his head in his mouth, shook his prey violently, with a fierce growl, as the cat does the unfortunate mouse that falls in her clutches, and then ran about the room, first to one corner and then to the other, dragging the snake with him, and at every pause renewing his shaking and exulting growl, much to the amusement of the gentlemen and fright of the ladies, who sprang upon the chairs to get out of the triumphant mangouste's way.

The second part of the entertainment promised more interest, from the greater size of the animals to be engaged. The large mangouste was taken from his cage, but by some means escaped, and immediately attacking the small one, attempted to rob him of his prize. Dr. Kinnis seized the larger animal by the tail, and in his endeavour to shake loose the hold he had fastened on the other, accidentally struck his head so hardly against the tile floor that he was stunned and for several moments appeared to be lifeless. In a short time, however, by dint of soothing treatment, he recovered sufficiently to eat, and to beget a hope that he had regained his spirits enough to fight, but in this we were disappointed, for when one of the large cobras was brought forth, the mangouste could not be prevailed upon to face him for an instant.

The mangouste (*Viverra zibethica*, *Lin.*) of India is closely related to the mangouste of Egypt, so celebrated amongst the ancients un-



der the name of *Inchneumon* (*Viverra Inchneumon*, *Lin.*) but is smaller; both have a pointed tail and a gray or brown fur; in the *Viverra mungos*, more of an ashy, and in the other more of a fawn color.\*

The large cobra was about five feet long and not less than two inches in diameter. The peculiarity is the lateral spreading out of the neck, behind the head when excited, presenting a mark which has been compared to a pair of spectacles. It is extremely venomous, and, it is said, may be taught a variety of tricks; hence it is generally selected for exhibitions by the snake charmers of India. When brought out upon the floor, the animal did not raise its head nor spread its hood, until irritated; it then raised up and moved slowly. As the snake cannot spring forward more than the distance that the head can be elevated from the ground—half the length—it can be no difficult matter to get out of its way, if perceived in time.

Finding the mangouste would not fight, Dr. Kinnis pressed the serpent to the ground with a cane, and, seizing it behind the head between the finger and thumb, he pressed back a fold of the gum with a needle, and exhibited to us the fangs, which were very small and very sharp. The venom, which is of a dark greenish color, is secreted by a gland under the eye, and is poured through a minute canal in the tooth into any wound it may make. It appears that the secretion of the poison only goes forward when the animal is in a state of irritation, and then the gland is very active and the quantity poured forth is considerable; but the secretive power is limited to time, for at the end of a few minutes the fluid, at first so deadly, becomes comparatively harmless. To hold the animal requires considerable force, and a friend seized the body of the snake with both hands to prevent his forcing himself out of the grasp of the doctor, who by some such accident was bitten, a few days before by the same cobra, in the fleshy part of the hand; but the wound was immediately excised, and healed without any bad consequences.

The cobra was restored to the companionship of its fellow, which he had bitten a day or two before, when both were angry; the wounded animal was languid and listless, probably from the effects of the poison. A half grown chicken was put in with them. It stood upon the folds of the sick cobra while the other struck it two or three blows, and then sunk down, taking no farther notice of the

\* Cuvier's Animal Kingdom.



bird, which gazed in silent consternation at its assailant. At the end of five minutes it was liberated, and seemed to be perfectly well.

The party now adjourned to the museum, which has been recently established under the direction of Dr. Kinnis, where we had a farther evidence of his predilection for snakes, in a very large coluber, kept in a wooden box without any fastening whatever; but the Doctor assured us it was perfectly harmless, and roused it with a stick. He presented it a half grown fowl, which the reptile surrounded with its folds, gradually drawing them tight, until the bird gave cries of distress. As some time would elapse before the coluber would begin to swallow it, we were shown two chitahs or hunting tigers of India—two beautiful animals—and a cassowary from New South Wales, which one of the chitahs had killed that morning. We then walked through the museum, which contains small collections of mammalia, birds, minerals, shells, &c., and a number of anatomical preparations of different kinds. The examination occupied probably a half hour, and, on our return, we found the coluber just beginning to swallow the chicken entire and head-foremost, slowly forcing it down his throat by pressing the body into his mouth by his own folds, and ten minutes elapsed before it entirely disappeared; a meal of this kind, given once a month, is ample for sustaining the reptile's life.

It was late in the afternoon when we took leave of the party, and directed our walk to the ramparts of the fort, which was built by the Dutch, and according to Cordiner, is a mile and a quarter in circumference, has seven bastions, connected by curtains and is defended by three hundred pieces of cannon.\* Two-thirds of it are encompassed by the sea and the remaining third by a lake of fresh water. Narrow necks of land or causeways connect it with the main on either hand. It has six gates, and was taken from the Dutch on the 15th of February, 1796.

The ramparts are covered with a beautiful green sward, and the side towards the road, leading to Point de Galle, presents several very picturesque views of the lake, and of slave island in its centre, so called from having been the abode of slaves under the Dutch dynasty. An hour before sunset the whole world of Colombo is in parade; the esplanade is covered with manœuvring troops, and the Galle road is crowded with carriages and equipages of various descriptions, and

\* A description of Ceylon by the Rev. James Cordiner, A. M., Late Chaplain to the Garrison at Colombo. 2 vols. quarto. London, 1807.



ladies and gentlemen on horseback, with a pretty sprinkling of pedestrians. The cocoanut forests or groves beyond the esplanade, gently moved by the dying sea-breeze, the rich green of a tropical vegetation, snug retreats beneath the shade, lighted by the last rays of the sun, fast sinking upon the expanded ocean, presented a scene as enchanting to my senses as any of the kind I have hitherto witnessed.

---

## CHAPTER XVII.

### SKETCHES IN CEYLON.

*December, 1835.*

THE island of Ceylon—the Taprobane of the Greeks and Romans, and by some old writers mentioned under the name of Selan, Sing-hala, Serendib and Lanka—lies between the parallels of five degrees and fifty-six minutes, and nine degrees fifty minutes north latitude; and between the meridians of eighty and eighty-two degrees of longitude east from Greenwich. Its extreme length is two hundred and seventy, and its extreme breadth one hundred and forty-five miles. Its configuration has been compared to that of a pear, and its average breadth is about one hundred miles, with a superficies measuring 24,448, square miles. It is mentioned in the writings of Pliny, Dionysius and Ovid. On the south and east, its shores are washed by the great Indian ocean, and on the west, it is separated from the coast of Coromandel by the gulf of Manaar; the northern point stretches into the bay of Bengal and the southern extremity extends nearly two degrees south of cape Comorin. The nearest passage to the Indian peninsula, is by the small islands of Manaar and Ramisseram; commonly called Rama's or Adam's bridge, before alluded to, and measures thirty miles. On Ramisseram there are still several Boudhist temples of great antiquity.

The surface of Ceylon is mountainous in the centre, broken into valleys and plains, while the margin is low, and in some places marshy.



It is naturally well watered by fine rivers and mountain streams, and, in the palmy days of the once splendid capital of Anooradhapoor, possessed artificial tanks and canals, made by the ancient monarchs of Kandy. The soil is clothed in a luxuriant growth of an extensive variety of tropical plants, often woven together in impenetrable jungles, the secure retreat of wild beasts and serpents, and its mountains present us with a variety of gems and minerals; but hitherto, and even at present, the want of practicable roads, deprives the inhabitants of a great part of their natural wealth. This evil must soon disappear before the spirit which is abroad for internal improvement, and for ameliorating the condition of the population. Though internal communication be difficult, the island has ports through which intercourse may be held with the whole world; indeed, before its discovery by the Portuguese, Ceylon was the commercial entrepôt, in the trade carried on between the countries of the far east and those upon the Persian gulf and Red Sea. On the north-eastern coast is Trincomalee, on the southern, Point de Galle, both fine havens, and on the western, Colombo, which is but a roadstead; the two latter are of the most commercial importance, while the former affords a place of rendezvous or head quarters for the vessels of the British squadrons serving in India.

When the Portuguese first visited Ceylon, they found it inhabited by two tribes or nations differing widely from each other. Those living on the north part of the island were called Bedas, and, like the Scotch Highlanders, were associated in warlike tribes under a patriarchal government. The Singhalese who resided on the southern extremity of the island, compared with the Bedas, were civilized, wearing clothes and being divided into castes as in India. They were Boudhists, but the Bedas had no religion. They were also warlike, and often prevailed over Europeans in consequence of their superior knowledge of the mountainous country.\*

The population of the island consists of Singhalese, Moors, Malays, Portuguese, Dutch, English and a few American missionaries established at Jaffna. The following table, published in the "Ceylon Almanac," for 1835, is a census taken in 1833, derived from the reports of the government agents.

\* Establecimientos Ultramarinos.



# **Return of the Population, and of the Marriages, Births, and Deaths in Ceylon, for 1833.**

COUNTY, or DISTRICT.	Area in Square Miles.	WHITES.		FREE BLACKS.*		SLAVES.		TOTAL.		Aliens and Resi- dent Strangers.	Population to the Square Mile.	PERSONS EMPLOYED IN			Births.	Marriages.	Deaths.
		Males.	Females.	Males.	Females.	Males.	Females.	Males.	Females.			Agriculture.	Manufacture.	Commerce.			
WESTERN,	4,452	1,734	1,704	234,402	211,196	391	338	236,527	213,238	2,516	101	165,498	7,780	10,538	10,278	3,512	9,156
SOUTHERN,	6,032	462	519	132,680	121,487	369	335	133,511	122,341	394	42	78,412	8,495	10,744	7,170	1,076	5,978
EASTERN,	4,895	694	206	25,935	22,577	0	0	26,629	22,783	660	10	9,733	1,256	2,610	2,884	501	948
NORTHERN,	6,053	423	442	108,312	108,272	12,166	11,449	120,901	120,163	657	46	59,208	5,339	20,820	1,322	3,810	6,298
CENTRAL,	3,016	65	55	64,577	56,352	440	511	65,082	56,918	4,488	42	41,603	2,087	2,390	No return kept.		
Total,	24,448	3,378	2,926	565,906	519,884	13,366	12,633	582,650	535,443	8,715	46	354,459	25,017	47,102	21,654	8,899	22,380

Population of Ceylon, 1,126,808.

N. B. Some of the smaller districts have not been returned.

\* There are, I believe, very few Negroes in Ceylon; the persons alluded to are those of the East India complexion, which is quite as dark as that of many tribes of Negroes.



The above table exhibits a very decided preponderance in the number of male over the female population, amounting to 194,423, attributable to the practice of female infanticide, which has been abandoned only within a short time. The average number of inhabitants to the square mile is forty-six, and the average mortality to the whole population appears to be less than two per cent., from which fact an estimate of the salubrity of the climate may be formed. The accidental deaths appear to be large, if we may judge from the following statement, found in the "Ceylon Almanac" for 1835. "From the reports sent into the Colonial Secretary from the several magistrates, it appears that there have been two hundred and twenty-two inquests (Coroner's) held during the last year, (1834,) and the following verdicts have been returned:—

By falls from trees,	-	-	-	-	-	49
Falling into wells,	-	-	-	-	-	25
Accidentally drowned,	-	-	-	-	-	41
Fall of houses,	-	-	-	-	-	2
By a gun bursting,	-	-	-	-	-	1
Accidentally shot,	-	-	-	-	-	3
By other casualties,	-	-	-	-	-	5
From bites of serpents,	-	-	-	-	-	20
Killed by elephants,	-	-	-	-	-	13
" by wild hogs,	-	-	-	-	-	4
Suicide by hanging, (English?)	-	-	-	-	-	18
" by drowning,	-	-	-	-	-	6
From the violence of others,	-	-	-	-	-	13
Drunkenness,	-	-	-	-	-	8
Natural sickness,	-	-	-	-	-	14
Total,	-	-	-	-	-	222

Of the population, a very small proportion is christianized, the majority being Boudhists, Hindoos, and Mohammedans; yet there can be no doubt that the efforts of the several religious missions in Ceylon have met with more success than in any other part of India; and what may be flattering to our national pride at least, though they have been passed over in silence by the compilers of the "Historical and Descriptive account of British India," published in the "Family Library," the American missionaries are acknowledged on all hands to be more exemplary and more useful, and more eminently successful than any other religious people in India. The omission referred



to in the above work has been corrected in a note by the editor of the American edition. Nor is any mention whatever made of the Wesleyan Mission, in a work pretending to give an account of the present condition of India; perhaps the compilers, (all distinguished men,) like the English residents there, do not consider Ceylon to be a part of India, notwithstanding that Bishop Heber visited it, in 1825, as a part of his diocese. But let us not complain of the compilers' want of care in this point, for it is in perfect keeping with the indefinite and obscure manner in which they have handled every subject they pretend to treat.

The American mission establishments at Jaffna, (Ceylon) commenced in 1816, and the mission occupies seven stations in the district, viz: Tillipally, Batticotta, Oodooville, Ponditeripo, Manepy, Chavagacherry and Varany. The missionary Seminary or High School at Batticotta, contains seven native teachers, ten students in christian theology, eighty-four students in English and the elements of science, twenty students pursuing the same branches in Tamûl only, besides eight day scholars, making a total of one hundred and twenty-nine.

In the female central school at Oodooville, under the superintendence of Mrs. Spaulding, there are fifty-one girls, who are fed, clothed and instructed at the expense of the mission.

In connexion with the mission, there are one hundred and twenty-three native free schools, distributed in eighteen parishes, instructing 4,241 boys and 821 girls, making together, 5,062. The printing establishment of the mission, at Manepy, has two presses employed.

The Wesleyan mission was established in 1814, and has at present the following schools at its different stations, viz:

Stations.	Schools.	Boys.	Girls.
Colombo and Negombo	8	505	47
Kurnegalle	16	540	116
Caltura	17	834	69
Galle	11	580	63
Matura	12	501	144
Moruwa Korle	3	80	12
	—	—	—
Totals	67	3040	451

The total number of teachers, male and female, is 95; besides which, the district employs 14 or 15 salaried catechists, who assist in the superintendence of the schools, and conduct public worship on sabbath days.



The mission has had a printing establishment in Colombo since its commencement, which at present employs one press, chiefly printing for the Colombo Auxiliary Bible Society, and the Colombo Auxiliary Religious Tract Society.

The Roman Catholic mission in Ceylon, was established by the venerable Father, Josè Vas, of the congregation of the oratory of St. Philip Neri, in 1687, and in 1833, had sixty-three private schools, distributed in the different provinces under its direction.

Such is the statistical condition of three missions, unnoticed by the learned compilers above referred to, and now let us see how the English mission will compare with them: then the reader may decide whether the American mission is unworthy of notice, particularly when it is remembered that the result of its labors, is to be of no little political advantage to the British interests in the East.

The Ceylon mission of the Church Missionary Society was established in 1818. It occupies four stations, viz.; Cotta, Kandy, Nellore and Baddagamma.

At Nellore and at Baddagamma, there are seminaries in which boys are boarded and educated gratuitously; and at Cotta there is a Christian institution where a select number of promising youths are clothed and boarded, and receive a superior education, sufficient to qualify them for assistant missionaries, or as may be considered otherwise eligible.

Its schools are 52, containing 1325 boys, 229 girls, 65 youths and adults—total 1619. There are 83 native teachers and assistants.

At Cotta there are printing and book-binding establishments.

The Baptist mission was instituted in the year 1812, by the Rev. J. Chater. It has three chapels in Colombo, situated in the fort, the Pettah and the Grand Pass, where the gospel is preached in the English, Portuguese, and Singhalese languages. Besides these places erected for religious worship, service is performed in several of the school rooms in Colombo, and in many around Colombo and Hangwelle.

In and around Colombo there are 14 day-schools, containing 500 children—of whom nearly a third part is females. These children are instructed in the fundamental principles of christianity, as the great object kept in view is their spiritual benefit. Two Sunday schools are attached to the mission—in the Chapel, in the Pettah and at the Grand Pass.\*

\* Ceylon Almanac.



Besides the above means of education, there were, in 1833, 703 private, 17 government, and 5 regimental schools, which, since that time, have been probably increased in number. The whole number of schools were then as follows:

Private,	-	-	-	703	}	Protestant,	983
American mission,	-	-	-	125			
Wesleyan mission,	-	-	-	67			
Church mission,	-	-	-	52			
Baptist mission,	-	-	-	14			
Government,	-	-	-	17			
Regimental,*	-	-	-	5	}		
Catholic (private,)	-	-	-	63			
							63
Total,							<hr/> 1046

All these institutions must exercise a powerful effect upon the prosperity of Ceylon, by diffusing general and christian knowledge, and thus ameliorating the condition of the people; and throwing aside all philanthropic considerations; (which are considered Utopian by a number of people,) must advantageously influence the political advancement of the island and improve its state of society.

The climate of Ceylon differs from most others in this region, in possessing, though so near the equator, an equable temperature, a regular succession of land and sea breezes, and frequent rains at irregular intervals. While the belt of coast, about sixty miles broad, enjoys all the characteristics of a tropical climate, the usual daily variation of temperature being from 76° to 86° F., the interior affords cooler regions, to which the invalid may retire to recruit his health, where he may find frosty mornings, and even ice, to invigorate the system, so liable to become relaxed after any considerable residence in the equatorial regions.

The most common diseases are dysentery, diarrhœa, consumption, elephantiasis, intermittent and miasmatic fevers; small pox is not an infrequent disease, notwithstanding the extensive vaccine establishment.

The products of vegetation in Ceylon are numerous and valuable. The fruits are the mango, the pumplemose, pummalo, or shaddock, the orange, the pine-apple (a wild species said to be poisonous) bananas, &c.; but neither European fruits nor vegetables flourish on the

\* The regimental schools are exclusively, I believe, for the instruction of soldiers' children.



coast. At a new settlement called Newura Ellia and at Kandy, potatoes of very good quality have been produced for several years. Rice, the chief article of native diet, is grown, but not in sufficient quantity for the consumption of the island; the average annual importation, from 1819 to 1828, inclusive, was 1,251,680 parrahs (the parrah of rice being from 42 to 46 lbs.,) equal to 870,784 bushels; one-third more than the annual importation under the Dutch administration.\* Yet, that the island can be made capable of producing sufficient grain for the consumption of its inhabitants, is an opinion I have seen advanced in several communications made to the "Colombo Journal" and "Ceylon Gazette." Strange to say, rice pays an import duty of two pence per parrah, and all other grain five pence.

Coffee is grown, and has been lately exported in considerable quantities. To encourage the cultivation of pepper, the government advertised, on the 17th November, 1827, that the export and import ware-house keeper at Colombo, and the collector of Galle, would receive any pepper of Ceylon growth that might be offered at nine shillings the parrah, which produced the following result.

#### PURCHASE OF PEPPER BY THE GOVERNMENT.

Year.	Parrahs.	Value.	
		£	s.
1827	46	20	14
1828	185	82	17
1829			
1830	5495	2472	15
1831	6955	3029	15
	12,681	5606	1

Cinnamon is the most profitable of the vegetable productions of Ceylon, and yields a considerable revenue to the government, being for 1831, not less than 106,434, pounds sterling. Since 1832, however, several very important changes in the law relating to it have been made. Previous to that period, it was a monopoly in the hands of the East India Company, and its cultivation was saddled with many onerous restrictions. At present it is freely cultivated, and may be exported to any port in the world, on paying a duty of three shillings the pound. The value of the cinnamon exported in 1834 was £32,741  $\frac{11}{2}$ , an amount very much less than for several previous years.

\* A brief Appeal to the Government of Great Britain in behalf of the Inhabitants of Ceylon. 12mo. p. 25. Colombo, 1835.



Cotton, sugar, tobacco, opium, indigo and silk are also produced in small quantities, and encouragement is only wanting to extend their cultivation. Besides these, there is the cocoanut tree, producing a plentiful supply of oil, and the material for coir rope; the ebony, the calamander, the satin wood, all used in the manufacture of the finest kinds of household furniture; the Sappan tree, affording a rich dye; the areca nut and cajoo trees; the bread fruit and jack trees, and many others that I may not mention.

The most profitable mineral production is plumbago, which is exported in considerable quantities. There is iron ore in plenty, some quicksilver, sulphur, and a great variety of precious stones, among which may be enumerated, red, green, blue, white and honey tourmalins; yellowish and greenish topaz; rubies of every shade; garnets, cinnamon stones, robals and hyacinths, the two last sometimes passed for rubies; blue, green, and white or water and star sapphire; cat's eye, agate, jasper, sardonyx; white, yellow, brown and black crystal, and that beautiful variety of feldspar called moonstone.

Among the animals elephants stand first. They are very numerous, and have become so destructive to the rice plantations, that a reward of three shillings is paid by the government for every tail—the head being too large for a trophy—that is brought. One of the chief sports in the island is elephant shooting, which is not without danger, and one gentleman was mentioned to us who has killed more than four hundred; but the hunts, as described by Cordiner, have been for many years abandoned. The tusks are sold for ivory, and their huge grinders are manufactured into knife-handles, snuff-boxes, &c. Tame elephants are employed for various purposes, for draught in carts, for ploughing and for piling timber.

The water buffalo, similar to that seen at Bombay, and on the island of Sumatra; several varieties of deer, among which are the spotted deer, the elk and a species not larger than a rabbit, called the moose-deer: chitahs or hunting tigers, wild cats, jackals, white-faced bears, monkeys of various species; the mangouste, a natural enemy of serpents, and which is said to protect itself by eating of the *orphiorhiza mungos*, of the *Strychnos colubrina*, and of the *ophioxylon serpentinum*, plants which have the reputation of being antidotes to the poison of venomous snakes; a musk-rat, or perfuming shrew, not much larger than the domestic mouse, and hogs, are all natives of the island. Horses, sheep and goats are imported, as well as turkeys, geese and fowls.



Among the birds, may be mentioned the jungle fowl, (said to possess the flavor of the pheasant,) snipe, green pigeons, fly-catchers, sea-larks, wood-peckers, swallows, sparrows, tailor, honey and paddy birds.

Of the lizard tribe, there is almost every variety. The number of deaths from the bite of reptiles, as reported, shows that they are numerous: at their head stands the cobra di capello, and next, perhaps, the coluber, or, as travellers call it, boa.

The insects are numerous, and some of them are very beautiful. The most remarkable is the leaf-fly, which assumes the color of the leaf upon which it rests; and in a prepared state may be imposed upon one as a dry leaf. There is an extensive variety of beautiful beetles, and a host of white, red and black ants, which are most annoying and destructive.\*

Besides all these riches, the waters abound in excellent fish, among which the Scir fish, or Ceylon salmon, stands pre-eminent. But fishing is oppressed by a tithe tax, which is farmed out to speculators and by them collected in kind. The revenue from this source in 1833, amounted to £6,479 14s. 7½d. Still there is another clog upon the labor of the fisherman, in the enormous tax of from eight hundred to one thousand per cent. on salt, of which large quantities are made on the island. In 1833 this tax yielded no less, than £29,044 12s. 5½d. It is farmed in the same way as that on fish; and a writer attempts to justify it on the principle, that salt being an article of universal consumption, the tax falls equally on all classes of inhabitants; which would be a true deduction, perhaps, if the premises were correct; for, though salt be an article of universal consumption, and all consume an equal quantity, the tax falls heaviest upon the poor for this very reason. If the rich man consumed salt in a quantity proportionate to his means, the tax then might be said to bear equally on all; but this equality appears to be like that in a capitation tax, where the amount is not so much objected to, were it not for the difficulty some of the poor find, of obtaining the means to pay it. Perhaps the best argument in favor of the salt tax, is, that the people have always been accustomed to it, and therefore do not feel the burden. It seems to operate as a complete bar to trading in salted fish for the interior, which, were salt at eight hundred or a thousand per cent. cheaper, would become of importance, at least to one of the classes of industrious poor. Salt is worth about a cent a pound, and the wages of a laborer are twelve and a half cents a day.

\* Cordiner's Description.



The commerce of Ceylon is not very extensive, having to contend with the common difficulties of colonies, as well as those peculiar to itself;—want of roads in particular. The exports to Europe consist chiefly of cinnamon, pepper, coffee, cocoanut-oil, plumbago, cordage, arrack, cardammums, elephant-tusks, deer-horns, tortoise-shell, (chiefly from the Maldivé islands) ebony, satin-wood, &c., and the returns are all kinds of European manufactures. To the British colonies are exported arrack, coffee, areca-nuts, copperahs, cocoanuts, hookah-shells, coir, nipera lath, bichos do mar, shark-fins, fish-oil, &c.; and, in return, rice, paddy, wheat, cloth, silk, sugar, spices, drugs, &c., are imported. There is also an internal trade carried on between the several districts or provinces, both by land and water.\*

The following table shows the number of merchant vessels which anchored in the several ports of Ceylon in the year 1834. The greater part of those that arrived at Colombo were from the westward of the cape of Good Hope; all those at the other ports arrived from places lying east of it.

Nation.	Ships.				Brigs.	Ports.
English,	-	34	-	-	5	Colombo.
French,	-	4	-	-	0	
American,	-	1	-	-	0	
English,	-	11	-	-	5	Galle.
Portuguese,	-	0	-	-	1	
English,	-	2	-	-	2	Trincomalee.
Id.	-	8	-	-	0	Point Pedro.†
Id.	-	5	-	-	2	Tondemar.‡
Id.	-	5	-	-	1	Hambantott.
Total,		70			16	

The government of Ceylon is managed, under a colonial charter from the British crown, by a governor, who is also commander-in-chief and vice admiral, aided by executive and legislative councils, the latter being constituted of Englishmen and natives. The judiciary consists of a supreme and inferior courts; vice admiralty and district courts, &c. The government is sustained, in a measure, by

\* Ceylon Gazetteer, by Simon Casie Chitty, *Modliar*. Ceylon. Cotta Church Mission Press, 1835.

† From this port, during the same year, there was exported to Mauritius and to India 115,689 parrahs of salt.

‡ In 1834 the export of salt from this port was 258,015 parrahs.



the presence of H. B. M. 58th, 61st, 78th and 97th regiments of foot, and H. B. M. Ceylon Rifle regiment. At present, however, there is very little to be apprehended, the affairs of the island being in a tranquil and prosperous state.

The revenue of the colony is in a more flourishing condition than that of any other of His Majesty's colonies: the sources whence it is derived will be seen by reference to the following table; and one cannot help congratulating himself, as an American, that the people of the United States are free from many of the onerous exactions on labor which we there see set forth. Indeed, it may be asserted, without fear of contradiction, that we are as free, as happy, as prosperous, if not very much more so, than any people on the face of the globe.

AN EXACT STATEMENT OF THE REVENUE OF  
CEYLON FOR THE YEAR 1833.

	£	s.	d.
Cinnamon, cinnamon and clove oils—sale of in England and Ceylon,*	165,270	.	6
Sea customs—duty on exports and imports, port clearances, &c.	64,419	12	4
Pearl fishery (at Condatchy,) ( <i>monopoly</i> ),	25,043	10	
Land Rents. { Paddy farms,	32,396	18	7
Land Rents. { Fine grain farms,	2,993	16	6½
Land Rents. { Garden farms,	1,103	10	11
Land Rents. { Duty on timber,†	129	15	6½
Land Customs. { Ferry tolls,	2,249	7	9½
Land Customs. { Bridge tolls,	2,684	8	5½
Land Customs. { Canal tolls,	79	6	1½
Land Customs. { Cart tolls,	68	1	4½
Land Customs. { Lock tolls,	7	10	
Land Customs. { Honorary tax,†	133	8	2
Licenses. { Arrack and toddy‡ farms,	31,268	4	0½
Licenses. { Duty on arrack stills,	1,644	7	9½
Licenses. { Gaming and cock-fighting farms,	344	10	6
Licenses. { Weights and measures—stamping and sale of,	65	2	1½
Auction duty,	182	4	9
Salt farms, ( <i>a tithe</i> ),	29,044	12	5½
Fish farms, Ditto,	6,479	14	7½
Tobacco tithes, Ditto,	174	12	3½
Commutation tax,†	1,799	17	9½
Blank stamps—sale of,	3,121	0	0½
Judicial stamps—sale of, and fees on Judicial process of Supreme Court,	10,172	5	6½
Carried forward,	380,876	16	2½

\* These articles are received by the government at fixed rates in payment of taxes.

† Since abolished.

‡ Liquors obtained from the cocoanut tree.



	£.	s.	d.
Brought forward, - - - - -	380,876	16	2½
Post office, - - - - -	1,823	8	10½
Chank fishery,* ( <i>a monopoly</i> ), - - - - -	13	10	0
Pearl oysters—sale of at Trincomalee, - - - - -	2	5	0
<b>Total fixed revenue, - - - - -</b>	<b>382,716</b>	<b>0</b>	<b>3</b>
Premium on sale of bills, &c. - - - - -	4,144	9	7½
Interest on arrears of rents, &c. - - - - -	757	14	9
Portion of interest paid to government by the Loan Board, - - - - -	474	4	7½
Black pepper—sale of in England and Ceylon, - - - - -	7,130	17	0
Cocoanut oil, do. do. do. - - - - -	7,893	13	4
Peradenia coffee, do. do. do. - - - - -	67	7	9¾
Kekuna oil, do. do. do. - - - - -	20	9	0
Colombo Journal, do. do. do. - - - - -	683	2	6½
Lands and houses—rents and sale of, - - - - -	817	7	3¼
Tithes redeemed, - - - - -	52	9	0¼
Pearl-sand sifting—rent of, - - - - -	16	19	0
Arrack, gardening, and bazaar farms, rented at the pearl fishery at Candatchy, - - - - -	35	5	0
Vedderatte tribute—sale of, ( <i>since abolished</i> ), - - - - -	67	7	8½
Masters attendant—hire of boats, &c. - - - - -	6	17	0
Commissariat and colonial stores, provisions, &c.—sale of, and stoppages for issues to troops, - - - - -	23,107	7	10½
Government cattle—sale of, - - - - -	44	9	1¾
Gunpowder—sale of, - - - - -	155	3	1½
Rice and paddy—sale of, and loans recovered by collectors, - - - - -	487	12	5½
Hospital surplus, - - - - -	100	2	6½
Effects of the deceased men of the pioneer—elephant and bullock establishments—pay of deserted men, &c. - - - - -	24	9	3¼
Difference of pay of the late superintendent of the cinnamon department refunded, - - - - -	26	13	4
Sorting and embalming cinnamon—receipts for, - - - - -	74	8	0
Sundry incidental receipts of the treasury, - - - - -	137	17	11¼
Fines and forfeitures, - - - - -	991	17	10¾
<b>Total incidental receipts, - - - - -</b>	<b>47,318</b>	<b>5</b>	<b>2¾</b>
<b>Receipts in aid of revenue, - - - - -</b>	<b>2,258</b>	<b>16</b>	<b>6¾</b>
<b>SUMMARY.</b>			
Arrears of revenue of former years, - - - - -	5,263	4	0¼
Fixed, - - - - -	382,716	0	3
Incidental, - - - - -	47,318	5	2¾
Receipts in aid of revenue, - - - - -	2,258	16	6¾
	<b>437,556</b>	<b>6</b>	<b>0¼</b>

The total expenditure for the same period was £331,764, leaving a surplus revenue of £105,791.

\* Chank shells are made into bracelets and bangles, which are worn by females in almost all parts of India.



Of the history of Ceylon previous to the discovery by the Portuguese in 1505, very little was known, until G. Turnour, Esq. of the Ceylon civil service, obtained a knowledge of the Pali language and translated a manuscript, written on the leaves of the talipot tree, entitled MAHA WANSE. Mr. Turnour\* obtained a transcript of the work in 1827, and communicated to the editor of the Ceylon Almanac, an "Epitome of the History of Ceylon," containing a brief notice of one hundred and sixty-five Singhalese sovereigns, beginning with Wejaya, who ascended the throne B. C. 543, and ending with Sree Wickrema Raajasingha, who succeeded to the sovereignty in 1798. He was the last king of Kandy. In 1815, the seventeenth year of his reign, he was deposed by the English and imprisoned at Vellore, (Madras country) where he died in 1832, leaving a son born during his captivity. Since 1815, the whole island has been under the dominion of the British government.

The Rev. D. Poor, American missionary at Jaffna, has also communicated to the Ceylon Almanac, a translation of an extract from the Ramayanam, accounting for the origin of the island of Ceylon. It is short and not uninteresting, and is therefore transcribed for the benefit of the reader.

" 'Listen, O ye mighty ones!' said the divine architect to the three giants who consulted him as to the most suitable place for building a royal city—'Listen. In former times the thousand-headed hydra, and the gods of winds had a fierce contention between themselves, as to which of them was the greater. Each of them obstinately insisted that he himself was superior to the other, in strength and greatness, in honor and glory. At length they resolved to settle the controversy by putting their pretensions to the test, in presence of all the gods.

" At the time appointed for the contest, the thousand-headed hydra ascended the golden mountain Marw, which has one thousand and eight lofty summits, and is nearly one and a half million of miles in height; he spread out his thousand heads, firmly clasping the numerous summits of the mountain so that no part of it was at that time visible.

" Having thus taken his position, he defied his antagonist to dislodge him. The god of winds, being wrought to the highest fury,

\* This gentleman is about publishing the result of his labors and indigations in the Pali and Singhalese languages.



instantly rushed forth, and with a concentration of those mighty energies by which he is wont, at the time of a universal deluge, to dissolve rocks into their five elements, and to scatter them to the winds, he raged and roared furiously, beat his foe; but the hydra remained unmoved. The god of winds perceiving that he was defeated and being unable to endure the disgrace that must ensue, became contracted in his form and sneaked away, and concealed himself, together with his wonted energies, in a cavity of a mountain. In consequence of this concealment, the inhabitants of the upper and lower regions, both gods and men, being deprived of wind, panted, fainted and swooned; they were parched, melted and burned, like waxen dolls before a furnace. At this time of general consternation and distress, the gods, demigods and sages, in one vast procession, proceeded to the foot of the mountain, prostrated themselves before the thousand-headed hydra, and thus addressed him: 'Art thou not indeed the protector of the universe? Is there any one to be compared with thee in wisdom, in power and glory? Have compassion on all beings, and save them from their present agony.'

"The hydra being thus honored and thereby rendered propitious, raised one of his heads a little, that he might leisurely survey the prostrate multitude before him. At that time, the god of winds, who, burning with revenge, lay watching his opportunity, said within himself—'Now, is my chance. When quicker than lightning, he darted from his concealment, and with redoubled fury poured forth such tornadoes, as to wrench three summits from the mountain's top, and hurled them through the regions of space in the southern or Indian Ocean. The summits thus hurled into the ocean, raised their stately heads far above its surface. 'Upon the very heights of those summits,' exclaimed the three giants, 'build for us the royal city, which we before demanded.' According to this order, a royal city was built, to which was given the name of Lanka or Ceylon."

The Portuguese discovered the island and got footing in it in 1505. In 1658, the Dutch got possession, and the States General held it till 1796, when it fell into the hands of the English. From that date, until 1802, it was under the control of the East India Company, when it became a colony of the Royal Government, and has so remained ever since.

Previous to the insurrection and war in 1815, the British possessions, in Ceylon, formed a belt round the island, varying in breadth from six to sixty miles; and the interior provinces which were cut



off from all communication with the sea, belonged to the Kandyan monarch, whose capital was in the centre of his dominions. Of his fate mention has been already made.

The following return of exports, which is authentic, will convey a more definite idea of the commerce of the island than any thing we have hitherto stated.

being unable to send the list of exports, and the list of imports, in-  
cluded in his letter, and which was sent to the Government, in con-  
sequence of the Government, the list of exports, and the list of im-  
ports, both goods and men, being deposited at the office, and the  
and somewhat they were found, and the list of exports, and the list of im-  
ports, both goods and men, being deposited at the office, and the  
dolls before a picture. At this time of great confusion and  
distress, the gods, demigods and sages in the great confusion, pro-  
ceeded to the foot of the mountain, and the list of exports, and the list of im-  
ports, both goods and men, being deposited at the office, and the  
thousand-headed hydra, and the list of exports, and the list of im-  
ports, both goods and men, being deposited at the office, and the  
dash the protector of the universe, and the list of exports, and the list of im-  
ports, both goods and men, being deposited at the office, and the  
with this in wisdom, and the list of exports, and the list of im-  
ports, both goods and men, being deposited at the office, and the  
being, and save them from their present agony.

"The hydra being thus honored and thereby rendered propitious,  
raised one of his heads a little, that he might instantly carry the  
prostrate multitude before him. At that time, the god of winds,  
who, burning with rage, lay watching his opportunity, said within  
himself—'Now is my chance.' When, therefore, the lightning he  
darted from his countenance, and with redoubled fury poured forth  
such torments as to scorch the summit of the mountain's top,  
and burst them through the region of space in the southern or in-  
fernal region. The summit, thus burst into the air, raised their  
stately heads far above its surface. Upon the very heights of those  
summits, exclaimed the three giants, 'Baild for us the royal city,  
which we before demanded.' According to this order a royal city  
was built, to which was given the name of 'Jambukotthapa.'

The Portuguese discovered the island and not doubt, in 1505.  
In 1638, the Dutch got possession, and the British obtained it  
in 1795, when it fell into the hands of the English. From that date,  
until 1802, it was under the control of the East India Company,  
when it became a colony of the Royal Government, and has so re-  
mained ever since.

Prior to the insurrection and war in 1815, the British pos-  
sions in Ceylon, formed a belt round the island, varying in breadth  
from six to sixty miles; and the interior provinces which were cut



# Exports of the Island of Ceylon,

FROM 1831 TO 1834;

COMPILED FROM THE RETURNS OF THE SEVERAL COLLECTORS OF THE CUSTOMS.

ARTICLES OF EXPORT.		TOTAL VALUE OF ARTICLES EXPORTED IN EACH YEAR.*			
		1831.	1832.	1833.	1834.
		£	£	£	£
Arrack	to { Great Britain,	206	40	187	153
	{ India,	18,587	10,058	12,237	7,581
	{ Foreign States,		4		2
Arecanuts	{ India,	9,005	11,173	11,274	8,405
	{ Foreign States,	59	73	50	121
Arrow-root	{ Great Britain,	5	151		
	{ India,	1	1		
Aroipo	{ India,	15		24	25
Ammunition	{ India,			24	
Anchors	{ India,				3
Asses	{ India,		35	13	115
Bees'-wax	{ Great Britain,				
	{ India,	88	7	19	19
	{ U. S. of America,			7	
	{ Foreign States,	18	1		
Black pepper	{ Great Britain,	5,187	2,684	407	825
	{ India,	32		9	1,464
	{ Foreign States,		2		3
Black lead	{ Great Britain,	534	281	126	1,205
	{ India,			1	
Baskets, bags,	{ India,	149	371	82	49
&c.	{ Great Britain,	2		3	
	{ Foreign States,	32	65	4	2
Betel leaves and flowers	{ India,	5	2		4
Bicho do mar and shark fins	{ India,	10,036	1,253	1,033	1,229
	{ Foreign States,			90	
Brass and copper wares	{ India,	7	5	6	6
	{ Great Britain,				
	{ Foreign States,	1	2		

\* The fractional parts in these Tables have been omitted.



ARTICLES OF EXPORT.		TOTAL VALUE OF ARTICLES EXPORTED IN EACH YEAR.			
		1831.	1832.	1833.	1834.
		£	£	£	£
Boats and canoes to	India,		13		
Bricks and tiles	India,	4	2		
Beer	India,	360	420	396	
Biscuits	India,				
Bark for tanning leather	India,	2	5	3	16
Brimstone	Great Britain,	80			
Blocks	India,	100			
Buckets	India,		1		
Books	Foreign States,				
	Great Britain,				
	India,		65		
Bandies	Great Britain,		30		
	India,	4	130	60	
	Great Britain,	5	13	14	7
Cocoanuts	India,	2,654	3,172	5,594	4,231
	Foreign States,	6	10	22	3
	Great Britain,	14,267	50,347	23,585	31,748
Coffee	India,	5,398	4,005	2,165	5,133
	Foreign States,	8	94		1,755
	U. S. of America,		2,479	260	
	Great Britain,	7,066	6,047	4,525	4,886
Cocoanut oil	India,	152	819	1,347	219
	Foreign States,	90	15		62
	Great Britain,	30,000	30,975	8,255	31,436
Cinnamon	India,	1		4	1,305
	U. S. of America,		225	13	
	Foreign States,	9			2,817
Confectionary, &c.	Great Britain,				
	India,	84	4	15	19
	Foreign States,				
Copperahs	India,	725	912	1,043	1,920
	Foreign States,				
	Great Britain,	73	533	397	147
Cinnamon and clove oils	U. S. of America,		6	6	
	Foreign States,				
	India,				190
	India,	2,824	3,237	3,294	4,653
Cöir (loose) ropes, &c.	Foreign States,	60	17	442	125
	U. S. of America,		124	1,329	
	Great Britain,	1,068	347	3,446	409
Calamander wood	Great Britain,		7	11	
	India,	6	26		
Chunam	India,	7	7	5	12



ARTICLES OF EXPORT.		TOTAL VALUE OF ARTICLES EXPORTED IN EACH YEAR.			
		1831.	1832.	1833	1834.
		£	£	£	£
Camels	to India,		22		
	{ Great Britain,	334	250	214	551
Cardemoms	{ India,	34			
	{ Foreign States,			3	
Curry stuffs	{ Great Britain,				
	{ India,	257	87	155	173
	{ Foreign States,	30	2		18
	{ Great Britain,		1		
Candles	{ U. S. of America,			5	
	{ India,	117	212	52	
Copper	{ India,	5	24	102	
Chanks, or	{ India,	479	736	430	1,344
chanks' rings	{ Foreign States,		21	414	54
Cutlery	{ India,	3			
Chuja, or dyeing	{ India,	833	671	400	714
roots	{ Great Britain,				
Carsingoes	{ India,	2	3	1	
	{ India,	3	12	12	15
Cotton	{ Great Britain,				
	{ Foreign States,				1
Cocoanut shells	{ India,	282	123	23	54
	{ Foreign States,				
	{ India,	789	275	892	7
Cotton clothes	{ Foreign States,				6
	{ Great Britain,				
Cordage (Eu- rope)	{ India,				
Copper coin	{ India,	60	135		
China wares	{ Great Britain,				
	{ Foreign States,				
Casks, &c. (emp- ty)	{ India,	21	29	1	
	{ Foreign States,				
	{ Great Britain,			179	
Caxpoe	{ India,				
	{ Foreign States,			47	
Chessmen	{ Great Britain,		30		
	{ India,		1		
Canvass	{ India,				
	{ Foreign States,	7			
Cotton thread	{ India,		12		5
Carts	{ India,				
Cloth (woollen)	{ India,				
Cinnamon water	{ Foreign States,	1			
Colored paper	{ India,				
Corks	{ Foreign States,				



ARTICLES OF EXPORT.		TOTAL VALUE OF ARTICLES EXPORTED IN EACH YEAR.			
		1831.	1832.	1833.	1834.
		£	£	£	£
Curiosities	to { Great Britain,	31	150	15	
		5	32	3	18
Cadjans	{ India,	3			
Dammes, &c.	{ India,	195	161	116	192
Deer horns	{ Foreign States,	4	4	1	1
	{ Great Britain,				
Ebony wood	{ Great Britain,	27	55	151	68
	{ India,	545	442	77	607
	{ Foreign States,				133
Empty bottles	{ India,			4	
Elephants	{ India,		303	13	60
Earthen wares	{ India,			1	
	{ Foreign States,				
	{ Great Britain,	321	652	195	40
Furnitures	{ India,	175	279	60	131
	{ Foreign States,		2		
Fruits and vege- tables	{ Great Britain,				
	{ India,	74	153	101	157
Firewood	{ India,	2	19	14	13
Fowling pieces	{ India,				
	{ Foreign States,				
Grinding stones	{ India,	6	2	7	1
	{ Foreign States,			2	
Gems	{ India,				
Gorkas	{ India,	4	15	5	3
	{ Foreign States,				
	{ India,	236	111	137	150
Ghee	{ Foreign States,	41	32	8	21
Ginger	{ Great Britain,				3
Grease, &c.	{ India,	6		1	7
	{ Foreign States,				
Grains	{ India,			147	1,117
	{ Foreign States,				2
Gunny bags	{ India,	37	44	28	
	{ Foreign States,				
Girkins	{ India,				
Garden seeds	{ India,				
Gum copal, &c.	{ U. S. of America,			16	
	{ Great Britain,	2			
Gamboge	{ U. S. of America,			1	
Glass wares	{ India,			10	
	{ Great Britain,	280	1,587	415	696
Horns	{ India,	27	77	32	738
	{ Foreign States,			3	
Haberdashery	{ Great Britain,				



ARTICLES OF EXPORT.		TOTAL VALUE OF ARTICLES EXPORTED IN EACH YEAR.			
		1831.	1832.	1833.	1834.
		£	£	£	£
Haberdashery	to { India,	1	20		
Hides of deer	{ Foreign States,				
Honey, &c.	{ Great Britain,	13	31	19	21
	{ India,				11
	{ Foreign States,				82
Hides and skins	{ India,	354	541	187	
	{ Foreign States,			76	
	{ Great Britain,		224	1	
Hats and bon- nets	{ India,				
Hog's lard	{ Foreign States,				
Horses	{ India,		60	145	78
	{ Great Britain,	73	36	30	7
Ivory	{ India,	142	57	18	36
	{ Foreign States,				
	{ U. S. of America,		2	1	
Iron wares	{ India,				
Ilpe seeds	{ Foreign States,				
Images	{ Foreign States,				
Iron	{ India,		20		
Iron chains	{ India,	300			
	{ Foreign States,				
	{ Great Britain,				
Jewelry	{ India,	155	250	2	30
	{ Foreign States,				
Jars (empty)	{ India,				
	{ India,	1,179	1,641	1,001	1,414
Jaggery	{ Foreign States,	177	7		22
	{ Great Britain,	100			
Junk	{ India,	1	20		
	{ Great Britain,		15		
Live stock	{ India,	28	3	35	52
	{ Great Britain,				
Looking glasses	{ India,			5	
	{ Foreign States,				
	{ India,		115		
Medicines	{ Great Britain,				
	{ U. S. of America,		1		
	{ Great Britain,				
Mats, &c.	{ Foreign States,				
	{ India,				
Millinery	{ India,				
	{ Foreign States,				
Marmel water	{ India,	20	3	4	3
	{ Foreign States,				



ARTICLES OF EXPORT.			TOTAL VALUE OF ARTICLES EXPORTED IN EACH YEAR.			
			1831.	1832.	1833.	1834.
			£	£	£	£
Malabar slip- pers	to }	India,				
Marble stones		India,	2	5	2	28
Materials		India,	35	4	8	
Musical instru- ments		India,				
Nankeen		India,				
Nets		India,				
Oils		Great Britain,		3		
		India,	9	166	51	29
		Foreign States,				3
		India,	57	7	17	5
Oil manstore		Great Britain,				
		Foreign States,	1	1		
Oakums		India,				
Pearls		India,		1,000		
		Foreign States,				
Pearl oysters		India,		1		
Planks, &c.		Great Britain,				
Perfumery		India,				
Palmeira raft- ers, &c.		India,	4,231	5,343	4,626	4,417
		Foreign States,	94	69	20	125
Precious stones, &c.		Great Britain,	10	100	5	
		India,	2	20	5	
Palmeira leaves, &c.		India,	9	9	15	7
Ponats		India,				
Plants		India,	2	2		
Palmeira nuts, &c.		India,			1	
Paints		India,		126	58	
Pickles, &c.		Foreign States,				
Palanquins		India,	7	3	3	10
Parrah measures		India,	2	1		
Pitch		India,			78	
Rattan		Great Britain,				
Rosin		India,		24		
		Foreign States,				
Rice		Great Britain,				
		Great Britain,	44	472	59	33
Shells		India,	30	49	8	75
		Foreign States,		33		43
		India,	378	316	753	2,602
Seeds		Foreign States,	7	9	4	737
		Great Britain,		4		10



ARTICLES OF EXPORT.		TOTAL VALUE OF ARTICLES EXPORTED IN EACH YEAR.			
		1831.	1832.	1833.	1834.
		£	£	£	£
Staves	to Great Britain,				
	{ Great Britain,		7	6	4,164
Satin wood	{ India,	304	291	386	485
	{ Foreign States,	97	37		
Staves, &c.	{ India,		7		
Silver wares	{ Great Britain,	150			
Sea-moss	{ India,	1			
	{ India,		85		
Salted provisions	{ Foreign States,				
	{ Great Britain,				
	{ India,	44	104	144	8
Salted fish, &c.	{ Foreign States,				
Spears	{ India,				
	{ Great Britain,		126	57	265
Sappan wood,	{ India,	178		44	91
&c.	{ Foreign States,				243
Saddle wood	{ India,				
Salt	{ India,	1		1,121	4,991
Sugar candy	{ India,				
Stationery	{ India,				
Soft sugar	{ India,				
Soap	{ India,		6		
	{ Foreign States,			4	
	{ Great Britain,				
Spirit and liquors	{ India,			75	
	{ Foreign States,				
	{ U. S. of America,		61		
Spices	{ India,				
	{ Foreign States,			3	
Silk	{ India,				
Sulphur	{ India,				
Saltpetre	{ India,				
Sponge	{ India,				1
Sunday tools	{ India,				
Saddlery	{ India,				
	{ Great Britain,		4		2
Timbers	{ India,	1,971	2,245	706	1,115
	{ Foreign States,	146	30	64	33
Tallow	{ Great Britain,		29		166
Tinsels	{ India,				1
	{ Great Britain,	3			
Tallipoos	{ India,	4			
	{ Foreign States,		1		
	{ Foreign States,	2			
Tobacco	{ Great Britain,			1	



ARTICLES OF EXPORT.			TOTAL VALUE OF ARTICLES EXPORTED IN EACH YEAR.			
			1831.	1832.	1833.	1834.
			£	£	£	£
Tobacco	to India,		5,242	1,741	1,986	5,032
Tanks (iron)	India,		238			
Tamareen stones	India,		3	5	1	3
Tortoise shells	India,		21	27	39	44
Toys	India,					
Tiles, &c.	India,					
Tea	{ Great Britain,					
	{ India,					
Tamareen	Great Britain,					
Twine	India,			1		
Turmeric	Great Britain,					
Tar	India,					
Vinegar	{ Great Britain,				1	
	{ India,		34	45	29	25
Velvet	Foreign States,					
Winnows	{ Foreign States,		1			
	{ India,		24	10	7	19
	{ Great Britain,			36		
Wines	{ India,				1,073	
	{ Foreign States,					
Wearing appa- rel	{ India,					
Wooden parahs	India,					
Wires	India,					
Wire cloth	India,					
White ware	Great Britain,				11	
Wagons	India,				28	
Total			121,148	156,008	100,470	145,833



## CHAPTER XVIII.

## PEARLS AND PEARL-FISHING OF CEYLON.

December, 1835.

A VERY extensive variety of beautiful shells is found in the waters of Ceylon, but those most esteemed are found at Trincomalee, and may be met with for sale at Colombo, put up in satin-wood cases of different sizes, fitted with trays, setting one on top of the other. But the most prized of all the sub-marine productions, by princes, by orientals, and particularly by ladies, from the most ancient times, is the pearl, found in a shell, which, according to Lamark, is named *Meleagrina Margaritifera*, and inhabits the Persian Gulf, the shores of Ceylon, the gulf of Mexico, the bay of Panama, and the gulf of California. According to the nomenclature of conchology, it is a bi-valve, or is composed of two halves, and has at the posterior base a byssus, or beard, for the accommodation of which there is a notch between the two shells. By this byssus and a glutinous matter which it secretes, the animal attaches itself to rocks, stones, dead shells, &c., and it is also, perhaps, an adjuvant to its motions. The size of the pearl oyster varies in the different localities of its abode; but those of the same place do not differ much in this respect from each other: those of California, Panama, and Barhein in the Persian gulf, are large when compared with those taken from the pearl banks of Ceylon, which measure at the hinge, which is linear, from two to two and a half inches, and rectangularly to this base, from two and a half to three inches. These shells are thin and diaphanous; internally nacre or pearlaceous, and externally rough, bearing the marks of the habitations of other animals, as sponges and some species of vermes, that penetrate the outside covering, or epidermis, and therein construct their dwellings. Those of the Persian gulf are thicker and of



twice the above dimensions: they are smoother externally, covered with a greenish epidermis, and marked by dark-colored rays of from a quarter to half an inch in breadth. Again; those found at Panama and those of California, particularly the latter, are very large, and the nacre is thick, forming what is termed 'Mother of Pearl.' A very considerable profit is derived from carrying these shells from California to China, where they are manufactured into a variety of ornamental and fancy articles.

Pearl oysters, the natives of Ceylon think, descend from the clouds in showers of rain, and, according to Argensola, in a History of the Moluccas, "At a certain season, are wont to open their mouths, first opening the shell, and receive the subtle and substantial dew from which they conceive pearls, the color depending on the quality of the dew: if they receive it pure, they beget white pearls, but if turbid, gray and other turbid colors. Sarmiento complained, they were thrice hid by nature; in the depth of the sea, in the shell, and within the animal inhabiting it."\*—After escaping from the egg, or embryo state, pearl oysters are seen in immense clusters, floating about the sea; at this time they are so very small, that a casual observer would pass the floating masses, believing them to be some kind of fish spawn, but never suppose them to be oysters. In this state, the sport of wind and current, they are driven round the coasts of Ceylon, until increased size causes them to sink to the bottom. They then attach themselves to rocks, generally of coral, or to any heavy substance, by means of the beard, similar to that of the common muscle, with which nature has furnished them, or they adhere to each other in clusters. On removing a wooden buoy, that had been attached to an anchor, about six weeks, in the port of Colombo, it was brought on shore, covered with pearl oysters, nearly as large as a shilling. The finest pearl in the possession of the Maricaire of Killicarre is said to have been obtained from a bank off Chilaw; but it appears that oysters very seldom arrive at perfection on any banks except on those off Arippe. The coral banks off the coasts of this island, lie from one to six or eight miles from the shore, generally exposed to the strength of the monsoons and currents; those near Arippe appear to be the least exposed.†

\* Viage al Estrecho de Magallanes Por el Capitan Pedro Sarmiento de Gamboa. En los Años de 1579, y, 1580. Madrid, 1768.

† Remarks on the Pearl Fisheries by a correspondent of the Colombo Journal, Nov. 10, 1832.



Near Muscat, I have found pearl oysters from the size of a dime to twice that of those of Arippe, adhering by their beards in crevices of rocks, left bare by the tide; and the very small ones, to the under side of masses of rock, lying in water two or three feet deep, many of which I turned over. They were mingled with other shells and sponges, and some were even hidden by them; and one could not avoid the impression that the young oysters had selected such retreats, to be secure from the attacks of larger and more active animals. But their number was insignificant, when compared with the thousands fished up from what are termed pearl banks.

"The last three fisheries on the Arippe banks, have been in from five and a half to seven fathoms water, protected on the west and south-west by a ridge of sand and coral, extending from the north point of an island called Caredivan. Coming from seaward over this ridge, in two and three quarter or three fathoms water, you rapidly deepen to seven fathoms in the immediate neighborhood of the oyster beds: besides this peculiar protection from the violence of the south-west monsoon, the coral banks to the northward of the pearl banks are in many parts nearly level with the surface of the sea, and may form an essential protection to the oysters from the currents of the north-east monsoon.

"Thus secure in deep water, lie the quiescent oysters, adhering to their coral homes until age has enfeebled the fibres of their beards, and then, most of them breaking from their hold, are found in perfection on a sandy bottom near the coral beds. Two-thirds of the oysters taken up last fishery were from a sandy bottom.

"One of the most intelligent pearl divers I have met, fixes the age of the oyster at six and a half years when it breaks from the rock: he does not think it can forsake the rock at its own pleasure; but when separated it has the power of moving on a sandy bottom, generally with the hinge directly in advance. When I first sounded on the ridge which runs from Caredivan island, I was struck with its importance as a guide to the particular spots of oysters, and was surprised I had never heard of its existence. I caused inquiry to be made, and after some time was informed, that the natives of that part of the country, have a wild notion of a powerful queen having resided at Kodremalle, and that the dead from the city were placed on an island in the sea, which has disappeared; nevertheless, I am inclined to believe the ridge to be rising coral and sand.

"Before the fibres of the beard break and the oysters separate, they are in immense heaps and clusters. A diver describing how



thick they were on the bank, placed his hand to his chin; a more intelligent man estimated the depth of the beds of oysters seldom to exceed eighteen inches, and explained that large rocks at the bottom, when covered with oysters, may be mistaken for heaps of oysters themselves.

"Pearl oysters are said to arrive at perfection in seven years: after attaining this age they soon die. I heard of an attempt being made to remove pearl oysters, as common oysters are removed in Europe, to richer and more secure ground, but without success. I once attempted to convey some alive from Arippe to Colombo by sea, having the water frequently changed, but on the second day they were all dead.

"Persons who may have been in the habit of considering a pearl oyster a treasure, will be astonished to learn that a bushel of them may be purchased at Arippe during a fishery for a less sum, than a bushel of oysters can be bought for at Feversham or Colchester.

"The best pearls are generally found in the most fleshy part of the oyster, near the hinge of the shell, but pearls are found in all parts of the fish and also adhering to the shells. I have known sixty-seven pearls of various sizes taken from one oyster. It is by no means certain that every oyster contains pearls; they are seldom found in those oysters that would be selected as the finest for eating: this favors the opinion that pearls are produced by disease in the fish, and, therefore, pearl oysters are seldom eaten, being considered unwholesome. If a pearl be cut into two pieces, it will be seen that it is formed of separate coats or layers, similar to those of an onion; and it is no doubt formed of decomposed particles of shell."

In this opinion, that pearls are 'formed of decomposed particles of shell,' the correspondent of the Colombo Journal is mistaken; but, to understand the subject clearly, it will be necessary to say a word or two on the growth and organization of shells generally.

It must be kept in view that shells are the hard coverings or domicils of a kind of animals whose organization, though sufficiently perfect for all the purposes to which they are destined, is comparatively of a low grade. These animals are possessed of an apparatus, of muscles for motion, another for digestion and nutrition, and of organs for circulating a fluid, which, from certain purposes to which it is applied, may be termed blood. Some have, in addition to these rudiments of animal life, besides the sense of touch, that of seeing, of hearing, of smelling and of taste; but in the most elementary con-



stitution alluded to, there is the basis for organs, endowed with the function termed secretion, which is absolutely necessary for the maintenance and continuation of animal existence.

By the term secretion is meant the active process of an organ or gland in producing its peculiar fluid, which is also termed its secretion; and this secretion is always the same from the same gland when in a normal condition: for example, the liver secretes bile, the lachrymal gland, tears, and the salivary gland, saliva; but the function of one gland is never assumed by another.

Most shell-wearing animals are produced from eggs which contain the minute animal in its shell, then very delicate and scarcely large enough for the accommodation of the new being. As his size increases, nature sets to work and enlarges it by the process of secretion and deposition of shelly matter, a function performed by the skin, making the domicil larger and thicker as he grows older, until the animal reaches adult age, when the function is carried on less actively, unless stimulated by adventitious circumstances. The shelly matter, when first eliminated from the gland, or secreting surface, in the pearlaceous shells, is generally of a bluish white color and of rather more consistence than milk; but in a short time the fluid part, gradually disappearing, leaves a solid and delicate coating, closely adhering, and so nicely joined, that it is not at once perceived where the junction has taken place between the old and new shelly matter. It is probable, that after adult age, this function is called into action at fixed periods, which may be at the season of procreation: in the common oyster, it occurs in the United States, probably twice a year, in the spring and autumn, when the animal is said to be in its milk. Owing to an untimely suspension of the secreting process in certain cases, we meet with irregularities in the forms of shells of some species. Now, by the very same function which constructs the shell and increases its size, as the necessity of the animal inhabiting it requires, both the rough exterior and beautifully nacreous interior of the pearl shell, as well as of many others, are produced; the dimensions and thickness of the shell depending altogether upon the size and activity of the secreting organs. In the higher grades of animal life, when a bone is fractured or some of the soft parts are injured, nature immediately makes an effort, and frequently succeeds in repairing the damage; and the same holds true in the low grade of animalization, wherein shell-covered animals are classed; for when a shell is accidentally injured, either by fracture or perforation, its inhabitant at once sets about secreting the mate-



rial for its repair. I have in my possession several very large limpets from Acapulco, which have been attacked on the outside by a species of boring shell, like the date-fish of the Mediterranean, and nearly perforated—indeed, would have been so entirely, had not the animal in the limpet met the inroad of his enemy, by a barrier of shelly matter, deposited on the interior surface of his domicile.

This shelly matter is composed of an animal and mineral substance; and according to the predominance of one or the other, will be the toughness or friability of the shell. The species, which in general contain the most animal matter are those, apparently, whose structure is fibrous and pearlaceous or nacre. According to M. Hatchett, they consist of the subcarbonate of lime and coagulated albumen. The nacre of the pearl itself is composed of 66 parts of the former and 34 of the latter in the hundred.\*

With these facts before us, it is much more plausible to suppose, that instead of being the result of decomposition or decay, pearls are formed by a secretive process, or composition; but, that it is a disease which urges the animal to a superabundant secretion seems to be very generally admitted: and we are told by Blainville, that M. de Bournon thinks every pearl contains some extraneous substance in its interior: if this be true, the difficulty of accounting for the origin of the pearl ceases. We know that when foreign substances are by chance lodged in the human body and not removed, they are in many instances soon encased in a covering of a membranous texture to relieve the circumjacent parts from the irritation and inflammation that might otherwise follow: in this way musket and pistol balls remain in the body for years without producing much inconvenience; and in this way, too, a foreign substance forms the nucleus of vesical calculus. Now, if this be a law, common to all forms of animal life, we may very readily conceive that a particle of sand, finding its way from the bank into the oyster, might urge the animal to free itself from the irritation thus induced, to envelop the sandy particle with nacreous secretion; thus forming a pearl, the configuration of which would depend upon the form of the nucleus and the muscular action to which it might be subject.

It has been observed for a long time, that the nacreous matter, which forms pearls, is entirely analogous to that which lines the internal face of many univalves, and of a certain number of bivalves;

\* Manuel De Malacologie et de Conchyliologie, Par H. M. Ducrotay de Blainville. Paris, 1825.



also, it has been seen that they may be produced by a kind of extravasation of this matter which assumes a form more or less regular, and it has even been supposed that the animal might be forced to produce them, by piercing the shell from the outside; for then, in order to bush or stop the hole, it would be under the necessity of accumulating the nacreous matter at that point. This was indeed demonstrated by Linneus upon the *Unios*—a genus of fresh water bivalve—of the rivers of Sweden, so that, in a manner, he created a kind of artificial pearlery (*perlière*;) but, besides this sort of pearls, rarely large and regular, and all of which bear the mark of the pedicle of attachment of a greater or less size, it appears that they are produced in the animal itself, and probably in the substance of its skin or *pallium*, and that from this source are obtained the largest and most beautiful pearls of India. For this reason, both Lamark and Blainville are of opinion, that the pearl is the result of disease; but, I cannot conceive of a failure of design so great in the works of the ‘Architect Divine,’ as that of creating a class of animals in a state of disease; for it appears that very few pearl oysters are found, which do not contain some extraordinary nacreous formation. And we may infer, from the experiments of the great Swedish naturalist, that external irritation is sufficient to excite pearlaceous secretion in abnormal quantity, or, in other words, a disease which results in the formation of pearls.

The pearl-banks of Ceylon, which have been celebrated for many a year, are in the gulf of Manaar, between its north-western coast, and that of the Indian Peninsula, and not far from Arippe. The fishery is a government monopoly, and, being managed on very just and politic principles, is the only unobjectionable one of which I have any knowledge. The banks are fished on account of the government; the oysters are sold in lots of one thousand, on the spot, to the highest bidder. As there can be no certainty of the quantity or quality of pearls a heap of oysters may contain, the pearl fishery must attract many to speculate, from the gamester-like interest thus thrown around it.

In the month of November, between the close of the south-west and commencement of the north-east monsoon, when calms prevail, the banks are examined by the collector of Manaar, who is also the supervisor, attended by the inspector and an interpreter.

“The vessels employed on these examinations,” says the correspondent of the ‘Colombo Journal,’ “are a government guard vessel,



two sailing boats from the Master Attendant's department at Colombo, and about eight native fishing boats from Manaar and Jaffna. On these occasions the boats are furnished with one diving stone and two divers. Five or six native headmen, called Adapanaars, also attend and go in the boats, to see that the divers perform their duty, and take notes of the reports given from time to time by the divers for the information of the supervisor.

“Samples of oysters are taken up and forwarded to Colombo with a report on the state of the banks by the supervisor. On these samples depends the decision of government as to a fishery the following March.

“So many years had passed since the fishery of 1814, without one of any consequence having taken place, that it gave rise to various conjectures as to the cause of failure. Some were of opinion that violent winds and currents buried the oysters in sand, or drove them entirely away; some supposed the Adapanaars and divers employed at examinations gave false reports, and the banks were plundered by boats from the opposite coast. It was also said that former fisheries had been so extensive, as to have injured the oyster beds. The natives attributed it to various descriptions of fish, and also to a failure of seasonable rain, which they deem absolutely necessary to bring the oyster to perfection.

“To prevent plunder, a Government vessel has been kept stationed on the banks during the season of the year that boats can visit them. To ensure correct reports, diving-bells have been used to enable Europeans to go down at examinations.

“Without venturing to contradict a pretty general opinion, that the failure of pearl fisheries for so many years has been owing to the effect of strong winds and currents, I am by no means ready to admit this as the cause. Too much confidence in the knowledge of the Adapanaars may have led to error, and consequent failure; they are not like the experienced fishermen of Europe: indeed, they are not fishermen; being unable to manage their own boats.

“Energy like that of our own seamen is no where to be found within the tropics, and cannot be expected of the Adapanaars, but I certainly did expect to find them excelling the common fishermen of the country. They appear to read the compass, and are in possession of fixed courses steered by their ancestors, from Arippto to the various pearl-banks. They are useful as a medium of communication between the divers and the officers of the fishery. Little, indeed, appears to



have been the improvement of the fishermen, or of their means of fishery, since the days when the pearls of Cleopatra's ear-rings were landed at Condatchy.

"The pearl-banks off Arippe and Condatchy, lie at a considerable distance from the coast, which is very low and presents hardly any objects which might serve as land-marks, the banks are extensive, the masses or beds of oysters being of various ages according to the seasons they may have settled. Very many of these masses or beds are by no means so extensive as has been imagined, and nothing is more easy, than to mistake one bed for another, particularly by the Adapanaars, who are guided chiefly by the course they steer from the Doric at Arippe; and that which they call the N. E. chivel to-day may be called S. E., to-morrow.

"I have heard that samples of oysters have frequently been taken up by order, from banks inspected the previous year, and found no-wise improved, and sometimes the samples have been younger. This, I venture to say, shows that although there has been no difficulty in finding plenty of oysters on the banks, there has been great difficulty in finding the same spot a second time, and proves that the greatest care and skill are necessary to mark the particular spots, beds, or masses on the bank from whence the samples are taken; and this is not to be expected by mere compass bearings and soundings, or even by astronomical observations, but requires a union of talent and professional tact with alacrity in the pursuit. These necessary qualifications will ensure considerable success in the fishing, and a consequent increase of the revenue derived from this source."

When the examination thus made results favorably, an advertisement, running as follows, is issued:—

#### PEARL FISHERY.

"Notice is hereby given, that a Pearl Fishery will take place at Arippe in the island of Ceylon, on or about the 1st of March, 1836, and that the banks to be fished are as follows:—

"The north part of the Chivelpaar, estimated at 100 boats for 3 days.

"The south part of the Chivelpaar, estimated at 100 boats for 4 days.

"The Modorogammo, estimated at 100 boats for 10 days.

"It is, therefore, recommended to such boat owners and divers as may wish to be employed at the said fishery, that they should be at Arippe on or before the 20th of February next.



"The number of boats to be employed, will be one hundred for seventeen days.

"The fishery will be conducted on account of the government, and the oysters put up to sale, in such lots as may be deemed expedient.

"The arrangements of the Fishery will be the same as have been usual on similar occasions.

"The payments to be made in ready money in Ceylon currency, or in the coins and at the rate specified in the government advertisement of the 14th December, 1833.

"Bills on the agents of this government at ten days' sight will in like manner be taken, on letters of credit being produced to warrant the drawing of bills on the said agents.

"For the convenience of purchasers, the treasurer at Colombo and the government agents have been instructed to receive deposits in money from such persons as may be desirous of becoming purchasers, and the receipts of the treasurer and agents will be taken in payment of any sums due on account of the Fishery.

"There is reason to expect, that the Fishing may continue for a farther time beyond that specified above.

By order of the Right Hon. the Governor.

P. ANSTRUTHER,

*Colonial Secretary.*

Colonial Secretary's Office.

COLOMBO, *December 4th*, 1835.

Here follows a long tabular statement of the condition of the banks and value of the oysters taken up. From the first named bank 5,296 oysters were taken up, and the pearls obtained on an average from each thousand, are estimated to be worth 28 rupees or about  $12\frac{1}{2}$  dollars. From the second bank 5,507 oysters were taken up, and the average produce of a thousand, estimated at 18 rupees; from the third bank, 4,928 oysters gave the average value of pearls to 1000, at about five dollars. Musters of the pearls are shown at the office of the colonial secretary.

Under similar arrangements, the Fishery of 1833, yielded a revenue of £25,043 $\frac{10}{16}$ , from three-fourths of the oysters landed; one-fourth, according to custom being the property of the divers. Each bank is calculated to be available for twenty days in seven years; and the annual net revenue from the pearl fishery is estimated £14,000. At the Fishing in 1833, twelve hundred and fifty divers were employed, of which number 1100 were from the coast of India, and only 150 from Ceylon.



Notwithstanding the moral of that pretty story, entitled "The Tale of Cinnamon and Pearls," by the talented Miss Harriet Martineau, and in spite of the oblique arguments, based on false data, contained therein, it is very evident, that without the present, or some similar system in regard to it, the pearl fishery would soon become profitless; the beds and banks would be destroyed and the oyster itself disappear from the waters of Ceylon; and, therefore, to remove this monopoly, would be to kill the goose that lays the golden egg.

"The boats used at pearl fisheries, measure from 8 to 15 tons without decks, head and stern nearly alike, the stern having a slight curve, the sternpost being generally straight, both have considerable rake, but the stern has most. A boat that will measure 40 feet over all, will not exceed 28 feet in length at the bottom, but keel they have none(!) The bottom is round, and the breadth of the boat increases to the top of the gunwales. They are rigged with one rude long mast, and carry one lug-sail made of light cloth, loosely sewed to a tight cöir rope, so that it blows out very much. As a sailor would say, it is roped tight, bags, and stands badly on a wind.

"These rude fittings subject them to frequent accidents: they are then assisted by the boats of the Master Attendant's department, and towed to the shore.

"With a favorable wind, they sail very well; but cannot hold to the wind, or beat against it. They leave the shore with the land wind about midnight, to proceed to the bank, a distance varying from nine to twelve miles; they are led by the Adapanaar's boats, in the direction of the Government guard vessels, (at anchor close to the fishing-ground) with lights hoisted on board to guide the boats to the place.

"If they reach the bank before daylight, they anchor close to the Government vessel, until the Inspector hoists the signal, at half-past six, for diving to commence. When the weather is settled favorably, the land winds begin to die away as the sun gets up; by 9 or 10 it gets quite calm, and by noon (when the gun is fired from the Government vessel for all diving to cease,) a pleasant sea-breeze has sprung up to run the boats to land.

"When the regular land and sea-breezes are interrupted, which frequently occurs, they have to use their paddles, long sticks, with an oval piece of board lashed on the end, for the purpose of oars. Sometimes the fishery is stopped, until the return of a favorable weather with land and sea-breezes.

"The crew of a boat consists of a tindal, or master, ten divers, and thirteen other men, who manage the boat and attend the divers when



fishing. Each boat has five diving stones, (the 10 divers relieving each other) five divers are constantly at work during the hours of fishing.

"The weight of diving stones varies from 15 to 25 lbs. according to the size of the diver; some stout men find it necessary to have from 4 to 8 lbs. of stone in a waist-belt, to enable them to keep at the bottom of the sea, to fill their net with oysters. The form of a diving stone resembles a pine; it is suspended by a double cord.

"The net is of coir-rope yarns, 18 inches deep, fastened to a hoop 18 inches wide, fairly slung to a single cord. On preparing to commence fishing, the diver divests himself of all his clothes, except a small piece of cloth; after offering up his devotion, he plunges into the sea and swims to his diving stone, which his attendants have flung over the side of the boat; he places his right foot or toes between the double-cord on the diving stone, the bight of the double-cord being passed over a stick projecting from the side of the boat; by grasping all parts of the rope, he is enabled to support himself and the stone, and raise or lower the latter for his own convenience while he remains at the surface: he then puts his left foot on the hoop of the net and presses it against the diving stone, retaining the cord in his hand. The attendants take care that the cords are clear for running out of the boat.

"The diver being thus prepared, he raises his body as much as he is able; drawing a full breath, he presses his nostrils between his thumb and finger, slips his hold of the bight of the diving stones, doubles the cord from over the projecting stick, and descends as rapidly as the stone will sink him.

"On reaching the bottom, he abandons the stone (which is hauled up by the attendants ready to take him down again) clings to the ground and commences to fill his net. To accomplish this, he will sometimes creep over a space of 8 or 10 fathoms, and remain under water a minute; when he wishes to ascend, he checks the cord of the net which is instantly felt by the attendants, who commence pulling up as fast as they are able; the diver remains with the net until it is so far clear of the bottom as to be in no danger of upsetting, and then commences to haul himself up by the cord, (hand over hand) which his attendants are likewise pulling, when by these measures his body has acquired an impetus upwards, he forsakes the cord, places his hands to his thighs, rapidly ascends to the surface, swims to his diving stone, and by the time the contents of his net have been emptied into the boat, he is ready to go down again. One diver will take up in a



day from one thousand to four thousand oysters. They seldom exceed a minute under water, the more common time is from 53 to 57 seconds, but when requested to remain as long as possible, I have timed them from 84 to 87 seconds. They are warned of the time to ascend by a singing noise in the ears, and finally by a sensation similar to hiccup.

"Many divers will not venture down, until the shark-charmer is on the bank and has secured the mouths of the sharks. Some are provided with a written charm from the Priest, which they wrap up in oil cloth perfectly secure from the water, and dive with it on their person. Others, being Roman catholics, appear satisfied with an assurance from their Priest that they have his prayers for their protection; but I am informed they are all happy to secure the interest of the shark-charmer.

"This worthy man is paid by Government, and is also allowed a perquisite of 10 oysters from every boat daily, during the fishery.

"During my first visit to the pearl-banks, the shark-charmer informed me, that he had obtained the charm from his father, that the only real power of securing the mouths of the sharks was possessed by his family, and that it would be exceedingly dangerous to trust to any other person; he also gave me to understand that if he were to explain the charm to me, it would lose its virtue in my possession. I requested him to charm a shark to appear alongside the vessel, he said he could do it, but it would not be right, his business being to send them away. At several subsequent visits, I renewed my request without effect.

"During the few days we were employed marking off the ground to be fished last March, a shark was seen and reported to me. I instantly sent for the shark-charmer, and desired him to account for permitting a shark to appear at a time when any alarm might be dangerous to the success of the fishery. He replied, I had frequently requested him to summon a shark to appear, and he had therefore allowed this one to please me.

"When on board a South-sea-man, I remember seeing a man bitten by a shark; the crew were employed cutting the blubber from a dead whale alongside, and on these occasions it is necessary for a man to get upon the whale in order to hook on the blubber to be hoisted into the ship. The man has a belt of canvass round his waist fastened to a cord, and is attended to by a man on deck. At these times innumerable birds and hungry fish assemble round the vessel. The unfortunate man had one foot pressed into the flesh of the whale, and



the other stretched in the sea, when the second-mate observed a shark in the act of seizing the man's leg; with great presence of mind and admirable precision, he darted his spade (the instrument he was using to cut the blubber) at the neck of the shark and nearly severed the head from the body, at the same instant that the animal had seized the man's leg. The teeth of one jaw made a serious wound, but the teeth of the other jaw only left a number of small holes in the skin, and in six weeks the man was able to resume his duty. It is only when pressed by hunger that sharks are so bold; they are naturally timid and would rarely venture near a body of divers; the noise made by the boatmen when at work is the great protection."

During the fishing season, the shores of Arippe are enlivened by crowds of people from all parts of the country; divers, boat owners, speculators, and the curious, all assemble to behold,

"Pale glistening pearls, and rainbow colored shells,"

while the lapidary attends with his wooden stand and bow, to drill the pearls and fit them to be strung, so soon as they are got out of the oyster, which, according to all accounts, is a tedious and rather disgusting operation. The oysters are put into pens, and there left until the animal matter be softened by putrefaction, when it is subjected to frequent washings, and the pearls shine forth, emblems of purity in the loathsome mass. Some are of a bluish, some of a yellowish, and some of a whitish lustre; each class finds a ready market among its admirers; in the East, the bluish and yellowish varieties are most prized, but in the eyes of the christian fair, the pure white shines brightest.

The pearl diver, though obnoxious to many casualties and to severe toil, is said to be longer lived, on an average, than coolies and other laborers; yet both Mrs. Hemans and Miss Martineau, in commiserating their hard lot, seem to be impressed with the belief that they number fewer days than any other people of similar rank. That they receive a high compensation cannot be doubted, if we take as a criterion, the result of the Fishing of 1833, when each diver received £3, 15s. 4d. for eight days' labor; and it must be borne in mind, that able-bodied men do not receive in Ceylon more than sixpence per day:

"A wild and weary life is thine,  
A wasting task and lone,  
Though treasure grotts for thee may shine,  
To all besides unknown!"



“ A weary life! but a swift decay  
 Soon shall set thee free,  
 Thou’rt passing fast from thy toils away,  
 Thou wrestler with the sea!

“ In thy dim eye, on thy hollow cheek,  
 Well are the death-signs read—  
 Go! for the pearl in its cavern seek  
 Ere hope and power be fled!

“ And bright in beauty’s coronal  
 That glistening shell shall be;  
 A star to all the festive hall—  
 But who will think on *thee*?

“ None!—as it gleams from the queen-like head,  
 Not one ’midst throngs will say,  
 A life hath been like a rain drop shed,  
 For that pale quivering ray.”\*

---

## CHAPTER XIX.

### SKETCHES IN CEYLON.

*December, 1835.*

CUMBO is placed on the western coast of Ceylon, in six degrees and fifty-seven minutes of north latitude, and in eighty degrees of longitude east from Greenwich. It is divided into two parts; one within the fort and the other outside of it, which is called the Pettah. The town within the fort is laid out regularly; the streets are broad, Macadamized and planted with the hibiscus, which affords a pleasant shade; the houses are generally one story high, built in the Dutch style, with a porch or corridor in front, besides a paling, which encloses a small plot of grass or flowers. The Pettah is much of the

\* Works of Mrs. Hemans.



same character, except that it is but little shaded, and the dwellings are of a more humble appearance. The fort is chiefly inhabited by Europeans; the Pettah, by natives and castes, originally from India and the neighbouring islands. In 1832, the population was 31,519, consisting of Europeans, Burghers, Malabars, Singhalese and Moors, besides a few Malays, Chinese, Parsees, Caffres, and Patanys. And we may remark of the Asiatics, what cannot be universally said of christian nations, that wherever they go, or settle, they preserve unchanged their customs and costumes, as well as their peculiarities of physiognomy, from generation to generation. The reason of this appears to be, that their customs are more or less connected with their religious forms, to which they are in general bigoted adherents; and their costumes are typical of caste, the preservation and maintenance of which is, in their opinion, an imperative duty, admitting of no compromise; and, therefore, the castes never intermarry with each other. And hence it is, that most eastern towns of note present such various and interesting groups to the passing stranger. Besides the costumes already mentioned, we meet in the streets the degenerate Portuguese of moderate means, dressed in the fashion of his early ancestors, seated in a small carriage having three low wheels; two behind, and one in the centre of the fore-part of the vehicle, rigged like the fore-wheel of a velocipede, by which it is guided in any direction at the will of the passenger, while a naked slave imparts motion, pushing behind with all his force.

Next, attention may be drawn to an India-skinned individual, called a "Conicoply," who, instead of appearing bareheaded after the fashion of his countrymen, the hair turned up with a tortoise-shell comb *à la Greque*, wears a blue velvet cap without vizor, having a sort of horn projecting forward from each side. A collarless surcoat of bluish cotton, with pantaloons of the same, and sharp-toed slippers, make up the costume; but he has an ornament in each ear, consisting of a half dozen circles or rings, three or four inches in diameter, of fine gold wire, closely resembling a coil, depending to the shoulder. He has an inquiring look, and carries a book or a small packet of nicely folded white papers under the arm: one might detect in him, without question on the subject, the collector of bills, the dun by profession. Almost every public office, as well as mercantile house, has its conicoply to keep a look out for the detail of its fiscal affairs.

While you stop to gaze, when for the first time you meet in the street an elephant harnessed to a cart, lazily swinging his great



trunk from side to side, or flapping away the flies with his monstrous ears, as he trots along, under the guidance of a naked Indian perched over his fore shoulders, you will find yourself surrounded, after the passing of the show, by a dozen Moors in cotton shirts or naked, except the kummerband, offering for sale jewelry of all sorts, gems set and not set; some genuine, and others fair sophistications in glass.

The first salutation, in short, sharp, clipped yet respectful tones, is, "Master, want buy water sapphire?—blue sapphire me got—very fine." He is interrupted by a second, "Mooney stone, master, no buy?—fine mooney stone me got."—A third breaks in, "Master, starry stone, no buy?—me got cat's eye." While these are exhibiting their wares and flashing them in the sun-shine before your eyes, another pulls you by the sleeve from behind, and with a look and gesture intended to enhance the importance of the communication about to be made, says; "Sare, me got ruby, aqua marine, cinnamon stone;"—but he is cut short by another crying, "Topaz—carmagorin, (from the Scottish, *cairn gorum*:) no want buy, my master?" The instant, however, you manifest the slightest inclination to purchase by taking a stone in hand to examine, all except him to whom it may belong, stand back and silently await the result. You now ask the price and the jeweller answers, "Me no say, master; me poor Moor-man—master, see good stone—master, know good stone, have good price—what master give?"

Not feeling confidence perhaps in your knowledge of the article, you insist upon his naming a price. After some hesitation and bestowing a good deal of superabundant praise on the stone, displaying it at the same time in the most advantageous manner, the vender of

"Gems from the mountain and pearls of the ocean,"

whispers, "Fifty dollar, very cheap." Then, unless you be what they term a 'griffin' or greenhorn, you will be careful what offer you make, for "you must do as chapmen do, dispraise the thing you mean to buy," or you will probably pay dear for the whistle. Were you to offer one-fourth of the price named, you would very often pay ten dollars for a jewel not worth one, the vender putting it into your hand, with an air of one sacrificing his wares, saying, "Take, master, take." Therefore, gentle reader, should you ever visit Colombo, let me say to thee; *Apunta Vmd.* But if the first stone do not please you, the same individual draws forth from the folds of his kummerband another of more brilliant aspect, and puts it into



your hand, with an air which says, "There's a gem for you"—and so on till he has displayed his whole stock. Then the others importune you to look at the contents of their kummerband folds; and there is no getting rid of them, except by offering a very trifling sum for a valuable gem; then away they go in disgust, but it is only to meet you again in an hour, at another turn of the street.

Every day, while at Colombo, several of the tribe came on board in dhonies to sell jewelry and collections of shells, mostly from Trincomalee, very nicely arranged in baskets woven of palm leaves. Some brought uncut stones; others, knife-handles and snuff-boxes, made of elephant's teeth, (not tusks) which were to us novel and very pretty, from the wavy alternation of the osseous strata, which are white and of a deep king's yellow; others, again, offered gold chains, resembling in their fabric those made at Panamá; and rose chains, made of very pure gold, in small square chased links, after the fashion of those of Manila; but it was necessary to be always on the alert, or they would palm upon you gold ornaments—"pure gold, all same, same make copper pans." Indeed, some on board made wonderful bargains, and discovered when it was too late, that their jewels were of some base metal nicely gilded.

Among the most admired gems, were the moonstone, a fine species of feldspar; the cat's-eye, which is greenish gray, traversed by an opalescent streak of light, said to depend upon minute fibres of asbestos contained its composition; when this ray is perfect, the stone brings a great price. Cordiner states, that they have been sold in England even as high as £150 each. But the most singular is the star-stone, a variety of sapphire of a grayish blue color, which, when subjected to a strong light, presents a star composed of six delicate white rays, turn it whatever way you may. Amethyst of every variety of hue was offered for sale.

In a ride through the Pettah, we stopped one day to witness the labors of the jewellers, or rather lapidaries. They sit under a veranda or shed, in front of the house, squatted on their heels behind a rude lathe, raised a few inches from the ground. On the end of its axle there is a round plate of iron or steel, about eight inches in diameter, placed vertically; which is made to revolve backwards and forwards by a drill-bow about four feet long, made of bamboo, and worked by the right hand, while the left applies the stone to be cut, held tightly between the finger and thumb against the wheel. A sort of emery, or finely powdered sapphire of coarse quality, moistened with water, is the only intermediate substance used in cutting the



stone. One of the lapidaries, who seemed to be indifferently honest, told me, that what are called "Ceylon diamonds," are made of a species of tourmalin which is boiled for some time in cocoanut oil, before being cut, to make it perfectly transparent. A gentleman of the ship saw one of these jewellers manufacturing water-sapphire from the fragments of a decanter, and a glass fruit bowl.

Among those things which the stranger anticipates most, on going to Colombo, is the pleasure of visiting what are termed the cinnamon gardens. The very name makes one think of Ceylon's "spicy breezes"—of flowers—of beautiful walks and of balmy airs redolent of fragrant odors; but it is all a pious imposition palmed upon us by an idle race of people, called poets. "Spicy breezes!" Such breezes never swept the olfactories of any man, any where, unless they were wafted from some grocer's shop or cook's pantry. It is a commonplace remark, by all new-comers to hot countries, "that though the flowers be brilliant in color, they are almost destitute of smell." The heat seems to be so great, that the essential oil, upon which the odor depends, is dissipated so rapidly, that it cannot accumulate in sufficient quantity to impart its peculiar fragrance to the flower; and the same is true of tropical fruits generally. I have met with nothing under the sun's track, either in the east or west, comparable in this respect to our own forests, at the season when the magnolia "may be scented afar off;" and why travellers have lent their aid and sanction to poets in upholding and spreading the idea of Ceylon's, or any other land's "Spicy breezes," I am at a loss to imagine.

While turning over some gazettes at the Colombo Library, on the day of our arrival, I was addressed very politely by an elderly gentleman, who discovering me to be a stranger, introduced himself, and at the same time invited me with as many of my messmates as would accompany me, to breakfast with him the next day at Bagatelle, the name of his garden, and, lest I should forget the direction, requested the librarian to write the address for me, saying, "However, any body can tell you where the former Commissary General lives; it is about four miles from town." Circumstances prevented us from taking advantage of the invitation for that day, but we did not fail to visit several times what is considered to be the best cinnamon garden, under private cultivation, in the neighborhood; and I am sure we shall long remember the cordial welcome, the unaffected hospitality and kind attentions extended to us on these occasions, by Mr. L——, and the ladies of his amiable and numerous family.



About ten o'clock, one morning, we mustered a party of six or eight, and hired a "bandy," sometimes termed a palanquin carriage, a long-bodied vehicle set on low wheels, capable of accommodating four passengers. The driver—a more appropriate name would be, leader—holds the head of the horse by a single rein a foot or two long, and trots along beside him the whole way. This personage is usually attired in a cotton jacket and kummerband, or only in a kummerband; he keeps his body straight, holds his shoulders back, and does not swing his arms; and it is a subject of admiration, the speed and ease at which he travels six or eight miles, apparently at the end of the journey not more fatigued than his horse. These drivers excel the same class of people one sees at Bombay.

Our party being accommodated in a bandy and a part of Mr. L——'s carriage, drove out of the fort at the Galle gate, crossed the esplanade and race ground, a distance of about a mile, and then found the road running through forests or groves of cocoanuts, beneath the shade of which were seen the white huts of the Ceylonese, as well as the bungalows and gardens of the English residents, who were named to me by Mr. L——, as we passed along. The road is level, Macadamized, and, during the greater part of the day, completely shaded; it lies about a half mile from the sea, a glimpse of which is now and then caught through the alleys of tall trunked trees. The natives were seen variously employed. Some were bearing water in jars, suspended from the ends of a bamboo resting across the shoulders, and others were dispensing arrack from their little shops; but every where the women were the most industrious and engaged in the most laborious employments. They wear a short, loose spencer or gown, which falls just low enough to hide the breasts, while the lower part of the person is clothed in numerous folds of colored cotton, quite neatly arranged. Children, up to the age of eight or ten years, go entirely naked, and are very numerous; indeed, my companion, who has twenty-four children by his present wife, expressed his opinion that the climate is remarkably favorable to procreation, both in the animal and vegetable kingdoms. Now and then we met a Boudhist priest, distinguished by his closely shorn head and eyebrows, and yellow robe cast about his person in such a manner, that the right arm and shoulder are left bare. A large banyan tree forms a sylvan arch over the road, some of its descending branches having taken root forty yards from the parent trunk, on the opposite side of the way. In short, the whole ride was so novel, so picturesque and possessing at the same time, a miniature-like neat-



ness and regularity, that one cannot but be pleased: one of our party declared, that he had never seen any thing so Eden-like, and that he felt himself nearer paradise than he had ever done before.

We alighted at the mansion of Mr. L——, and, after paying our respects to the ladies, were led through the cinnamon grounds; but there was no odor, no "spicy breezes," nor could we perceive any thing like a cinnamon smell, not even when the very bark, still attached to the stick, however, was put under our noses. At the season of cutting, I was told by Mr. L—— the odor was any thing but agreeable, bearing more of the hircine offensiveness than of the spicy aroma, upon which poets love to dwell. The leaves, however, which are from five to eight inches long, by about three broad, and of a dark shining green, when mature, emit a strong smell of cloves, if broken or rubbed in the hands. The cinnamon (the spice) is the true bark, outside of which there is a tasteless, cellular cuticle, which the cinnamon peeler scrapes off with his knife before he removes the spicy bark. Were it not for this cuticle, the essential oil might be evaporated by the heat of the climate, and leave but an inodorous, tasteless substance, instead of the aromatic, which is so highly prized.

"Garden, sir!" replied a midshipman, when asked how he liked the cinnamon garden—"garden, sir!—it is nothing but a wilderness of green bushes and shrubs;" and such, in fact, it is. The cinnamon, when not interfered with, grows into a tree, twenty feet high, and eight or ten inches in diameter at the base of the trunk; but, when cultivated for the sake of its bark, it is not allowed to exceed eight or ten feet, with a diameter from one to two inches. The stalks, which shoot up in a cluster of eight or ten together, are cut once in about three years close to the ground. On Mr. L——'s plantation the earth is accumulated around the roots, and, to retain the water, cocoanut husks are placed about them, which, in time, form an excellent compost. It is cultivated by suckers generally, and sometimes from the seed, in which case, the young plants are kept in a nursery for a year or two, and then transplanted. Besides cinnamon and cinnamon oil, the plant yields, from its dark green leaves, a clove oil, which affords a very considerable profit.

While the Dutch held the government of the island, only a fixed quantity of cinnamon was allowed to be grown, the policy being to get as large a money return for as small a quantity as possible; and it is stated, that when the crop was greater than the demand, at the established price, the surplus was burned. Private individuals were



inhibited its cultivation; nor were they permitted to cut a branch of the plant, even if it grew wild upon their estates, under the barbarous penalty of losing a hand. After the English got possession of Ceylon, the East India Company obtained a monopoly of the cultivation and sale, which was held until 1832: its growth and exportation have since been free, upon paying a duty of three shillings per pound on all qualities, equal to about six hundred per cent. on the cost of gathering, which is estimated at sixpence. During the existence of the monopoly, all the cinnamon was collected by the agents of the Company, sorted, packed, and sent to England, whence it found its way to the different countries of the christian world. This course and policy brought an inferior article into market, under the name of cassia, which, from its cheapness, has, to a very great extent, superseded the fine cinnamon.

The cinnamon oil is obtained from the fragments of bark which are made in peeling, sorting, and packing. The estate also produces a great number of cocoanut trees. Their sap is collected and sold under the name of toddy, which, by distillation, yields arrack, the spirits chiefly used in India, and the fruit is manufactured into oil, and sold in England. Besides these sources of profit, the plantation affords a number of sappan trees.

Mr. L—— has a considerable dash of the antiquarian in his tastes, and, during a residence of thirty years in different parts of Ceylon, has picked up much curious information relative to the inhabitants; he told me that, in digging, he had found several coins of Augustus Cæsar. He showed us several Kandyan coins, and a book, written in Singhalese, upon leaves of the talipot tree. The leaves were about two inches wide, and sixteen long, and were laid uniformly together, between two heavy brass covers; but, instead of being secured by one edge, like our books, a cord was run through the leaves, about two inches from either end, and in the centre; so that they may be said to be rather strung than bound together. The writing is done by an iron point, or stylus, which is something held in a slit made in the fore finger, and rubbed over with a composition, which, being at once wiped off, leaves the scratched letters black, contrasting well with the cream white of the leaf. Some of these works are centuries old, and still appear fresh and unimpaired.

Not the least interesting sight at Colombo is a very large elephant, employed every day in conveying great trees to the landing-place, where he piles them carefully, by aid of his tusks and trunk, thus performing, in a day, the work of twenty men. The strength and



sagacity of the animal are wonderful, every body knows; yet one cannot avoid expressing admiration when he sees him look from his small intelligent eye at a log, twenty or thirty feet long, and a foot or more in diameter, and then, taking it up in the middle, so that it will be accurately balanced across his tusks, carry it wherever directed. His driver is on excellent terms with him, and makes him perform a variety of tricks, such as holding out a foot by which to mount, &c.

Judging from what we saw, the English society, consisting chiefly of the families of the civil and military officers of the government, is very pleasant, but not very extensive—at least, not sufficiently so to be split into circles. The usual routine of life seems to be lunch or tiffin about two o'clock, P. M., a ride or walk at five, and dinner at seven or eight. We dined daily at one house, or at another, but saw nothing essentially different from our own customs on like occasions. The dwellings usually stand some distance from the road, and, when guests are expected, the alleys leading from the high-way are usually lighted up by torches, formed of inflamed cocoanuts fixed on short staves, producing a pretty effect, seen through the thick foliage which every where prevails. This I first saw at the Governor's, and again at the mess-house of the Ceylon Rifle Regiment, where we spent a most social and agreeable night.

It has been very correctly remarked, that Englishmen are less superlative in their language and less enthusiastic in their manners than we Americans commonly are; they most resemble the phlegmatic Dutch, we the volatile French. Most of those gentlemen I had the pleasure of meeting were of liberal opinions; but I was once or twice amused at certain hues of Bullism, which peeped forth when the conversation turned on subjects wherein some little rivalry between the two nations is supposed to exist.

On the night of the twenty-first we attended a ball at the King's House, given on the birth-day of Miss Horton, daughter of the governor. For the pleasure of the evening we are particularly indebted to Lady Horton; the previous day had been appointed for sailing, and was postponed at her request. All were gay and agreeable, and the night passed happily away. A specimen of eastern luxury was seen in the ball-room, where constantly moving punkas, depending from the ceiling, fanned the dancers as they moved in the quadrille, or twirled in the waltz.

Of the kind hospitality extended to us, on all hands, at Colombo, I might speak in the highest terms; particularly, were I to draw a



general comparison between it and Bombay, in this respect; but I think silence on the subject is more becoming, and, perhaps, more agreeable to those whom I might name, should these pages ever meet their eye. I know it is common with travellers of the present day to name, in their journals, all those who have obliged them with a dinner; but, I cannot be convinced that private individuals are gratified by a public acknowledgment for the common courtesies of society, nor do I think it a legal tender for social civilities.

On the 24th of December, after sunset, we got under way, bidding an unwilling farewell to Ceylon, which, whether considered in respect to its natural sources of wealth, its climate, or flourishing condition, is the brightest spot in the colonial possessions of the British crown.

“ We return—we return—we return no more!—  
So breathe sad voices our spirits o’er,  
Murmuring up from the depth of the heart,  
When lovely things with their light depart,  
And the inborn sound hath a prophet’s tone,  
And we feel that a joy is for ever gone.”



SKETCHES IN JAVA.



EXHIBIT IN 1872



## CHAPTER XX.

## VOYAGE FROM CEYLON, AND SKETCHES IN JAVA.

*January, 1836.*

THE day after sailing from Colombo was nearly calm, and we found ourselves not far from Point de Galle. Two dhonies came alongside to sell various articles of jewelry—snuff-boxes and knife-handles, of elephants' teeth, and ladies' work-boxes, manufactured of calamander, and other woods of the country. Our visitors remained several hours, to our amusement and, perhaps, their profit; they observed the mode of traffic common throughout India, which is, to ask most unreasonable prices, and receive as much as they can obtain. One of them demanded five-and-twenty dollars for a box, and, at last, sold it for five; and another sold a desk for a dollar and a half, for which he had been asking ten. Their jewels were false; yet, when a trifling sum was offered for a yellow ring, gemmed with a glass emerald, the owner declared, "Master make foolish—good emerald, good pagoda gold;" but in the end was anxious to obtain the price he had at first most contemptuously refused. Towards sunset, having disposed of nearly all of their wares, the aquatic pedlars left us, and the governor of Galle sent a boat alongside to inquire the news.

We stood away to the eastward, and the next day felt the favoring winds blowing freshly from the bay of Bengal; they brought us rain in plenty, which was deemed to be any thing but advantageous to the health of the persons on board. We were bound to Acheen, and several ports on the north-west coast of Sumatra; but the bad weather, in connexion with the sickly state of the ship, and other important considerations, induced the commander-in-chief to shape a course directly for Java. We steered more to the southward, and, on the 6th of January, 1836, again entered the southern hemisphere,



having crossed the equator for the third time since sailing from New York.

Having heard no news from home, for eight months, we now looked forward to the straits of Sunda, with the pleasing anticipation of receiving letters from the United States. On Sunday evening, the tenth of January, we descried the island of Sumatra enveloped in dark masses of clouds, and at eleven o'clock, P. M., we passed the island of Crokatoa, at the western entrance of the strait. The night was dark, and it rained occasionally with an accompaniment of terrific thunder and lightning, but the day dawned in all the tranquillity of smiling summer. The skies were serene and the air balmy and elastic. The island of Sumatra, clad in tropic green to the water's edge, rose high on the north, a few fleecy clouds still lingering around its summits; "Java's palmy isle," stretched away, on the south, smiling under a luxuriant vegetation, and the point and town of Angier were visible from the ship. Many eyes were directed towards that point, over the smooth face of the waters, to catch the cheering sight of the mail-boat, which boards all vessels passing through the straits, to deliver and receive letters; and owing to the liberality of the Dutch Government, (a solitary instance I believe,) this accommodation is free of expense. First, two canoes were descried, but only brought fruit and sea-turtle, and it was eight o'clock before the anxiously awaited boat reached the ship's side, and the postman stood on deck. He was a short, thick-set Malay, with close cut, shining black hair, and a maudlin eye, dressed in a dirty blue jacket, ornamented with tarnished bell-buttons, and a pair of striped cotton breeches reaching to the knee, but without any other garment whatever. A leathern bag with lock and key, sustained upon the left hip by a broad belt over the right shoulder, was his badge, and the object of our interest. It was soon opened to our examination, and after the strictest scrutiny, was found to contain a register of the ships visited, a few worn letters, directed in different languages to various parts of the world, and a few others recently deposited for vessels expected, but not one for the Peacock or Enterprise. Here was disappointment and blighted smiles. The youngster who has been absent nine months from his home, for the first time in his life, and all the while confidently anticipating the pleasure of reading letters from his dearest friends, when he shall arrive at an appointed place, must be in a very philosophical frame of mind, if he do not look blank and feel his throat to rub away a sort of choky sensation, that sudden disappointment is apt to create. Those who have experienced any thing of the vicissitudes of a na-



val life, should know the feeling well, and can understand the annoyance of such an event. But even in this instance we did not despair; we looked forward to Batavia, not doubting a moment, that we should there find letters, and before night the Angier mail-bag was almost forgotten.

"The web in the leaves the spider weaves  
Is like the charm Hope hangs o'er men;  
Though often she sees it broke by the breeze,  
She spins the bright tissue again."

Among the fruits offered for sale by the Javans in the canoes alongside, was one which is said to be without a rival in the world. It was presented to us on ropes, like onions in the Philadelphia market, and being new to him, the steward asked how they were to be cooked. This famed fruit is almost perfectly round, of from one and a half to three inches in diameter, with a smooth, hard cuticle of a reddish black color, and altogether its external appearance may be compared to that of a ripe walnut. Inside of the hard cuticle, there is a spongy bark, a quarter of an inch thick, of a pretty lake red, sparsely strewed with minute yellow points; which bright color, a native poet has compared to the lips of beauty. The shell thus formed encloses a white pulp, divided into from five to seven parts of unequal size, like the natural divisions of an orange. The larger parts, or divisions, usually half the number of the whole, contain each, a large bean-shaped seed, but the others dissolve away in the mouth with a most luscious sub-acid taste, resembling somewhat that of the granadilla of Peru. When informed that the ropes before us were of the celebrated Mangustin, some set their teeth in it, as they would have done had it been an apple, and turned away in disgust; but a little instruction quickly turned all to it again, and all agreed that, though a most exquisitely delicious fruit, it was not equal to what they had fancied the mangustin to be, and some ventured to say, that those who declared it to be without a rival, had never enjoyed that strawberry-and-cream-flavored lusciousness, which is peculiar to the Peruvian Chirimoya, as it grows in the valleys of Piura and Ica.

The wind was ahead, and the night was sultry, with rain, lightning and thunder. The next day was spent in beating against the wind, among numerous islands, until six o'clock, P. M., when we anchored in Batavia Roads, too late, however, to communicate with the shore,



but the following morning ended all our long cherished anticipations:—there were no letters for us.

At this season of the year, the view from the anchorage has little that is attractive. The shore is low and wooded, sweeping round in an extensive half circle, and sea-ward there are numerous small islands, which, in a degree, shelter the roadstead from a heavy swell, that, during the N. W. monsoon, under different circumstances, would roll in upon the beach. There is neither tower nor fane to be seen; the octagon church alluded to by a recent voyager, having been taken down a quarter of a century ago, by the Governor Van Der Capellen, because Horseburg in his "East India Directory," names it as one of the land-marks by which to enter the harbor, and therefore, the Governor General very shrewdly concluded that the English could not find their way to Batavia, if it were removed. A few red tile roofs and a low look-out house, on the end of the booms or canal, are the only indications, besides the fleet of shipping in the roads, of the vicinity of the capital of the Dutch empire in the East. The mountains of Java were constantly hid under masses of black clouds, and, during our sojourn, we only once or twice got a glimpse of them.

I seized an early opportunity to visit the shore, and among my first remarks, was, that the boats of the vessels in port were manned by Malays, to protect their own men from the baleful effects of the climate; exposure to the sun and the miasms arising from the neighboring low-lands, having been found uniformly injurious, and often fatal, to new-comers at Batavia. We approached the shore under easy sail, listening to the frequently volunteered observations, of the Malay cockswain, who told us, the English were much better liked than the Dutch, because the latter, "made Malay-man pay plenty money;" but, he continued smiling exultingly, "Dutchman drink water, he die—Dutchman in sun, he die—when Malayu no kill him, he die—plenty Dutchman die in Padang." And after we had taken a closer view of the policy pursued in Java, we did not so much wonder at the bitterness of these observations.

The mode of landing at Batavia is not common. The water in the roads is so shallow that ships lie about three miles from the shore; but in order to shorten the distance, in accordance with the legitimate system of Dutch logic, so clearly elucidated by Knickerbocker in his "History of New York," there are two booms, formed of wooden piles, extended seaward, for a mile, in a straight line from the shore, having a canal between them, at the entrance of



which, the sea breaks over a sand bar, with such violence, at times, during the north-west monsoon, that boats are frequently upset and the passengers are subjected to a narrow risk of becoming food for sharks and alligators, even if they escape drowning. Recently, however, the course of the river Jacatrà has been changed, and the last named animals find it more profitable to lounge in the purlieus of the new embouchement, leaving the canal an undisputed cruising ground to the sharks. This bar is often a serious inconvenience, because when one goes on shore, he is not certain when he can again return on board; merchant vessels have been three weeks without being able to get a "simpa" or lighter, out of the canal. When I found myself bounding lightly over the curling breaker, and speedily gliding up the canal before the wind, boats could enter, but could not, when loaded, go out, because they had both wind and sea to contend against, and such had been the case for three days. Here and there, along the booms, was to be seen a Chinese man or woman, angling; and farther up the canal there was a party of wretched convicts piling stone, destitute of all covering, except what their chains and fetters afforded. The booms at last terminated in the substantial brick walls of the canal, along which were lying several Dutch cutters, armed with brass guns and swivels, bearing all the appearance of being snug for winter quarters. Beyond them was a range of closely packed "simpas," a sort of burden boat of rude construction, waiting a favorable moment to pass the bar: they have a great eye painted on either bow after the fashion of the Chinese, and their capacities marked in Kyons, the numbers running from five to fifteen.\* Another sort of boat used on the canal, is called a "Myang," somewhat resembling the Venitian gondola. They all carry wide-spread square sails of matting, set on light spars of bamboo; but, to judge from their display of tatters, they are of a very fragile texture.

After sailing a mile, we neared the left or eastern bank of the canal, where there is a military post and a fort. A Malay soldier armed with a bayonet, in a sky-blue uniform, but barefoot, carried arms as we passed. Two or three Dutch soldiers were lounging on the green, with pipes in their mouths, looking contented in a marsh under a half veiled sun. At this point, horses are furnished by the government to all men-of-war boats; a rope was attached to our

\* A Kyon is equal to 3000 catics, of a pound and a quarter each, or, 3,750 pounds.



bows, and a little horse, ridden by a half-naked Malay, towed or rather tracked us another mile to the landing. As we drew near this point we observed more people, and when in sight of the custom-house, which fronts the canal, we saw a number of carriages standing about, as well as some arriving and others going away. An inferior officer or porter of the customs was standing on the canal bank, to detect and prevent contraband. He was a barefooted Malay, dressed in a blue frock with yellow trimmings, and a handkerchief neatly tied about his head, and he wore on his breast a brass plate, bearing the title of his employment. We landed without question, and walked towards the town on a fine shady road, leading over a morass or low ground.

We were frequently passed by equipages which rather excited smiles than admiration. A full sized phaeton, drawn by very small horses, or rather ponies, driven by a Malay, rolled in a frock of scarlet cotton, full of white sprigs and flowers; a basin-shaped basket, painted red, glazed and ornamented by gay stripes of gilt, turned over his head and secured under the chin, answering the purpose of a hat, such, no doubt, as the valorous knight of La Mancha would have preferred to the helmet of Mambrino, completed the costume of the Javan Jehu, whose long whip was kept in constant use. Such was the general character of the passing vehicles; and where Dutchmen were passengers, a cloud of smoke from their cigars or chiroots, followed in the train. Indeed, every body smokes chiroots, both when abroad and in the house, where large brass ewers are commonly seen and used as spittoons; the presence of ladies in either case forming no check upon the practice: on the contrary, it is not uncommon for the footman to carry a lighted match of cocoanut husk behind the carriage, in which his master and mistress are seated, for the convenience of smoking tobacco.

A pretty avenue, an eighth of a mile long, leads to the great gate which opens into the city; it is a white arch, surmounted by two large urns, having bronzed figures of Mercury and Minerva, standing on either side, and, seen through the dark foliage, forms a pretty entrance. A large public building fronts the gate, and misleads the stranger to suppose he is entering a beautiful city; but he is speedily undeceived by a walk through the wretched streets of old Batavia, flanked by old houses, with high tiled roofs in the Dutch style. Yet many of the buildings are large and airy—those are generally occupied as counting-houses—but very many are miserable hovels, tenanted by natives and Chinese; the whole having a cheerless, and even



squalid appearance. The streets are Macadamized, and cross each other nearly at right angles, the principal ones having canals running through the centre, with carriage ways on either side. There is also a paved trottoir, but not in the best repair. The canals were full of muddy water, and alive with boats, loaded with merchandise, even at this season of the year, when business is dull. Along their margins are sheds or roofs of tile, supported on posts, beneath which the carriages of the merchants are protected from rain or sun; for no one here ever walks, even the shortest distance; or, if he do by chance, he is always careful to be sheltered from the rays of the sun.

At every step of the way one meets coolies, bearing over their shoulders, suspended from either end of a bamboo, large baskets, containing fruit, fish, or poultry; nothing is more pleasant to the eye, than one of these naked Javans, thus loaded with the "rambutan," or hairy fruit, which is of the bright color of strawberries, nearly as large as an egg, and covered with soft thick spines or hairs, whence it derives its name. It is very plenty and cheap, and a favourite with the natives, but I found nothing in it to praise. In the same manner is carried about an establishment, called a "warong," perhaps more properly, *restaurant ambulant*; in one of the baskets is a small furnace over which is boiling a pot of coffee, and in the other is seen ready cooked rice, fish, &c. At any one of these warongs, a native makes an excellent meal of bread, fish, rice, curry and a cup of coffee, at an expense not exceeding two cents.

The costume of the Javans of the lower classes, consists of a handkerchief, neatly tied about the head, a pair of tight drawers, reaching to the knee, and a "sarong," or sash, of bright colored calico, worn over the shoulder, or around the hips, falling about the limbs like a petticoat. The Sarong is not unlike the Scotch Highlander's plaid, being a piece of a parti-colored cloth, six or eight feet long, and three or four wide, sewed together at the ends; forming, as some writers describe it, a sack without a bottom. When exposed to rain, the basket-hat already described is put on; but, in clear weather, is carried in the hand. Many wear a kris, a kind of sword, with a serpentine-form blade, in a straight wooden scabbard, though the fashion of wearing arms is not universal.

The Malay is of a dark olive color, rather small in stature, high cheeks, pointed chin, and low forehead, with black eyes and hair; the last, usually worn in long locks, reposing on his shoulders, when not folded beneath his head-dress. The Javan is of lighter complexion, and is most admired, as the island poets sing, when of an



orange or yellow color. The Chinese is of a sickly hue, and when at work, appears without other covering than his full drawers, or pantaloons; his head is shaved to the crown, and his hair plaited in a long tail, hanging nearly to the ground. Children of both sexes, and all complexions, go entirely naked, until six or eight years old. The women seen in the streets, are very plain, and wear their gowns, or petticoats, drawn tightly over the breasts. Let the imagination act upon the materials here given, adding a few males and females, young and old, bathing together, in the muddy waters of the canals, and the mind may catch a glimpse of the scenes presented in the streets of old Batavia.

Soon after reaching the counting-house of Mr. F——, we entered a phaeton, and were driven to his house, in the new city, or out of town, for I am at loss to say whether it is town or country. The dwellings of the merchants are in this new town, some of them six or eight miles from old Batavia, where they live as luxuriously as circumstances will allow. They retire from the desk about four o'clock P. M., take a half hour's drive, and get home to dress, and dine about seven, seldom quitting the table earlier than ten or eleven o'clock. Notwithstanding the insalubrious character of the climate, I am very sure, a similar course of indulgence at table could not be better endured in any other region for the same length of time. Some individuals have been living in this manner, for ten and even twenty years, enjoying most excellent health. When you speak of the subject, you are told, in an uncertain tone—"Yes, it is necessary to be cautious, and take care of yourself!" But you will find your adviser, perhaps, delighting in mulagatawny, curry, saddles of mutton, &c., with an accompaniment of light red wine; assuring you, that Sherry and Madeira are too heating for the climate; yet, these are compensated for in copious draughts of Hodgson's pale ale, during dinner, to cool the throat set on fire by highly condimented dishes, and after the wine has gone two or three rounds, a liquor coaster, well supplied with gin and brandy, the first being most in vogue, and coolers of water take its place; which, aided by the cigar, or chiroot, bind the guests to the social board, sometimes till a late hour. A cup of coffee is swallowed by every one the moment his eyes are open in the morning; and in the dry monsoon, it is usual to ride before breakfast, the hour of which is eight o'clock. The merchants then 'go to town,' and, about twelve or one o'clock, take a lunch at the counting-house; and so follow on the routine of life.

In a few minutes we had passed the boundary of the old city, re-



marking, *en passant*, one street almost entirely occupied by Chinese, industriously plying some mechanic art. There is one section of the town called the China camp, distinguished from the rest by its more squalid, filthy appearance, and being peopled altogether by Chinese and their descendants, where may be seen quaintly painted paper lanterns hanging at the doors, naked children flourishing in the mud, and hair-plaiting and all the weighty offices of the toilet going forward in the open air. We crossed a canal, or river, and rode swiftly over a fine level road, struck at every step of our progress by the beauty and luxuriance of vegetation; every where the eye encountered dwellings, wearing a mingled aspect of cottage and of palace; the neat walks, the flowers, the clean white exterior, seen through rich green foliage, and the air of retired comfort of the first, and the columns of the broad veranda, the carriage-way sweeping up through an avenue to the door, the height and extent of the building and out-offices, in keeping with the latter. Some few houses, of an inferior order, open directly upon the street; but, in general, they stand retired from the high-way. You see the broad canal, and its stream of muddy water; canoes, laden with grass, tracked along by men on the banks; women and children bathing, and performing other offices for themselves; numerous pedestrians beneath the shade of the long line of trees on the canal; Malays and Javans in sarongs, carrying fruit or fish; the Chinaman, with braided hair, drawn so tightly back, as if to keep his eyes open, in tidy white frock, over blue pantaloons, moves along, carelessly twirling a little tom-tom, to call attention to the pack of goods following him on the shoulders of a Javan, or Malay, which he is hawking about; now and then an Arab, turbanded with a shawl from the vale of Cashmere, in flowing juma of blue cloth, over a white vesture, with head erect, proudly steps his sandalled feet upon the path, followed by a slave, bearing his umbrella, his whole physiognomy crying,

“Odi profanum vulgus et arceo.”

At this hour, numerous and stylish equipages are flying in every direction; in short, all you see speaks of the East, and, finding the same succession of mansions, rich vegetation, and peopling, to extend four or five miles, we readily believe those who tell us that Batavia of the present day rivals Calcutta, of which we hear so much. But this is all on one side of the canal; the other presents a road resembling a newly ploughed field, over which the *profanum vulgus*



drive their truck-wheeled carts, drawn by water buffaloes, without risking an encounter with the flaunting liveries of some Dutch nawab.

Falling at once into the routine, we drove through several streets of the new city, which appears to be increasing in all directions, and came upon a large square, one side of which is taken up by a pile of buildings, occupied by the public offices of the colonial government, and the other by the cantonments of the officers, the soldiers' barracks being in the rear. In its centre stands a column, surmounted by a lion, which was erected in commemoration of the field of Waterloo, and hence the name, Waterloo Place, or Square. Close to the column, on the green sward, is a music stand, for the accommodation of a fine military band that plays on Sunday and Thursday afternoons, when the Square is the resort of all the fashionable world of Batavia. Here we occasionally saw numerous equipages bearing fair ladies to listen to the music, the while their lords lolled back to regale them with the smoke of their chiroots; buggies, phaetons, and barouches and four, at intervals swept through the square, and gay equestrians caracolled along, for a few minutes, and then, with the crowd of pedestrian *sans culottes*, assembled again at the music stand, as the band began some fine composition of the best masters. To judge from these assemblages, Batavia boasts very few beauties among her fair. In a half hour, the band, and the guard, in green frock coats and long yellow shoulder-belts, marched off, and the crowd of vehicles wheeled away in different directions, the coachmen cracking their whips in full chorus.

Our road led us round the "King's Plain," an extensive level field, surrounded by pretty shade-trees. As it was still early, we passed the HET BATAVIAASH GENOOTSCHAP, or Hall of Science, where there is a collection of specimens of natural history, at present, I was assured, not worth visiting. Under the same roof is the HARMONIE, a large hall, resorted to in the evening to play billiards, to talk, and, occasionally, to attend an auction-sale. In its vicinity are the only two hotels in the place, both miserably kept, and by no means the most eligible places of sojourn for chaste gentlemen.

Of the Dutch society I saw nothing, but I was assured that it is pretty extensive and very good. Of the foreign society I saw much, and most of us will long remember the kind attentions extended to us while we remained.

The city of Batavia covers a large space, but the houses are far apart, and their grounds extensive; and one is surprised at the com-



paratively small number of its inhabitants. The population in 1824, exclusive of the military force, consisting of fifteen thousand men, seven thousand of whom are Europeans, was only fifty-three thousand, eight hundred and sixty-one, viz:—

Europeans and their descendants,	-	-	-	-	3,025
Natives,	-	-	-	-	23,108
Chinese,	-	-	-	-	14,708
Arabs,	-	-	-	-	601
Slaves, (originally from Bali, Sumatra, and Maccasar,)					12,419
Total,	-	-	-	-	53,861*

In 1812, the number of inhabitants is thus stated, viz:—

	Natives.	Europeans.
Population of Batavia, -	47,083	371
“ “ Environs of do. -	218,777	1,928
Total, -	265,860	2,299†

A census is taken yearly, but I applied for that of 1835 in vain. A friend asked it from a relation, who is a Resident; but he replied, that his oath of office did not permit him to impart any information from the archives without an order from the Governor General.

\* M'Culloch's Commercial Dictionary, Lond. 1835.

† The History of Java, by Thomas Stamford Raffles, 2 vols. quarto, London, 1817.



## CHAPTER XXI.

## SKETCHES IN JAVA.

*February, 1836.*

MANY regrets were expressed by our friends on shore, at different times, that our visit to Java was in the rainy monsoon, as we should leave it with very unfavorable, and at the same time, unjust impressions, and estimate its beauties too low. "Indeed," they said, "to see any thing of the country, or to have an idea of what Java really is, you should visit Buitenzorg." In truth, there is not much to say in behalf of a city, literally flooded by the rains, as Batavia was during our sojourn. In most of the streets of the old town, the water was a foot deep, and in some of them it rose to the hubs of the carriage wheels. Houses and stores were afloat, yet the Chinese were seen in their shops, plying their vocations as tailors, tinkers, and shoemakers, half leg deep, while their naked children enjoyed fine sport, sailing tiny boats about the room or before the door, as careless of the circumstance as if it had been a thing of course. In front of some houses were canoes, used to traverse the flooded streets. After seeing this, who will be surprised at the very extraordinary sickness and mortality of Batavia, exposed as the inhabitants must be to the morbidiferous miasms, generated by a burning sun on the oozy streets, after the rainy season has passed away?

From the year 1730, till the month of August, 1752, a period of twenty-two years and eight months, the burials, according to the official documents printed in the appendix of Raffles' History of Java, was 1,119,375, about 4115 per month. Since that time, however, things have improved, and a Dutch physician of eminence assured me that the present mortality is very little greater than that of any country of Europe.

The number of Europeans who died at Batavia, from January 1st, 1831, until December 31st, 1835, was 2,460, or an annual average



of 492. Of these, 166 were transient (or foreigners) or an average of  $33\frac{1}{3}$ ; so that a number greater than the whole European population (2,299 in the year 1812,) died in the period of five years!

Among other improvements at Batavia, there is a public hospital for the reception of foreigners and others, said to be superior to any establishment of the kind in India, and not inferior to many in the world, but I regret that circumstances prevented me from visiting it.

To carry off the torrents, which, in the rainy season, pour down upon the coast from the high land of the interior, numerous canals are necessary, and a great many were opened; but it was supposed, they were more than sufficient in number, and were prejudicial to the salubrity of the climate: after intellect was on its march and had learned to fly in many christian countries, it began an accelerated crawl among the Batavia Dutch; and in their eagerness to improve, they filled up many of the canals, without leaving enough to drain the country and keep the city free. Business was thereby almost brought to a stand, much property destroyed, and a popular commotion was dreaded on these accounts. The canals will be again opened, in all probability; for canals there must be wherever there are Dutchmen: they are as necessary to their existence as pipes and Scheidam. Is it not remarkable, that the Dutch, like the English, Spaniards and Portuguese, should have settled their colonies in countries whose natural features are similar to their own?

The weather at Batavia is, with little exception, nearly the same every year; the months of January, February, and March, are generally wet, the rainy season beginning about the middle of December, and continuing, with more or less violence, until the end of March, the wind commonly prevailing from west or north-west. During April and May, the winds are variable, the weather unsettled, with frequent lightning and thunder. In the month of June the dry season begins, and frequently lasts till November, with eastward or south-eastwardly winds. In 1835, not a single drop of rain fell during nearly five months, from the beginning of May, until the end of October. But generally during this season, there is a shower from time to time, till the month of November, when the weather begins to change, and towards the end of December, the rainy season sets in again in full force.

The average range of the thermometer for the last five years, was, at six o'clock, A. M.  $74^{\circ}$  F.; at meridian,  $88^{\circ}$ ; at six o'clock, P. M.  $76^{\circ}$ . The highest range was  $96^{\circ}$ , and the lowest  $72^{\circ}$ .

So often were we urged to visit Buitenzorg, that we made up a



party and determined to set out the first fair day; but rain it would, and we were disappointed day after day, and I returned on board in despair. Late one afternoon, I was notified, that on the following morning at daylight, rain or shine, the party would set off; I therefore made my preparations and hastened to the shore. The evening was the clearest that had occurred for many days, and augured well for the morrow.

When I landed the sun had already set; not a leaf stirred; there was only here and there a small cloud to be seen in the sky, and presently the stars appeared one by one, until the firmament was bespangled. I walked along the quiet streets; here and there twinkled a candle in the domicil of a Chinese, and before some of the miserable habitations, sat the inhabitants conversing in low tones, their words flowing as slowly and gently as the eddying wreaths of smoke from their own chiroots. The general gravity of the scene, was indeed occasionally broken, by the mirthful laugh of a child, throwing its naked form playfully into the arms of its father. As I walked on, the stillness became greater, and there was a dreariness on the time-worn features of all around, seen beneath the soft light of the stars, not in the least lessened by the occasional and melancholy cry of the ge-ko. I felt glad to reach Tjauley's door; and, passing by two or three coops of poultry into the office of our Chinese serviteur, roused him from his desk, where he sat, almost buried in accounts, surrounded by piles of fruit and bunches of green plantains. Tjauley raised his spectacles, looked at me, got up from his seat, and, quietly trimming the solitary lamp that glimmered its rays over the large apartment, said, "You be come late shore—no, sir?" with a smile which betrayed what Time had been doing in his mouth.

"Yes; will you get me a carriage?"

"You pay first?" replied the old man. The money was put into his hand. He turned away and said something in Chinese, rather above his ordinary tone, and the next moment his son and aid passed into the street. I waited some minutes, and in the mean time Tjauley began to smoke a cigar. I grew impatient and moved towards the door. "Sit down, sir,—him come in a little." I obeyed, and attempted to converse, but the old man was not talkative. At the end of a half hour the carriage stopped at the door, and the town clock struck seven faster than I could count;—the only active spirit in the town is Time, and he strikes fast and hard.

I was not long in taking my seat; crack, crack went the whip, and we rattled through the street, every where silent till we reached the



China camp, where things were more alive. The music of the gamelan and the voices of dancing girls broke upon the ear. The scene grew animated as we advanced. The *restaurans ambulans* were in motion, lighted by lamps, and here and there a way-farer was regaling himself with a supper from the baskets of a warong, halted for the sake of his custom. So soon as we had cleared the camp, the view had something fairy-like in its character. The trees along the canal were partially lighted from lamps, flickering in canoes and boats, swimming silently on the current. Now and then there was a gleam cast upon the water afar off, by flambeaux seen passing rapidly through the trees, and the mansions every where were illuminated by many lamps of clear cocoanut oil, burning steadily in shades of transparent glass, suspended from the ceiling of the verandas, and in the apartments which were usually open wide for the benefit of every breeze. Carriages passed ever and anon at a rapid rate, lighted by torches, made of bundles of the long stems of palm leaves, bound together like fascines, having one end in a bright flame; one is borne by each of the two footmen in red frocks behind each carriage, producing a fine effect;—this is truly eastern magnificence.

I alighted in due time at Fancy Farm. The next day I was on foot at dawn, and seating myself in a buggy with our friend and cicerone for the journey, drove to our Consul's, where we found the rest of our party awaiting us. An antiquated coach that had been standing in the yard for several days, was already geared to four small ponies; the coachman was on the box; we speedily assumed our places, and off we went with a cracking of whip that any Jehu would have been delighted to hear. Besides the party of four sitting in the coach, the major's servant sat at my feet with a little bag of copper doits, to pay the driver and two runners, or postillions at each post house, according to custom. At starting, the two postillions, who were clad simply in a handkerchief tied about the head and a pair of tight drawers, each armed with a common cart-whip, ran one on either side of the horses and belabored them with blows and abuse, until the animals were at full speed; then they mounted behind, where they continued cracking their whips in a sort of chime with that of the driver, who, with vigorous arm, cracked right and left.

Without witnessing the fact, one would scarcely believe, that the little ponies could hurry such a load after them at the speed we travelled. They kept at full run to the first post, a distance of eight



pauls.\* The posts are conveniently arranged. A high shed covers the road, and the carriage is driven under it, where the horses are very quickly changed, as well as the runners, the same driver keeping the box all the way through. The posts are about five pauls apart, and, notwithstanding the heavy rains, the roads are in excellent condition. But a strong contrast exists between the post roads, exclusively travelled by the vehicles of the gentry and by pedestrians, and the roads running side by side, changing from right to left, appropriated to the buffalo carts of the natives. The Dutch force the natives to construct fine roads all over the island, and then compel them to toil over ways that are comparable to ploughed fields. How can people prosper whose policy it is to keep up such painful distinctions? Where is the encouragement to force the soil to produce its fruits, when, from the difficulty of getting them to market, the profits are inadequate to the labor and loss of time? But we shall see more of the stubborn, blind, brutal tyranny of the Batavia Dutch before we conclude.

Thus far our route lay over a level country, beautified by fine mansions, similarly situated to those already noticed, but growing 'few and far between,' as our distance from the city increased. The morning was pleasant, and at that early hour, many Malays and Javans were seen trudging towards the city with loads of fruit, vegetables and poultry, all suspended from the ends of a bamboo, nicely balanced over the shoulder. Chickens and capons are tied by the legs, but geese, turkeys and peacocks are placed in separate mats of green cocoanut leaves, which snugly envelop the body and wings, giving them a comfortable support. Canoes loaded with fresh-cut grass floated on the canal towards the city.

The horses were already in harness when we reached the post, and little more was required than to hitch the traces, which were of coir rope; those of the leaders were long, and instead of being attached to the pole or tongue of the carriage, were secured to the same swingle-tree with the others.

All being ready, the chiming of whips with a chorus of Malay vociferation commenced, and the restiff little horses began dancing and prancing, first to right and then to the left, until, to escape the shower of blows poured from either side to which they inclined, they fairly rushed forward at the top of their speed, and the runners leaped up behind to continue the music of their whips. In a few

\* A paul is 1600 yards.



minutes we were passing fields of indigo and rice; and we saw here and there some few pepper vines climbing over forest trees. As far as eye could reach, vegetation was beautifully green, but the view of the mountains, now hid by heavy clouds, was wanting to complete the scenery.

The country now became more elevated, and a range of low hills was pointed out as the heights of Cornelis, memorable for the hard fought battle which ended in placing Java in the hands of the British; and every philanthropist, as well as every Englishman, must regret that a conquest dearly won in the field, should have been cheaply given up in the cabinet. The road from this point has a gradual ascent to Buitenzorg, which is elevated eight hundred or a thousand feet above the sea, and as we approached it, every field was under cultivation; a canal or river was almost constantly in sight; and the road was bordered by green hedges.

The last post is situated at the top of a hill, at the foot of which runs a river, brawling towards the sea, over which is thrown a wooden bridge, and a long hill rises on the opposite side. After the usual flogging and vociferation, the restiff little ponies ran down the first mentioned hill and across the bridge at full speed, our servant casting a florin, for toll, to a boy, who, with outstretched hand, bawled something in Malay; but we continued on amidst cracking and lashing of whips, and the shouts of the runners, urging the spirited little nags up hill, for they were apprehensive that the beasts would not, going at a moderate pace, be equal to the task. In a few minutes we came in sight of the palace gate, which seemingly terminates the road; but at that point it turns short to the right, and along it we sped to the hotel, called 'Belle Vue,' where we arrived in three hours and twenty minutes, a distance of thirty-nine pails,—rather more than thirty-five miles—from Batavia. We encountered one heavy shower on the way, and a second was about commencing.

In the garden of the hotel is an elevated summer-house, reared on the verge of a hill, where we hastened to behold one of the finest landscape views in Java. It presents a deep valley below, luxuriant in green of various shades; a fine road descending into it from the left; in front, a mountain eight thousand feet high, the summit of which was now hid under heavy clouds, pouring out a fast approaching shower, and to the right, a canal with a rushing stream of yellow water, wherein several females were bathing. The road to the left, was animated by Malays and Chinese, in their peculiar costumes, passing to and fro, the former bending under loads of fruit, &c.,



while the latter, full of calculation, moved steadily along under umbrellas.

When we had taken a glance of this view, we returned to the hotel, and, after despatching an excellent breakfast, we rode to the Garden, an extensive and prettily cultivated ground about the palace, which was shaken down by an earthquake, on the tenth of October, 1834, and is now rebuilding. As the morning was rainy, our visit was hasty, and our examinations were often cut short by showers. We first visited an enclosure appropriated to the cultivation of the cochineal plant (*Cactus coccinifer*) which was introduced from Mexico, and promises well. The cactus plants were ranged in rows, some of which were sheltered by roofs of palm leaves. On some of them were many of the purple insects, enclosed in a delicate white web, resembling frost or mould.

We were fortunate in meeting Mons. H. Diard, the government naturalist, just as he was setting off for Batavia. He recognised the Major, and, alighting from his lumbering old coach and four, came without his hat to greet him. He led us into an old, ruinous mansion, bearing many signs of the earthquake, and which seemed now deserted to Time, and the white ants, that were busily making their covered ways over several parts of the floor. Mons. D—— showed us a collection of birds, among which was a pretty green pigeon, and then led us to the back veranda, overlooking a deep valley, the sides of which were terraced and planted with rice, and a serpentine river, whose current was now swollen by the rains, rushed through its whole length. This he assured us is the most beautiful landscape on the island of Java. He assured me, that the celebrated Upas plant, (*Antiaris toxicaria*), grows only in the eastern part of the island, and that he was expecting hourly to receive specimens of it. An account of the Bohun Upas, or poison wood of Java, upas being the generic term in the language for poison, and applied to all plants possessing venomous qualities, may be found in Raffle's History of Java.

After taking leave of the naturalist, I was told, that a Malay servant observing Mons. D—— to be curious in examining insects, plants, birds, &c., caught a swallow, and after very nicely securing a cock's feather to its tail, set it again at liberty. The swallow continued its flights about the house, twittering away as gaily as ever, and at length attracted the attention of the worthy naturalist. He endeavoured to catch it, but his very eagerness in this case balked him. He offered rewards to any one who would place the strange



bird in his hands, but no one would or could succeed, until in his anxiety, he cried, "A hundred dollars to any one who will bring me that swallow." Just as he was stepping into his coach, to depart for a distant part of the island, the tricky Malay brought forward the bird, but declined the reward, and Mons. D—— drove off with the prize, and was not long in discovering the deception that had been practised on him.

On our return, we passed a large herd of spotted deer, and visited the enclosure allotted to the tea-plant; then drove through a long street called the China camp, intending to return through the native village of Buitenzorg; but the horses, in spite of the hearty blows and curses of the driver and runners, would not proceed, so we were obliged to return to the hotel. It rained during the rest of the day, and we were thereby confined to the house.

Mr. Jacobson, the government tea-taster, and planter, had arrived at the hotel at the same time with ourselves, and I obtained from him the following interesting particulars relative to "China's fragrant herb."

The plant was introduced into Java from Japan, in 1826; and in 1828, under the care of my informant, yielded specimens of black tea, but of an inferior quality. In 1830, plants were brought from China, and in 1833, their mode of manufacturing tea, was ascertained at the expense of two or three visits to China, and the exercise of a good deal of cunning observation; for direct questions were always answered in a manner to mislead and deceive the inquirer.

Although all the varieties and qualities of tea may be prepared from the same plant, there are two cultivated; one yielding the green and the other the black teas. The shrub bears a pretty white fragrant blossom, and affords three or four pluckings of leaves in the course of the year; but the nature of the soil, and the situation in which they grow, produce an inexplicable effect upon the quality of the teas made from them. The leaves, when of a proper age, are plucked one by one by gatherers, who receive no other pay than in the remission of certain land rents; and they are then placed in large shallow pans of tin, over a charcoal fire, where they are constantly turned with the hand, the sort and quality of the tea, depending upon the length of time of manipulation. The best qualities of green tea are longest over the fire, and therefore, are afforded at a high price, while the black teas, manufactured at less expense of time and fuel, are cheapest.

In March, 1835, 4,294 pounds of the several varieties of tea, put up in the Chinese style, were shipped for Holland, where the tea-



tasters and judges declared them to be equal to any from the Celestial Empire; but they were not told how many thousand piculs of coffee these pounds of tea cost, nor how many poor Javans had been despoiled of their rice crops to gratify the experimenting spirit of Van Den Bosch.

We found our sleeping rooms pleasant. The beds were supplied with an additional hard bolster or pillow, whereon to rest the lower limbs, which has obtained the somewhat equivocal name of "Dutch wife." On the following morning several missionaries arrived from Batavia; Mr. Medhurst of the British mission, Messrs. Hanson and Lockwood of the American mission in China, and Mr. Arms of the American mission at Singapore, with two others residing at Batavia.\* They had come to Buitenzorg to prefer a petition, asking countenance of the government, to aid them in their great purpose of diffusing christian and general knowledge among the people. Though the governor treated them politely, and very diplomatically invited them to dine, he turned them off with a very indefinite or no answer at all.

To their shame be it spoken, the Dutch do not think it consonant with the system of policy adopted in Batavia to encourage the diffusion of knowledge, or the conversion of misbelievers to the belief of christian doctrine. They dread, and no doubt with reason, that such a change might be followed by their expulsion from the island, or at least by a loss of their dear monopolies; but the time will come and dear will be the reckoning day thereof. With christianity and the worldly information which accompanies it wherever it finds its way, the Javans and Malays would be too strong for their oppressors; and in a short time, they would be hurled in blood from the high places they now hold in the island. And even without these advantages, the people are against them, and ripe for revolt. All they want is a leader, which they might find either in Diponegoro, the hero of the war of 1825, were he to escape from his prison in the Moluccas, or in Lallabassa, now shut up in Bencoolen. The Dutch army, consisting of about two thousand Germans, as many Dutch and three thousand Belgians, besides native troops, is discontented. The Germans dislike the treatment they receive, the Dutch are miserably paid, and the Belgians complain that their good conduct is overlooked, and then they have to contend with stubborn Dutch prejudices against them, which have grown out of the late war in Belgium. This army is dis-

\* The American Missionaries very kindly performed the church service, and preached on board of the *Peacock* on the Sundays of her sojourn in the Roads.



tributed in small bodies over Java and Sumatra and might be cut up in detail. But the Dutch think themselves secure. They have always been opposed to strangers obtaining any knowledge of the island; therefore no one is permitted even to visit Buitenzorg without first obtaining a passport, for which a small fee is exacted. Then the passport states on its face it is good thus far, and no farther. So soon as travellers arrive at the hotel and their names are recorded, the register with their passports are at once sent to the palace. In our case they were unnecessary, because the governor had accorded to us free post horses.

The Major procured for us an invitation from a Javan Prince, Wiera Watta, who is Adipatti or native Resident of the district of Buitenzorg, to visit him and hear the "gamelàn," or band of Javan music. At twelve o'clock, we descended into the valley below Belle Vue, wherein is built the native village; a sort of vicinage of bamboo houses, each one being so completely hidden in grottos of trees, that at a short distance it rather resembles a luxuriant forest than a town. The house of Wiera Watta is larger than any other in the neighborhood, and is enclosed by a neat fence of split bamboo. We were escorted across the open enclosure by umbrella bearers, to protect us from the shower, then falling, and at the entrance of an open court, Wiera Watta himself received us very politely, and led us to seats through a covered passage between the two wings of his dwelling. At the opposite end of the passage to that where we were, sat two or three servants on the floor, with their knees drawn up to the chin; and the gamelàn was arrayed under shelter of a roof, near the entrance of the court we had just crossed. The musicians were playing when we passed them.

There are several kinds of gamelàn used by the Javans. That before us was the Gamelàn Salindro, which consists of several instruments, resembling the harmonicon or ancient stocatta, termed "gambang." The "gambang gansa" is a harmonicon having eighteen wooden keys, arranged in a sort of trough or boat, which yield very pleasant tones when struck with the proper sticks. The "gambang kayu" has nineteen metal keys; there were three other similar instruments of smaller size, each having from five to seven metal keys; they are named saron, demong, and selantam. A bed of ten small gongs called a bonang; a large gong placed horizontally, two large ones suspended from a wooden frame, and a long narrow drum formed the bass, while the lead was given by the rebab, a sort of two-stringed violin. This instrument is held very much after the man-



ner of the violoncello, and as the player was seated on the ground, his left hand was elevated to press the strings while the right exercised the bow. The music was pleasing, and rather soothing in its tones. The musicians were all seated *à la Turque*, and were generally patriarchal in their appearance; the leader particularly so, when he turned his withered face towards heaven and accompanied the notes of the rebab in a high and pathetic tone.

The gamelân is preserved as an heir-loom in the family of a Javan prince, passed down from generation to generation: the one before us, had long been the amusement of Wiera Watta's ancestors; and in his father's time, there were dancing girls, also a part of it, who performed for the entertainment of the guests.

The gongs of Java are celebrated for their tone, and in many parts of the East are prized before those of China.

Wiera Watta is of small stature, and wears the semblance of seventy years. His face is a benevolent one, but from the loss of teeth, the cheeks have fallen in, and the chin projects. He wore a handkerchief on his head; a dark cloth jacket, the collar and cuffs of which were covered with broad gold lace; a white vest; a neckcloth, or cravat, after the fashion of fifty years ago, and a sarong hanging about the lower limbs. We were seated at a small table, on which were placed a variety of confections and fruits—mangustins, durians, dukus, and three sorts of rambutan. Coffee was first served, and after the fruit, a glass of wine, of which, however, the prince did not partake.

When the repast was over, the Adipatti brought forward several crises of exquisite workmanship. The hilts were of hard wood, and the scabbards, the making of which is a separate trade, of wrought gold set with diamonds and precious stones. The blades were redolent of musk, of dark color, and damasked so as to resemble the grain of wood, by the admixture of a metal found on the islands of Biliton and Celebes. The kris blade is often envenomed with a poison *prepared* from the Upas and other plants; I was assured, while in Batavia, there is no plant on the island which is not eaten by some one of the lower classes of animals. The price of a kris blade, newly manufactured, varies from half a rupee (20 cents) to fifty dollars; and if its descent can be traced for three or four generations, is frequently prized at ten times that sum. But of all the articles of Javan workmanship, I most admired a set of chessmen, one half of virgin gold, the other of pure silver, wrought most beautifully in filligree.



In an hour we took leave of Wiera Watta and returned to the hotel, where we were detained all the afternoon by heavy rain. The next morning between six and seven o'clock, we set off for Batavia, much gratified by our visit, and invigorated by the bracing and elastic air of the hills. Our return journey was as rapid as our coming, and characterised by the same sort of vociferation and whip accompaniments.

---

## CHAPTER XXII.

### SKETCHES IN JAVA.

*February, 1836.*

THE island of Java—called by the natives Tána, (the land) Jawa or Misa (the island)—extends between the meridians of  $105^{\circ} 11'$ , and  $114^{\circ} 33'$  of longitude east of Greenwich; and between the parallels of  $5^{\circ} 52'$  and  $8^{\circ} 46'$  of south latitude. It is separated by the straits of Sunda, a few miles in breadth, from the island of Sumatra, which stretches away to the northward and westward for more than a thousand miles. It is of a rectangular form, and has numerous small islands on its northern coast. Its extreme length from east to west is 666 miles, and its breadth varies from 135 to 56 miles; its superficies is estimated at 50,000 square miles. It is mountainous, volcanic and well-watered. "The whole country, as seen from mountains of considerable elevation, appears a rich, diversified and well watered garden, animated with villages, interspersed with the most luxuriant fields and covered with the freshest verdure."

The population is estimated at 6,000,000, or more than one hundred to the square mile.

The established religion is that of Mohammed, the earliest notice of which in Javan annals is A. D. 1250. This religion was established in 1475, previous to which period the Hindoo faith was alone acknowledged. In 1511, the Portuguese found a Hindoo king at



Bantam; but, with inconsiderable exceptions, the whole island was converted during the sixteenth century by the priests of Islamism, under the protection of the then declining power of the caliphs. A few at Bantam still adhere to the worship of the lingü; and numerous temples and pieces of Hindoo sculpture, generally in ruin, are to be met with in almost every part of the island.

Soon after doubling the cape of Good Hope, Alfonso de Albuquerque visited Sumatra, in 1510, and the following year he sent Antonio de Abrew to Java and the Moluccas. The Portuguese were followed by the Dutch, and in 1595, Hautman sailed direct for Bantam with a fleet, and obtained permission to build a factory there, which was the first settlement formed by the Dutch in the East Indies. Following the example of the Dutch, the English East India Company, immediately after its incorporation by Queen Elizabeth in 1600, sent out Captain Lancaster with four vessels. He sailed first to Acheen, and thence to Bantam, where he established a factory, the first British possession in India.

The first Dutch Governor-General, Bolt, arrived at Bantam, in 1610, and, finding the situation of his countrymen in that province not favorable to the establishment of a permanent settlement, removed to Jakatrà. On the 4th of March, 1621, the name of Batavia was conferred upon the new establishment, which, from that period, became the capital of the Dutch East Indian empire.

In 1683, the English withdrew from Bantam.

In 1811, Holland becoming a province of France, the French flag was hoisted at Batavia; and on the 11th of September, of the same year, the British government was declared supreme on Java, by a proclamation signed by the Earl of Minto, then Governor-General of Bengal. On the 17th of the same month, a capitulation was entered into, which placed all the dependencies in the hands of Great Britain. On the 13th of August, 1814, a bargain was made by Viscount Castlereagh, on the part of his Britannic majesty, restoring to the Dutch the whole of their former possessions in the eastern islands; and on the 19th of August, 1816, the flag of the Netherlands again floated at Batavia.

For this restoration the English in India never cease to regret, and deprecate the policy which led to it, whenever the subject is mentioned; but in those days, kingdoms and provinces changed hands with as little ceremony as estates under the hammer of the auctioneer.

The administration of the colonial government is confided to the



Governor-General, or Lieutenant-governor, with their secretaries and deputies, and four counsellors appointed by the king. But the Governor-General, it may be said, is absolute; for when the council does not agree to his propositions, he is at liberty to assume the responsibility and put them in execution. The officers of the administration rarely meet together for the transaction of public business, being required only to send their written votes, sometimes accompanied by arguments, from their several homes, when the Governor thinks proper to submit any measure to their consideration.

The detail is managed by officers termed Residents, one being at the head of each of the departments, called residencies, into which the island is divided.

While in the hands of the English, many changes and improvements were made in the ancient system of government; and when they restored the island, in 1816, it was in a comparatively flourishing condition; but owing to various circumstances, as increased competition in Indian commerce after the general peace, and the condition in which the continued wars had left agricultural pursuits, Holland received little advantage from possessing Java up to 1824, when the warlike attempts of the Javans, headed by Diponegoro, to expel the Dutch, formed a weighty obstacle to profitable commercial enterprise;\* nor was tranquillity restored until 1830, when the Governor-General tampered with the prosperity of the island by making a series of unsuccessful and expensive agricultural experiments.

Van den Bosch, the Governor-General, fancied that tea could be cultivated with great profit; and in 1831, established a plantation at Bandong, where he spared no expense which was likely in his opinion to ensure success, but the shrubs perished one after the other. Another plantation was begun at Krawang, the crop from which, for 1833, was to be, by his estimate, 75,000 lbs.; but it only produced 2,000 lbs., and he abandoned farther trials on an extensive scale. To make room for the tea plants in this plantation, he cut down more than 2,000,000 coffee trees, which reduced the coffee crop at least 5000 piculs.

About the same time he made an attempt to grow silk, but was equally unfortunate.

Indigo also attracted his attention. Its cultivation was tried and abandoned by Governor Dandels; and afterwards re-established by

\* *Mémoires sur la guerre de l'île de Java de 1825, à 1830, par le Major F. V. A. De Stuers—Folio à Leyde, 1833.*



Petel, continued by du Bus and followed up by Van den Bosch. He was sanguine in his expectations, and to make room for the indigo plants, cut down 5,000,000 coffee trees in 1830, estimating his crop at 1,000,000 lbs. of indigo, but only realized 46,000 lbs, which cost the government 196 cents per. lb. In 1832, 133,380 $\frac{3}{4}$  pounds of indigo were delivered to the government stores, which cost from ten to eleven florins, per. lb.—and the following year 203,000 pounds were afforded at a somewhat less expense.

In 1830 he attempted to force the cultivation of sugar, but what was made at that period cost the government twelve florins the picul when it was selling for ten in Europe. And it was not till 1832, when the price of coffee rose, that attention was given to restore the plantations which had been destroyed for the sake of indigo, tea, and sugar. The effects of these experiments will be seen in the following statement of the coffee crops for several years.

In 1830 the coffee crop was 62,174 piculs.

1831	"	"	"	39,005	"
1832	"	"	"	53,293	"
1833	"	"	"	64,788	"

The agricultural experiments of the Governor General cost, in 1833, not less than \$75,000, and in the following year, \$65,500.\*

The government now rents lands for the cultivation of sugar cane on apparently advantageous terms. The land and seed for the first year are furnished, and an advance is made of thirty or forty thousand florins in form of a loan without interest, which the tenant pays in sugar at a stipulated price, the quantity to be delivered annually being fixed with reference to the quality of the soil and extent of the plantation leased.†

The revenue for the year 1834, is stated at 15,411,986 florins.

Batavia is the centre of an extensive commerce carried on with nearly all parts of India, China, Japan, Europe and the United States. The staple articles of export to the last two, are coffee and sugar; but they are so monopolized by the government, that the trade, it is to be feared, will be soon exclusively carried on in Dutch bottoms.

\* Kort Overzicht der Financiale Resultaten Van het Stelsel van Kultures onder den Gouverneur-General Van den Bosch, 1835.

† Blik op Het Bestuur Van Nederlandsch—Indie Onder den Gouverneur-General J. Van den Bosch, 1835, pp. 204.



Coffee was introduced from Arabia into Java, about the beginning of the eighteenth century, and seems at once to have attracted the attention and care of the colonists. The soil and climate are admirably adapted to its cultivation and almost an indefinite quantity might be produced; perhaps enough to supply the present demand of the whole world.\*

#### EXPORT OF COFFEE FROM JAVA IN 1835.

Character of Vessel.					Number of Piculs.
Dutch,	-	-	-	-	363,080
American,	-	-	-	-	56,435
French,	-	-	-	-	17,177
English,	-	-	-	-	1,145
Swedish,	-	-	-	-	535
Hybro,	-	-	-	-	403

Total number of piculs, 438,775

The quantity of coffee exported from Padang, (Sumatra) has greatly increased in the last five years. In 1835, it amounted to 90,000 piculs.†

#### EXPORT OF SUGAR FROM JAVA IN 1835.

Character of Vessel,					Number of Piculs,
Dutch,	-	-	-	-	265,784
American,	-	-	-	-	75,068
French,	-	-	-	-	2,145
English,	-	-	-	-	25,175
Swedish,	-	-	-	-	3,691
Hybro,	-	-	-	-	400

Total number of piculs, 372,263

But it must not be supposed that all the coffee and sugar exported from Java in American vessels, find their way to the United States: many ships carry their cargoes from Batavia to Europe, where they are exchanged for merchandise suited to our market.

An idea of the extent of American trade may be formed from the following table, which exhibits the number of vessels with their aggregate tonnage, that have visited Java for ten years.

\* *Dissertatio Historico-politica de commercio et internæ administrationis forma possessionum Batavarum in India Orientali.* 1833—pp. 138—a neat brochure replete with statistical notes.

† A picul is equal to 133½ pounds avoirdupois.



Years.					No. of Vessels.					No. of Tons.
1825	-	-	-	-	38	-	-	-	-	12,962
1826	-	-	-	-	22	-	-	-	-	7,700
1827	-	-	-	-	19	-	-	-	-	6,250
1828	-	-	-	-	14	-	-	-	-	2,086
1829	-	-	-	-	12	-	-	-	-	4,356
1830	-	-	-	-	13	-	-	-	-	4,050
1831	-	-	-	-	22	-	-	-	-	7,516
1832	-	-	-	-	35	-	-	-	-	12,338
1833	-	-	-	-	67	-	-	-	-	23,220
1834	-	-	-	-	42	-	-	-	-	16,551

The value of the trade, in a commercial point of view, may be estimated at one million of dollars a year. It is set down that each vessel is provided with the means, either merchandise or bills, of raising \$60,000 to invest in Java; and, taking the year 1834, on this estimate the value of our commerce would be \$1,520,000. But we must take into consideration that a number of these vessels also visit China and Manila, and return again to Batavia: this happens when, arriving out of season, the coffee and sugar crops are not ready for delivery, and the time, which otherwise might be lost, is filled up, carrying rice to Canton, either from Java or the Philippines. But, nationally considered, the estimate must be greater. If we reckon six seamen to the hundred tons, we shall have nearly a thousand people employed, exposed to all the vicissitudes of climate, of profession, and of piracy, together with the value of the ships, which may be another million, in addition to that of their cargoes. The number of lives and amount of property are sufficiently great, one might suppose, to call for the constant vigilance and protection of the government; but, until within late years, the commerce has been carried on without interruption, and this is the chief reason why a naval force has not been kept in India, the government being satisfied by despatching a vessel of war occasionally from the Pacific station, to pass this way on her return to the United States. Since the conclusion of the commercial treaties with the Sultan of Muscat, and His Magnificent Majesty of Siam, it is presumable our commercial interests will increase; and, including our pepper trade, that with China and the Philippines, we may at present estimate American property annually at risk beyond the cape of Good Hope, to be worth ten millions of dollars. Piracies on the coast of Sumatra, and throughout the China seas, are of almost daily occurrence, and the escape of American vessels is to be set down to remarkable good fortune, rather than the absence of danger.



It is presumable that the government will see the necessity and advantage of keeping a small naval force in those parts of the world for the future: how far the policy of keeping more force than just enough to act as a check to piracy, would affect our interests is matter for the consideration of those who are possessed of a more intimate knowledge of the Asiatics, insular and continental, than I pretend to.

For the purchase of produce at Batavia, funds are obtained by the importation of merchandise and specie, and by the sale of bills on London. In February, 1836, bills on London at six months' sight, sold at the rate of twelve guilders per pound sterling; Spanish dollars being worth at the same time two and a quarter guilders each, or 225 guilders for 100 dollars. Spanish dollars have been, at times, at an advance of 33 per cent.

Accounts are kept in guilders and cents, one hundred to the guilder. All the coins in circulation are imported from Holland; but there is a bank at Batavia which issues paper. This bank was established in 1828, with a capital of 2,000,000 of guilders, and is under the direction of a president, a secretary and three commercial directors, the first two being appointed by the king. It issues two kinds of paper; notes of from twenty-five to one thousand guilders, payable in silver; and notes of a smaller denomination, payable in copper, which are denominated copper-paper. Before the issue of these notes, there existed a sort of treasury draft, which was converted into specie at broker shops, called "Vervisselings Kantoor."

The chief article of export to China is rice, which is sent there in large quantities. The edible birds' nest is an important article of the Java trade. It is of a cream white color, semi-translucent, and in shape and size like a quarter of an orange. It is muco-albuminous, and, in soup, possesses little or no taste; at least to the European palate.

The quantity and value of birds' nests, sent to China, are exhibited in the following table.

Year.		Piculs.	lbs.		Value in Florins.		Dollars. Cts.
1829.	-	260	or 34,666 $\frac{2}{3}$	-	435,622	or	193,609.77
1830.	-	261	" 34,800	-	448,419	"	194,893.73
1831.	-	255	" 34,000	-	334,760	"	149,226.66
1832.	-	244	" 32,533 $\frac{1}{2}$	-	408,355	"	181,451.11
1833.	-	333	" 44,400	-	559,492	"	249,107.55
1834.	-	204	" 27,200	-	350,032	"	155,569.77

By this table, they are worth at the rate of about four dollars and thirty-eight cents per lb.; much less than in former years.



“The quantity of edible birds’ nests alone, annually exported from Java to China on vessels of this description, is estimated at not less than two hundred *piculs*, of which by far the largest proportion is the produce of the Javan rocks and hills. It is well known, that these are the nests of a species of swallow (*Hirundo esculenta*) common in the Malayan islands, and in great demand for the China table. Their value as a luxury, in that empire, has been estimated on importation to be weight for weight equal with silver. The price which those nests of the best quality have of late years brought in the Cantòn and Amoi market, has been forty Spanish dollars per *káti*, of rather more than a pound and a quarter English. They are usually classed into first, second, and third sorts, differing in price from forty to fifteen Spanish dollars, and even to ten and less for the most ordinary. The price in the Batavian market rises as the period for the departure of the junks approaches; but as the principal produce of Java is still a monopoly in the hands of government, it is difficult to fix the price at which they might be sold under other circumstances. Generally speaking, however, they sell throughout the Eastern islands considerably lower than they are calculated to do in China, which may be accounted for by the perishable nature of the commodity, and the great care necessary to preserve them from the damp, as well as from breakage. On this account they are seldom bought by European traders. Birds’-nests consigned by the Javan government to the Cantòn factory in 1813, sold to the amount of about fifty *piculs*, at an average rate of about twenty dollars per *káti*: but this was at a period when the Chinese markets were unusually low.

“The quantity of birds’ nests obtained from the rocks called *Karang Bólang*, on the southern coast of Java, and within the provinces of the native princes, is estimated, one year with another, at a hundred *piculs*, and is calculated to afford an annual revenue to the government of two hundred thousand Spanish dollars. The quantity gathered, besides, by individuals, on rocks and hills belonging to them, either in private property or held by farm from the government, in other parts of the island, may amount to fifty *piculs*; making the extent of this export not less than one hundred and fifty *piculs*, besides the amount of the collections from the other islands of the Archipelago.

“In the Malayan islands, in general, but little care is taken of the rocks and caverns which produce this dainty, and the nests procured are neither so numerous nor so good as they otherwise would



be. On Java, where perhaps the birds are fewer, and the nests in general less fine than those to be met with in some of the more Eastern islands, both the quantity and quality have been considerably improved by European management. To effect this improvement, the caverns which the birds are found to frequent, are cleansed by smoking and the burning of sulphur, and the destruction of all the old nests. The cavern is then carefully secured from the approach of man, the birds are left undisturbed to form their nests, and the gathering takes place as soon as it is calculated that the young are fledged. If they are allowed to remain until the eggs are again laid in them, they lose their pure color and transparency, are no longer of what are termed the first sort. They are sometimes collected so recently after their formation, that time has not been given for the birds to lay or hatch her eggs in them, and these nests are considered as the most superior; but as the practice, if carried to any extent, would prevent the number of the birds from increasing, it is seldom resorted to, where the caverns are in the possession of those who have a permanent interest in their produce. Much of their excellence and peculiar properties, however, depend on the situation of the place in which they are formed. It has often been ascertained, for instance, that the same bird forms a nest of somewhat different quality, according as it constructs it in the deep recesses of an unventilated and damp cavern, or attaches it to a place where the atmosphere is dry and the air circulates freely. The nature of the different substances also to which they are fixed, seems to have some influence on their properties. The best are procured in the deepest caverns (the favorite retreat of the birds,) where a nitrous dampness continually prevails, and where being formed against the sides of the cavern, they imbibe a nitrous taste, without which they are little esteemed by the Chinese. The principal object of the proprietor of a birds' nest rock, is to preserve sufficient numbers of the swallows, by not gathering the nests too often, or abstracting those of the finer kinds in too great numbers, lest the birds should quit their habitations, and emigrate to a more secure and inaccessible retreat. It is not unusual for a European, when he takes a rock under his superintendence, after ridding it of the old nests and fumigating the caverns, to allow the birds to remain undisturbed, two, or three, or even more years, in order that they may multiply for his future advantage. When a birds'-nest rock is once brought into proper order, it will bear two gatherings in the year: this is the case with



the rocks under the care of the officers of the government at *Karang Bólang*.

"In the vicinity of the rocks are usually found a number of persons accustomed from their infancy to descend into these caverns, in order to gather the nests; an office of the greatest risk and danger, the best nests being sometimes many hundred feet within the damp and slippery opening of the rock. The gatherers are sometimes obliged to lower themselves by ropes (as at *Karang Bólang*) over immense chasms, in which the surf of a turbulent sea dashes with the greatest violence, threatening instant destruction in the event of a false step or an insecure hold. The people employed by government for this purpose, were formerly slaves, in the domestic service of the minister or resident at the native court. To them the distribution of a few dollars, and the preparation of a buffalo feast after each gathering, was thought sufficient pay, and the sum thus expended constituted all the disbursements attending the gathering and packing, which is conducted by the same persons. This last operation is, however, carefully superintended by the resident, as the slightest neglect would essentially deteriorate the value of the commodity."\*

Birds of Paradise of several varieties are exported from Batavia; the annual number being about 1500, valued at 10,000 florins. They are brought thither in small trading craft from New Guinea, or Papua and the Arae Islands, the only places where they have been hitherto found.

Within a few years tobacco has been successfully cultivated from seed brought from Cuba, the cigars made from it are of a very agreeable flavor, and will probably become a staple article in the market.

The following table exhibits the export of the staple articles which enter into the trade between Java and Europe and the United States.

Articles,	1833.	1834.	1835.
Coffee, - -	360,166 piculs.	455,000 piculs.	438,775 piculs.
Sugar, - -	210,947 "	375,000 "	372,263 "
Rice, - -	849,000 "	700,000 "	_____ "
Indigo, - -	217,480 lbs.	_____ "	_____ "
Tin, - -	_____ "	39,000 "	_____ "
Pepper, - -	_____ "	7,000 "	_____ "
Hides, - -	_____ "	54,000 no.	_____ "

Tin is obtained at Banka in very large quantities, where the mines are worked exclusively by Chinese under the direction of the Dutch.

\* Raffles' History of Java, vol. 1.



The great increase in the production of pepper in Sumatra has caused its cultivation in Java to be very much neglected. Pepper grows in the islands of Java, Sumatra and Ceylon, and on the coast of Malabar. It is propagated by carefully selected shoots, and flourishes in a hot sun, a strong soil, and requires to be cleared of the plants which grow about its roots, particularly during the first three years. The vine does not yield fruit until the end of the third year; in the first three years of fructification, some plants afford six or seven pounds of pepper; after that the quantity decreases until the twelfth year, when the vine becomes steril. The Americans at present carry on the pepper trade on the coast of Sumatra, probably to a greater extent than any other nation.

Commerce with Japan has been carried on by the Dutch from Batavia for many years to the exclusion of all other Christian nations, but they possess this lucrative trade at the expense of every thing like independence and manly feeling. They have a factory at Nangasaki for the transaction of business, limited to one or two ships a year, which sail from Batavia about the first of July and return in the beginning of January. On arriving at Nangasaki, the arms and ammunition, and the crew are lodged on shore; and while there, it is necessary to conceal, with the most scrupulous care, all signs of christianity, nor can the individuals of the crew have any other than Dutch names, at the risk of the vessel being excluded from the port. To guard against ships of other nations entering Nangasaki under Dutch colors, the annual ship, on leaving Japan is supplied with a signal flag, carefully sealed up, which is displayed by the vessel making the succeeding yearly voyage, on approaching the port.

The Japanese are represented as being very curious in their inquiries, on the arrival of the yearly ship, in relation to the news of Europe, and delight in being told of the rise and fall of empires, of great battles, and of the marriages and deaths of kings and princes. We are told that they never manifest gratitude, except for information of this nature. How far and how correctly the Dutch satisfy them in this respect, as well as most things in relation to the trade, is kept secret, as far as possible.

The chief of the factory is obliged to visit the capital every fourth year, at the expense of \$9557, and to send there every year that he does not go himself, an interpreter of the establishment, at the cost of \$4424; making an average annual charge against the trade of \$3849.

The following statement exhibits the cargo of the Japan bound



ship or ships; for when only one vessel is despatched the same amount and kind of property is sent.

	Articles.	Quantity.	Value in Florins.
<i>Produce of Java and its Dependencies.</i>	Sandal wood,	400 piculs,	7,000
	Sappan wood,	1500 "	8,000
	Cocoanut oil,	200 "	3,500
	Ivory,	— "	10,000
	Pepper,	75 "	1,000
	Rattans,	620 "	3,000
	Cloves,	100 "	6,000
	Sugar,	7,000 "	100,000
	Tin,	400 "	14,000
	Lead,	50 piculs,	900
<i>Produce of Europe and the United States.</i>	American soap,	200 boxes,	500
	Earthenware,		5,000
	Ammunition,		1,000
	Gold and Silver manufactures,		1,500
	Glass ware,		4,500
	Woollens,		65,000
	Cotton manufactures,		75,000
	Medicine,		500
	Provisions,		2,500
	Saffron,		500
	Stationery,		100
	Paints,		150
	Wines,		300
	Quicksilver,		1,000

Opium, arrack, iron-ware, books, &c. in small quantities, the whole cargo being estimated at 312,000 florins.

The return cargo, received in exchange for the above goods, on an average of six years, is stated as follows:

Articles.	Quantities.	Value in Florins.
Camphor, -	550 tubs of 100 lb. each,	44,000
Copper, -	9,000 piculs,	630,000
Porcelain,	"	3,500
Clothing,	"	4,000
Crapes,	"	3,000
Laquered ware,	"	16,000
Linen goods,	"	12,000
Baskets,	"	3,000
Sakie and Soya,	"	8,000
Silks,	"	3,000
Furniture,	"	800



Wax, medicine, gold, curiosities, toys, &c. the whole invoice being estimated at 730,000 florins.

STATEMENT OF THE GROSS AMOUNT OF EXPORTS AND IMPORTS, TO  
AND FROM JAPAN FOR NINE YEARS.

Years.		Florins.		Florins.
1825.	To Japan,	373,853	From Japan,	875,405
1826.	"	23,366	"	161,615
1827.	"	409,270	"	663,405
1828.	"	313,313	"	1,067,231
1829.	"	407,145	"	692,979
1830.	"	340,254	"	1,079,500
1831.	"	261,536	"	704,950
1832.	"	207,880	"	569,130
1833.	"	264,838	"	510,039

The average amount of imports into Batavia from Japan for the above period, exceeds that of the exports for the same time by a little more than four hundred thousand guilders or florins, per annum. To this may be added the duty received by the Dutch government on the copper and camphor, when again exported, say 50,000 florins; and the six per cent. import duty on the private adventures of super-cargoes, say 50,000 florins, making the whole excess 500,000 florins. Some years the copper is coined, and perhaps, after deducting the mint charges, pays much better than it would, were it given to the trade.

The above statements are taken from the books of the customs, where the exports are set down at their highest value, and the imports at the invoice price.

This sketch will convey an idea of the importance of the commerce with Japan to the Dutch government; after deducting 200,000 florins for the expenses of agents, freight, &c. there is a net profit of 300,000 florins a year. The trade is conducted in a most expensive manner, and, with a strict regard to economy, might be made more profitable.\*

\* For the tables relating to the commerce of Java, the author has to express his acknowledgments to O. M. Roberts, Esq. American Consul at Batavia, and to Mr. F. V. B. Morris.



When we see a nation or a company of men consenting to be treated as menials, to hide their religious opinions, and subject themselves to the capricious and fantastical laws of a people they deem every way inferior to themselves, for the sake of gaining a hundred and thirty or forty thousand dollars a year, we must cease to regard them with that respect which is the right of every high-minded and honorable society; or feel ourselves ready to sink into competition, and, making equal or greater sacrifices, strive to obtain a share of the dear-bought profits. Whatever might be the advantages to the United States of a commerce with Japan or any other nation, let us hope that it will be established, only on the basis of reciprocity; "asking for nothing, which is not clearly right, nor submitting to any thing that is manifestly wrong." On any other footing, it were better to leave the pecuniary advantages to those slaves and base panders, whose moral condition may be so pliant as to allow them to succumb to any terms for money.



## SKETCHES IN SIAM.



SKETCHES IN SIAM.



## CHAPTER XXIII.

## VOYAGE TO, AND SKETCHES IN SIAM.

*March, 1836.*

THE uninterrupted rains and a heavy sea, breaking almost constantly over a sand bar at the mouth of the canal, detained us many days longer than we designed to have remained in the roads of Batavia. On several occasions the surf was so great, that even the light boats of the ship were not able to embark; and the lighters, loaded as they were very deeply with stores, were very much less trust-worthy. However, on the 16th of February we were ready for sea, and about five o'clock P. M. got under way; but the wind failing, we again anchored off the island of Onrust, the site of the naval arsenal of Batavia. The veil of clouds that had so constantly hidden the highland of Java, was drawn for a few minutes at sunset, and afforded us a view of the bold mountain scenes of the interior. It is picturesque, and would afford a fit subject for the pencil.

Though we had every reason to be gratified by the attentions we had received, we bade farewell to Batavia without regret, owing probably to that influence which circumstances are wont to exercise over our feelings. The kindness we every where met with on shore was not sufficient to counteract the depressing effects of sultry weather and almost constant rain, coupled with the difficulty of getting to and from the ship, under such circumstances. Under another state of things we might have viewed Batavia as a city of palaces, a paradise on earth, and considered the day of departure as a day of grief.

The following morning we again made sail and stood towards the entrance of the straits of Banka, between the island of that name and Sumatra. Owing to the head winds and currents our progress was slow, and the crew was subjected to hard labor, from the necessary frequency of anchoring and getting under way. The strait is



tortuous in its course, from three to seven miles wide, and about a hundred miles long: its shores are low, and thickly wooded to the water's edge, rendering it next to impossible to land.

"Just before sailing from Batavia, that terrible scourge of armies and of ships, dysentery, made its appearance on board, and before we cleared this strait, we buried two of the crew, William Lewis and Charles Fisher, the first deaths among us up to this period of the cruise.

The island of Banka is fertile, and some of its valleys are well cultivated, yielding fruits and rice; but it is chiefly esteemed for the great quantities of tin produced, the ore of which is supposed to constitute a great part of the island. The chief town, Mintow, is the head quarters of the Dutch, by whom it was wrested, many years ago, from the Sultan of Palambang.

Sumatra is an extensive island, and besides a variety of spices, produces pepper and coffee in very considerable quantities. On this island the Dutch possess three important places; Palambang, Padang and Bencoolen; the latter two are on the west coast.\* Our pepper-traders, however, generally resort to the native ports to the northward, Pulo-Raia, Telogulopang, Muckie, South Talapow, Trumond and Qualla-Battoo. The inhabitants are Malays, treacherous and warlike, and for many years their piratical prahüs and boats have been the terror of merchant vessels, not only in the straits of Banka and Malacca, but on the western coast of Sumatra and throughout the China Sea. Lately their depredations, owing to the activity of English and Dutch government cruisers, have been less frequent, but they are still sufficiently numerous to require the presence of a strong force to keep them in check.† The chastisement inflicted on the Malays at Qualla-Battoo, by Commodore Downes, in the United States Frigate Potomac, in 1832, was a serviceable lesson, which might teach them that murder and theft cannot be committed upon our citizens in any part of the world, so distant that the strong arm of our power cannot reach.‡ It is to be hoped that the occasional appearance of American vessels of war will deter them, for the future, from any act requiring punishment at our hands; though it would not be politic to trust, altogether, that their memory of the

\* For a description of these islands, see Marsden's History of Sumatra.

† White's Voyage to the China Sea. Boston, 1823. The Chinese Repository is replete with instances of the piratical depredations of the Malays.

‡ Voyage of the United States Frigate Potomac, by J. N. Reynolds.



past will be a guarantee for their good conduct in the future: to ensure it, they must be kept in awe. At present, they are in arms against the Dutch; and, from the small force opposed to the rebels, it would not be a matter of surprise if the Netherland tyrants were expelled from the island. The Dutch say, that these rebellions against their authority have been excited, in almost every instance, by the machinations of the English.

Leaving the north opening of the strait of Banka, we stretched eastward till we saw the west coast of Borneo, and then beat to the northward, some days making only ten or fifteen miles. The thermometer ranged at about  $82^{\circ}$  F.; but we had here most palpable evidence, that the thermometer is no criterion of our perception of temperature. The officers, in most instances, resorted to their cloth clothing; and at night, the seamen put on their pea-jackets. The air was chilly, even when the sun was shining clear. I have remarked again and again in different parts of the world, that, under the same thermometric range in the temperate and torrid zones, there is a difference in our sense of heat, of at least ten degrees. When the thermometer is at  $85^{\circ}$  F. within the tropics, at sea particularly, the sensation of heat is probably not greater than where it stands at  $75^{\circ}$  F. beyond the torrid belt. The hottest weather I have experienced in tropical climates, was at Muscat, when the thermometer ranged from  $89^{\circ}$  to  $92^{\circ}$ , yet, I think, I have suffered more from heat at Philadelphia, when it ranged from  $79^{\circ}$  to  $83^{\circ}$  F. Besides the constitution of the atmospheric fluid, its temperature and state of moisture, there is something more to be understood, probably its electrical condition, before we can explain what is termed climate; but we may not pause here to discuss the question.

The island of Borneo, after New Holland the largest in the world; it is to christian nations almost a terra incognita; the interior is unknown to all but the savage tribes that inhabit it. Some of the maritime parts are well known to the Dutch, who have establishments on the west coast, at Sambas and Pontiana: but in this, as well as in many other parts of the East, much of the information which they have collected, remains locked up in the archives of their government, and scarcely a ray of light, that it is in their power to conceal, is allowed to issue forth for the benefit of other Europeans, or of the poor degraded natives. Several English adventurers have made short journeys on land, or sailed up rivers; and a few individuals have resided several months or years on the coasts, to whom we are indebted for what information we possess.



The population is estimated at 3,500,000, and is made up of Malays, Chinese, Bugis, Javans, Dayaks, and a few Europeans. With the exception of the Dayaks, (the aboriginal inhabitants, said to be entirely destitute of religion,) who occupy the interior, all the other tribes named, inhabit the coasts. The Malays practise their piratical propensities; the Chinese and Bugis engage in commerce; the Javans are peaceful cultivators of the soil, while the savage Dayaks murder for pastime, and glory in cutting off human heads; he who has most of these bloody trophies, standing highest in the eyes of wife or paramour.

The products are camphor, pepper, sago, opium, wax, rattans; birds' nests, tortoise and pearl shells; gold, gold-dust, antimony and diamonds, which are exported to China and Singapore, by the East Indians, and to Europe, by the Dutch. The coast is famous for pirates, and the interior for Dayaks and ourang outangs; some of which, it is said, measure seven feet high. I suspect this to be a mistake, for I saw one from this island, at Batavia, whose stature did not exceed three and a half feet, and I believe the largest hitherto in European collections does not exceed four.

Numerous small islands are strewn along the west coast, which render the navigation somewhat intricate, and afford convenient hiding places for the Malay pirates: we visited one of these called West Island, and found three good streams of water.

"The occupations of the Dayaks are various. More of them are engaged in agricultural employments, chiefly in the cultivation of rice, than is generally supposed by those who know nothing of them, except what they have learned from geography and brief newspaper notices. Probably, more are employed in this, than any other occupation. And those who are employed, are generally inclined to be peaceful. In the Memoir of Sir S. Raffles, we find the following character given of them. 'The Dayaks are not only industrious in their habits, but particularly devoted to agriculture; and so manageable, that a handful of Malays have, in many instances, reduced many thousands to the condition of peaceful cultivators of the ground. Indeed nothing seems wanting to effect this on a great scale, but a strong government, which can afford protection to property, and safety to individuals; and in the case of the Dayaks, I regard it as an advantage, that they have not hitherto adopted the religion of Islam, and would consequently be more ready, from the first, to regard us as their friends and protectors.'

"Many of them are engaged in other useful avocations, such as col-



lecting camphor, birds' nests, rattans, beeswax, and other products of the forests, and also in mining for diamonds, searching for gold dust, and the manufacture of such articles as they use for clothing or ornament of their persons, or implements of husbandry, mining or war. But the occupation for which they are most notorious, is that of 'head-hunting.' Respecting the fact that the men must procure at least one head before they can marry, and that they preserve the heads and skulls of persons they have slain, as trophies and ornaments, there can be no reasonable doubt. It is asserted, so far as we can learn, by every one who has had any proper opportunity to know the truth respecting it. Mr. Dalton gives us the fullest account that we have seen of the manner in which they proceed to procure heads, and I will therefore transcribe the substance of it. Selji, the chief with whom he lived, had with him, on a head-hunting expedition, forty large canoes from eighty to one hundred feet in length. They are made of a kind of beech, which grows to an amazing height. They carry from forty to eighty men, and, as all use paddles, they move with almost incredible swiftness. In proceeding towards a distant village, the canoes are never seen on the river during the day. They commence their journey about half an hour after dark, and pull silently along near the bank of the river. One boat keeps directly behind another, and the handles of the paddles are covered with the soft bark of a tree, so that no noise is made. About half an hour before daylight, they pull the boat up upon the banks, and conceal themselves among the trees and jungle. Here they sleep and feed upon monkeys, snakes, wild hogs, and whatever animals they can obtain; and if animals cannot be procured, they live upon the young sprouts of certain trees, and wild fruit. 'Should the rajah want flesh, and it cannot be procured with the sumpit (native arrow,) one of his followers is killed.'

"Whilst part of them are hunting and cooking, others ascend the highest trees to examine the country and observe if any village or hut be near, which they know by the smoke. When the boats have arrived within about a mile from a village, they prepare themselves for the attack. About one-third of the party are sent forward to go through the jungle and take their stations near the village in the night. They place men in every path leading from the village, to intercept any of the people who may attempt to escape. The rest of the party come forward with their boats in such time as to arrive near the village about an hour before daylight. They then put on their fighting dresses and creep slowly forward, leaving, however, a few men in each boat,



and about a dozen with the women who remain in the jungle. About twenty minutes before day, they set fire to the village by throwing fire balls upon the atap roofs. The war cry is raised, and the work of murder commences. The male inhabitants are speared or cut down with the sword, as they descend the ladders from their dwellings to escape the flames. The women and children are generally seized by those who went forward to occupy the paths leading from the village. Should any of the villagers reach their boats, the plundering party have their boats so stationed as to make an escape impossible. This is an important object with them, as a single fugitive might give information to other villages and prevent their future success. After the women and children are collected, the old women are killed and the heads of the men cut off, and preserved carefully, they being the great objects of the expedition. 'From the last excursion,' says Mr. D——, in 1828, 'Selji's people brought with them seven hundred heads.' The value and dignity of a warrior are estimated by the number of heads he has procured.

"No Dayak can marry the daughter of a warrior without having previously taken a head or two. If a young man proposing to marry has not so many as are required by the father of the bride, he musters a few friends, takes a swift boat and leaves that part of the country, and will not return till the number is complete, which is frequently not till three or four months have elapsed. Some of the Dayaks are cannibals, though they are not, like the Battaks of Sumatra, generally so. They bury the arms of their warriors with their bodies, and also some articles of food. They lay them in a grave without a coffin, and set up some fresh heads over it. This description of the great peculiarity of the Dayaks applies more particularly to that part of them who are not civilized enough to become cultivators of the soil, and are raised some degrees above what Mr. Dalton calls the wild Dayaks. The passion for heads, or rather the custom of taking them, is, however, very general. When it is not followed on the large scale described above, heads are procured generally by way-laying some poor fishermen, who are beheaded without resistance. It is difficult to imagine how so peculiar and barbarous a custom could have originated, unless it were from love of military glory.

\* \* \* \* \*

"In personal appearance the Dayaks are much superior to the Malays. They are generally taller and better formed. They also



possess more strength and activity. In respect to these qualities, they seem to compare well with the Indian tribes of North America, whom they also resemble in some of their moral characteristics. Their character has been viewed by Europeans generally through the deceptive medium of a single trait, or rather a single custom. They have heard that the Dayaks are in the habit of cutting off heads, and that both men and women exult in the deed, and perhaps drink the blood that flows from them; and they conclude that they must be the most savage of all savages, in all their habits and in their whole character. But in thus judging, they do these poor brethren of our one great family much injustice. It is indeed true that they have this custom, and that perhaps nearly all the men have been guilty of murder; but they ought not to be regarded like most murderers in other countries. They seek for heads, as we would seek wealth or office; and they constitute their wealth and honor. The Dayak head-hunter cherishes no enmity towards the persons he kills, either private or national. They are probably less worthy of censure, and in the day of final retribution will probably be less severely punished, than many an individual in more enlightened countries who does a wrong merely because it is customary to do it.\*

After getting to the northward of the Natunas islands, the wind hauled to the northward and eastward, and we stretched into the gulf of Siam. The sea was smooth and the breeze gentle, and though the range of the thermometer was but little altered, our sensation of heat was much augmented.

In our passage up the gulf we fell in with several small floating islands of more than twenty feet in extent, covered with palm branches and drifting about on the current. Numerous fish were playing about their margins, and aquatic birds were circling round, and occasionally alighting on them. The gulf is the resort of a great number of sea snakes of several varieties; no one of those we took exceeded two feet in length. Some were brown and others mottled with yellow. Several were caught in bags of bunting, fitted on small hoops. By this means we took a number of specimens of *Janthina*, upon which we found several young shells and diminutive cuttle fish, not more than four lines long.

Early on the 25th of March, we found ourselves within a few hours' sail of the mouth of the river Meinam; and in order to save time, the *Enterprise* was despatched with the following communication.

\* The Chinese Repository. vol. iv. 1835—6.



"To His Excellency the Chao P'haya Prah Klang, one of the first ministers of state to His Magnificent Majesty the King of Siam:

"Edmund Roberts, Special Envoy from the United States of America, has the honor to inform your Excellency, that he has arrived off the bar of the Meinam, in the United States Ship Peacock, commanded by Captain Stribling, accompanied by the United States Schooner Enterprise, Captain Campbell, the squadron being under the command of Commodore Kennedy.

"The Envoy begs leave to state, that he has brought back the treaty, which he had the honor to conclude between His Majesty of Siam and the United States of America, on the 20th day of March, in the year 1833, and which was ratified on the part of his government, on the 30th day of June, 1834, and which is now returned for the purpose of exchanging it for its counterpart in the possession of Siam, on its being duly ratified by His Majesty, and the royal seal of the kingdom affixed to the articles of the treaty, as well as to the necessary certificate of ratification.

"The Envoy has also the honor to inform your Excellency that he has brought with him the articles, His Majesty of Siam, and your Excellency requested should be sent, by the United States Government, with the exception of the stone statues, which could not be obtained, and also the trees and plants and seeds, which were destroyed on the passage, the Peacock having been unfortunately wrecked about six months since on the coast of Arabia; but the deficiency in the statues has been repaired by purchasing an extra number of the most elegant and expensive lamps, together with some other articles.

"Your Excellency is therefore requested to send a suitable vessel to receive the presents before alluded to, with an order directed to me for their delivery. Your Excellency is further requested to furnish the Envoy with convenient and proper vessels, capable of protecting from the inclemencies of the weather, himself, and officers, and servants, who may accompany him, to the number of twenty-five persons, with as little delay as possible, as the Envoy has to visit many kingdoms, and has a great many thousands of miles of ocean to traverse; to accomplish which, will necessarily occupy at least twelve months.

"The undersigned has the honor to remain, with the highest consideration of esteem and respect, your Excellency's friend, &c. &c.

EDMUND ROBERTS.

"Dated on board the United States Ship of war Peacock, in the gulf of Siam, the 24th day of March, 1836."



The expression, your humble servant, &c. commonly used with us, should always be carefully avoided in addressing communications to Asiatics, because they construe it literally, and, in their opinion, it places the writer in an inferior and inconsiderable position in regard to themselves.

Soon after the *Enterprise* separated from us, we anchored off the largest of a group of small islands called Si-chang or Dutch islands, situated about twenty miles from the mouth of the Meinam river, and eight from the west coast of Cambodia. The island is not five miles in extent; it is high, rocky, and covered with a thin soil and stunted vegetation.

In the afternoon, several parties of officers landed and walked in different directions, to ascertain whether water could be obtained for the ship; but, though it is said to be plenty in the rainy monsoon, we found it to exist in very small quantities at this season. Several white squirrels, a common blue pigeon, and an animal having the general characteristics of a bat, but very much larger, were shot. The flying-fox, as it is called (a species of *pteropus*) is very frequent throughout India. The head resembles that of a dog; the body is about eight inches long, and the spread wings measure nearly four feet. The irides are of an opaque yellow. They are often met with in the day, suspended from leafless trees, hanging one from the other, in strings and clusters. They make great depredations on fruit trees and gardens, but are considered to be harmless in other respects.

In my excursion, I came upon a small religious temple, erected near the shore, probably by fishermen, to propitiate their patron god. It consisted of a wooden hut, raised on posts two feet above the ground, having three sides closed, and the fourth open to the sea. This apartment was about four feet by six, and the height of the thatched roof, perhaps ten. On the back wall were stuck pieces of red paper, marked with black Siamese letters; in each corner leaned a wooden sword and the beak of a saw-fish. In the middle of the floor, standing on a fold of tinsel paper, was a green porcelain bowl, full of earth, planted with dead straws. On either side were some pieces of coral, upon which reposed small boards inscribed with Siamese characters, and the figures of an elephant and a horse, such as we usually see among German toys.

After nightfall we were visited by a Talapoin, or priest, who seemed to be the head-man among the very few people on the island. He entered the cabin in a half bent posture, in token of respect, but very soon assumed an erect position. A robe of dirty yellow cloth



hung from his shoulders to the knees; his head and eyebrows were closely shaven, and his arms and legs were bare. He seated himself, and drew from his girdle a small tin box, from which he filled his mouth with arecanut, betel leaf and chunam; and, thus fortified, he talked, chewed and gesticulated; but his speech, though it might have been very fine for aught we knew, was to us a rigmarole. In return for it, we offered him bread, tobacco, snuff and gin; the last he carried to his people; but instead of putting the snuff in his nose, he wrapped it in a piece of paper, and made us understand, if the quantity were increased, the present would be more acceptable. He appeared unwilling to touch a tumbler with his lips, and in place of it, drank out of the top of his own tobacco-box. He carried with him a sheet of slate paper, twenty feet long, by fifteen inches broad, folded alternately right and left, so that its dimensions were about two inches thick, four broad and fifteen long. After making him comprehend, by the aid of a short vocabulary, arranged by Mr. Roberts on his former visit, who we were, and writing with his pencil of talc upon his book, the name of the ship, and whither we were bound, he took leave, seemingly well satisfied with what he had done.

Early the following morning, we went in pursuit of white squirrels; under the protection of the religious prejudices of the inhabitants against taking away animal life, there is nothing to interrupt their increase, and we found them in considerable numbers. Two or three men of Mongol physiognomy attached themselves to our train, and were ever ready to point out the game. With the exception of a sarong about the hips, they were naked, and viewed our clothes and fowling-pieces with apparent wonder and astonishment; and were not content until they had felt of every article of our dress, even to our shoes. They all chewed arecanut and its concomitants; their teeth were consequently black, and their mouths were any thing but agreeable to look upon. It is probably owing to this disgusting habit, that the areca-chewing nations of the East, have never acquired the custom of kissing!

On our return to the boat, we found the inhabitants of the village eating breakfast, consisting of boiled rice and fish, of which they very politely invited us to join, but our prejudices against filthy appearances compelled us to decline. They were squatted round a large dish, from which they supplied their bowls, and then shovelled the mouth full of rice with chop sticks. The village consists of a half dozen huts of bamboo and boards, raised on posts a foot or two from the ground. They were cheerless, and far from clean. The women,



in general, wore only a sarong; some few added a piece of black crape folded diagonally over the chest, so as to partially conceal the bosom, and young girls wandered about in nature's suit, as unsophisticated and shameless as Eve before her fall.

At three o'clock, P. M. the ship was got under way, but very soon ran upon a rock in the mid-channel, where she remained two hours, until the rising of the tide carried her off without damage. On sounding round, it was found that the rock was not more than one hundred feet in extent, beyond which there was four and five fathoms water. A few hours brought us to the Roads of Siam, where we anchored about eight o'clock, P. M. and exchanged signals with the *Enterprise*.

The next day we looked for land, but without a spy-glass, could see none. The anchorage for ships, drawing more than twelve feet water, is ten miles from the mouth of the Meinam, which is deep enough as far as the city; but there is a bar eight miles from its entrance which interrupts large vessels, and may be a serious obstacle to foreign trade.

We were obliged to wait, patiently as we might, a reply to Mr. Roberts' communication, to the authorities given above, before we could proceed to Bangkok. When it was carried from the *Enterprise* to Paknam, two miles up the river, the old governor was unwilling to forward it to the P'hra Klang, until there had been a deal of talk and interpretation.



## CHAPTER XXIV.

## SKETCHES IN SIAM.

*April, 1836.*

ON the 28th of March, the ship was visited by Prince Momfanoi, heir apparent to the throne of Siam. The boat he came in was not distinguishable from those of the common people; it had a semicylindrical roof of wattled bamboo over the stern, under which he reposed, sheltered from the sun, but suffering from the want of ventilation, though both ends of the oven were open. Unaccustomed to go afloat, he was threatened with sea sickness after being a short time on board, and therefore, departed early for the shore.

The Prince was dressed in a jacket of pink damasked crape, closely fitting the body, and reaching from the hips to the throat; a sarong of dark silk, knotted in front, the ends hanging down nearly to the ground, and over it was tied a light sash, upon which two jewelled rings of large size were strung. This costume left the head, arms and legs bare. He has an active, determined look. His stature is not more than five feet five inches; his limbs are stout and well proportioned. His complexion is olive, almost as dark as that of the majority of negroes met with in the northern and middle sections of the United States. His hair is coarse and black, and, excepting a tuft trimmed and standing up like bristles on the top of the head, is cut very close. The general character of his features is that of the Mongol race. The form of the eye is paraboloid, the upper lid extending in a thin fold over the lower one at the side of the nose, which is rather flat; the lips are full, the chin retreating, and with the exception of a few hairs on the upper lip, he has no beard. The superior lateral parts of the forehead are a little flattened, while the upper and middle part



is prominent; the supra-orbital region is full, and the eyes set well apart. Such is the personal description, which I have so minutely given, of the most promising individual among the Siamese

While on board, he displayed considerable knowledge and was very inquisitive about nautical affairs. He made favourable mention of the American missionaries, by whom he was taught English, which he speaks very intelligibly. He was quite at home on board, and when his attention was attracted to any particular part of the ship, he stood with his arms a-kimbo and feet wide apart, with a swaggering air, more characteristic of an old time admiral than a distinguished prince of a royal court.

His several attendants, with the exception of the sarong, were naked; and one named Sap, was distinguished by his master often pointing out to him what appeared worthy of notice. He bore a small gilt salver with a goblet-shaped foot, on which were a gold watch, still in the leathern pouch of the maker, a chunam box; a number of very acute cone-shaped cigars of Siamese cut tobacco rolled in dry plantain leaf; a lighted match of cocoanut rope in a tube like a Peruvian mechéro, with rolls of cire leaf, &c. Another carried an enamelled tea-pot and a small porcelain tea-cup. Whenever the Prince passed any of them in his walks about the decks, they at once squatted down; and whenever he took any thing from the salver, the bearer dropped upon his knees.

On the 30th of March, I determined to go to Bangkok in spite of all formalities, and with a friend set off. We got the bearings of the mouth of the Meinam, and following the compass course, bounded merrily over the sea till we entered the river. On the bar there are a number of stakes driven into the bottom, and their ends above the surface mark the channel or fishing grounds, or something else; the stakes were covered with muscles, having clear, apple-green colored shells. The land is low and thickly wooded to the water's edge. On the muddy margin, exposed by the receding tide, we saw a number of white herons and a crocodile, at least ten feet long.

When fairly within the river, a pretty view presents itself. On the left, all is thickly green, on the right, is the village of Paknam with its white fortress, and in the centre is a circular fort with numerous embrasures, over the top of which is seen the tapering spire of a pagoda—a solid mass of masonry without interior apartment. At this point the river is about a mile wide.

We had determined, should we not be hailed, to proceed up the river without stopping; and with his view, steered midway between



the fort in the river and that at Paknam. We were not literally hailed, but were gesticulated at, by an individual near the fort on the main, with so much earnestness that it prevailed over our resolution, and we landed. A path through thickly growing shrubs, ten yards long, brought us to a substantial store-house with a veranda, beneath which several naked Siamese were stretched on the ground, chewing betel, and watching a smouldering fire which had served to prepare their suppers, the evidence of which might be gathered from several earthen pans in the vicinity. Here we were met by one who appeared to be a leader. He nodded his head, pointed towards the village, which was not visible, and, leading the way, we followed. A few yards brought us to a canal over which we passed on a bank of stones, the vilest and roughest bridge I have any where seen. Fortunately we soon trod on a narrow *trottoir*, paved with large bricks, leading between rows of bamboo huts, shaded by trees: some of them were shops having projecting windows, in which were displayed fruit, eggs, &c. We had scarcely got thus far before we were saluted by a host of lank curs that barked more in fear than threatening. A few yards brought us to the bazaar. The venders were all women. They were seated among their wares on bamboo platforms about two feet from the ground, shaded by the projecting roofs of the huts before which the stalls were built. They wore only a dark blue cotton cloth, so disposed about the limbs and hips as to resemble a pair of drawers, and some wore, in addition, a piece of black crape over the shoulders. Their hair was cut close, except a bristling tuft on top of the head, and all were chewing areca nut, and betel or cire leaf. Here, for the first time in the East, we saw cowries circulating as money; but their value is so extremely small, (about 15,000 to the dollar,) that bushels of them were seen in many of the stalls, yet there are articles to be purchased for a single one, as arecanut, betel leaf, &c. So minute a division of money must be very advantageous to the poor, in a country where produce is plenty and labor very low.

We soon reached the dwelling of his Excellency the Governor. His mansion, we found on following our guide through a door-way into a considerable enclosure, stood on posts about seven feet from the ground; the walls were of bamboo, pierced with irregular-shaped octangular holes; windows they were not, having neither sash nor shutter. The thatched roof projected at the eaves about five feet, and was supported all round by stout posts, thus forming a sort of veranda. The entrance was by a ladder of five or six steps, which



landed in a vestibule or open court, the left side being bounded by the family apartments, and the right by a hall, thirty by fifteen feet, the floor of which was elevated two feet above that of the court. The ceiling of the hall was flat, dark-colored, twenty feet high, and next to the court, where there was neither partition nor wall, supported by two wooden pillars. This apartment was furnished with chairs and bamboo settees, of Chinese manufacture. In one corner stood a curiously carved temple of the *Penates*, resembling an old-fashioned bedstead, a use to which, as we afterwards discovered, it was occasionally put. Lamps hung from the ceiling, and many Chinese mirrors with silvered frames were suspended close to the cornice; and in the centre was a chandelier, which consisted of a tarnished brass hoop wrought in an odd style, having several tumblers of oil and water in brass rings, suspended by chains from its margin, and a goblet sustained after the same fashion in the middle.

When we came into the presence, His Excellency was only girdled with a scanty silk sarong, reclining on the hall floor, his back reposing on a leathern pillow of prismatic shape, which touched the base of one of the pillars above mentioned. He rested on the right elbow, and with the hand of the same side, supported a long wooden pipe, from which he inhaled the fumes of opium. The right leg was extended, parallel with the terminating edge of the floor, while the left one was drawn up to enable him to scratch the toes with his unoccupied hand.

The floor of the vestibule was crowded by slaves or people of inferior rank—hence their inferior place—resting on their knees and elbows, the body retreating a little, chewing betel as quietly as cows do the cud, and looking up into his Excellency's face, as they listened to his conversation, the intonation of which in our ears was maudlin and unpleasant.

All this was revealed to us at a glance. As we entered, His Excellency rose, and taking us by the hand with a hearty grasp, fairly raised us upon the floor, where he had been just reclining, and motioned us to a seat. Cigars and tea, in very small cups without sugar, were immediately served; and in a few moments afterwards an interpreter arrived, whose office we might not have suspected, had he not contrived to make us understand that such was his vocation. He assumed the attitude of other inferiors present, and before speaking, made a salam in the Siamese fashion, by opposing the palms and carrying the hands to the forehead, and again letting them fall. His name was Ramòn, a Portuguese christian, whose skin was nearly as



dark as that of the governor; his costume differed in nothing from that of the Siamese who were present.

We informed His Excellency, we were on our way to Bangkok, to procure water and provisions for the ship, which we had in vain endeavoured to obtain at Paknam. He replied, that we could not go—that his authority did not extend so far as to enable him to give us permission; and if we had gone up, his head would have been forfeited—that he would send for the water and provisions.

Such was the substance of our conversation. We next visited Piadadè, the Captain of the port, who is also a Portuguese born in Siam. We found him in a mean bomboo hut, chewing arecanut. He told us, he had just arrived from the city with a letter for Mr. Roberts. He affected much surprise when informed that we proposed to go to Bangkok.

“Very sorry—but no can go!”

“Who will prevent us?”

“Nobody prevent you—suppose you go, I tell you certain, you break friendship—you get me flog, and that poor old governor get his head cut off.”

He offered to accompany us back to the governor's, and there discuss the matter farther. On our return, a large brass salver, with a goblet-shaped foot, was brought, loaded with boiled duck-eggs, fish, sugar-cane and plantains. This was placed on a chair, and on another beside it, a brass basin of water with a small cup of the same metal, floating on its surface. Some of his visiters, from the *Enterprise*, had presented His Excellency with a bottle of gin, which was also produced on the occasion. We were invited to eat, but did not taste any thing except a plantain.

We now urged the necessity of proceeding to the city, but were answered as before. The Captain of the port sat upon the floor, wearing the sarong and a piece of black crape over the shoulders. He repeated what would be the consequences to the governor and himself, if we persisted in going to Bangkok. He was evidently anxious, and proposed to despatch a letter to Mr. R. Hunter, who, he said, would send us whatever we might require. He urged, that the king was now well disposed towards us, and our going to the city at this time, would “break friendship.” We remarked, that it was any thing but friendly to keep us so long from the city, without water or stock; for want of which, we must be in a short time suffering. He replied, that different nations had different customs—“In the presence of your king, that you call President, you stand up and



pull off your hat; in the presence of the king of Siam, you sit down and pull off your shoes. I am your friend. Mr. Roberts can tell you. Your laws are different from those of Siam, all the same as between heaven and —" looking significantly, and at the same time pointing downwards. I thought the comparison was just, and I suspect might be extended to the inhabitants of the two places, without any great departure from justice!

Finding that we still persisted in going to the city, he proposed that the governor should write to the P'hra Klang for permission for us to proceed. To this we at last acceded, telling him at the same time, that we did so solely in consideration of the governor's head and both of their skins. Both were evidently much relieved. Our baggage was brought up from the boat and my companion wrote to Mr. Hunter.

In the mean time, I looked around the premises. Twenty yards from the house were several huts, occupied by some of the governor's slaves. Several women were walking about, and one was "hulling paddy" in a mill, similar to those used four thousand years ago. It consisted of two circular stones, two feet in diameter, resting one on the other; a bamboo basket was wrought around the upper one so as to form the hopper. A peg was firmly set into the face of the upper stone, half-way between its periphery and centre, having tied to it by one end, a stick three feet long, extended horizontally and attached by the other to another stick pending from the roof of the shed under which the mill was placed. This forms a crank by which the upper stone is made to revolve on the other, set firmly on the ground. The motion throws the rice through the centre of the stone, and causes it to escape between the edges of the two.

Beneath the governor's mansion were several canoes, one not less than forty feet long, dug out of a single tree. Among the riches of Siam, its quantities of fine timber cannot be reckoned the least.

Soon as it was dark all the lamps were lighted. His Excellency still occupied his place, smoking pipe or cigars and chewing areca-nut, which was reduced to powder in an iron tube, because, having lost all his teeth, he is unable to masticate it in any other form. His mouth is very large, and when he gapes, which he does very frequently, one almost fancies that he is about to lose his head. He passes his time in sipping tea, chewing and spitting in a porcelain spittoon, kept constantly beside him. He inquired our respective ages, and wondered that we were so young; telling us, at the same time, he was sixty-four years old.



Several of his female grand children came in, the eldest twelve years of age; and in feminine existence, years are longer in the torrid than in the temperate zone. They were all in mother Eve's costume after she ate the apple, except that their fig-leaf was of gold, wrought in filligree, and sustained by a rich chain of the same metal, worn about the hips. The eldest asked for a cigar, which she smoked like one who is a veteran in the vice. I afterwards saw much younger children smoking, and I have good authority for stating that infants not yet weaned smoke tobacco.

We sat on the floor smoking and sipping tea for an hour or two with Piadadè, whom we found to be a mild good-hearted old man. The famous Siamese Twins were a theme of conversation. They have been probably of as much service as any pair of patriots in their country, first, by generally calling the attention of the christian world towards it, secondly, by affording Mr. Bulwer a subject for his pen, and last, by causing some of the Siamese interested in them, to hear of countries of the existence of which they were ignorant before the brothers set out on their travels. "Where are the twins?" was asked of every one who visited the shore. Piadadè shook his head: "Their poor mother cry plenty about those boys. They say, they make plenty money—no send never any to their poor mother." In fact, they have in Siam the character of being dissipated and unfilial. Nevertheless, they still attract attention.

"———Our Twins were saved to flow  
Thro' Time's far stream in rhyme and glory,  
And inch by inch together grow,  
The heroes of an English story."

Strictly speaking, they are not Siamese, though born in Siam: their parents, as I was told, are Chinese.

Straw mats were spread in the middle of the floor, and upon them two mattresses, much patched with velvet. In the mean time the governor had dictated a despatch which was written on a slate book (formerly described) by a secretary squatting on the floor of the vestibule. This state affair concluded, His Excellency retired, and we stretched ourselves out in the middle of the room, and half a dozen slaves of the governor's household occupied the settees. We soon found that sleep was out of the question. The lamps were all burning; the servants were talking, and ever and anon walking across the floor, which, being of slips of bamboo, sprang to their steps like a



spring board, communicating no very pleasant motion to our beds. The novelty of our circumstances, suspicious of the cleanliness of our couches, the doubtful honesty of our room-mates were sufficient in themselves to keep us awake; but added to these annoyances were noises of various kinds. The numerous lank curs, we had seen stealing about in the afternoon, found a bone of contention, and sought to settle their quarrel under the house. The angry growls of the victors and the yelping of those put to flight had scarcely died away, before a party of melancholy ge-kôs assembled on the roof and set up a lugubrious song in a stacatto movement. Then some poetic youth of Paknam serenaded us for an hour, by the light of the stars, with a screeching hautboy, occasionally relieved by the wooings and mewings of a half dozen crack-voiced feline Romeos and Juliets, immediately beneath our beds. We bore it for a long time, but at last were forced to laugh outright and get up in self-defence. We sat down near a window, and, at the same time, enjoyed the pleasant air and a cigar. It was long past midnight, yet two or three women were seen at different times, stealing across the enclosure with torches in their hands, and one came out of his Excellency's room and retired with noiseless step. Fairly wearied, we tried "once more to win her into morning;" but we scarcely attained to dreamy forgetfulness before a great ge-kô pursued several lizards in full run over the floor. The attempt was vain. Rather than risk passing such another night, at four o'clock, A. M., I took leave of my companion, and returned with the officer of the boat on board ship, convinced that Paknam is the vilest, the dirtiest, the most inhospitable and detestable spot I have ever set foot in.

That afternoon permission was received, and my companion ascended to the city in a canoe; and the day after his arrival, the king, according to the usage of the Siamese, sent him a present of eight ticals to defray the expense of his table.

I reached the ship about one o'clock, P. M., after a tedious beat under a burning sun, and the next day, Piadadè, who set off before us, came alongside with some articles which had been sent for, several days previously.

Yet on farther reflection, I think I did the governor injustice; for he treated us as he treated himself, and imagined when he gave us tea, cigars, food, and a bed, that it was our own fault if we were not comfortable and contented. But I doubt whether he was philosopher enough to discover that a total want of accordance of habit and sympathy of feeling rendered his simple efforts to please unavailing.



## CHAPTER XXV.

## SKETCHES IN SIAM.

*April, 1836.*

WE waited for the boats to carry the mission to the city, until the 5th of April, not in the most patient mood; for we were almost reduced to salt dinners, and had a near prospect of a short allowance of water, under sultry skies. Seeing an American brig, which we had passed in the strait of Banka, arrive four or five days after us, (having spent two weeks at Singapore in the mean time,) and obtain permission to proceed at once to the city, was not calculated to sooth our impatience, nor change the unfavourable opinion we had already formed of Siamese etiquette. Piadadè insisted that it would ill assort with our dignity, and the friendship existing between the two nations, for us, whom he styled "king's men in king's ship," to go to Bangkok in a hurry, before measures had been taken to receive us properly. The longer the delay the more should we feel complimented, because, we might be sure, the time was consumed in preparing for our reception. However unanswerable and honey-like this argument might be to full fed, ambitious christians, most of us were ready to sell out his right to Siamese consideration for a roasted capon or a speedy departure for Bangkok.

In these waiting days we had no other diversion than to watch the mouth of the Meinam, and speculate on the destination of all boats which appeared from that quarter. Occasionally a clumsy Chinese junk was seen to come out or enter the river, with all the deliberate speed their mould and the elements would permit.

At last the junk, or boat of ceremony, bearing a present of fruit and some hundreds of gallons of water, hove in sight. This vessel had three masts, and ten staves with red banners waving over the stern. The bows and stern were square, and there were two brass



pieces mounted at each, from which, before getting alongside, a salute of thirteen guns was fired in honor of the envoy. In the middle of the vessel was a platform, raised several inches above the deck, furnished with chairs, and protected from the sun by a canvass awning. The rigging was of cordage, made entirely of rattan, and as pliant as any rope I have seen. The shrouds had no rattlings. From not wearing shoes habitually, the Arabs, the Hindoos, Singhalese, Malays, Siamese, and other Asiatics, have the great toe separated farther from that next to it than seems natural to us boot-and-shoe-wearing people. The great toe serves them in prehension almost as well as the thumb; and, for this reason, their sailors are able to mount aloft with as much rapidity and ease without as ours do with rattlings. I first observed this at Muscat, in one of the Sultan's ships of war.

The approach of this piece of nautical architecture was showy. Her crew, consisting of two-and-thirty soldiers and as many sailors, the latter blazing in scarlet uniforms and the former in green. The sailors looked more like mutes at a theatre than sons of river or ocean. Their jackets, which had bell-muzzle sleeves reaching to the elbow, were turned up with white, and buttoned from the hips to the throat, and their breeches were embroidered at the knee. Their caps of green cloth were fashioned like helmets, and trimmed with gilt stripes; a band of red cloth, the top edge cut in points, surrounded the head. The legs and feet were bare. The officers in command of this gaudy crew were not less oddly equipped. We were impressed with the notion that old Albuquerque and his followers had risen from their graves, and were now stalking upon earth as they were wont to do some three hundred years ago, and we could not help remarking that there had been a great change of color, and seemingly, if not really, a wonderful declension in courage. These worthy gentlemen could boast a Portuguese ancestry, and claim nativity in Siam. As other descendants of the Portuguese in every part of India, while their bones have changed little in form, the color of the skin has become so like that of the natives of the countries in which they are found, that they are not readily distinguished. Their stature is much diminished, but these changes are not altogether attributable to climate. It is remarkable that these Lusitan-Asiatics are so degraded, they are employed almost entirely as menials, or in very subordinate situations. We would not have expected, *à priori*, that the descendants of the conquerors would have



so fallen; their blood has lost its richness, and they only preserve the bony configuration and religion of their fathers.

The chief of the three officers, toothless and sixty, appeared over the gangway, 'the observed of all observers,' under a green three-cornered cocked hat, a black satin coat, *chargé* with gold embroidery and white pearl buttons, full pantaloons of red striped silk, sustained by a sash round the waist, but without shirt, vest, or shoes. The second wore a round hat of white felt, a light blue velvet coat, embroidered in gold, red silk pantaloons, shoes, stockings, and shirt. The third was in similar attire, except that he had a white satin vest, and, though he could show no shirt, his neck was buried in a black stock of large dimensions. On reaching the quarter-deck, they bowed awkwardly, and spoke almost unintelligibly in a language intended to be Portuguese. Where did they get all this costume? It was suggested they bought it from the Bowery theatre after they had ceased to represent the spectacle of the "Last Days of Pompeii."

These people were full of curiosity, and begged what they could. One of the soldiers addressed me in very intelligible Latin—"Inquis Latinum, Domine?" I learned from him that the whole corps on board the king's junk were christians, and had been educated by the Portuguese missionaries. He said all of them might have spoken Latin, had they been studious—their ignorance, as is generally the case, was their own fault, and I suspect it is not their only one. All the hundred jaws were employed masticating arecanut, betel, and tobacco.

The sun had set when we all embarked, or rather transhipped ourselves and baggage to the junk of ceremony. Her sails were hoisted slowly, and we were, at last, creeping towards the shore. The salute fired by the junk was now returned by the ship, and we went off full of spirits and agreeable excitement. We numbered twenty officers, several servants, and the band, and found ourselves packed pretty closely together. We had scarcely got off from the ship when our officers of Albuquerque memory doffed their finery and appeared in white jackets. The night was dark. A paper lantern was suspended among us, and two or three torches dappled the company with their flickering light, imparting to the picture something of the imaginary, or romantic. The wind being against us, it was nine o'clock when we got near Paknam, and then we encountered the ebb tide. The junk was brought to anchor, and though it rained, the officer in command opposed our landing, insisting that it would



be contrary to etiquette, and would, besides, endanger him to experience the application of the bamboo. Nevertheless, the commodore set his objections at defiance, and, taking two of us in his gig, pulled on shore. We had scarcely crossed the rough bank of stones, lighted by several torches, before the rain fell in torrents, and we sought shelter until it abated.

We found his Excellency prepared to receive us. A loose robe enveloped his whole person, bearing no slight resemblance to the costume represented in biblical pictures, and his apartment was furnished and dusted into a more respectable appearance than it had worn on our last visit. He received us cordially, and regretted that the whole party was not with us. In about a half hour the others arrived, in company with Mr. Roberts. In the mean time the governor had changed his dress to a heavy purple silk sarong, and a dirty orange-colored cashmere shawl; and his badges of office were placed on a table, consisting of a small salver, cups for holding arecanut, tobacco, &c., a small box containing a paste for cleansing the mouth, a sort of quiver for cigars, a bowl-shaped spittoon, all of fine gold, and a silver tea-kettle, beautifully enamelled, together with a gold-hilted sword, in a red velvet scabbard. He gave Mr. Roberts a hearty welcome, and then sat himself in the old-fashioned temple before mentioned, and began smoking his long pipe; mean while a long table was spread for supper, or, as they said, for a feast. It proved to be mean in the extreme. The cloth was of coarse muslin, the plates were of different sorts and sizes, and the glass of the commonest kind. The knives, forks, and spoons were all of iron, and few in number for our party. The materials of the feast were boiled chickens, rice, duck-eggs, and roasted pork, all cold. On sitting down to eat of this sumptuous fare, (of which Siamese etiquette requires all distinguished strangers to partake, before visiting the capital,) we found the table almost as high as the chin, and it required a keen appetite to sustain our wish to comply with the custom. Some were compelled to cut their meat with spoons, and others with their pocket knives. We had scarcely taken our places, before the hall was crowded with naked Siamese, to gratify their curiosity with a sight of us. We compared our situation to that of beasts in a menagerie, and one suggested that "His Excellency ought to charge more when the animals were fed."

Immediately after the feast was cleared away, the governor demanded a list of the presents intended for his Magnificent Majesty, but it was refused. The names of all the officers in the party were



then recorded on a slate-book by a secretary, to be forwarded to the city by an *avant courrier*.

The Commodore and Mr. Roberts, by way of distinction, were lodged in the temples of the *Penates*, and the rest of us sought accommodation on the settees and on the floor, as we best could. The night passed more quietly than on my former visit, though the serenade of dogs, cats, and ge-kôs was not wanting.

We arose at early dawn the following day, and, as there were neither towels nor napkins provided, the morning ablutions were finished by a general application to the table cloth. A breakfast, composed chiefly of the remains of the last night's feast, was quickly despatched, and we marched to the place of embarkation. I observed, when passing through the bazaar, that the sailors and soldiers of the boats of ceremony unhesitatingly helped themselves to fruit and cigars, without offering remuneration or meeting with resistance. On reaching the river bank, we found a native band playing, and a crowd of people assembled to see us embark. Three long, narrow canoes, each pulling forty oars, and decorated with red banners, tufts of white hair, and peacocks' feathers, conveyed us to the junk of ceremony, which we thought to be very much more comfortable than even the governor's residence itself. After we were on board, the canoes were arranged ahead, in a line abreast, and, as it was perfectly calm, began towing us up the river. The oarsmen, all in red uniforms, stand behind their oars, and perform by pushing, and keep stroke, stamping the right foot in time and in unison with a leader who stood in the bows, striking together two pieces of hard wood. The rowers were all slaves; they occasionally encouraged each other by a sort of chant, or song. Thus led, the procession moved up the river, the banks of which are low and green, cheered from time to time with the efforts of our own band. Presently, the breeze ruffled the glassy surface of the stream, and, with fluttering pennons and gay costume, the whole formed a picturesque view every way worthy a pencil.

Along the whole course of the Meinam, on both sides, at short intervals, are built, on posts, the huts of fishermen, almost concealed in the luxuriant shrubbery. Near them, were suspended in the branches, paper cages and quaint figures, to keep off ghosts and evil spirits. Toy wind-mills were rattling away in the gentle breeze, placed on a tall bamboo before every door. We saw very few birds.

The course of the Meinam, literally the Mother of Waters, is very serpentine; it has an average depth of four or five fathoms, and is free



from shoals. Its breadth is not half a mile. The tide, which rises and falls, perhaps seven feet, is not regular, ebbing and flooding but once in the twenty-four hours.

Towards midday, our Albuquerque friends found their European finery too oppressive, and, as a sort of commentary on the title of "boat of ceremony," stripped to the skin before our eyes, and substituted for all their gaudy attire a simple sarong. Half way up the river, we passed Paklat or 'Cidade Nova,' where there is a large fortress, on both sides of the river, which being brilliantly white, contrasts finely with the green shrubbery. Here boats came off loaded with fruits, as a present, for which our band paid in one of its best airs.

About nine o'clock, P. M., we fancied we were at our journey's end. The day had been tedious and sultry, and we were glad to escape from our narrow accommodations. But we discovered to our great annoyance, that the anchor had been let go through the timidity and stupidity of our commander-in-chief. He urged that it was dark, the tide against us, many junks in the river, and we had better remain on board all night than run any risks; besides, if an accident should occur, His Magnificent Majesty would first apply the bamboo and then cut off his head. Finding ourselves only a mile from the anchorage, we scolded and threatened and delivered some pretty round Portuguese anathemata, which moved the worthy's compassion, who felt somewhat relieved of his responsibility by the arrival of Piadadè, and got the anchor up again. The distance was soon passed, and after sundry Siamese, Portuguese, and English objurgations, we were transported bag and baggage to the shore. We were received on a slip by another Albuquerque kind of cavalier, in an embroidered cocked hat and coat, (who afterwards proved to be a General,) and his son, a child of ten years old, in red, trimmed with gold lace. Numerous torches were blazing along the street, which led to the quarters, provided for us, at the cost of the king, and where we were pleased to enter. The dwelling of the mission, was a pretty extensive store-house or go-down of two shallow stories. The second one, which we occupied, was divided into four rooms, and opened upon a broad veranda, accessible from a narrow enclosure in front, by a rude ladder or wooden steps.

Piadadè had kindly anticipated our wants, and supper was ready to bring upon the table. Bedsteads and beds, furnished with a half dozen different sized and shaped pillows, were provided in ample numbers. They were all new, and sheltered by musquito curtains,



for which there was luckily no necessity, and some of them were ornamented by deep borders of satin, embroidered in floss silk. One of the bed rooms served as a dining hall, and the veranda as a drawing room. Being shut in on all sides, it was almost insufferably hot, the thermometer ranging at about 92° F., and it was without ventilation. Yet it was the best that could be provided at the time. We were convinced of the good intentions of our host, though not precisely satisfied with their execution; the first were good, the last we attributed to ignorance.

Midnight closed our toils, and we sought to forget in repose all the petty grievances that had tended not a little to ruffle our equanimity. Our beds were comfortable, and our sleep undisturbed.

One circumstance would have been sufficient to destroy repose in people of delicate nerves. The walls were populous at night with varieties of lizards, and serpents were not infrequently seen "drawing their slow length behind," among the tiles and rafters, composing the roof of our abode. Snakes of hideous size and color, were almost always to be seen, in the heat of the day, winking their lustrous eyes on the sunny side of the trees in the vicinity. Among them was a small species of asp, supposed to be the same as that used by Cleopatra for self-destruction.



## CHAPTER XXVI.

## SKETCHES IN SIAM.

*April, 1836.*

THE sun had set some time before we had attained even the outskirts of the capital, and the night was so dark that we could form no idea either of its appearance or extent. As we advanced along the last two miles of our voyage, nothing presented itself to our view, except the dark forms of vessels at anchor, and a few scattering lights along shore, and we had become so weary and selfish, that our whole attention was taken up with escaping from the boat of ceremony. But we were certain that the capital of the Magnificent King of Siam, did not impress us, when seen at night, with an idea of its grandeur.

The next day we awoke, strangers in a strange place; certainly the strangest I have ever visited, and sallied forth at an early hour to gratify our curiosity, in relation to a country of which we had heard much. We found the whole entirely new to us. We saw nothing which is in common with Christian lands. Like Venice, the city seemed to have risen from the waters. Half the population is afloat. In Bankok every thing is peculiar, and though every moment was employed, I feel sure, we saw a very small part of the city, in the time we remained.

Bankok is built upon the river Meinam, at a point where it is about half a mile wide, and perhaps twenty miles in a direct line from the sea. It extends about two miles and a half up and down the river, and from a mile to a mile and a half on each side of it. Bankok proper is on the right or western bank, while that on the left, from the palace being there, is named Sia-Yut'hia, but to the eye it is all one town. It is irregular in its plan and every where intersected by canals. The streets are narrow and dirty. The paved walk in the middle is scarcely wide enough for two persons to walk abreast, the reason for which, according to the Siamese, is that there are no two of the same rank in the kingdom, and etiquette does not permit individuals of different degrees to walk



side by side! Many of the houses are extensive, but the great 'mass of them are miserable bamboo huts, without any appearance of comfort. Trees are every where numerous, and the frequent 'Wâts' or Boudhist temples, their gilt and glazed tile roofs and spires, sparkling in the sun, give to the city a picturesque appearance, and an air of wealth and magnificence.

Each side of the river is lined with houses, every one a shop, built on rafts of bamboo, moored or staked to the banks. The fronts are open like verandas, wherein various goods are exposed for sale. A row of Chinese junks, from two to six hundred tons each, extend for more than two miles, at anchor in the middle of the stream, where they often remain for months, retailing their cargoes; and though streets, canals, and river are crowded with people and boats, there is neither the bustle nor buz of the multitude, which would be found in an equally dense population in any christian city. From daylight until dark the river presents an animated scene. The gondolas of this eastern Venice, called sampans, are of every variety of size, from the mere nut shell, to that moved by a half dozen paddles; and, there are those of large dimensions, permanently occupied by whole families, along the banks of the canals.

The better sort of sampan is a light canoe, moved by a half dozen or more short paddles, with a covered cabin in the centre, upon the floor of which the passenger reclines, and by drawing the curtains may be entirely concealed. There are those so small, that we are astonished that they are capable of floating under the weight of a man, and others again, which are propelled, like the Venitian gondola, by a single oar, managed in a row-lock, three feet high. The sampan of this description is usually skulled by a woman standing on the stern, without any other garment than a pair of drawers, with the occasional addition of a piece of black crape cast over the shoulders. The body is gently bent forward over the oar, and, to obtain a sure basis, one foot is placed in advance of the other, while the arms, in easy motion, impart speed to the vessel. The attitude and movement of these figures are eminently graceful, as they are seen threading their way through the mazes of junks and sampans of all sizes, which are all day gliding along, from point to point, in every direction, and always occupying a very small space. The sampans are admirably adapted to the navigation of the canals and river, as we soon discovered, when one of our long-oared boats moved among them. They were often upset by us; but the Siamese always took the mishap in gentleness of spirit, and very quietly swam either to the shore, or to regain the sampan. Living so con-



stantly on the water, they may be said to be a swimming people, though I am told they have great dread of the sea. They are seen bathing at all times of the day, either swimming, or squatted on the veranda, in front of the houses, dipping water out of the river with a basin and pouring it over themselves. Not long ago, Bangkok presented the singular phenomenon of an amphibious infant, that forsook the mother's breast, and betook itself to the water on all occasions.

Luck-loi-nam, literally the child of the waters, swam when she was but one year old, and in 1832, when she had attained three years of age, was frequently seen swimming in the river. Her motions were not like those of other swimmers; she floated without any apparent exertion, turning round and round. When not in the water, she was cross and discontented, and when taken out cried and strove to return; if indulged, she tumbled and rolled about, seemingly with unalloyed pleasure. Luck-loi-nam, though well formed, could neither walk nor speak, but uttered a gurgling, choking sound in the throat. Her vision was imperfect, and up to the time mentioned, she had never eaten any thing but her mother's milk. She usually applied to the breast, on being taken out of the river by her own consent. The mother of the child of the waters was a fine-looking woman, and had given birth to four children; two males and two females. The two brothers are dead, and the sister, eight or nine years of age, was always seen swimming in company, to protect the child of the waters against accidents, and give her direction that she might not get too near the boats, or the banks of the river. She has not been lately seen, and is supposed to be dead.

The population of Bangkok, according to the government census of 1828, amounted to 401,300, and is made up, as follows;

Chinese,	-	-	-	-	-	310,000
Descendants of Chinese,	-	-	-	-	-	50,000
Cochin Chinese,	-	-	-	-	-	1,000
Cambodians,	-	-	-	-	-	2,500
Siamese,	-	-	-	-	-	8,000
Peguans,	-	-	-	-	-	5,000
Laos people, (old residents,)	-	-	-	-	-	9,000
Do (new residents,)	-	-	-	-	-	7,000
Burmans or Brāmas,	-	-	-	-	-	2,000
Tavoy people,	-	-	-	-	-	3,000
Malays,	-	-	-	-	-	3,000
Christians,	-	-	-	-	-	800
Total,						401,300



A tax of about three dollars is levied upon every China-man on entering the country, and is afterwards exacted triennially, which secures to him the privilege of following any trade or craft, according to his pleasure, and also exempts him from the half yearly servitude, required by the king from every other oriental stranger resident in Siam.\* In 1836, the Chinese population had increased to four hundred thousand, so that we may safely state, that the city of Bangkok contains a half a million of inhabitants.

The Chinese residents, are chiefly from Teö-Chew, a subdivision of the Canton province; but numbers from Hainan, Canton and Seang-Häe, annually visit the place, and, from the manner of conducting their commercial voyages, remain there from February, until May or June. The number of junks in the river, during that season, is from thirty to seventy, each carrying from twenty, to one hundred and thirty men.

Most of the mechanics, agriculturists and tradesmen of Bangkok, are China-men. They are cheerful and industrious, but, for want of other modes of diverting their leisure hours, they are addicted to gambling and libertinism. The tax on Chinese and other gambling houses in the capital, brings a considerable revenue to the government.

The commerce of Siam with other countries than China is very limited, though her internal resources for foreign trade appear to be every way ample. Within a few years it has increased with Singapore, which serves as an entrepôt between it and Europe, as well as the United States, to a considerable extent. In 1826, a treaty was concluded between the English and His Magnificent Majesty, and a ratified treaty with our government has just been exchanged. The advantages of this treaty, though not immediately apparent, may be in future very great. At one time, no less than 2,200 tons of American shipping were employed in the Siamese trade; but owing to the numerous and irregular exactions made in form of duties, presents, &c., to the delays incident to the slow mode of conducting business, being obliged almost always to make up the cargo by small purchases from different individuals, and to the rapid advance in the price of sugar when in demand, it dwindled away to nothing, and the commercial world in the United states, almost lost sight of Siam. The Sachem, Captain Coffin, who introduced the Siamese Twins to the world, and the Maria Theresa, Captain O. Taylor, (now at Bangkok,) are the only American vessels which have entered the Meinam, since

\* Toumlin's Nine Months' Residence in Siam, in 1828-9.



1828, a period of eight years; and probably the last named vessel would not have ventured, had the commander been ignorant of the visit of the Peacock and its object. As will be seen in the sequel, the chief obstacles in the way of a profitable trade with Siam, irregular and exorbitant charges, have been removed by the provisions of the treaty, and under its protection, the commerce may revive in a short time, and then the merchants of Bankok may perceive their interests in facilitating the business of those who come to buy or sell.

Siam is too distant for us to send there, only, to purchase her products, the most of which may be now obtained at Singapore for a small advance, and sugar, the staple article, can be obtained much nearer home; but she requires our manufactures to supply her numerous though wretched population, and on the system of exchange only, can we hope any solid advantage from commerce, with so remote a country.

Nations, as well as individuals, are often deeply affected by the influence of example, though they may be too proud to acknowledge it, and are brought to the admission of principles and of the actions resulting from them, which, without this influence, they would have long resisted. It is true, the prejudices of the Asiatics generally, against all Christians, are so peculiar and so strong, that example may not have so extended an effect with them, as among people of other nations; nevertheless, it cannot fail to exercise a powerful influence. The intercourse between Siam and Cochin China, has been, until the present war, very frequent; it is also common between these two countries and China, and occasional even with Japan. Should the Siamese derive a profitable trade under the provisions of the treaty, it will be perceived by their neighbors, and, among commercial nations whose acquisitive faculties are large and active, to perceive a source of emolument, is but a step short of desiring it for themselves.

The conclusion to be drawn, if these premises be correct, is, that this treaty will be the remote means of opening a wide field to American enterprise, and of new markets for our growing manufactures, and the increasing products of our extensive soil.

The chief merchants of Siam are the king, his ministers, the Chinese, and old women. They require, from Europe and the United States, arms and ammunition; perhaps a few military ornaments, coarse cutlery, glass ware, white cotton goods, which should not be less than two cubits in width; cotton twist, from No. 20 to 30; Siamese dresses, three yards long by forty inches broad, in star patterns, on red, green, and blue grounds, which colors should be bright;



long ells, red and green; furniture chintz; ladies' cloth, red, yellow, green, light purple, and light blue; steel, in small bars, the size of nail iron, which, for this market, should be put up in tubs, one hundred of which are enough at a time, instead of cases. American cottons are now sought for, though afforded at a higher price, because they have proved themselves to be much more durable. There is an opening for the introduction of American cottons, through Bangkok, to the countries lying north of Siam.\*

For the above articles they offer, in exchange, sugars, tin, ivory, sappan wood, (*Cesalpina sappan*), rose wood, rattans, a variety of drugs, iron of a superior quality, &c. Sugar, the staple article, is at an average price of eight ticals per picul of 133½ lbs., may be put on board for about five dollars per hundred: whether it will yield profit at this price, after paying freight, home duties, interest, insurance, &c., I am not merchant enough to decide.

Though the duties stipulated for in the treaty may appear high, at first sight, \$4,275 on a vessel measuring 25 feet beam, they will be found not to exceed ten or twelve per cent. on a valuable cargo.

An estimate of the Siamese revenue and resources of trade may be formed from the following tables, made for one year.

TABLE EXHIBITING THE INTERNAL REVENUE, &c., OF SIAM, FOR ONE YEAR, IN BATS OR TICALS.

		Bats, or Ticals.
<i>Tavern Licenses.</i>	Bankok,	104,900
	Sia-Yut'hia,	16,000
	Bang-xang,	8,000
	Suri-buri,	4,000
	Krungtap'han,	4,000
<i>Bazaars.</i>	Bankok,	39,000
	Sia-Yut'hia,	12,000
	Suri-buri,	1,600
	Bang-xang,	1,600
Duty on floating houses,		36,000
" on Chinese gambling-houses,		64,000
" on Siamese "		58,000
Carried over,		349,100

\* For this commercial information I am indebted to Mr. R. Hunter, a commission merchant of several years' residence at Bangkok, who kindly placed his manuscript diary in my hands, with permission to extract whatever I might think interesting.



	Brought forward,	Bats, or Ticâls.
Revenue from provinces under first minister,		349,100
“ “ “ “ second minister,		32,000
“ “ “ “ third minister,		24,000
“ “ “ “ of tribunal,		12,000
“ “ “ “ of tribunal,		4,800
“ “ “ “ of tribunal,		8,000
“ “ gold province of Bangtap'han, 180 ticâls' weight of gold, equal to		1,880
“ “ gold province of Pipri, 60 ticâls' weight of gold, equal to		960
“ “ tribute paid by Malays for working gold mines, 216 ticâls' weight of gold,*		3,456
Total,		436,196

## TABLE OF COMMERCIAL REVENUE.

Articles.	Quantities.	Ticâls.
On Paddy,	1,696,423 koyans,	862,358
Gardens,		545,880
Trees,		17,800
Teak wood,	127,000 trees,	56,000
Sappan wood, (3 qualities,)	200,000 piculs,	84,000
Cocoanut oil,	600,000 “	56,000
Sugars, (5 qualities,)	96,000 “	40,000
Jacra,	150,000 jars,	8,000
Salt,	8,000 koyans,	32,000
Pepper,	38,000 piculs,	23,000
Cardammums,	550 “	5,400
Bastard do.,	4,000 “	16,000
Stick lac,	8,000 “	9,500
Tin,	1,200 “	18,200
Iron,	20,000 “	54,000
Ivory,	300 “	2,500
Gamboge, (3 qualities,)	200 “	1,200
Rhinoceros' horns,		1,600
Deers' do.	26,000 pairs,	3,600
Cows' do.	200 piculs,	800
Buffaloes' do.	200 “	
Deers' sinews,	200 “	
Rhinoceros' hides,	200 “	
Tigers' bones,	50 to 60 “	
Buffaloes' hides, in number	500	1,600
Cows' do. do.	100,000	
Carried over,		1,839,438

\* Gold is estimated at sixteen times the value of silver.



Articles.	Quantities.	Ticâls.
	Brought forward,	1,839,438
Gum Benjamin,	100 piculs,	400
Birds' nests, (3 qualities,)	10 to 12 "	32,000
Dried fish, (3 kinds,)	79,000 " }	18,000
Dried shrimps,	1,000 " }	
Balachão,	1,500 "	4,600
Azelu de pão,	15,000 "	8,000
Breu,	10,000 "	6,000
Rosewood,	200,000 "	1,600
Damar,	200,000 bundles,	5,600
Rattans,	200,000 "	5,600
Casca de pau,	200,000 "	1,600
Wooden posts, (3 kinds,)	203,500 in number,	8,000
Bamboos,	600,000,000 "	8,000
Ollas, or Chak leaves,	95,000,000,000 "	8,000
Firewood,		14,000
Total,		<hr/> 1,960,838 <hr/>

These tables are derived from the Portuguese residents; and, though not complete, nor perfectly accurate, proximate estimates may be formed from them.

The annual tax on cultivated paddy, or rice fields, is levied at the rate of three *fu-angs* per square *rai*, of 130 feet square. Being the custom of the country, to plant the cane once every three years, sugar plantations pay one ticâl for the first, and for the two following years, two *sa-lungs* per square *rai*. The reason assigned for the difference is, that the first year's growth is most valuable. A tax of one *sa-lung* per picul, is also levied on the sugar before it is brought to market.

The taxes are separately farmed by the government. The customs on wood, ollas or chak leaves, used for thatching, are one-fifth in quantity. Gardens are taxed per square *rai*, varying somewhat in proportion to their productions. Orchards pay according to their number of trees and the value of their fruits; on cocoanut and betel trees, &c. the tax is one *fu-ang* for twenty trees; on mango and other valuable trees, it is from one *fu-ang* to half a ticâl per tree.

The taxes on taverns, or more strictly speaking, tippling shops, and on gambling establishments, are farmed to licensed individuals, without whose permission, no one can sell spirituous liquors or open a gambling house without incurring a heavy penalty. Individuals are



not permitted to play in private, not even beneath their own roof tree, but, to gratify this passion, must repair to some one of the many licensed establishments, except at certain periods, when the law is suspended. A general permission to gamble, is granted three times a year; three days at the commencement of the Chinese new year; three days at the commencement of the Siamese new year, and three days at another season. During these periods, all classes may be seen, assiduously waiting upon dame fortune's smiles or frowns, read in the turning of cards or throwing of the dice. In these privileged times, wealth often changes hands; beggars become rich, and the affluent are sunk to penury. In these times too, taste for play, under the influence of an almost universal example, becomes irresistible, and when the law again becomes operative, those who have been unlucky, resort to licensed tables to repair their shattered fortunes, and those who have been fortunate, to increase their gains. The honorable and productive avocations of society, are forsaken or much neglected; wealth is squandered; intemperance and frequent quarrels ensue, and, often under the weight of overwhelming despair, the gambler, as in other countries, ends his not yet mature existence by some suicidal act, plunging him at once into an eternity, which, from its uncertain nature should be to him appalling.

A species of lottery has been introduced by the Chinese, which has attracted much attention, and is much in accordance with the tastes of the people. An indefinite number of tickets are sold, upon which is written the name of some one of thirty-six titled cards, which the purchaser may designate. Once a week one card is turned up, and those whose ticket bears the title, win and receive thirty for one, the purchaser being at liberty to pay any sum he pleases for the ticket.

The circulating medium of Siam, consists of silver and cowries exclusively; gold is occasionally coined, or rather stamped, but is held entirely as a curiosity, and cannot be considered as a part of the money system. The cowry shell (*Cyprea moneta*,) circulates in many countries of Asia, but in former times to a much greater extent than at present. They were carried to various parts of the East in great quantities, from the Maldivé islands, where they were fished twice, monthly; three days before and three after the new moon. Women alone were employed in the fishery. They waded into the sea, waist deep, and dug them from the sand; they were then made up into packages, each containing 12,000 shells, and thus shipped off to Ceylon, the Ganges, Siam, &c.; but in the Maldivé islands, they were not current money.



The silver pieces, in the form of short bars, doubled on themselves and impressed with a small stamp, closely resemble buck-shot and bullets. They are ticâls or bats, sa-lungs and fu-angs; all the rest of money divisions named in the following table, except the cowries, whose value is fluctuating, are imaginary. The ticâl or bat is the money-unit, and, according to the Calcutta assay, weighs 236 grains, and is valued at two shillings and sixpence sterling, or about sixty-one cents.

In April, 1836, dollars were at the rate of 150 ticâls for the hundred dollars.

#### SIAMESE MONEY TABLE.

200 Cowries,	equal to	1 P'hai-nung.
2 P'hai-nungs,	"	1 Song-p'hai.
2 Song-p'hais,	"	1 Fu-ang.
2 Fu-angs,	"	1 Sa-lung.
4 Sa-lungs,	"	1 Ticâl, or bat.
4 Ticâls,	"	1 Tumlung.
20 Tumlungs,	"	1 Catie.
100 Caties,	"	1 Picul, or 133½lbs.

The above are also used as measures of weight, whether apothecary, troy, or avoirdupois.

#### SIAMESE LONG MEASURE.

12 Fingers' breadth,	1 Span.
2 Spans,	1 Cubit, = 19½ English inches.
4 Cubits,	1 Fathom, = 6½ English feet.
20 Fathoms,	1 Sen, = 130 feet.
400 Sens,	1 yote, = 3 leagues, 271 yards, 8½ feet.
The only land or square measure is the rai, of 130 English feet.	

#### SIAMESE DRY MEASURE.

20 K: nân,	1 Tang, or bucket.
50 Tangs,	1 Ban.
2 Bans,	1 Kian, or Koyan.

One k: nân is equal to about 1½ English pints. Liquids are also measured by this table. Oil, however, is sometimes sold by weight.

The measure of time is not less singular than any other. The time-keeper, like that of the Hindoos, consists of a cup, with an aperture in the bottom, floating in a vessel of water, which sinks at the termination of each watch.



## SIAMESE TIME MEASURE.

10 Ak-san,	1 Pran.
6 Prans,	1 Pùt.
15 Pùts,	1 Bât, or $\frac{1}{10}$ of an hour.
10 Bât,	1 Tum, or hour of the night,
3 Tum,	1 Yám.
4 Yám,	1 K'hun, or night.
12 Mong, (hour of the day,)	1 Wan, or day.
7 Wan,	1 Kwap-a: tit, or week.
29 and 30 Wan,	1 Duan, or month.
12 Duan,	1 Pi, or year.
12 Pi,	1 Cycle.

The day commences at sunrise. The forenoon is divided into six watches, and the afternoon, until sunset, into the same number. From sunset until midnight includes two watches, and from midnight till morning the same number. In Siamese, the day watches are called *Mong*, and those of the night, *Tum*.

The division of time into weeks of seven days was probably derived from the Portuguese. They are named, in Siamese, as follows:—

Wan-a. thit, (literally day of the sun,)	Sunday.
Wan-chan, (moon-day,)	Monday.
Wang-ang-khan,	Tuesday.
Wan-put,	Wednesday.
Wan-prá-hat,	Thursday.
Wan-suk,	Friday.
Wan-sou,	Saturday.

The Siamese reckon 29 and 30 days to the months, alternately, which, with the exception of the first two, are numbered. This gives their year 354 days; but they complete the measure by adding an intercalary month every third year, and omit reckoning three or four days, as the case may be, before the commencement of each new year. The month is divided into the bright and dark halves, corresponding to the increase and wane of the moon.

The Siamese year is divided into three seasons; the *hot season*, from the full moon in February to the full moon in June; the *rainy season*, from the full moon of June to the full moon of October, the remaining time being the *cool season*. The new year commences after the close of the fifth month, which, in 1836, falls on the 15th of April.

The great division of time is into two cycles, the greater of sixty, and the lesser of twelve years. The last is said to be employed for



astrological purposes, in casting nativities, &c. The names of the years are, nevertheless, inserted in all important papers; they are named after different animals, as follows:—

1st. Chuat, or year of the Rat.	7th. M: Mia, or year of the Horse.
2nd. Ch-lú, “ Cow.	8th. M: Mé, “ Goat.
3d. Khán, “ Tiger.	9th. Wak, (1836) “ Monkey.
4th. Thô, “ Rabbit.	10th. R: ka, “ Cock.
5th. M: rong, “ Dragon.	11th. Chá, “ Dog.
6th. M: Seng, “ Serpent.	12th. Kun, “ Hog.

In dates of letters, &c., the Siamese mention, first, the day of the week, then the evening or morning of the day of the month, the increase or wane of the moon, and the name and number of the year. In all important documents, the year of the Siamese era is also inserted. The present year, (1836,) in their phraseology, is the 1197th from the commencement of the magnificent kingdom of Thai.\*

The Siamese have two eras, a sacred and a popular one; the former, used by the Talapoins in all matters relating to religion, dates from the death of Guatama; the latter was introduced in commemoration of the introduction of the worship of Guatama into Siam, which happened in the 1181st year of the sacred epoch, corresponding with the A. D. 638, so that the God of Siam has been dead 2379 years.†

Of the precise extent of the Siamese empire we have no certain information; and, from the frequent acquisition of territory, by conquest, it is not easy to ascertain what are its precise boundaries. Crawford places its extreme western limit, including some desert islands in the bay of Bengal, in the meridian of  $97^{\circ} 50'$  east of Greenwich, and the eastern limit in about the 105th. The northern boundary is under the twenty-third, and the southern under the fifth degree of north latitude, that is, on the west, or Malay side of the gulf. Mr. Crawford commits a glaring error in placing the southern boundary on the Cambodian side, “in about the same parallel” as that on the side of the Malay peninsula. The island of Pulo Oby, at the southern extremity of Cambodia, is situated in  $8^{\circ} 25'$  north; so that, even if the Siamese possessions include that island, there is a difference of three and a half degrees of latitude—a space of open sea, claimed in vain for Siam. The area of the whole country is estimated at 190,000 geographical miles, including, besides Siam proper, Laos on the north, a part of Cambodia, and a large portion of the Malay peninsula.

\* For the above tables of weight and measure I am indebted to the kindness of Missionary Charles Robinson.

† Journal of an Embassy from the Governor-General of India to the Courts of Siam and Cochin China, by John Crawford, &c. &c., quarto. London, 1828.



Except in the vicinity of Bangkok, the country is mountainous and well watered. The soil is fertile, abounding in fruits, dye woods, medicinal gums and timber. The teak, so useful in ship building, grows in great abundance and of an excellent quality. The total population of the empire, according to Mr. Crawford, is 2,790,500.

The government is a despotism of the most absolute kind. The king is the god, the law of the land, and his name is known only to few, that it may not be taken in vain. He is mentioned by several epithets which are considered peculiarly soft and flattering; as "the sacred Lord of Heads"—"the sacred Lord of Lives"—"the Owner of All"—"Lord of the White Elephants"—"Most exalted Lord, infallible and infinitely powerful." Even the members of his body are designated in adulatory terms; his feet, hands, nose, ears and eyes are never mentioned without the prefix of Lord, or sacred Lord. Every thing belonging to or attached to his majesty's person is also styled golden. To visit him, is to come to his magnificent majesty's golden feet—to speak in his golden ear, &c.

The country is divided into districts; each one is governed by a minister, appointed by the king, aided by a governor and other subordinate officers; and the more distant provinces are under viceroys or rajahs. There appears to be no written law; at least, there is none observed, the will or whim of the officer being often decisive.

All the people, with the exception of the Chinese, European and American residents, are virtually slaves, or in a state of slavery. The officers at the head of sub-divisions of districts require them to labor on public works, one month out of every three or four, according to official pleasure, in building temples, junks, roads or any thing else; which requisition is termed, "a call to public business." If a superior officer be engaged in any work, he calls upon one under him to furnish a number of men, greater or less according to circumstances, to labor one month; when this term has expired, he calls on another, for an equal quota, and so continues till the job be accomplished. The laborers support themselves and their families, and receive no compensation for their public services, except the glorious privilege of living in Siam or Thai, literally the "Free Country." We may almost say with Paudeen O'Rafferty, "They work for nothing and live upon less," content to be slaves as long they entertain the name of being free.

A number of people of various countries, are held in perpetual bondage, including those who are taken in war, and those who are so unfortunate as to be in debt, because they have no hope of libera-



tion unless some friend step forward and satisfy the claim against them. Debtors are allowed no compensation for their services, but, on the contrary, are charged for food, clothing, medical attendance, &c., so that the original debt is constantly increasing.

Except in case of debt, the Chinese are exempted from laboring on public works, by paying the triennial tax of four and a half ticals, before mentioned. Some say this tax is collected yearly.

The religion of Siam is that of Boudha. The belief is, that after death the soul transmigrates through animals of the inferior classes, in gradation according to the good or evil the individual has done in this world, until it arrives, through meritorious deeds, to the condition of supreme beatitude, which is the state of nonentity. Every animal is animated by some human soul, and hence the general respect for life. Though the Siamese will not kill an animal, they will generally eat of its flesh, because the sin lies only in driving the soul from its temporary abode.

The talapoins or priests, supposed to number at least one hundred thousand, are maintained by daily contributions of rice, &c., from the people, and annual presents from the king, consisting of money and yellow cloth for their robes. At funerals they often receive valuable presents. They assemble daily in the wats or temples, and repeat prayers which they do not understand—not an unfrequent occurrence in other countries—because they are in the Bali language, which they do not generally comprehend. Not more than ten in the whole kingdom, it is said, are capable of reading, understandingly, the sacred books, which are all in this language. They relieve the people from all devotional exercises and holy acts, except that of daily bestowing upon themselves boiled rice and other little offerings. For three months of his life, every Siamese is obliged to be a talapoin, and they generally assume the yellow robe at twenty years of age. They may doff this beggar's life when it suits them after the term has expired; but if they take up the robe a second time, it must be for life. The usual number in the capital is about twenty thousand, varying with the price of rice, and provisions; prosperous agriculture, abundant crops, making the fruits of the soil cheap, detracts from the worship of the great Boudha, distinguished by being sixty-eight feet long, and having all his fingers and toes of the same length.

The talapoins are of different grades or classes, and are presided over by one, whom, from the nature of his office, we may in common parlance term the Pope. He has other priests below him, answering to the cardinals, archbishops, bishops and other dignitaries of the



church of Rome. The whole system, including the monastic and beggarly lives of the churchmen, bears a strong resemblance to the Roman catholic institution.

The wâts or temples are numerous, costly and many of them superbly magnificent. They occupy the best situations in the kingdom. They are the residences of the priests, and the places of education for all male Siamese.

The people seldom visit the wâts, nor do they ever perform any act of worship. They as well as the priests are ever ready to acknowledge that Boudha died long, long since; but they believe there will be another incarnation of the deity, and that all his fingers and toes will be of the same length. They are anxiously expecting such a person; and for this reason, perhaps, may feel more curiosity to see the foot than the face of the stranger. These being the marks by which his incarnation is to be known, it is said, that Boudha, before his death, caused some pattern statues of himself to be made, that he might be the more readily recognised on his second coming. For this reason, all images of him in Siam are made after this fashion.

---

## CHAPTER XXVII.

### SKETCHES IN SIAM.

*April, 1836.*

THE morning after our arrival, we visited His Highness the prince Momfanoi, literally, "Prince of Heaven, Junior." He is also called Chawfanoi, the ultimate syllable signifying the younger. He is half brother to the king, and in truth, rightful heir to the throne, which, on the late king's death, his present Magnificent Majesty usurped, and afterwards proposed to create Chawfaya, the elder brother of the prince and legitimate successor, second king; but he scorned the proposal, and, declaring that he would never bend to, nor do homage to the usurper, assumed the yellow robe of the Talapoins for life; by



this means he is enabled to keep his word, because they are excused from all the slavish ceremonies of Siamese etiquette, and in the presence of the higher grades, the king himself appears upon his elbows and knees. On the refusal of Chawfaya, an uncle of the reigning monarch was appointed second king; but since his death, which occurred about three years since, no successor has been named to this office, and it is asserted that His Majesty will not make another second king, because he is entitled, according to Siamese custom, to one-third of the revenue of the empire.

Chawfaya leads a very holy life, measured by the Siamese criterion of sanctity, and enjoys a rank equal to that of a bishop. His assumption of the yellow robe a second time, makes Momfanoi the legitimate heir; but his ascent to the throne is not absolutely certain. The king has the power of naming his successor from among his lawful heirs. The reigning monarch, though he possesses more than three hundred wives, has no children living, legitimate enough to wear the crown; and, since the death of his lawful son, Prince Momfanoi has "crept into favor," and rumor states, he is about being affianced to His Magnificent Majesty's favorite daughter, notwithstanding that he has already nine wives. If this report prove true, there is no doubt but he will succeed to the throne; *es mejor caer en gracia que ser gracioso*.

Being very popular and full of enterprise and military spirit, the prince has been regarded with a jealous eye, or at least with surveillance. This state of things makes him very cautious and fearful of thwarting any of His Magnificent Majesty's views. Therefore, he seldom goes abroad by day, but goes about, as he says good humoredly, "like a thief at night." He makes frequent visits to the palace after sunset, the time selected by the king to receive his several ministers to hear their reports, after the cares of the day are done.

We found his Highness on board of his barque, where he gave us a hearty welcome. The size of this vessel is about two hundred tons, and is somewhat in the European style; but, having been at first intended to be a junk, and then changing the plan after the work was well advanced, she draws more water forward than aft. He is now fitting her out with the aid of three English sailors in his employment, and so far, every thing is neat and well finished.

Instead of the costume described, when the prince visited the Peacock, he wore nothing but a heavy silk sarong or waist cloth. He ushered us into his cabin, where he offered tea and cigars. His



numerous attendants, all apparently on the familiar footing of companions, were resting on their elbows and knees around him, chewing arecanut, which His Highness does not use. He had two beautiful parrots from Borneo, of which he seemed to be very fond. We accompanied him over the vessel, and found every thing going forward actively. The workmen were generally seated on the deck, and, therefore, were not under the necessity of desisting from their labors, as would have been the case had they been standing. The prince himself took the gouge from the hands of a mechanic, and, squatting down, began to apply it with skill, to a piece of wood which was turned by a man pulling a cord, passed about it like the string of a drill-bow, the ends of the wood revolving on points like those in the frame of a turning lathe. While observing these things, we heard a shout or huzza from a hundred voices on the river, raised in a long canoe-like boat, pulling a hundred oars. The rowers were standing behind the oars, loudly marking time with the right foot, while one stood in the bows, striking together two pieces of bamboo, as a guide to their simultaneous efforts. The boat and crew belonged to the prince, who exercises them daily in this manner, which explained the salutation we had just heard. He has several thousand men he thus trains, or to the use of small arms daily. He delights in military affairs, but for their sake does not omit any opportunity for acquiring general knowledge. On one occasion he borrowed our drummer to teach his own our rolls, calls, &c., and on another was very particular in having explained to him the object of having lightning rods in ships. The day afterwards we found his armorer hard at work, making one for this vessel. He has called the barque, the "Royal Adelaide;" and with his own hand, has painted the name in English characters, on a rack for small arms, at the after-hatch. His taste for painting is displayed in several places; a large chest in the cabin is marked on the front with his own name, T. MOMFANOI, and he showed us several of his drawings.

The vessel was lying about ten yards from the shore, in front of his palace, which has the external appearance of a fort. The walls are snowy white and surmounted by embrasures for guns.

We accompanied the prince on shore, and as we walked to the palace gate, every native we met fell on his face till Momfanoi had passed. Within the walls we found, every where, evidence of the master's tastes. A number of people, male and female, were at work, some twisting or 'laying-up' rope, and others at various occupations. Several of both sexes had chains on the arms and legs,



and their naked backs bore recent marks of the bamboo. It was the first time I had seen women in chains, and I felt a sudden recoil of mind at the sight, of mingled disgust and pity, and perhaps, a desire that they should be at once free; but on reflection, I suppose it was correct, for they are not of the same comparative feebleness of body as in christian lands.

Before entering his dwelling, Momfanoi led us to see his pets; a large baboon, a half dozen beautiful deer, a pair of large black bears from Borneo, with a white stripe over the fore part of each shoulder; they were tame and playful; and a large cassowary from New Holland, so tame as to eat from one's hand, was running about at liberty. He now called our attention to a variety of parrots and krokotoas, in the corridor or veranda, surrounding the house; and then led us to his stables to see his fine stud of horses, and thence, to look at several storks, jungle fowls in cages, and a half dozen asses and monkeys. He had ordered three or four alligators to be brought from beneath the stable in the mean time, and their jaws to be secured, that we might examine them without risk.

In another part of the court or area, were field pieces, and guns of various kinds and calibers, ships' spars, &c., neatly arranged beneath a shed. He had numerous questions to ask about every thing he exhibited, and was never satisfied till he felt sure that he clearly understood the answers given to him.

He now led us into the house, saying, "Gentlemen, you are welcome—I am glad to see you." The interior is lofty, though but one story, and is divided into three apartments by two screens, which do not reach the ceiling. The centre apartment was furnished in the Anglo-Asiatic style, and as neatly as any house I have seen in India.

On a table, near a sofa, at one end of this drawing-room, were violins, flutes, and a flageolet, upon which instruments His Highness performs. The adjoining apartment was filled as a study, furnished with a small collection of English books, a fine barometer, &c. A small room communicating with it, is arranged as a private museum, in which there are many fine specimens of natural history; quadrupeds, birds, reptiles, &c., all preserved and set up by himself.

Among the strange animals belonging to Siam, there is one described under the name of Khon Pāā, which belongs to the known genus of natural history. This animal has been seen by the prince and hundreds of others, yet we must confess, we are inclined to doubt the accuracy of description. The Khon Pāā resembles man; it is five feet high, walks erect, has no knee joints, and runs faster than a



horse. Should he accidentally fall, he is forced to crawl to a tree or something else, by which he again raises himself on his feet. His skin is as transparent as a China horn lantern; his entrails are distinctly seen through it, and his abdomen shines like a looking-glass—*credit qui vult, non ego*. Under the superstitious notion, that the presence of the animal in Bangkok was unlucky, his owners were bamboozed, and all their property was confiscated by the king for bringing him there. This treatment caused so much terror, that no one has since ventured to bring a specimen of the beast from his native lurking places.

When we returned from the museum to the drawing-room, the prince ordered wine, Port and Madeira, which were excellent, and cigars of Siamese manufacture.

So gracefully did he do the honors of his house, in spite of his being nearly naked, no one would hesitate to pronounce that Nature had stamped him—gentleman. He gave his attentions equally to all his guests, asked questions on almost every subject, and, when the answers were not perfectly clear, always repeated his inquiries, and on two or three disputed points, referred to books in the library to support his opinions.

He showed us the sword, used by the Siamese when they fight on elephants, which one might mistake for a spear. The handle was four feet long, of fine heavy wood, and perfectly straight, having a screw joint in the middle to make it more portable. The blade was one-edged, two feet long and gently curved; the guard was a disc set with gems, and the scabbard was enamelled. Such an instrument, in a bold determined hand, might be used with the effects of a scythe.

A musical instrument, invented in Laos, the country to the north of Siam proper, was next exhibited. It consists of fourteen bamboos a half inch in diameter, and from eight to twelve feet long, placed in two parallel rows, containing seven each. The barrels or tubes are of graduated lengths, like those of an organ, and from the resemblance to that instrument, this might be termed the Laos organ. About two feet from the square end, the tubes pass through a short cylinder of wood, at right angles, and about three inches above it, each tube is pierced by a small hole, to which a finger is applied when playing. The player holds the instrument between the palms, and blows into the open end of the cylinder.

We requested that some of his people would play for us. "Wow," exclaimed the prince in his usual manner of expressing surprise,



"Wow—I will play for you myself," and, at once, calling an old man who was resting *à la Siamese*, took the instrument between his palms. The old man crawled close up to the Prince's feet, and sitting *à la Turque*, looked up into his face, while his Highness played a showy interlude. The minstrel shut his eyes, and turning his withered countenance heavenward, began singing a melancholy air to his master's accompaniment. We were surprised at the power of the instrument, and much pleased with the performance.

He had no sooner ended his song, than the old man began to move back to his former station, but a word detained him at his master's feet. "Now," said the prince, "I will give you another kind of tune," and at once struck up an air which might have been mistaken for Scotch, had we not been assured that it was Siamese. The minstrel gathered confidence from the music, and sang with much spirit and better effect than at first.

When we took leave, he detained some of us to dine; and in the mean time entertained the company by showing them several Siamese curiosities, and conversing on all subjects. About three o'clock P. M. the table was spread in the Anglo-Asiatic style,—a mixture of English comfort and Eastern show;—the dinner was remarkable for the variety and exquisite flavor of the curries. Among them, was one consisting of ants' eggs, a costly and much esteemed luxury of Siam. They are not larger than grains of sand, and, to a palate unaccustomed to them, not particularly savory—they are almost tasteless. Besides being curried, they are brought to table, rolled in green leaves, mingled with shreds or very fine slices of fat pork. Here was seen an ever-to-be-remembered luxury of the East. Two slaves stood waving fans behind the Prince's chair, and many other attendants were crouched upon elbows and knees around the room, to whom he occasionally translated such parts of the conversation as he thought would interest them. As he thus sat, conversing cheerfully, circulating his choice wines, accurately cooled, and entertaining his guests, a slave was beneath the table, busily occupied the while, scratching His Highness' naked shins.

On another occasion we visited the Prince at night, on board of the Royal Adelaide, which at present seems to be his hobby. We were no sooner on the deck, than he exclaimed, "Wow—I am glad to see you; walk into the cabin." There we found him with several of his attendants. He showed us an American newspaper, which contained a list of the officers of the Peacock, and the announcement



of the then projected voyage to Siam. He had had the newspaper six months, but never had communicated the news to the king. He laughed heartily when he related the anecdote.

Among other subjects that of phrenology was mentioned, and I proposed to illustrate its principles by the examination of some of the heads of his attendants. This was agreed to, although there is a strong prejudice existing against putting the hand on the head of a Siamese. In relation to this point, there is an anecdote told of the P'hra Klang. When the British Envoy from the government of India was here in 1822, he resided in the second story of a house; to avoid the ill luck and disgrace of having any body for a moment actually over his head, the worthy P'hra Klang, a man of some three or four hundred pounds substance, was in the habit of entering the Ambassador's apartments through a window, by a ladder placed against the outside of the building.

As the Siamese almost invariably burn the dead, it is almost impossible to procure a skull for phrenological comparison. I therefore determined to obtain the measure of some of them, and to do so, excited their curiosity, to lull the prejudice above mentioned. I was lucky in guessing the predominant traits of those who submitted to examination. One of them was a brother to the second P'hra Klang, and, according to the Prince, a gentleman of pure blood. When the character given by me was interpreted to him, he seemed for a moment stupid with amazement; then seizing my hand, said, "You have told me so much that I conceived impossible for you to know, there is one thing more, I entreat you to tell me. How long have I got to live?" At this the prince and all of us laughed. He looked as grave as though he expected to hear me name the day of his death.

Momfanoi said he would submit his own head to examination at some other time in private; but no other opportunity occurred.

The character of the Prince Momfanoi might be deduced from what has been already said. He is docile, active, determined, and considering he is of a race that has taken scarcely a step to emerge from ignorance and barbarism, he is liberal-minded and in a great degree free from the many prejudices, common to his countrymen. His manners are easy, but are rather of the kind which characterize naval officers, than the carpet knights of royal courts. Possessing eminent qualities and perceptive powers, fitting him for a high and useful station, it must be a subject of regret to all philan-



thropists, if he be not nominated successor to the throne of "the free." The English language he acquired from the American missionaries, and, delighting to diffuse the knowledge he acquires, he has already taught one of his slaves, a lad of sixteen or seventeen, to speak it intelligibly. Whenever he hears any thing novel, he immediately communicates it to his attendants, who always listen attentively to whatever he says. This disposition to communicate information is so great, as to impart a peurile cast to his whole character, which is increased by the promptitude with which he appears ready to undertake or to execute any plan that squares with his fancy. On one occasion he was asked whether it were possible to procure a white monkey. "I don't know *that*—it is a rare animal—I have a white ape." At this moment he was interrupted, and the conversation took another turn. At the expiration of a few minutes, though it was night and we were on board the Royal Adelaide, the white ape was brought in. By candle light it appeared quite white and woolly like a sheep, but in daylight the color is yellowish. The face, the palms and soles are black, and the eyes are of a very dark chestnut color, or what might be termed, without impropriety, black. It is of the sort designated as the long armed ape; the arm from the shoulder to the end of the middle finger, of this specimen, measured nineteen inches, and the whole height, when erect, was twenty-three inches.

The animal was for some time alive on board of the Peacock; it was grave and disposed to sleep a great deal; the stuffed specimen is now in the collection at the academy of Natural Sciences of Philadelphia.

In the event of Momfanoi ascending the throne, great changes will no doubt be effected in Siam. Improvements in every branch of useful industry may be anticipated; education will become more general, liberal ideas will be diffused; our missionaries will derive more beneficial results from their labors; christianity will be established, and, last though not least to some of the community, our commercial treaty will be worth a great deal to our country. In these things, the Prince will, in all probability, be the leader, and the people will follow—*qualis rex talis grex*—

"For princes are the glass, the school, the book  
Where subjects eyes do learn, do read, do look."

We do not imagine that all these will be accomplished, but only be-



lieve that an impulse will be given by his example, which, in the course of time, must lead to the result we predict.

The Siamese belong to that variety of the human species which writers on the subject denominate the Mongol. Their average height, according to the measure of Mr. Crawford, is five feet two inches, which I suspect to be near the truth, from the few to whom I have applied the rule. The lower limbs are stout and well formed; the body is long, and hence the figure is not graceful. The shoulders are broad, and the muscles of the chest are well developed. The neck is short and the head is in fair proportion. The hands are large, and the complexion of a dark olive, but not jetty. Among females of the higher classes, who pass their time mostly within the harem of their lords, the skin is of a very much lighter hue; in some instances it might be described as a very dark brunette. The forehead is narrow at the superior part, the face, between the cheek bones broad, and the chin is, again, narrow, so that the whole contour is rather lozenge-shaped than oval. The eyes are remarkable for the upper lid being extended below the under one, at the corner next to the nose, but it is not elongated like that organ in the Chinese or Tartar races. The eyes are dark, or black, and the white is dirty, or of a yellowish tint. The nostrils are broad, but the nose is not flattened, like that of the African. The mouth is not well formed, the lips projecting slightly; and it is always disfigured, according to our notions of beauty, by the universal and disgusting habit of chewing arecanut. The hair is jet black, renitent, and coarse, almost bristly, and is worn in a tuft on top of the head, about four inches in diameter, the rest being shaved, or clipped very close. A few scattering hairs, which scarcely merit the name of beard, grow upon the chin and upper lip, and these they customarily pluck out.

The occipital portion of the head is nearly vertical, and, compared with the anterior and sincipital divisions, very small; and I remarked, what I have not seen in any other than in some ancient Peruvian skulls from Pachacamac, that the lateral halves of the head are not symmetrical. In the region of firmness, the skull is very prominent; this is remarkably true of the talapoins.

The following measurements, with callipers, of four purely Siamese heads, may convey a more definite idea than any description I can give.



	Inches			
Between openings of external ears, - - - - -	5½	5¼	5½	5½
parietal protuberances, - - - - -	6	6	6	5¾
root of nose and occiput, or antero-posterior diam. -	7	7½	7¼	6¾
the temporal fossæ, - - - - -	5	4¾	4¾	5
the external angles of the eyes, - - - - -	4¾	4¾	4½	4¾
the cheek bones, - - - - -	5½	5½	5½	5½
the angles of the jaws, - - - - -	5½	4¾	5	4¾
From the incisors to root of nose, - - - - -	2¾	3	2¾	2¾
the chin to root of nose, - - - - -	4½	5	4½	4¾
root of nose to the crineal line, - - - - -	3¼	2¾	3	2
the ear to the sagittal suture, - - - - -	5¾	5¾	5¾	5½
Facial angle, - - - - -	59°	67°	67°	59°

Though active, the Siamese are not a warlike people. The only athletic exercises I have seen them practice, in my short sojourn, were rowing, and playing shuttle-cock with the feet.

A half dozen were standing in a circle of about thirty feet in diameter, equidistant from each other. The shuttlecock, or bird, was a piece of leather, with numerous feathers stuck round it, which was kept flying from side to side, struck only by the sole or knee. I have never seen a more graceful exercise, nor one requiring more activity and suppleness of limb.

The Siamese, like all Asiatics of low latitudes, are disposed to indolence, and to the indulgence of the animal propensities, where these do not contravene their religious notions, to which, however, they are not scrupulously wedded. They possess an inordinate self-esteem which places them above all nations, except the Chinese, whom they acknowledge to be superior, and to whom they pay occasional tribute, and the Burmahs, whom they rank as their equals. All their superfluous wealth they devote to the building of temples, to obtain what they esteem the prospective benefit of their souls. They are mean, rapacious, and cruel, and never betray any of that high toned generosity of feeling which wins our admiration or demands our respect. In proof of their cruelty, we have only to adduce their practice of enslaving those taken in war, without regard either to age or sex; and their wantonly barbarous treatment of the unfortunate king of Laos, and his family, who were brought to Bangkok in a cage, exhibited like criminals, and exposed to the rudeness of an ignorant and savage populace.\* They are suspicious, vacillating, and procrastinating, and destitute of those principles of honor which give stability to society in the christian world; the law which consigns the

\* Gutzlaff's Voyages. Toumlin's Residence in Siam. Abeel's residence in China and the neighboring countries.



person of the debtor to slavery and stripes, at the will of the creditor, has its origin in these traits of character. Cringing and servile to their superiors, in the extreme, they are arrogant, haughty, and tyrannical in regard to those who are below them in rank. Though humble, to the dust, to their great men, in our presence, and with whom our intercourse was on terms of perfect equality, when no Siamese of distinction was present, they conducted themselves towards us with a hauteur bordering on insolence. They never manifested the slightest sign of respect, but crowded upon us at all times, when not kept off by reproof, or by forcible means; and, had we not been looked on somewhat in the light of the king's guests, I question whether our treatment, generally, would have been bearable, unless the hope of gaining something from us had purchased a more seemly entertainment. They were constantly begging for whatever they saw, with most shameless effrontery, not in the least abashed by the most contemptuous refusal.

Their virtues and their vices are venal; the services of the judge and the assassin are equally purchasable at a very moderate price, but will always be sold to the highest bidder of the contending parties, and they deem themselves fortunate, if by any chance they obtain fees from both sides.

The only commendable quality of the Siamese character, so far as I could learn, is their filial respect, which is kept up through life with all the punctilious exactness which characterizes it in infancy. The son never stands in the presence of either parent, nor assumes a seat on a level with his father. Even his Magnificent Majesty himself, once a month, humiliates himself and appears before his mother on his knees and elbows. The queen dowager and the chief of the Talapoins are the only two individuals in Siam who have no superiors.

Like all ignorant and uneducated people, they are superstitious. Without referring to a belief in ghosts, witchcraft, lucky and unlucky days, this trait is amusingly observed in their mode of detecting a thief. A gentleman who has been long a resident at Bangkok, related to me the following anecdote.

An individual lost from his apartment two bars of gold. Immediately on missing them, all those persons suspected of the theft were called together, and a conjurer summoned to declare who was the guilty individual. He came provided with several square bars, of a metallic appearance, six or seven inches long, and thick as the little finger, which, on examination, proved to be of a species of clay. He



charged each one with the theft, and asked them individually whether they knew any thing of the gold, and was answered in the negative. He then lighted a small wax candle, and stuck upon each side of it a ticâl, obtained from the man who had lost the gold, and, muttering an invocation or spell, took a piece of clay, and three times very ceremoniously raised it above his head. Then measuring it very carefully by the little finger, he broke it into pieces an inch and a half long, and gave to each suspected person three of them, which they were directed to chew as fast as possible, and prove their innocence by spitting, when the mastication was complete. All set to work chewing, and soon all were trying to spit; and as upon the success of the effort depends the innocence or guilt of the accused, in the opinion of the Siamese, the scene may be readily imagined. In this case there were ten attempting to spit, and at last, after much labor, all succeeded, except a girl of fifteen, who was finally pronounced guilty; and the conjurer with the candle and ticâls walked off in triumph.

The test by clay is so much in favor, that, upon it alone, persons are often heavily ironed, and daily flogged, until they confess, or the stolen property be returned. In the present instance, the poor girl received only a promise of such treatment, and probably owes her escape altogether to the proverbial faithlessness of the Siamese to their words.



## CHAPTER XXVIII.

## SKETCHES IN SIAM.

*April, 1836.*

ON returning from our visit to Momfanoi, we found Mr. Roberts preparing to visit a distinguished officer of the government, entitled, Phya-Ratsa-pa-vade. Desirous of conforming as much as possible to the customs of the East, on all occasions while in Siam, we were careful to appear with as much pomp and circumstance as our means would admit, and made all public visits in full dress, preceded by our band. We marched along the narrow streets, to a military air, followed by a crowd, but observed none to crouch before us, as they are wont to do in the presence of the tea-kettled nobility of the magnificent kingdom of Thai.

A few minutes brought us to the dwelling of the "big officer," as the worthy captain of the port was pleased to call him. It is a large one story building, enclosed in a spacious yard; and the centre of the front opens upon a broad veranda, exposing a hall of eighty by forty feet, whose lofty ceiling is supported by numerous wooden columns. The floor is elevated about four feet above the ground, and was covered with mats. The hall was furnished with chairs, tables and Chinese mirrors, and many lamps hung from the ceiling. Close to the middle of the back wall reclined the great man on a dais, clothed in a silk sarong. Before him, on the dais, were his patents of nobility and badges of office, consisting of a tea-kettle, chunam box, spittoons and drinking cup, all of pure gold. To his left, crouched on the ground, were a fan bearer and a sword bearer, and on either hand were his numerous slaves and inferior officers.

Instead of looking at the dress of a Siamese to estimate his rank, it is necessary to cast the eye upon the slave following him, who bears upon a tray the badge which designates his master's rank. Tea-ket-



tles of gold and silver, plain or ornamented, are patents of the highest grades of nobility, and are presented by the king as commissions of office.

A row of chairs stood beneath the veranda, facing the Phya-Rat-sa-pa-vade, for our accommodation, to which we were showed by Pi-adadè, who acted as interpreter. He bent down upon his elbows and knees, and crawled in the most abject manner to half way between us and our host, and there remained during the interview.

At the foot of each one of the pillars of the front row, were spit-toons and quivers of cigars, placed on low stools. The doors leading to inner apartments were concealed by silk screens. A crowd of naked rabble was in the yard, and another beyond the wall gazing upon us to gratify their idle curiosity.

The scene was opened by the son of the General, who received us on our landing at Bangkok. Dressed in his gaudy uniform and cocked hat, he crawled along at our feet, on his knees and one hand, as well as he might, offering cigars with the other, to each of us as he passed: And then returned in the same manner with a lighted candle and paper matches to light them by.

A few common place questions were asked and answered through Piadadè, who made a salam at the beginning and end of every sentence. After a few minutes, the Ratsa-pa-vade asked whether our quarters and situation were agreeable, and hoped we would waive all ceremony and make ourselves quite at ease. Tables loaded with fruits and sweetmeats of various kinds were now wheeled up before us, and, during the interview, tea, without sugar or milk, was served several times.

At the request of the Ratsa-pa-vade, our band played several airs, which, he was pleased to say, was the best music he had ever heard. At the end of a half hour, we took leave by shaking hands, and returned in the order we came. Very soon after reaching the house, several slaves arrived laden with fruit, presented by the officer we had just visited. It is an invariable custom in Siam, to send presents immediately, by way of showing that the visit has been acceptable.

Early the following morning, Ramòn, whom the reader may recollect as one of our interpreters at Paknam, requested me, in the name of Phya-pi-pat-kosa, familiarly known among foreigners as the second P'hra Klang or second minister, to visit him professionally. I appointed ten o'clock, and a little before that hour, Ramòn appeared and announced, he was ready. Accompanied by a friend, I took my place in the Phya-pi-pat-kosa's sampan or gondola, rowed by seven



men, and, crossing the busy river, we entered a canal and pursued its course for nearly a mile, threading our way amidst boats of every description. Moored along the banks were many large sampans, with semicylindrical roofs, occupied as their permanent residence by large families. Some were salt shops, and others were stored with earthenware. The people were nearly naked, and though wanting the dignity, they apparently possessed the ease desired by the poet. Some were whiling away time, in pursuing game, industriously sought, in the bristly hair of each others' crowns. Many were swimming in the water. Fishermen with baskets slung upon their backs to hold whatever they might catch, were wading about waist deep, net in hand.

The scene was attractive for its novelty, and we wondered how so many people could exist in so small a space; they were wretchedly filthy in appearance, and so disgusting that we felt no regret at leaving.

The sampan stopped at the foot of a rude stair, by which we mounted on the bank, and entered a large yard through an ornamented gateway. Within stood the dwelling of the second minister. It is extensive, and, like most of the houses in Bangkok, one story high. The front presents an open hall with painted walls and carved joists, gaudy as the unsubstantial show of theatrical scenery. In this hall we were requested to remain; Ramòn disappeared behind a screen, and did not return before we had leisurely examined the apartment. It had three sides, the front being open, and supported by pillars of teak wood, and protected from the weather by a great mat, swinging like a shutter from the eaves. The only furniture it contained was the *däis* or low table, upon which the great men of Siam recline when they receive their guests. Several slaves were lazily dusting and sweeping the mats upon the floor.

Presently Ramòn beckoned us from the side of the screen, and we passed through an inner court, upon which opened an apartment similar to the one we had left, except it was neither so neat, nor so much ornamented. Here the *Phya-pi-pat-kosa*, a short stout man, with a round good-humored face, clothed in a sarong of crimson silk, reclined upon a *däis*, in the midst of his family. Twenty of his wives were seated round *à la Turque*, with perhaps as many children. A female, resting on her knees, about two yards from the *däis* was fanning the minister. Thus we were introduced unexpectedly into a Siamese harem. The ladies were the fairest among their countrywomen, I had the fortune to see; and I may add, they were graceful in their manners. They were all dressed alike, in silk drawers ga-



thered full about the waist and ankles, and had a narrow scarf of black Cantòn crape thrown carelessly over the shoulders, which very partially and fitfully concealed the bosom. Their bare arms were folded across the chest, showing long taper fingers, which appeared longer on account of the long-trained nails. They sat silent, and had their eyes cast down.

The children were running about entirely naked, except one little girl of six or seven years old, who wore a golden fig leaf, supported by a heavy chain around the hips. This child was more grave than the rest, and stood, during the interview, with one finger in her little mouth, gazing at us strangers in wonder.

The Phya-pi-pat-kosa, stood erect on the dais, and shaking us cordially by the hand, requested us to be seated on its edge along with him. Ramòn lay extended on his knees and elbows, salaming according to custom. The son of our host, a young man of twenty-two, was kneeling in the court, which was lower than the apartment, supporting his arms and chest against the floor of the hall.

Tea was immediately brought, and the minister stated, he wished me to see his niece, whom he had caused to be brought in from the country for this purpose. She was spoken to, and my attention was called to a female of fair proportions, whose arm and hand a statuary might consider as a model, who, in a squat position, managed to move along the matted floor. Her features were regular, and countenance attractive, but a glance showed me that her situation scarcely admitted relief at my hands. She was totally blind, and had been so for nine years. I presumed her age to be twenty, but her uncle assured me it was twenty-seven. I asked him if she were married, whereupon he laughed heartily, saying, "Who would marry a woman without eyes?" which caused a general titter among all the ladies. I explained to the patient, that an operation might be successful in restoring sight, but it was doubtful; and, at any rate, my short stay would prevent me from making any attempt: I, therefore, recommended her to take the advice of Dr. Bradley, a resident American missionary at Bangkok, who is daily employed in acts of benevolent usefulness in behalf of the Siamese. There was a sigh of disappointment, but not a word escaped the patient.

The minister next brought forward a child of two years old, laboring under curvature of the spine, and inquired whether the deformity could be relieved. As in the first case, I referred him to Dr. Bradley. He appeared to be very fond of his children, to judge from the manner in which he caressed them.



Ramón, having witnessed some of my phrenological examinations, related what he had seen, to the Phya-pi-pat-kosa, whose curiosity was awakened, and he requested me to state the character of his son. In this instance, the father declared my remarks were correct; and when I expressed an opinion that the young man was fond of female society, the ladies shouted in approbation.

The interview lasted nearly two hours, during which tea, fruit, sweetmeats and cigars were served. I remarked, that it was considered indecorous and impolite to smoke tobacco in the presence of ladies. "With us," replied the gay minister, "on the contrary, it is the sign of friendship, for your enemy will never allow you to smoke in his face." We now took leave of the "big officer," who shook us most socially by the hand, and invited us to repeat our visit.

The ladies of the better ranks are not actually excluded from sight, but strangers are very rarely permitted to see them. They are much more comely and of a lighter complexion than those commonly met with abroad.

We returned by the same route we had come, Ramón all the way lauding the minister for his goodness, wealth and wisdom.

In the afternoon we made a visit to the Phya-si-pi-pat, who is acting for his brother, the P'hra Klang, or minister of foreign affairs, now absent at Chantibun.

Just at sunset, we landed from our several boats near the house of the first minister, where the band had been stationed to receive us. Along the narrow street as far as the house, there was a crowd of Siamese squatting and gazing upon us in wonder, as we marched on preceded by the music. We found the court yard quite as crowded as the street. From it we were conducted into a lofty and extensive hall, two sides of which were a series of doors, opening upon surrounding verandas. On the right was a partition, or screen, covered with Chinese paintings, and Siamese arms; and to the left was a table, handsomely spread in the European style with fruits, sweetmeats and wines. Along the wall, in front of us, were three dais covered with Persian rugs, and there was a carpet on the floor. The pillars supporting the roof resembled polished marble, but were of wood covered with chunam. The Phya-si-pi-pat reclined on the first dais. He was a fat man, of about fifty, in a sarong of silk. A square pillow of crimson silk, embroidered in gold, supported his right side; and the right arm was extended straight over the edge of the dais, while the left hand grasped the sole of the right



foot, which was turned upwards. The left leg was sufficiently bent to allow the sole to rest upon the rug. In front of him, on the *däis* were a large bowl of water with a cup floating in it, a spittoon, an arecanut and a chunam box, all of gold, and all surmounted by conical covers of crimson paper, figured with gold, together with a gold enamelled tea-kettle, China tea-pot, and gold quivers for cigars, the distinguishing badges and patents of his nobility. A sword-bearer knelt upon his left, bearing a two-handed sword, cased in a crimson velvet scabbard, the hilt of which was set with brilliants; and beside him crouched a fan bearer, exercising the functions of his office.

On the next *däis* was the Phya-pi-pat-kosa, and next to him, another officer of less rank, both attired, and surrounded by the insignia of their respective ranks, agreeing, however, in character with those of the Phya-si-pi-pat.

The hall was illuminated by lamps suspended from the walls and ceiling, reflected by numberless small mirrors. Our band was still playing, a crowd of naked spectators stood outside, and about the floor crouched the numerous menials and inferior officers of the ministers. When we had entered a few steps, the Phya-si-pi-pat stood up on the *däis*, and shook us individually by the hand, and motioned us to seats at the table. As we sat down the music ceased, and the minister resumed his eastern position. A few observations, such as are common on such occasions, were made by Mr. Roberts and the Phya-si-pi-pat.

In a few minutes tea and coffee were served, and then wine. Mr. Roberts proposed, "The health of the king of Siam and his ministers," which was drunk standing, and followed by three cheers, no doubt much to the astonishment of the worthy natives present. Immediately afterwards he gave, "The President of the United States," which was drunk with two cheers; which was universally disapproved of by the officers, because it looked like yielding a degree of rank, and had the toast been distinctly heard, I doubt whether it would not have received a third cheer. After the wine, coconuts with the tops off, containing parched nuts, which add much to the flavor of the milk, and obviate the unpleasant effect which this beverage occasionally has upon the health, were served.

In a short time the company was scattered through the hall in groups, viewing whatever struck them worthy of admiration, or conversing with the officers on there several *däis*. My friend, the Phya-pi-pat-kosa, recognised me by many smiles, and sent me a cup of tea from his own tea-kettle. He asked many questions relative to



health, &c., and complained of pains in his knees, which were hard. The knees and elbows of the Siamese, from constant kneeling, and crouching in the presence of superiors, are hardened like the soles of those persons who go habitually barefoot. This I found to be very common among these people of all grades. When we took leave, he shook my hand in both his; and then, in spite of my teeth, pushed his thumb and finger into my mouth, and there deposited a bolus of spices of most agreeable flavor.

The Phya-si-pi-pat was curious in examining the officers' swords, and by way of contrast exhibited his sword of state; but he appeared much disturbed when one of the officers drew the blade half out of the scabbard, it being contrary to Siamese etiquette, to have naked weapons in the presence of nobles or great men.

When the Prince Momfanoi was on board, he was very particular in the examination of our great guns. In the course of the evening, the Phya-si-pi-pat requested that one of them might be sent up to Bangkok to look at, as they wished to mount some of their own after the same manner. The weight of a thirty-two pounder was, in their opinion, not the slightest objection to granting the request; and though a model was promised, which was afterwards sent, they did not seem to think us obliging.

As a mark of attention, and to testify their gratification upon the occasion of our visit, the minister proposed to entertain us with a dramatic exhibition, and requested to know whether we would like a long or a short play; one of an hour, or one of two, three or four hours; and we pronounced in favor of the long one.

At the end of two hours we took leave; and, issuing out of the house, we found an open way, from the door to the street, through a crowd of squatting Siamese, lighted by torches of sweet-smelling agila wood. Similar torches were held, a few feet apart, all the way to the boats, showing a novel scene, by their dappling light.

A large present of fruit followed us home.



## CHAPTER XXXI.

## SKETCHES IN SIAM.

*April, 1836.*

AMONG the most agreeable hours spent at Bangkok, were those passed in the society of the American missionaries.

Whatever may be our opinions relative to the soundness of the policy under which they act, we cannot fail to accord to them, admiration for their devotedness to the high cause which excites and cheers them in their philanthropic labors. We see them among a race of beings, whose degraded state of knowledge and morals, and whose wretchedness and poverty call hourly for their sympathy and charitable exertions; while the strong passion, which swells every breast, remains controlled in their bosoms—I mean the affection which binds every individual to his own home and hearth-stone—deprived of friends, of congenial society, of many comforts and all the luxuries of life; we behold them, still cheerfully toiling in a cause, the success of which appears to be almost hopeless—at least, the most sanguine now living, cannot expect to see it. While they contend against all these chilling circumstances, they are surveyed and watched by the eyes of individuals whose interests are opposed to the diffusion of knowledge, and the advancement of virtue and religion. And those persons, often their own countrymen, are found in the ranks of the ignorant political rulers, encouraging them to persist in their ignorance, and even to curtail the few privileges the missionaries may have already gained. I am not aware that this is the case in Siam, but in other parts of the world this is generally true. They misconstrue their motives, and most maliciously distort and misrepresent their acts and words. Those persons certainly have not calmly investigated the subject, or they cannot be aware that they are standing in their own light. They will not believe that the march of the christian religion will always be followed closely by intelligence and increase of commerce.



However my opinions may be swayed by philanthropic views, without discussing the question of its intrinsic necessity on the score of religion, I would encourage the christianization of all Asia, Polynesia, and indeed of all the world, because I think it is sound policy. By such a change, commerce must be benefitted. Our merchants, upon a candid investigation of the subject, will probably find their interest in doing all they can in behalf of those pious individuals, who sacrifice the honors of this world, in earning a glorious crown in the next, by attempting to put misbelievers in the path to sound morals, true religion and rational liberty.

To what extent our trade in the East would be augmented by the conversion to christianity of Siam, Cochin-China, China and Japan, it is impossible to conjecture. When the half naked millions of Asia shall attain christianity, and with it, all the new wants which the necessary change in their social condition will produce, the soil of our country, as rich and vast as it is, will be scarcely adequate to supply them. A new and extensive mart must be opened for our manufactures of all kinds, and even the literary will find an increased demand for their labors. Hundreds of ships will spread their sails to the eastward of the cape of Good Hope, destined for the shores of Asia and the isles scattered in the southern ocean, and commerce will pour her wealth, gathered in the old world, into the lap of the new.

Dr. Bradley assisted by his wife, dispenses medical advice and medicines daily, to at least one hundred afflicted Siamese. I spent several hours at their dispensary, and left with feelings of admiration and respect for individuals, who appeared, more in the light of ministering angels of beneficence, than in that of human beings. When I contrasted their present situation with what it must have been in the United States; and viewed their active and incessant labors in behalf of objects more calculated to excite disgust than call forth active pity; the risk of health and life they were daily incurring, I could not help suspecting them of acting under the influence of an enthusiastic zeal, tending rather to retard than advance their cause. Their efforts are too strong, and must defeat themselves: a more leisurely and cautious manner, for the first few years at least, ought to be pursued. Of the truth of this opinion they are inclined to be convinced, but say, "How can we thrust away from us the afflicted who hourly petition our relieving charity?" They are aware that their own unacclimated constitutions are incapable of long enduring so much fatigue: they know from experience, that over zeal has been a rock upon which



many bright prospects of the cause have been wrecked: they know that steady perseverance is likely to achieve more in this, as in every thing else, than interrupted efforts, however strong; yet they pursue the impolitic course, unable to repress the ardent desire of doing good, notwithstanding that "doing good, every day," is contrary to the laws of the land.

I accompanied Dr. and Mrs. Bradley from their humble dwelling, where they have all the little comforts which circumstances allow, to the dispensary, a small floating house on the river. The voyage was made in a sampan of the commonest kind, without shelter from a blazing sun.

We found nearly a hundred individuals crowded under the little veranda, and many, still in their boats, awaiting the doctor's arrival. Among the number was a considerable proportion of talapoins in their yellow robes, and I thought all manifested pleasure at our coming.

The males on the veranda were separated, but a stranger would be unable to distinguish the sexes by their features, and, being aware of this, the doctor, very kindly said, "These are the females, and those the males." The front of the dispensary is divided into two apartments, one occupied by Mrs. Bradley, who dispenses prescriptions to the women, and, where the treatment of a case is continuous, manages the detail, thus leaving Dr. Bradley more time to bestow on new, or more urgent cases. In every instance, the prescription is written on a slip of paper, upon the reverse of which is a text from Scripture, in Siamese, and the patients have acquired the notion, that this is an important part of the treatment. Whether this plan of disseminating the Scriptures be a feasible one I question; seeming very much like exhibiting chippings from the sculptor's chisel as a sample of a fine piece of statuary, or a brick as a specimen of architectural structure. Besides, it may lead to the impression that these texts are spells essential to the cure of disease.

I spent several hours here, and saw many specimens of disease, which I had never before seen: A variety of the affections of the skin which are scarcely known in our country. The diseases of the eye are very numerous, which may possibly arise from constant exposure in the low sampans, to the reflected glare of the sun from the surface of the river. Ulcers of various kinds abound.

I took leave of this scene, and left my best wishes for the philanthropic individuals who are instruments of almost incalculable charity.

On Sunday, the Rev. Charles Robinson delivers a sermon at the



dispensary, in Siamese, which is attended by from one hundred to a hundred and twenty.

On one occasion, I passed nearly a day at the residence of the Rev. Messrs. C. Robinson, and W. Dean, and feel indebted to them for their kindness and attention in showing me many things of interest, as well as for giving me much information. Mrs. Robinson will long be remembered by us with pleasure.

Mr. Dean devotes every afternoon to prescribing for from forty to fifty Chinese patients, many of whom are sailors from the junks trading here, and on Sundays he preaches to a small congregation, in Chinese. He has charge of the Chinese church, consisting of five members, three of whom he baptized. Besides the afternoon patients, he dispenses medicines to about a hundred individuals during the week. Professing but a limited knowledge of the healing art, his most difficult cases are referred to Dr. Bradley.

An idea of the extensive field of his labors among the Chinese in Bangkok may be derived from the following facts. The Chinese population of the city, in 1836, was 400,000; and from thirty to eighty junks, with crews numbering from twenty to one hundred and thirty each, annually visit the port, and remain from February till May or June, arriving in one monsoon and returning in the other. They are chiefly from the island of Hainan, Cantòn, and Leang-Hâe; but their crews, as well as a majority of the Chinese residents of the city, speak the dialect Teo-chew, their native place, a subdivision of the Cantòn province.

Those who have labored here among the Chinese, as missionaries, are Gutzlaff, Tomlin, Abeel, Johnson, and Dean; the latter arrived in July, 1835, and is the only one now at Bangkok.

Two or three schools have been begun here for Chinese children, and one is now in operation; but there is much difficulty in originating and sustaining them, for the reason that the children of the Chinamen here have Siamese, Burman, Laos, and other country women for mothers, whose prejudices are even stronger than those of the Chinese themselves.

The missionaries whose labors are exercised in behalf of the Siamese are the Rev. T. R. Jones, the Rev. Charles Robinson, and Dr. D. B. Bradley. Mr. Jones has prepared some tracts in Siamese, and has commenced the translation of the sacred scriptures. He is, at present, at Singapore, on account of the health of his family, but is expected to return soon.

The residence of the missionaries was moved, soon after their ar-



rival, to its present place, by the Siamese authorities, because, as it was asserted, they were too near the residence of His Magnificent Majesty, who once a year passed that way. Besides, the missionaries were doing good every day, and thereby obtaining too much merit, which was contrary to law, His Magnificent Majesty, himself, not being allowed to "do good" for more than ten days successively.

The missionaries are not certain of permission to remain, for the Siamese are suspicious, and confine them strictly to the city. They applied for leave to visit the ancient capital of Yut'hia, a hundred miles up the river, but were denied. Dr. Bradley visited Chantibun, and, on his return, made a chart, or plan of the river; while copying it, his teacher constantly expressed apprehension of being detected in the act, and thereby incur punishment. They have never had an audience with the king, and the request of Mr. Roberts in their behalf was denied.

Among other matters of interest showed to us by the missionaries were several Siamese books. They consist of a long sheet, folded, alternately, right and left, and some of them are ornamented with paintings, very much after the fashion of illuminated manuscripts, but far inferior in the style of execution. The reader sits on the ground, *à la Turque*, and unfolds the book before him.

Of the Roman Catholic missionaries I learned nothing.

Soon after sunrise, one morning, we entered our sampan with Ramòn, and set off for the Bazaar. In our way along the river we met a number of Talapoins, in small canoes, some of them containing two or three, collecting alms. It strongly reminded me of the beggars I have seen about the kitchen entrances of large hotels, receiving the broken meats of the previous day. The priests of the great Guatama are a filthy race; often the robes upon their backs were not yellow, as they should be, and we may truly say, *ni perro, ni gato del mismo color* could possibly be found.

At this hour the scene on the river is not so busy as later in the day. The Siamese find it more agreeable, on account of the heat of the climate, to pass the night, or a great part of it, in visiting and transacting business. The king usually holds his cabinet councils between sunset and midnight.

We turned into a canal, thronged with boats, among which our gondoliers threaded their way with a skill that at once surprised and pleased us. It is impossible to convey an idea of this singular scene. We landed in front of a wât, whose enamelled roof and gilded spire



were glittering in the morning sun. The architecture is peculiar; particularly the roof, which, in form may be compared to three saddles, placed one on top of the other, diminishing, in size, from the lowest one to the top. The effect is more pleasing than one would imagine, and, from the costliness of the structure, we might infer that religious feeling is very strong in the bosoms of the Siamese.

We passed over one of the high narrow bridges, resembling more what we might expect to find in the wilds of the western world, than a bridge in a metropolis numbering a population of half a million. It consisted of a rough plank, only wide enough for one person to walk upon, supported on lofty posts driven into each side of the stream. In our excursions along the canals, we often passed under similar bridges, many of them fifteen or twenty feet above our heads.

After crossing the bridge, we found ourselves before a row of huts, occupied by Chinese blacksmiths, who were seated beside their anvils, at work; not, however, wielding the huge sledge, with brawny arm, after the fashion of our own vulcans. Throughout the East, the mechanics are seen seated at their various labors. The carpenter, the tailor, the blacksmith, and the votary of St. Crispin alike ply their tools, seated on the ground. The feet of the carpenter are as often employed, as a vice, in holding the wood he is working, as his hands the plane.

Just at this spot there was a crowd of fishing boats, their bows wedging into the shore, and a noisy assemblage of men and women receiving into their baskets quantities of fine fish, all alive. The scene was enlivened by loud exclamation and vituperation, aided by the squalling of children and the barking of lank curs, that testified their displeasure by snarling and growling wherever we appeared. Why is it that fishermen and fishwomen, all over the world, are so given to vociferation?

The walk we were in, along a canal, terminated in a street about twenty feet wide, crossing at right angles, forming the bazaar, which is at least a mile in length. It is paved with large square bricks, which were now covered with slimy ooze. On either side were shops, or stalls, five or six of one kind in a row, alternating with as many more of a different description. Here were five or six tailor shops, and next, as many stalls hung with fat pork; opposite were confectioners, and next them poulterers, the latter passing the time, seated on the ground, picking the pin feathers from dead fowls, with tweezers, making them look very clean, and much better than the plan of singeing followed by our cooks. Next were vegetables and fruits;



and then, perhaps, shops filled with dried ducks, prepared for the use of Chinese seamen. The street was alive with people. Fishermen with their kicking fish, and water-carriers with jars of water, slung from the ends of a bamboo over the shoulders. The purchasers, with their purchases and bags of cowries, all moving in heterogeneous streams, mingling and changing every moment, as they advanced in opposite directions. The hum of the multitude rose on the still air, and the curs barking at us, broke the monotony wherever we went. Then there was the disgust of naked bodies, shining in greasy perspiration, to detract from any thing like romance, with which the imagination might have clothed the scene.

At intervals of two or three hundred yards, the thoroughfare was partly interrupted by a sort of stage, eight or ten feet high, erected in the middle of it, for the exhibition of dramatic spectacles.

Having seen the Bazaar by day, we also paid it a visit at night. It was then much less crowded. Around the stages were knots of individuals, enjoying puppet shows and a sort of diorama, exhibited by Chinese. Then, too, the gambling-houses were open. In front of them were spread tables, around which people were assembled, venturing their cowries, fu-angs, and ticâls, on the throw of the dice, or turning of the cards, by the light of numerous copper lamps, fed with cocoanut oil.

It is probable that similar scenes are witnessed in the towns of the Celestial Empire; for we may suppose, from the great proportion of Chinese in the city, that they have imposed their own manners and customs upon the people, and something of their own style upon the character of the architecture of Bangkok.

On Sunday morning the Phya-si-pi-pat informed us, by an officer, that, if it would be agreeable to us, we might, that evening, witness, at his house, a Siamese play. At once adopting the maxim, *à Rome comme à Rome*, the invitation was accepted.

About seven o'clock, P. M., we proceeded, as on the former occasion, and, following our band, marched from the landing, through a crowd of naked, squatting natives, lighted by great torches, and entered a court-yard, filled with people in similar primitive costume.

We were conducted to a large apartment, the floor of which was broken into three broad steps, and open upon a court, the front being supported by highly polished chunamed pillars. On each of the several broad steps of the floor was a row of sofas and chairs, and, on our right, when facing the court, reclined upon his dâis the Phya-si-pi-pat, surrounded by all the pomp and circumstance of his high



office. The dais was placed near a small door, which opened into an apartment tapestried with crimson silk. The silk curtain which closed the door, and those which shut a small window, with gilded trellis, by its side, were drawn back; and, though there was no lamp within, we perceived, by the reflection of numerous lights suspended in the hall, several females and children, dressed in silks and flashing in jewels, peeping upon the scene. One step below his father reclined the son of the Phya-si-pi-pat.

The court below was covered with fine white matting, and except a clear space in front, presented a mass of half naked human beings on their hands and knees. On either side, at short distances apart, arose lambent flames, which at first sight seemed to proceed from entire barrels of oil; but on closer examination proved to be metal pans, set upon cylinders of bamboo. On the left were about twenty musicians, who began their performance the moment we entered the court. Their instruments were gongs, hautboys, and pieces of wood about a foot long, which were struck together in time with the other instruments, producing altogether a great deal more sound than melody.

The minister received us cordially, and, on taking our seats upon the upper step on a level with him, servants crawling on their hands and knees, placed gold quivers of cigars and lighted tapers at our feet. The representation of a pantomimic drama, entitled the 'Angels' now commenced. The plot seemed to be allegorical and illustrative of some portion of Buddhist religious history. The actors were accompanied in their performance by the band, and a recitative in a squeaking female voice and an occasional chorus, altogether enough 'to split the ears of the groundlings.'

The first scene presented two individuals in close red jackets, which fitted the shape to the hips, where they were joined to short full skirts.

They wore masks, and conical caps terminating in a spire two feet high, and all ornamented with a profusion of tinsel and paint. Besides, they had long metallic-looking nails; in short, they were representing mongrel monkeys. Their first act on entering upon the stage, from a door to the right, was to prostrate themselves before the Phya-si-pi-pat and touch the ground with their heads. Then they enacted a series of antics in the slow time of the minuet, occasionally throwing side somersets rapidly, and again knocking heads. At last they sat down, one on each side of the court, and were succeeded by twelve others, much more gaudily dressed, but in a similar fashion. One half represented ladies, and the other knights; and, if the drama has any influ-



ence upon taste in Siam, long finger nails are considered a mark of great elegance among the beauties of the capital; for the actresses had theirs elongated and turned backwards, by metal appendages, at least three inches in length.

These knights and ladies ranged themselves in two lines, confronting each other, as in a contra-dance, and, in time to the slow music, assumed various attitudes, some of which were very graceful. They now promenaded in circle, and then changed places, the knights touching the ladies' hands, with due regard to their long nails, constantly manifesting by gesticulation, their all-consuming love, which, however, the ladies were slow to accept. At the end of an hour, they took seats *à la Turque* on opposite sides of the stage, to give place to a gallant knight, who, from the energy of his gesture, enacted the part of a challenger. After he had raved his time upon the stage, the ladies and knights again minueted for an hour, and again gave place. A lady now entered followed by a knight in a black mask, whose pursuit she was flying. Whenever he approached, she screamed and very gracefully eluded his grasp. They disappeared. The minuet of twelve was again performed, and, upon assuming their seats, a lighter female figure than any which had yet appeared, and more gaudily attired, entered bearing between her fingers a sparkling ball. She was the angel of light. The black mask soon pursued her, but the sparkling ball had talismanic powers, and he quailed before its flashing light, whenever he approached too near. After essaying in vain against the powers of the talisman, the black knight was encountered by the challenger. Both were armed with short swords. After strutting and motioning defiance at each other for half an hour, while the recitative became more squeaking, vociferating and discordant than ever, and just as we thought their courage had oozed away, they crossed their blades. They made terrible passes at each other, but both were too cunning at fence to be soon overpowered. The challenger fell, and the black knight placed his foot upon the breast of his foe; but he struggled again to his feet, and overthrew the black mask, leaving the spectators to infer that virtue finally triumphs over vice.

The native musicians now brought their instruments in front of us and performed several airs, which were repaid by as many from our band. Their instruments are similar to those of the Javan gamelan which has been already described.

Half an hour after the commencement of the play the Phya-si-pi-pat retired, offering us an apology, the necessity of visiting his Magni-



ficent Majesty. He had no sooner disappeared from amidst his golden badges of nobility and office, than his son filled the place.

The only refreshment offered besides cigars, during the entertainment, was water, served in basins of pure gold, and drunk from cups of the same metal.

We were heartily weary of the three hours' play, long before it was concluded, and at the proper time gladly took leave, and returned as we had come, lighted by torches.

On descending into the court, Piadadè inquired how I liked the actresses. I thought they acted well, and some of us were not a little surprised to be assured they were all males.

Most of the wealthy Siamese nobles entertain a company and a theatre in their own houses, for their private amusement, similar to that just described.

---

## CHAPTER XXX.

### SKETCHES IN SIAM.

*April, 1836.*

THE following morning, the officers were formed into a procession headed by Mr. Roberts, two of them bearing a box, containing the American copy of the treaty, and marched to the river, distant about a hundred yards, preceded by our band. At the place of embarkation, a canoe eighty feet long, rowed by thirty-four oars, both ends curving upwards, awaited to receive it. A bright crimson silk canopy, embroidered in gold, overhung the centre of the canoe, with which all the ornaments of the vessel were in keeping. The rowers wore the red livery of the king.

On reaching the margin of the river, Mr. Roberts took the treaty in his hand, and, after holding it up above his head in token of respect, delivered it to a Siamese officer, the secretary of the P'hra Klang. He also held it above his head, and then, shaded by a royal



chat, a large white silk umbrella, borne by a slave, passed it into the boat, where it was received upon an ornamented stand, and after covering it with a cone of gilt paper, it was placed beneath the canopy. At this moment our band ceased, and that of the Siamese began to play. The canoe shoved off, and we turned our steps homeward to the merry tune of yankee doodle.

Immediately after the conclusion of this curious ceremony of delivering the treaty, I set off, in company with several officers, for Sia-Yut'hia, the residence of the king, situated on an island about two miles from our mission house, and on the opposite side of the river. As we moved along, we saw several toys floating on the stream, which, as we were told, were offerings to the spirits of departed friends.

On landing outside of the wall, enclosing the palace and town, we were conducted to see a huge white elephant. He was dirty and wild, and, from being yet untamed, is called the mad elephant. Each of his legs was secured to a post driven into the ground, and he was attended by three or four slaves. The irides were white.

We passed a gate, which was carefully closed after us, and we found ourselves in a broad street of mean houses, in Sia-Yut'hia, the capital city of the magnificent kingdom of Thai. We followed our conductor, Ramòn, and passed a second wall enclosing a number of buildings, by no means neat in appearance. The principal one, situated in the centre of an open area, is called the Hall of Justice, and resembles an old store-house. The hall of justice is a roof of tiles supported on stout columns of wood without walls. Horizontal shutters of coarse matting, are so contrived that they may be made to exclude the rays of the sun, as they are cast either on one side or the other. The floor is raised about two feet above the ground, and was covered with mats, and along its edge were ranged several brass basins of water, with a drinking cup of the same metal floating in each.

In the enclosure in which the hall stands, there are a number of mounted guns of heavy caliber, each one protected by a kind of weather house.

The day was oppressively hot, and we found the hall of justice an agreeable shelter from the sun. Here we met our friend Piadadè, and about a dozen Siamese. They examined us long and attentively; and some of them were so curious that they actually laid their hands on the uniforms of some of the officers.

Soon after our arrival, a considerable crowd of Siamese gathered around the hall, and presently His Highness, Prince Momfanoi, ap-



peared seated *à la Turque*, on a palanquin, consisting simply of a platform between two poles, shaded by a silk awning supported by four staves. As he approached, the crowd fell upon their elbows and knees. He waved his hand and nodded familiarly to us as he passed, but received the salams of the prostrate hundreds without notice. He was followed by his faithful Sap, bearing the golden tea-kettle, and chunam-box, and a sword-bearer. Although he continued on to another enclosure, all that part of the crowd within the range of the Prince's eye remained prostrate. I followed His Highness, and found him seated on a rude dais in company with one or two nobles, under a ruined roof of bamboo, and the wide-spreading branches of a large tree, which afforded them ample shade. He received us gaily, saying, "This is a better place to sit than the king himself has got, because we have a fresh cool breeze." He was in fine spirits, and invited us to sit and take tea with him, and then a cigar.

Very soon a discordant screech of hautboys, announced the approaching procession, which was kindly got up for the gratification of those officers who were required to return on board ship, before the presentation took place. The Prince laughed heartily, crying, "Go see, go see!" which we readily obeyed, prompted as we were by our curiosity.

A band of a dozen, in red and green uniforms, their cheeks swelled in musical effort, marched onward, closely followed by seven elephants. First, came a huge black, fourteen feet high, then a large white, followed by another much smaller, and four spotted elephants of ordinary size. Beside each one walked a keeper, and several slaves bearing silver salvers, loaded with peeled sugar cane and luscious bananas. The driver sat on the neck of each, in front of the houdah, or saddle-cloth, which was gold. Broad hoops of gold embraced each lusty leg, and jewelled rings glittered on the tusks of the white elephants; and from the ears of all of them, were suspended tails of beautifully white hair.

The pageant wheeled round and halted on one side of the hall of justice. The slaves sat down their salvers before their respective elephants, and we were invited to admire and feed the animals, the possession of which, in the opinion of the Siamese, gives their king pre-eminence above every other monarch in the East.

The small elephant is the beauty of her race. She has a soft white skin, a beautiful chestnut-colored eye, and a most complaisant manner of disposing of sugar-cane and bananas from the hand of the



stranger. The other white elephant is a very much larger animal; but the skin is of a yellowish hue. Both are supposed to be animated by the transmigrated souls of Siamese monarchs.

The spotted elephants are all large. With the exception of the ears and shoulders, which are speckled rather than spotted, their color is dark and uniform. The forehead of each animal is painted black, the outline of which is white, and traces the form of a head-cloth.

The careful keeping and strict attention bestowed upon these elephants, show how highly they are prized. The minute examination and admiration of our party gave visible satisfaction to the keepers, as well as to the crouching multitude around. When we turned away, the procession was again formed, and marched off in the direction it had come.

At the request of Piadadè, we now followed him about a hundred yards, and, passing through a gate, found ourselves in the Wât-P'hra-si-ratanat, or great temple of the king. We were bewildered and dazzled by the splendor of gilt obelisks and temples sparkling in the sun. We stood under a broad corridor, surrounding the whole area, the sides of which are certainly not less than one hundred yards long. The pavement was chunamed, and shone like polished marble. The walls were painted in numerous quaint figures, in bright colors, representing events in the history of Guatama and the magnificent kingdom of Thai. How much did these walls express, had we been able to comprehend their language!

We were hurried to a great temple in the area. The walls were cunningly inlaid with gems, and the roof and cornices were richly gilt and enamelled. We ascended a half dozen steps upon the floor of a magnificent portico. The door of ebony inlaid with ivory, stood open; but a splendid screen hid the interior of the sanctuary. We entered, and were not less dazzled with the view before us, than we had been by that of the outside walls. The ceiling was lofty and curiously carved. A large cut glass chandelier hung from its centre, and many Chinese paintings and lamps were suspended around the walls. A subdued light disclosed the great altar of Boudha, not far from the middle of the temple. Its whole structure is of a pyramidal form, and is about thirty feet high. Two or three wax-tapers were burning at its base, and there was a rug spread before them on the floor. A large lotus plant, at least five feet high, of virgin gold, stood upon the left. Numerous small figures of the god surrounded the richly carved altar, which was surmounted by a



figure of Boudha, two feet high, said to be cut out of a single emerald. This idol has two brilliants, flashing light through the temple, in place of eyes, which cost in Brazil \$20,000. The value of the whole god is inestimable. I doubted its genuineness, but Momfanoi assured me he was positive that it was an emerald, and not a beryl, as I suggested.

We hastened from this temple to a second, smaller in size, designated, I believe, as the queen's wât. In our walk to it, we passed many small figures, scattered through the paved area, among beds of flowers and lotus plants, representing elephants, horses, &c. The wât is white, and of a very chaste architecture. Within are three figures of Boudha, the past, present, and future, in white marble; one seated behind and higher than the other. They were surrounded by diamonds and gems of all kinds, suspended in festoons, in bunches, and a variety of forms.

Between the two wâts is the library of sacred books, called, in the Bali language, Promodop. It is remarkable that in most religions, the priests have shut up the spirit and letter of their faith in some strange or forgotten tongue, and thereby adding to its mysteries, which are always caught at by the vulgar. The exterior form of the library resembles the numerous 'prachadîs' or obelisks within the area of the temple. An ascent of two or three flights of stairs conducted us into a room about eighteen feet square. In the centre stood a prachadî of ebony, inlaid with ivory and mother of pearl, of the exact form of the exterior edifice containing it, and occupying about one-third of the area of the room, the rest of which was covered with a mat of fine silver, wrought of thin bars about a quarter of an inch wide. In this beautiful casket repose the learned dogmas of the false faith of millions.

From this we strolled, almost bewildered, among beds of flowers, and prachadîs, fifty in number, each ornamented by carving, figures of Boudha, and gilding. Aladin's lamp never called up any thing comparable to the Wât-P'hra-si-ratanat, in gorgeous ornament, or display of wealth in gold, in gems and in art. The greatest travellers among us declared its beauties exceeded any thing they had before seen in any part of the world. The first glance was enough to enchant one of his senses. I wandered through the labyrinth, which is no doubt regular though cunningly planned, as one in a dream. The merry brain of a poetic beggar in a state of intoxication might possibly imagine something resembling it in character; but infinite credulity, aided by the most vivid imagination, would scarcely believe



in the existence of such a place, were it described in detail; I had no definite idea of the place an hour after I left it.

There is no one thing in it grand or imposing. It bears no impress of a master genius; yet, there is nothing mean, or inelegant, or untasteful. There are paintings by the best masters of the Chinese schools; there are beds of flowers; pools in stone basins, upon which floats the sacred lotus; gems of all kinds, and of great price; gold in abundance; carving and inlaid work of ebony, and ivory, and tortoise shell; marble;—the impression of a chaos of elegancies rests upon my mind.

To have an idea of this temple it must be seen, but to comprehend its details one should live in it a month. It must be borne in mind, the Siamese are under the belief that their happiness in the next world will be in proportion to the honors they do their god in this, and that this temple is the labor of successive monarchs, bigoted and zealous in their faith, who expended all their talents, and all the nation's gold in its construction.

In our last walk round the corridor we met a young prince of about fourteen. A rich sarong girded his loins, and the rest of his body was almost hidden under jewels; anklets and bracelets of gems surrounded his limbs, and chains of gold, curiously wrought, hung round his neck in profusion. A princess of fewer years accompanied him. She wore a chased fig leaf of gold, and stood, like mother Eve, all naked, but not alone. The complexions of these two individuals were much lighter than those of the numerous male and female servants in their train. They were the fairies of the scene. They stopped to gratify their curiosity by gazing at us, and we imitated them, and returned the compliment. We here received a message from His Magnificent Majesty, expressing his good will to us and all Americans, and a wish that we would examine and look at every thing freely, and without constraint.

We took leave of the temple, fully impressed that it is well worth seeing, but not worth a voyage from Europe or the United States to see; and, after a few minutes' conversation with the Prince, who had been all the while sitting in the shade with his noble friends, returned to our place of sojourn. Our descriptions were cautiously received by those who did not accompany us, but they afterwards declared them to be far short of the truth. For the sake of our veracity, I hope the reader will bear this in mind.

Commodore Kennedy was taken seriously indisposed, and we learned, with regret, that the dreadful disease, Asiatic cholera, had



appeared on board ship, and that a seaman, Daniel K. Thomas, had fallen the first victim. Under these circumstances, I bade farewell to Bangkok, and, early in the day of the 12th of April, set off with the Commodore, in his gig, under a glaring sun, and without a breeze.

At four o'clock, P. M., we landed at Paknam, after a sultry pull of seven hours. The governor was sulky, and seemed to think he had already seen enough of us. I charged him with insolence, and delivered him a letter from the acting P'hra Klang, enjoining him, at the peril of his shoulders and head, to treat us with all the attention and hospitality in his power. He at once apologized for the reception he had given us, on the plea of indisposition, and ordered supper, which was mean in the extreme, consisting of rice, fried fish, and boiled duck eggs, all cold.

The Commodore retired to his mat, overcome by the fatigues of his journey and indisposition, and I, after insisting that a better supper should be furnished, sought repose on a bamboo settee, while His Excellency sat doggedly smoking his long pipe. He is subject to frequent corporeal castigation for his petty delinquencies, and receives the paltry salary of eighty ticâls (\$53 33 $\frac{1}{3}$  cents) per annum; so that he literally gets "as many kicks as half pence," though deserving many more of the former.

Before sunset, a party of officers, that had left the city before us, arrived. The servants now bustled about, and set a table, under the superintendence of an interpreter, who professed to be well skilled "in custom of Europe gentleman." He was an active, officious, half caste Portuguese, in a dirty sarong, and a beggar withal. After the table was spread, he reviewed it very carefully, and, to give the whole a proper polish, as well as to enhance his own qualifications in our eyes, commenced wiping out the tumblers with his naked fingers, which had been last applied to scratching his own sweaty skin. He was reprimanded for this proceeding, showed much contrition for his error, and retrieved himself, gathered from the floor pieces of waste paper, which had enveloped tobacco or cigars, and began anew to clean the soiled glasses. In spite of disgust, we could not but laugh at his notion of "custom of Europe gentleman."

We had fallen very much in the estimation of the people of Paknam, and even the servants were disposed to be disrespectful. A young slave, on being directed to bring fire to light a cigar, flung the match across the floor at my feet.

With these people a positive, and almost imperative manner is the most successful. If intercourse be attempted, on an equal footing, they become arrogant, and, consequently, insolent.



At daylight, next day, we left Paknam, and reached the ship at ten o'clock, A. M., and, the same day, another party of officers set out for the city.

Though a second individual had died of cholera, (William Waggoner, marine,) it was very satisfactory to find the epidemic had abated. Soon as it had made its appearance on board, the ship was got under way, and kept close hauled upon a wind, and, her sides being alternately offered to the breeze, was thus kept thoroughly ventilated. Though all the cases on the list wore the type of cholera, cold shrivelled surface, with blue nails, no new case occurred, nor did any one terminate fatally after the ship was under way. The disease prevailed at Chantibun, epidemically, about a hundred miles from the anchorage, and sporadically at Bangkok. No cases occurred on board of the *Enterprise*.

---

## CHAPTER XXXI.

### SKETCHES IN SIAM.

*April, 1836.*

ON the 12th of April, Mr. Roberts had an interview with the rajah or king of Lagor, who had been appointed by His Magnificent Majesty, to settle the important matter of affixing the regal seals to the Siamese copy of the treaty exchanging, as well as to the certificate of ratification.

The rajah is the monarch or rather viceroy of Lagor, a tributary state to Siam, situated on the Malay Peninsula. The object of his present visit to Bangkok, was to assist at a funeral ceremony, which took place eight days before our arrival. Six months ago the only legitimate son of the king died; and, according to the Siamese custom—and “old custom,” with them is as binding as law—the body was embalmed, and recently committed to the funeral pile.\* So im-

\* The process of embalming is fully described in Finlayson's “Mission to Siam and Hué.” London, 1826.



portant was this ceremony, that all the tributary princes and governors of the empire were summoned on this occasion by his Magnificent Majesty.

On landing, Mr. Roberts was met by the king of Lagor, seated on a palanquin, consisting of a cushioned seat, borne on two poles, with his bare legs hanging down on each side. He was followed by many attendants, one of them bearing a large silk umbrella over his head. So soon as the interpreter came up, the king offered an apology for not inviting Mr. Roberts to his house, at the same time requesting his company on board of his junk. His house was merely a bamboo shed, and preferring to spend his time in his own country, he will not build himself a palace, as he has been urged to do, because, so long as he has none, he ever has a ready excuse for making brief visits. He is short and fleshy, and possesses an agreeable countenance and polite manners. He is sixty-one years of age, a talented minister and the oldest courtier in Siam.

The sword of Mr. Taylor attracted his attention, and he requested permission to examine it, and for the purpose put on his spectacles. He regretted that no business could be transacted that day, and hoped, Mr. Roberts would not be angry for causing him so much unnecessary trouble.

While on board of the junk, tea was served in earthen pots, and drunk from porcelain cups without saucers. A tea pot and cup were placed before each person present, on a salver of pure gold, set with precious stones. Water basins and cups, chunam box and spittoons of fine gold, were borne on salvers of the same metal. Fruit and confectionary were presented on salvers six feet in circumference, with pedestals two feet high, of richly embossed silver. Silver spoons and forks were on the several dishes from which they were expected to help themselves, without using a separate plate. The king was very polite, and often helped his guests with his own hands.

At eight o'clock the following morning, Mr. Roberts, accompanied by Mr. Taylor, again waited on the Rajah on board his junk. They were received by the Rajah's eldest son, a young man of twenty-two, who entertained them with tea, eggs, &c., in the same style as on the preceding day. The Rajah soon made his appearance, and stated that the royal seal of Siam could be affixed only to the certificate of ratification. Mr. Roberts replied, that the king in the preamble, had promised to affix his seal to the articles of the treaty, and he would therefore unquestionably do so; and that it was indispensably neces-



sary to the certificate; for the treaty could not be considered as ratified without it. After some discussion, the Rajah unwillingly yielded the point, and declared it should be completed in accordance with Mr. R—'s wishes.

One of the secretaries requested a list of the officers who had visited the Wât-P'hra-si-ratanat a day or two previous, that it might be entered on the archives of the government.

The curiosity excited by the officers among the Siamese was almost unrestrainable. We were frequently felt of from head to foot, and to-day the Rajah had his hands in Mr. Taylor's pockets, while, at the same time, his son had rolled up his pantaloons to feel of his boot-leg. The Rajah, his son and two grand-children, wore, round their waists, besides the sarong, cream-coloured crape shawls of beautiful texture. The Siamese, like the Chinese, wear the finger nails very long, and the ladies have them sometimes tipped with silver.

About eleven o'clock, Momfanoi, accompanied by another prince and a medical practitioner, on their way to visit his priestly brother, who was unwell, appeared on board. The Rajah left his seat, and knelt upon the deck during the visit, and Momfanoi assumed the vacated place. The prince was pleased to say, on this occasion, that the swords, the genuineness of which had been doubted at first, as he remarked, only by "small officers," however, had been tested by the king's assayer, and were pronounced to be good gold. This doubt had arisen from an appearance of verdigris at a point in the brazing, and from their light color. The Siamese use no alloy in their manufactured gold, which is very fine and of a very deep color, almost orange. The prince who accompanied Momfanoi, though on terms of intimacy and in the boat sitting on the same seat with him, so soon as he got on board the junk, made his obeisance in form, and took a seat a little above the Rajah. The costume of both was simple, but costly. The under garment was of purple silk with a highly embroidered edge, over which was an exquisite scarf. When they took leave, the Rajah resumed his seat.

At one o'clock, P. M., a dinner consisting of soups, curries, cutlets, ducks, chickens and pork, with fruit and sweatmeats, was served up in gold and silver. There were twenty-six dishes for three persons, and no fewer than fifty-four gold vessels were used in the entertainment. There was no ostentation or seeming attempt at display; all appeared to be a matter of every day occurrence. The hospitable old Rajah forced upon the plates of his guests, litchis, from



China and 'Romania,' a fruit resembling a date. He sat quietly the while chewing his betel, but occasionally got upon the table, that he might the more readily assist and point out to his guests those articles he himself liked most. While arranging the dishes, the servants did not hesitate to mount the table and walk about upon the cloth. Before dinner was over, Momfanoi again visited the junk, when the same ceremonies as on his first visit were enacted; and after his departure the Rajah again took his seat.

At the end of nine hours the certificate of ratification, in Siamese, Chinese, Portuguese and English, was ready to be appended to the treaty. The same labor would have been performed in the United States, or Europe, in one-third of the time.

On the same evening Mr. Roberts waited on the acting P'hra Klang, to discuss a difficulty which had arisen, under the third article of the treaty, relative to the measurement of the brig Maria Theresa. Mr. Roberts stated that the officers of the government had measured from outside to outside of the vessel, instead of the deck. The P'hra Klang insisted that such was the manner of measuring both Siamese and Chinese junks, the decks of which extend between the timbers. Mr. Roberts remarked, that the treaty had reference only to American built vessels. The P'hra Klang replied, it was, "an old custom, and therefore could not be altered." Mr. Roberts observed, then he should recommend the captain to protest at home against the violation of the treaty, which would be referred to the government at Washington, and result in an unpleasant controversy between the two countries. But as nothing could be decided without reference to the king, Mr. Roberts took leave and visited him on another occasion.

The minister appeared to be inflexible. Mr. Roberts then stated, that unless American vessels were measured in conformity to the third article of the treaty, it would become his duty to make it known forthwith to the government of the United States, and added, that the Captain of the Maria Theresa would certainly protest against such departure from the treaty. During the day the brig had been measured, but Mr. Roberts had not been informed of it until after this discussion.

The captain and supercargo were now sent for, and stated, the vessel had been measured, by taking half her length, and at that point, to ascertain her breadth of beam. The deck was there measured across from one water-way seam to the other, entirely omitting the water-ways, and taking in only a part of the gunwale, which mode was so favorable as to lessen the duties in the amount 170 ticâls. The P'hra Klang asked whether they were satisfied with the mode



of measurement. They replied, "Entirely so." "Then," said the P'hra Klang, "I am glad all difficulties have been surmounted; this shall be the precedent for measuring all American vessels in future."

The sixteenth of April had been appointed, four or five days previously, for admitting the American Embassy to an audience with the king. The day was oppressively hot, the thermometer in an airy apartment, standing at 98° F. It was calm, and not a breath ruffled the tranquil bosom of the river. It was like a stream of molten gold, stirred only by numerous gondolas, skimming with feathery lightness over its bright surface. Many had been called forth to view the passing procession, and many crowded the verandas of the floating houses, though no "Morning Herald," or "Evening Post," circulates the news through this vast population; they seemed to be aware of the event from instinct.

At nine o'clock, accompanied by twenty-two officers from the squadron, in full dress, and the master and supercargo of the *Maria Theresa*, Mr. Roberts embarked in three gondolas, each rowed by thirty oars. Though permission had been granted for the gentlemen of the *Maria Theresa*, the request of Mr. Roberts in behalf of the American missionaries was refused, on the ground that it was not according to Siamese custom.

The boats proceeded at a rapid rate, our band making the still air resound with "Hail Columbia," and we all wondered at the crowds of spectators who awaited our landing. Orderlies armed with rattans and bamboos, which were not spared on the naked backs of the Siamese, were constantly active in making way for the procession.

On entering the first gate, they found a number of fleet ponies, caparisoned in the eastern style, and each attended by two grooms. The scene was as novel to the animals as to the American officers; and they testified their impatience by kicking their mettlesome heels merrily among the crowd. Here the procession was joined by several Arabs, Persians and Jews, in the rich costumes of their respective countries. After some little delay, arising from selecting horses, the company was mounted, the short stirrups bringing the knees almost to the chin, and made way through the multitude to the second gate, where the officers left their swords, it being contrary to etiquette to appear armed in the presence of Siamese royalty.

They were received in the Hall of Justice by the Phya-pi-pat-kosa, who was, as usual, full of life and conversation. Water, betel and cigars were offered. While waiting for the king to signify his readi-



ness to receive them, they found time to discover a large green snake coiling itself among the tiles of the Hall, over their heads. Lizards and ge-kôs were numerous. The Siamese expressed their astonishment that such trifles should attract attention; habit makes men indifferent to the most loathsome objects.

At the second gate, files of soldiers encumbered with uniforms of red and green, and arms, which they could scarcely manage, amounting to several thousands, lined the various avenues. The bayonets were fixed with the scabbards upon them. The artillery were armed with sheathed broad-swords, and stood with the hand upon the hilt, ready to draw. Pikemen and clubmen also appeared in the military array. Whoever has seen at any large theatre, a grand army, badly drilled, may imagine the Siamese troops, and conceive what genuine "food for powder," they would make before a handful of disciplined troops.

At this gate the band was compelled to await the return of the embassy.

At the Hall of Justice, the elephants were paraded as on a former occasion. The crowd was great, but whenever they encroached beyond bounds, they were at once severely repulsed by the rattan. At the end of a half hour, the procession again moved forward through two other gates. The number of troops was here much augmented, and near the palace, was a body armed with shields and swords. On each side of the path, along which the procession advanced, were ranged three hundred musicians in double files, screeching out on hautboys and beating on tom-toms, producing a most percussive monotony. Here the walks became broader. The eye now and then caught a glimpse of a rich building, or spire glittering in the sun, through the foliage of the trees and shrubbery planted in the enclosures.

The exterior of the audience hall is not very remarkable. It has three entrances on each side, the doorways are ornamented with carving and Boudhist divinities, and within stood screens, painted in quaint devices, which conceal the interior.

The extent of the audience chamber is thirty-five by seventy feet. The middle of the floor, about one-half of the whole width, is raised eighteen inches above the rest, leaving a sort of lobby on each side, equal to one-fourth of the breadth of the whole room, and extending its entire length. A row of six pillars, three feet square, stood on each edge of the middle floor. The walls, ceiling, and pillars, were hung with red gilt paper, and the floors were carpeted. Chandeliers



and lamps of various patterns were suspended from the ceiling, and numerous Chinese paintings and mirrors adorned the walls. From a central point, the floor gently rises in an inclined plain up to the throne, at the farthest end of the apartment. The throne itself is about six feet high, and large enough for one man to sit upon cross-legged; it is of gold, or richly gilt, and ornamented with diamonds and other precious stones. Behind it is a piece of ornamental architecture resembling an altar. A royal chat, an umbrella having five tops, one above the other, and diminishing in size, shades the monarch's seat; and on each side, extending to the pillars, were six other chats or chattahs, arranged so as to form an arc, which separates the king and court.

Mr. Roberts and his companions entered the middle door of the front of the hall, and, passing round the screen, found themselves in the presence of his Magnificent Majesty, and the royal court of the magnificent kingdom of Thai. His Majesty, a plump fat man of about fifty, sat like the god Boudah, cross-legged upon his throne, enveloped in a rich mantle of gold tissue, chewing betel, and squirting saliva into a golden urn. Numerous attendants prepared his betel, and with large fans circulated the air about his Majestic Obesity, as he sat in the pomp and circumstance of state.

Except a long space, eight feet wide, in front of the throne, the whole floor was covered by nobles, courtiers and magnates of the land, in silk and gold costume, the fashion of which, was a long tight jacket with short skirts, somewhat resembling the cut of an ancient coat of mail. There were several Arabs and Persians present, in rich Cashmere shawl turbans, contrasting their splendid statures with the squat forms of the Siamese; and their expressive countenances, strongly marked by the jetty whisker and antimony-shaded eye, outshone them in intelligence. Perhaps three hundred individuals composed this goodly company; every one crouching upon his knees and elbows, and the head bent upon the ground. The hall admitted only a subdued light. Jewels appeared to advantage, and the diamonds and carbuncles on the king's person glittered and flashed all around like miniature lightning.

It was particularly remarked by several officers, that, notwithstanding the stipulation that our officers should not appear, in the presence, armed, being contrary to court etiquette, many of the Siamese wore swords.

Such was the spectacle, hall and court presented when the American embassy passed the screen. There they removed their hats,



and, as they advanced to the open alley above mentioned, made three bows according to previous agreement. At the lowest end of this alley, at a great distance from the throne, they sat down upon the carpet, carefully turning their feet behind, that His Magnificent Majesty might not be shocked by the sight of those lowly, booted members; for they did not consent, like the Anglo-Bengal mission under Mr. Burney, to leave their shoes outside and appear barefoot, at the risk of finding, as he did, that they had been stolen.

Previous to his audience with the king in 1833, when negotiating the treaty which was now being concluded, Mr. Roberts positively refused to take off his shoes to enter the presence, except on the condition, that he should keep on his hat. After a great deal of discussion, the condition was agreed to, and he was the first foreigner who, with his shoes on, saw his Majesty of Siam.

After being seated in this novel, and therefore somewhat uncomfortable position, they made three Siamese salams, and the whole court knocked their heads three times on the ground; and His Magnificent Majesty expressed his satisfaction by squirting saliva into the golden spittoon, and renewing his quid of betel and arecanut.

In front of the mission were displayed a part of the presents brought by Mr. Roberts, the whole being too bulky for such a pageant. Immediately after the salams were performed, a low, murmuring sound arose from behind the throne, which, the interpreter stated, proceeded from the king's secretary, reading the list of presents from the government of the United States to His Magnificent Majesty.

This over, the king addressed to Mr. Roberts several questions, which were filtered through three interpreters or secretaries. One crouched near the throne, and repeated, in a low tone, His Majesty's words to another, more than half way down the hall, who repeated them in a still lower tone to Piadadè, the interpreter, who, being crouched near Mr. Roberts, whispered the sentence in his ear. The replies were made through the same medium in the same manner.

When the king finishes his question, the secretary makes three salams and mentions the king's titles before he repeats to the second, and he goes through the same ceremony to the third. The answer begins with three salams from the interpreter, who repeats a string of titles, "P'hra, Putie, Chucka, Ka, Rap, Si, Klau, Si, Kla, Mom, Kâ P'rah Putie Chow," Mr. Roberts, "Ka P'hra Râchâ, Tan, Krap, Thun, Hie, Sap, Thi, Fa, La, Ong, Thule, P'hra, Bat;" then follows the answer and three salams. As this form is invariable, it may be



readily conceived how slow and fatiguing intercourse with His Majesty must be. Nor is one certain that his expressions or words are faithfully conveyed to the "golden ear." Mr. Robert Hunter told me, that some years ago, he had an audience with the king, who inquired whether he was not then making a great deal of money, in his business. Mr. Hunter replied, that at first he had done very well, but for the past year he had lost a great deal. The interpreter conveyed the answer thus; "Mr. Hunter made money very fast, the first years, but the last, he has not made so much." When Mr. Hunter explained the difference he had made in the answer, the interpreter replied, that he dared not tell His Magnificent Majesty any thing so unpleasant as to say, "Mr. Hunter had actually lost money!"

A similar incident occurred in the present audience. The king stated that the Americans were on a footing with the English, which Mr. Roberts denied; saying, that such was not the spirit of the treaty. The secretary nearest the king translated the reply; that Mr. Roberts *admitted it, and was very much obliged to His Majesty.* Mr. Hunter, who was present, informed Mr. Roberts of the misinterpretation. He repeated what he had first said, which was then correctly rendered.

During the interview, the king inquired after the health of the President, after that, of "all the great men of the United States," that of the crews of the Peacock and Enterprise; when they left America; where they had been; what had been Mr. Roberts' state of health in the three years he had been absent from Siam, &c.

At the expiration of three quarters of an hour, a sharp metallic sound was heard, and the audience was closed by drawing a curtain of silk and gold across the hall, in front of the throne, hiding His Majesty from view. The embassy then made three salams, and the whole court bent their heads three times to the floor.

During the audience water and betel were served. As the chamber was open, swallows flew in and out, and occasionally alighted on the chandeliers.

The gentlemen were now conducted to see His Majesty's stud, several elephants, and, last, the Wât, which has been already described.



## CHAPTER XXXII.

## SKETCHES IN SIAM.

*April, 1836.*

THE eighteenth of April had been appointed for the delivery of the copy of the treaty, ratified on the part of Siam. The barge of ceremony in which we had come from the ship was ready to return. Owing to a superstitious notion of the Siamese, that it would bring misfortune upon any house, into which it should enter, after being delivered into our hands, the treaty was to be received on board the vessel, and not landed again, on any account, as such an act would be the cause of distress in many minds.

About one o'clock P. M., Mr. Roberts was informed that the golden barges of the king were in sight. Accompanied by the officers in full dress and the band, he repaired to the vessel of ceremony, where he found the Phya-pi-pat-kosa had already arrived. There were three long barges, richly gilt, decorated with pennons, and each rowed by one hundred oars. The curtains were of cloth of gold with scarlet ground. That which bore the treaty led the van. The treaty was in a box, covered with coarse yellow silk interwoven with gold. This was placed on a silver dish, which rested on a salver with a high foot of the same metal. Over it hung a scarlet canopy, itself shaded by a royal chat. The scarlet uniforms of the men, and the measured stroke of their hundred oars; the flaunting banners, the music of their pipes and drums, and the glitter of gold and silver in the sun, formed a pretty pageant, and indicated with what scrupulous ceremony every thing is conducted at the Magnificent Court of Siam.

As the casket was raised, the Siamese band played plaintively and soft. The Phya-pi-pat-kosa conveyed it to Mr. Roberts, at the same time making a salam, to the royal seal, attached to the treaty. Mr. Roberts received it, and, in respect to the king, raised it as high as



his head, at the same time our band struck up "Hail Columbia." He then placed it upon a stand which had been provided, and deposited it in the cabin of the junk of ceremony.

Speedy preparations were now made for leaving Bangkok. Mr. Roberts, in his private capacity, signed a memorial to the Chao Phya P'hra Klang from the missionaries, praying that sufficient ground might be allotted to them, whereon to erect a church and suitable dwellings, with permission to appropriate a part as a place of sepulture, the same having been granted to the Portuguese Roman Catholics, Mussulmans, Chinese, and others.

Before leaving the house wherein the embassy was lodged, the Phya-Ratsa-pa-vade paid a farewell visit, attended by a numerous retinue. He expressed a strong feeling in behalf of Americans, and requested Mr. Roberts to furnish American ship-masters coming to Siam with letters to him, that he might, to the best of his abilities, facilitate their business. He assured Mr. Roberts, that he was entirely disinterested, and would receive no compensation for any service he might render. To manifest his regard for Mr. Roberts, he presented him with several toys for his children, but Mr. Roberts would receive no present *for himself* from any individual of the court.

In the evening Mr. Roberts paid a final visit to the Phya-si-pi-pat, and met there the Phya-pi-pat-kosa. He was entertained by a band of amateur musicians, playing singly and in concert, on instruments resembling guitars, hautboys, &c. It was stated, that the Siamese use more than a hundred different musical instruments.

At midnight, the embassy being concluded, the junk of ceremony weighed anchor, and was towed by three galleys, assisted by the ebb tide. At noon the next day, they anchored at Paknam; and at midnight again got under way, and reached the ship about noon, on the twentieth of April.\*

Of the history of Siam, we have been able to collect very little information. It appears to have early attracted the attention of commercial adventurers from Europe, and as early as 1610, an English factory was established at Bangkok, by Captain Middleton, which subsisted for some years; but it appears to have been withdrawn subsequent to 1623, when the King of Siam, and the English at Jacatrà

\* For a history of the events which transpired at Bangkok, after my departure from that city on the 12th of April, I am indebted to Mr. Roberts, and to Mr. Wm. Rogers Taylor, of the Navy, who kindly placed their journals in my hands.



were in correspondence. In 1662, the king expressed a desire that the English should settle a factory in his dominions, though the Dutch had at that time a large commercial intercourse with Siam, lading their forty ships yearly. In 1664, they quarrelled with the king, and the next year, threw obstructions in the way of the English trade in those seas, which was the chief object, that provoked their jealousy and resentment. The settling of a factory was, under these circumstances, deferred, although, it is stated, about this time the nation was in high favor with the King of Siam, who gave them a recommendation to the Emperor of Japan, whose sister he had married. The subject was resumed in 1671, and the directors of the English company approved the proposal of establishing a factory at Bangkok, if practicable. In 1674, the king renewed his overtures for an English factory in his dominions, which was accordingly established in 1676, with the view of eventually opening a trade with Japan. At the commencement of this intercourse great expectations were formed of the tin trade of Siam, which was then almost exclusively in the hands of the Dutch; and it was thought that the Siam trade generally would prove more beneficial than even that of Japan. That country was also considered capable of affording a market for a great quantity of broad-cloth; and the English agent at Bantam, wrote to the King of Siam, recommending to him the encouragement of a broad-cloth trade, as necessary to the maintenance of an English factory in his dominions. In 1679, it was discovered that Siam itself consumed but little broad-cloth; the sale of that commodity depending on China and Japan; it was therefore decided the next year, to recall the factory from Bangkok. But in 1683, and 1684, it was resolved to re-establish it, the station being favorable to the prosecution of a Japan trade, in which great hopes were indulged. Accordingly, Sir John Child, in 1685, addressed a letter to the Prime Minister of Siam, explaining the difference between the Company's servants and private traders, concerning which some misunderstandings had arisen. Another letter was afterwards addressed to the king. It was observed, that this prince was favorably disposed towards foreigners, and that Siam was a place of considerable commerce; and therefore, the Company's former losses were to be attributed to mismanagement, and the malignity of the prime minister, Constantine Faulcon.

In 1687, an insurrection of the Macassars took place at Bangkok, by which the country was thrown into confusion, and the prime minister narrowly escaped. The Macassarese were all destroyed. The



Company's losses arising out of the troubles, as appears from a letter from the President of Fort St. George to the King of Siam, dated in 1687, amounted to £65,000, for which satisfaction was demanded, or war would be declared. The next year there was a massacre at Bangkok. The Company were also advised that six French men-of-war, with 1,400 soldiers had arrived to assist the king, and that Constantine Faulcon had been made a Count of France.

In 1705, the Governor of Fort St. George addressed a letter to the King of Siam, desiring a renewal of former friendship, which had been interrupted by the ambitious minister. In 1712, the P'hra Klang invited them to make a settlement, offering the same facilities as had been granted to the Dutch. At this time, however, Siam appears to have been in a state of internal disorder, and to have continued so for many years afterwards.\*

In 1822, the Anglo-Bengal government despatched a mission to Bangkok, under Mr. Crawford, accounts of which were published by him, and by Mr. Finlayson, both of which have already been referred to. Mr. Crawford formed a treaty of amity and commerce, which is probably advantageous to English trade. In 1833, the government of the United States sent an agent to the capital of Siam, who succeeded in negotiating a treaty, which was ratified by both governments, and exchanged in April, 1836.

As early as 1672, the Siamese evinced a very friendly disposition towards the French, and particularly towards Louis XIV., which is attributed to the labors of some French missionaries who visited Bangkok about that time.

At this period, a Greek, or, some say, an Italian adventurer of restless and ambitious spirit, named Constantine Faulcon, had so crept into the sovereign's favor as to be appointed P'hra Klang. Forgetting himself in his prosperity, the minister aspired to wear the crown, and circumstances seemed to countenance a hope of his success. Opportunity brings out the scoundrel: many a villain has probably died with a reputation for virtue, simply because he has never been lured to vice by circumstances, offering an easy accomplishment of his wishes for wealth and aggrandizement. The Prince was weak, valetudinary, and without posterity, and his minister ruled him, as well as his people, despotically. He formed a project for succeeding to the crown, and, it appears, he afterwards treated of dethroning his benefactor. For the execution of his plan, he fancied

\* Asiatic Journal for 1822.



he could make use of the French, and, in 1684, sent ambassadors to France, offering to the monarch the alliance of his master, and to the French merchants the ports of Siam.

The haughty genius of Louis XIV. drew advantages from this embassy. His flatterers persuaded him that his glory was so universal that it attracted to him the homage of the East. He despatched a squadron, with Jesuits and merchants, and a treaty was concluded between the two kings, the French ambassadors acting under the instruction of Father Tachard. The company anticipated great advantages from their establishment; and their hopes were not without foundation.

In the sixteenth century, numbers of ships visited the roads of Siam, from eastern Asia, when agriculture, mining, and manufacturing flourished. Soon afterwards, despotism grew to its full height, and, consequently, the affairs of the kingdom fell into confusion and languor. In this condition of decay, the French found the country on their arrival; it was very poor, without arts, and subject to a despot. The little costly merchandise used in the court, and in the houses of the opulent, was from Japan; the Siamese had taken the manufactures of that country into exclusive favor, and maintained a high respect for the Japanese.

It was difficult to change their opinions in this respect, however necessary it was to do so to effect the sale of French goods. If any thing were likely to bring about such a change, it was preaching the christian doctrines, which the missionaries had done with some success; but the Jesuits were too much attached to Faulcon, and abused their favor at court; they became odious, and the odium fell upon the religion itself. The people, and particularly the Talapoins, were shocked that they should erect churches before there were converts enough to require them.

The French had conceded to them the fort at the mouth of the Meinam, and possessed many advantages, which, had they been properly managed, might have led to many others. It was an opening to the trade of Ava, Pegu, and Laos, but the company's factors and officers, their troops and the Jesuits did not perceive it. Finally, they became so closely connected with Faulcon, and, lending him their aid, that, when the minister fell, just as he was to perpetrate his designs, they were dragged to ruin, and the fortresses of Bangkok garrisoned by the French, were wrested from them by this indolent and cowardly people.\*

\* *Establecimientos Ultramarinos.* Madrid, 1786.



## TREATY OF AMITY AND COMMERCE

BETWEEN HIS MAJESTY, THE MAGNIFICENT KING OF SIAM, AND  
THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.

His Majesty, the Sovereign and Magnificent King in the city of Sia-Yut'hia, has appointed the Chao Phaya P'hra-klang, one of the first ministers of the state, to treat with Edmund Roberts, Minister of the United States of America, who has been sent by the government thereof, on its behalf, to form a treaty of sincere friendship and entire good faith between the two nations. For this purpose the Siamese and the citizens of the United States of America shall, with sincerity, hold commercial intercourse in the ports of their respective nations as long as Heaven and Earth shall endure.

This treaty is concluded on Wednesday, the last of the fourth month of the year 1194, called Pi-marong chatava-sok, (or the year of the dragon,) corresponding to the twentieth day of March, in the year of our Lord, 1833. One original is written in Siamese, the other in English; but, as the Siamese are ignorant of English, and the Americans of Siamese, a Portuguese and a Chinese translation are annexed, to serve as testimony to the contents of the treaty. The writing is of the same tenor and date in all the languages aforesaid: it is signed, on the one part, with the name of the Chao Phaya P'hra-klang, and sealed with the seal of the lotus flower of glass; on the other part it is signed with the name of Edmund Roberts, and sealed with a seal containing an eagle and stars.

One copy will be kept in Siam, and another will be taken, by Edmund Roberts, to the United States. If the government of the United States shall ratify the said treaty, and attach the seal of the government, then Siam will also ratify it on its part, and attach the seal of its government.

ARTICLE I. There shall be a perpetual peace between the United States of America and the Magnificent King of Siam.

ART. II. The citizens of the United States shall have free liberty to enter all the ports of the kingdom of Siam, with their cargoes, of whatever kind the said cargoes may consist; and, they shall have liberty to sell the same to any of the subjects of the king, or others, who may wish to purchase the same, or barter the same for any produce or manufactures of the kingdom, or other articles that may be found there. No prices shall be fixed by the officers of the king on the articles to be sold by the merchants of the United States, or the merchandise they



may wish to buy: but the trade shall be free on both sides to sell, buy or exchange, on the terms and for the prices the owners may think fit. Whenever the said citizens of the United States, shall be ready to depart, they shall be at liberty so to do, and the proper officers shall furnish them with passports, provided always, there be no legal impediment to the contrary. Nothing contained in this article shall be understood as granting permission to import and sell munitions of war to any person excepting the king, who, if he does not require, will not be bound to purchase them; neither is permission granted to import opium, which is contraband; or *to export rice, which cannot be embarked as an article of commerce.* These only are prohibited.

ART. III. Vessels of the United States entering any port within His Majesty's dominions, and selling or purchasing cargoes of merchandise, shall pay, in lieu of import and export duties, tonnage, license to trade, or any other charge whatever, a measurement duty, as follows:—The measurement shall be made from side to side, in the middle of the vessel's length, and if a single decked vessel on such single deck; if otherwise, on the lower deck. On every vessel selling merchandise, the sum of one thousand seven hundred *ticàls* or *bats* shall be paid for every Siamese fathom in breadth so measured; the said fathom being computed to contain seventy-eight English or American inches, corresponding to ninety-six Siamese inches: but if the said vessel should come without merchandise, and purchase a cargo with specie only, she shall then pay the sum of fifteen hundred *ticàls* or *bats*, for each and every fathom before described. Furthermore, neither the aforesaid measurement duty nor any other charge whatever shall be paid by any vessel of the United States that enters a Siamese port for the purpose of refitting, or for refreshments, or to inquire the state of the markets.

ART. IV. If hereafter the duties payable by foreign vessels be diminished in favor of any other nation, the same diminution shall be made in favor of the vessels of the United States.

ART. V. If any vessel of the United States shall suffer shipwreck on any part of the Magnificent King's dominions, the persons escaping from the wreck shall be taken care of, and hospitably entertained, at the expense of the king, until they shall find an opportunity to be returned to their country, and the property saved from such wreck shall be carefully preserved and restored to its owners:—and the United States will repay all expenses incurred by his majesty on account of such wreck.

ART. VI. If any citizen of the United States coming to Siam for



the purpose of trade shall contract debts to any individual of Siam, or if any individual of Siam shall contract debts to any citizen of the United States, the debtor shall be obliged to bring forward and sell all his goods to pay his debts therewith. When the product of such bonâ fide sale shall not suffice, he shall be no longer liable for the remainder; nor shall the creditor be able to retain him as a slave, imprison, flog or otherwise punish him, to compel the payment of any balance; but shall leave him at perfect liberty.

ART. VII. Merchants of the United States coming to trade in the kingdom of Siam, and wishing to rent houses therein, shall rent the king's factories and pay the customary rent of the country. If the said merchants bring their goods on shore, the king's officers shall take account thereof, but shall not levy any duty thereupon.

ART. VIII. If any citizens of the United States, or their vessels or other property shall be taken by pirates and brought within the dominions of the Magnificent King, the persons shall be set at liberty and the property restored to its owners.

ART. IX. Merchants of the United States trading in the kingdom of Siam, shall respect and follow the laws and customs of the country in all points.

ART. X. If hereafter any foreign nation, other than the Portuguese, shall request and obtain His Majesty's consent to the appointment of consuls to reside in Siam, the United States shall be at liberty to appoint consuls to reside in Siam, equally with such other foreign nation.

#### CERTIFICATE OF RATIFICATION.

"This is to certify, that Edmund Roberts, a Special Envoy of the United States of America, delivered and exchanged a ratified treaty on the day and date hereafter mentioned, and which was signed and sealed in the royal city of Sia-Yut'hia, being the capital of the kingdom of Siam, on the twentieth day of March, one thousand eight hundred and thirty-three, corresponding to the fourth month of the year of the Dragon.

"In witness whereof, We, the Magnificent King of Siam, do ratify and confirm the said Treaty, by affixing hereunto our Royal Seal, as well as the seals of all the great ministers of State, at the city of Sia-Yut'hia on the fourteenth day of the fifth month of the year, called the Monkey, being the Sakarat or year Eleven hundred and ninety-eight, and which corresponds to the fourteenth day of the month of



April, being the year of Christ, one thousand and eight hundred and thirty-six."

Here follow the seven seals of the empire. They are blurred impressions, in red ink, about two and a half inches in diameter, bearing curious devices.

1st. The royal seal of Siam, or P'rah, I, Era Pot, presents an elephant with three heads, having on each side two royal chats, and bearing on his back something resembling a castle; perhaps it is the gateway of a wât.

2d. The device, which is almost illegible, is an animal compounded of a dragon, lion, &c. This seal is called P'rah Ra-chasè, and is used by the Chao Phaya Bodin Desha, or Khroma-ha-thai, formerly called, Phya Chakri. He has the general superintendence of the northern provinces, adjoining Pegu, and of the principalities of Laos and Cambodia.

3d. The device, a griffin. This is the seal of Chao-Phya-Mahasena, or Khroma Kalahom. He is of equal rank with the last, and holds the office of Commander-in-chief of all the land and sea-forces, with the general superintendence of the south-western provinces, even to that of the last tributary Malay Rajah.

4th. Is called, Trah Boa Kean. Its device is a Boudha in the usual position, holding in one hand a blown lotus flower, and in the other its leaf. This is the seal of the Chao Phya P'rah Klang, or Khroma-tha, the minister of commerce and foreign affairs. He superintends the south-eastern provinces adjoining Cochin-China.

5th. Is named Trah Prah None Tak An, and the device is an angel astride on the shoulders of a man or demon. It is the seal of the Chao Phya Therema Terat, or Khroma Wang, governor of the royal palace.

6th. Called Trah P'hra Peroon, the device of which is an angel riding on a serpent, holding a flaming sword. This is the seal of the Chao Phya Phollatape, or Krohma-na, who is minister of agriculture and produce.

7th. Is the Trah, (seal) P'rah Yame Kesing, bearing for device, an angel riding a lion and bearing a lance. It is the seal of the Chao Phya Somarat, or Yomarat; or Khroma Merang, the minister of criminal justice.

The presents made by the government of the United States, consisted of lamps, Nankins, carpeting, male and female costumes of the United States. Two very large and elegant mirrors, an Ameri-



can flag, shawls, a set of United States' coins, and two splendid swords in gold scabbards.

The Envoy distributed presents among several of the Siamese officers, consisting of pistols, fowling-pieces, money, &c.

The exception of rice as an article of export, made in the second article of the above treaty, robs it of a great part of its value, because rice is an important article in the trade with China. Vessels loaded with it are exempted from paying, what is known as "cumshaw duties," amounting, in many cases, to three thousand dollars; and for this reason, they often put into the rice ports of Java, or into Manila, on their outward voyage from the United States to Canton, to load with this article. Therefore, it is desirable to add to the places beyond the Cape of Good Hope whereat rice may be obtained, for the advantage of our Chinese commerce.



## CHAPTER XXV.

### SKETCHES IN COCHIN-CHINA.

#### SKETCHES IN COCHIN-CHINA.



SKETCHES IN COCHIN CHINA



## CHAPTER XXXIII.

## SKETCHES IN COCHIN-CHINA.

*May, 1836.*

ON the twentieth of April, Mr. Roberts and the officers, all of them unwell and some of them seriously ill, returned on board. The Prince Momfanoi attempted to visit us, but was so much affected by seasickness after clearing the mouth of the Meinam, that he put back. In testimony of his regard, he sent to several of the officers little curiosities, as books of the talipot leaf, &c., which they reciprocated in such books as they thought might be useful and entertaining to him. Among them were, Hinton's Views of the United States, Herschell's Astronomy, Duponceau's Constitution of the United States, Cobbet's Advice, and several works on gunnery and military tactics, &c., far exceeding in value the presents of Momfanoi.

At sunset we were under way, and I believe no one in the squadron felt the least regret upon taking a final leave of Siam. In all probability not one of us will ever visit it again, and we hope it may be long ere any of our ships of war will be found in the waters of the gulf. The officers and crews now felt severely the effects of eastern tropical climates; all, with few exceptions, had been seriously ill once, some of them twice; the past two months had been spent in contending against wind and currents; the ship was almost an hospital; four men had died since leaving Batavia, the provisions were of inferior quality, and were fast lessening in quantity; a general languor possessed our bodies, and even the stoutest hearts were at times dejected. We looked for relief in clearing the gulf, and hoped to find fresh and favoring breezes in the China Sea, which would soon waft us to some invigorating climate.

The passage down the gulf of Siam was retarded by calms and



very light winds. The air was moist and sultry, and the "sun appeared as if shining through a wet blanket." The number of sick was augmented, and in almost all the cases, as in cholera, the skin was cold and clammy—the Genius of the disease still hovering over us—evincing a strong predisposition to internal congestions. Nor did this state of things change immediately after reaching the China Sea.

For several days, while in the gulf, we were visited by many pretty fly-catchers, which hopped about with perfect confidence, picking up flies on deck; they often received food from the hand, and sometimes, when we were sitting quiet, would alight upon our persons. They flew in and out of the cabin during the day, and took shelter there at night.

In the gulf we saw several white dolphins. Siam presents us with a great number of animals, which differ in a remarkable manner from the same species in other parts of the world. The white elephant, the white squirrel, the white ape, the white monkey, white as snow, white lizards, white dolphin, &c. Mr. Finlayson is of opinion that they are white for the same reason, which is not known, that produces the variety in the human species, known as albino. But after a pretty careful examination of several of the above animals, I am disposed to differ from that gentleman. The iris of the white elephant is not white in all specimens; nor was it white in any specimen of the white squirrel which fell under my observation.

On the second of May, we were near the island of Pulo Oby, situated in latitude  $8^{\circ} 25'$  north, not far from the coast of Cambodia, which is low and beautifully green. The island is high and clothed in a luxuriant vegetation from its summit to the water's edge; but from want of level land, adapted to cultivation, is incapable of supporting any considerable population, and has only two or three inhabitants. It is often visited by vessels for water, which is of good quality and easily procured.

This day we had the melancholy duty of committing to the deep the remains of Henry Mount, (marine,) who died from the effects of repeated attacks of dysentery and diarrhœa.

The next morning the Peacock anchored on the northern side of the island, and procured about a thousand gallons of water. The watering party brought off a pigeon of a yellowish white color, the wings tipped with black, several squirrels and crows.

On the fourth we got under way, and pursued our voyage along shore, the sea being smooth and the wind fair, but the currents were



found to be strong and rapid. The temperature became more tolerable, but there was no diminution of the sick list.

On the sixth we passed Pulo Condore, whereon the English had an establishment last century; but the colony was cruelly massacred by the Malays, since which they have not attempted to make there another settlement. On the seventh, all the bread in the ship was found to be in a condition of decay, and, after a careful survey, it was condemned and thrown overboard, leaving us destitute of every article of diet, except hard salted meat and rice. It would be difficult to present, to those who did not witness it, an adequate idea of the distressing state of things existing on board of the ship. One-fourth of the crew were confined, by sickness, to their hammocks, and those who were not under medical treatment, enfeebled by previous disease, were scarcely able to move about the decks; and, had we been so unfortunate as to encounter a gale, I doubt whether the physical force on board was sufficient to take care of the ship. It is the experience of contrasts like these which endears us to our home, and enhances its pleasures, showing the miserable chances which ever hang round a sailor's existence. But it is a gift mercifully bestowed upon all those who follow the seas, to forget anxiety and danger the moment they are past, and feel themselves exempt for the future.

The whole coast of Cochin-China is beautiful and grand. The shore is indented by frequent bays; and the mountains, which rise several thousand feet in height, are broken into innumerable valleys and ravines. Numerous small craft were seen plying up and down the coast, but none came to us. There is only wanting a history of daring deeds connected with this scenery to cast over it the interest and poetic charm which renders a sight of the Sierra Nevada and the blue hills of Granada so delightful. Its beauties are almost lost upon those who, like us, are ignorant of the prominent events in the history of this distant realm, which may, perhaps, be sufficiently important to make these shores classic ground.

At sunset, on the thirteenth, Turon Point was in sight. Many fishing boats were seen under the high land. The breeze was very light, the S. W. monsoon having not yet fairly set in, and we did not gain the anchorage until next day.

At noon we anchored in Turon bay. An irregular, mountainous country encloses an oval sheet of water, probably five miles by two, in which there is good anchorage, where vessels may lie entirely



land-locked. The green hills and mountains in the back ground, crowned with fleecy clouds, and a thread of white sand beach bounding the margin, with no habitation in sight, give a wild and picturesque character to the scenery. Close in shore was a dismantled junk, and a few canoes, with long outriggers, were skimming over the bay before a gentle breeze. A spy-glass discovered to us the signs of a village, a short distance from the mouth of a rivulet, which emptied into the bay.

We had scarcely anchored before a canoe came alongside, but again departed without giving or receiving information, because the people on board only spoke Cochin-Chinese. About five o'clock in the evening we were visited by three canoes, larger and better looking than any we had yet seen. They were decorated with pennons, which marked them as the property of the state. The principal one carried the three visiting officers in the bow, attended by a guard of eight soldiers, in long red jackets, with blue facings, bare legs, and black turbans, under glazed basket helmets. The officers were immediately conducted to the cabin, where they seated themselves on chairs; but very soon slipped off their shoes and drew their heels under them, while their attendants squatted on the deck. The principal man among them was remarkable for a very long, sparsely growing beard, which he was at great pains to stroke, or draw through his fingers, to keep it properly disposed, whenever disturbed by the breeze. The three were dressed alike, in a blue silk frock, buttoned far over on the left breast with filigree buttons, silk pantaloons and black crape turbans, bare legs, and wooden-soled shoes. The costumes of the attendants were of similar fashion, but of less costly materials, and they were barefoot. Each officer was accompanied by a sword-bearer, and each attendant carried two crimped silk reticules, in form of a shell, connected by a long cord, passing over the neck and shoulders. To the cord were attached a metallic tooth-pick and spoon for the ear. The reticules contained arecanut, tobacco, and cigars, which were constantly supplied to the great men.

By means of a limited vocabulary, made by Mr. Roberts, in January, 1833, when at Vunglam, in the province of Fuyen, we were enabled to make them comprehend the object of the ship's visit to Turon. The scene of this interview was curious, both to behold and hear. The language of the Cochin-Chinese was uttered in a soft singing tone, varying like the recitative part of an Italian opera. Their manners were gentle, and at once placed them in our estima-



tion far above the Siamese. They chewed arecanut or smoked cigars, made of cut tobacco, rolled in dry corn husks, while they discoursed, very little to our edification.

Mr. Roberts confided to them a letter, prepared in French and English, addressed to the Prime Minister at Hué, the capital, where, it was presumed, the French language was understood, from the number of Frenchmen formerly employed in the government; as well as from the French missionaries residing in the country. This letter announced our arrival and the object of our visit, requesting that despatch might be used, on account of the unhealthy state of the vessel, as well as on account of Mr. Roberts' serious indisposition. The officers received the communication, and we understood them that an answer might be expected in three days.

While in the cabin, some of the inferior officers, supposing, as a matter of course, that we were here for the purposes of trade, measured the tonnage of the ship. At the end of an hour, all took leave, by shaking hands, offering the palm upwards.

Early the next morning, in spite of a slight shower, I accompanied Lieutenant Turner on shore. We entered a quiet stream about two hundred yards wide, and did not proceed up it a much greater distance, before we were hailed from the shore, and gathered from the significant gestures of an individual whom we recognised as one of the party of the day before, that we must land. Several junks and small boats were secured to the shore by hawsers. The river runs through a level plain. At this point there were two or three sheds, beneath which as many boats were hauled up and under repair, but no one was as yet at work. Near one of these we landed, and were received by three or four persons, and among them the officer of yesterday. While one hand was employed with a fan, held to shade his eyes from the rising sun, he pointed to the village with the other, at the same time pronouncing the word "mandarin." We now comprehended, we were to see the man of consequence, and after passing the sheds, followed our conductor over a green meadow of little extent. Five minutes' walk brought us to the edge of the town. On our left was a fort, on our right a few huts, and in front of us what we presumed might be the town hall. The news of our arrival had gone abroad, and there was a considerable turn out of naked boys and girls who followed after us; and on our way, we saw some mothers who peeped forth from their huts, holding a "toddling wee thing" by the hand, while an infant was suspended on the back. They abandoned their occupations, and gazed at us with no little wonder, while



our appearance, to the children, seemed to be rather a source of alarm. A glance showed them to be, in our estimation, deficient in comeliness and cleanliness; nay, they were nasty, itchy looking people, little ones and all.

A rude paling separated the town hall from the common road. It stood back about thirty yards, and consisted of an extensive roof of tiles, supported by a back and two lateral walls, the front being open to a sort of veranda, made by prolonging the roof and supporting the eaves on stout wooden posts. The floor was raised about three feet above the ground. Its area was about thirty by seventy feet. In the middle of the veranda stood a rough table of the height of the floor, and joined to it; and a chair and bamboo settle were placed on each side of it. Opposite to the table, the floor was covered by a rattan mat, six feet square, on which sat *à la Turque*, the Mandarin, who slipped off his shoes and assumed the place, the moment he perceived our approach. A broad pavement led from the gateway to the table, so that we advanced directly in front of the officer, and, by his gesticulated invitation, seated ourselves in the chairs.

The mandarin was a good-humored looking personage, with a fat flabby face, his cheeks hanging down like those of a well fed pig; his eyes were lack-lustre, and deeply sunk in their sockets, and when he laughed they almost disappeared. His short fat form was clothed in a blue silk frock, and white silk pantaloons, made very broad at the bottom, and his merry countenance was shaded by a full black crape turban.

It was plainly to be seen that our visit was somewhat too early, for there was a considerable bustle among his half dozen attendants, who, on receiving some orders in very imperative tones, ran off in different directions. Presently a half dozen soldiers in red jackets, dirty breeches, bare legs, and glazed helmets, armed with spears, hurried in, one after the other, and were marshalled into file. In the course of a very few minutes, the number increased to forty men, of whom eighteen were armed with spears, twelve feet long, fourteen with French muskets, and the rest with long two-handed swords. The last had each a rattan fixed on the scabbard of their swords, and each wore a large patch of green cloth on the breast. The sleeves of the soldiers' jackets, from the elbow to the hand, were either white, blue, or green, which probably distinguished the companies to which they belonged. At last they were disposed in double files, the spearmen in the rear, from the gate to the veranda, on each side of the pavement.

The soldier who arrived last, received a reprimand, and laid down



on the pavement, upon his face, but the old mandarin vociferated, and he hastened to the rear of one of the files, and assumed the same position. One of the swordsmen then struck him, with the end of his rattan, at least two dozen blows over the back; but his clothes were so loose that the infliction was at little cost of pain. After the chastisement, he assumed his place in the ranks. There was evidently a strong desire on the part of the mandarin, that his guard should appear to advantage, and that he himself should be looked on by us, as the man of authority.

Tea was immediately placed upon the table, in coarse China pots, with cups of delft ware, spoons of the same material, and common brown sugar in a saucer.

Being destitute of an interpreter, we were obliged to communicate our wants, by drawing a bullock, a fowl, an egg, &c., which were comprehended, and assented to by the old mandarin, who, nodding and laughing, with his mouth full of arecanut, which he took from a blue silk reticule beside him, gave the necessary orders. While we were carrying on this negotiation, some of the boat's crew had wandered towards the fort, but were immediately brought back.

In a few minutes a number of women gathered in front of the gate, with baskets of fruit, eggs, fish, dried and fresh, hens, ducks, &c., which they offered at exorbitant prices: we went among them and found they were generally willing to accept one-half, and frequently one-fourth of their original demands. We had only Spanish dollars, but we soon got them changed in Cochin-Chinese cash, a brittle coin of tutenague, the size of a cent, with a square hole in the centre, by which they were strung on rattans, two or three feet in length. This money, worth about a dollar a thousand, was not counted, but measured by the eye, and so much of a string offered as the price of the article bargained for. Among other venders, were *restaurants ambulans*, with fish, broiled on wooden skewers, and jars of fish pickle which were strongly urged upon our attention. There was a good deal of talking and excitement among the people while our trafficking continued, which, at the end of an hour, was cut short by the mandarin driving off all the hawksters, and signifying to us, that for this time we had purchased enough. We accordingly took leave with what we had, and returned on board.

Among these people diseases of the skin are very common; we scarcely met an individual who was not affected by some disorder of the kind. It is probably owing to their filthy habits, both in diet and dress. They wear silk next to their skins, which is seldom changed



until it be worn out; and they prefer stale, or partially incubated eggs to fresh ones.

The faces of the Cochin-Chinese are flat, and their complexion much lighter than that of the Siamese. The back part of the head is more developed, and in accordance with this configuration, we find them much more active. Their average stature is probably less, and does not exceed five feet two inches.

On the seventeenth, the Cochin-Chinese officers, who visited us on the day of our arrival, came on board in a long canoe, pulling forty oars. They were seated in the bows, the place of honor with these people, under the shade of an umbrella, and on this occasion were accompanied by an individual, who, besides Cochin-Chinese, spoke Malay. We had on board a Dutch passenger from Batavia, who spoke French and Malay, and thus armed, we held a much more satisfactory intercourse than we had done hitherto.

They were received in the cabin, where they disposed of themselves as they did on their first visit. They inquired the respective rank of the officers present, but were unwilling to believe that Mr. Roberts was the envoy, because he did not, like the commodore and captain, wear epaulettes. To this subject they frequently recurred, and did not appear to be satisfied in the end. This should be a hint to future diplomats to Cochin-China, to adorn themselves with some glittering badge of distinction. They stated, that the emperor was not at the capital, and we should be obliged to wait, still five days, before an answer could be returned to Mr. Roberts' communication. They voluntarily offered permission to the officers to amuse themselves on shore, provided they would not go in parties exceeding ten in number; but under the pretext that the emperor might be displeased, they afterwards revoked it.

Mr. Roberts mentioned his visit to Vunglam, in 1833, remarking, he had been informed that the emperor had bastinadoed several of the high mandarins there, in consequence of the vexatious delays they had caused him at that time, by not immediately forwarding his despatches. To this they very coolly replied, they had forwarded Mr. Roberts' letter the evening it was received, and now had nothing more to do in the matter.

At the moment the presents for the emperor were mentioned, some samples of sugar and rice were accidentally laid on the table; and, supposing that the presents consisted of those articles, they exclaimed that the emperor had enough of these; and it was some time before they were made to comprehend differently.



They inquired how long we had been coming from the United States, at what places we had touched, &c. They stated, that no one would be allowed to furnish us with beef, &c., before an answer should be received from Hué.

The chief mandarin, as he sat upon his chair with his bare feet drawn up under him, occasionally held his fan between his toes, while his hands were employed, either in stroking his beard, or wiping his face with a red rag instead of a pocket handkerchief. Every subject named, was recurred to again and again under different forms, as if they were determined to sift the matter to the bottom. During the interview, they drank wine, chewed arecanut and smoked cigars; but preferred their own to some Havanas which they accepted and afterwards distributed among their boat's crew. Some Chinese tracts were given them, which they appeared to read with interest, after the manner of players in an opera, but did not take them away. They were quite content, and we were heartily glad, when, after an interview of three hours, they took leave.

The Cochin-Chinese are a polite people, and punctilious observers of etiquette. At Vunglam, the chief mandarin questioned the propriety of one of his rank and numerous titles, holding intercourse with Mr. Roberts, who came from a country where he understood there were no titles and all men were equal. Mr. Roberts, perceiving that unless this objection were removed, all negotiation would be at an end, replied that the mandarin had been in some measure misinformed. He told him, if his Chinese secretary would take a piece of paper, he would enumerate his own titles and convince him of his error. The secretary selected a half sheet of paper, but Mr. Roberts requested him to take a whole one, as that even would be scarcely large enough. The American officers present were of course at a loss to imagine how Mr. R. would extricate himself from this seeming difficulty. But not so Mr. Roberts. He dictated as follows: Edmund Roberts, Esquire, Special Envoy from the President of the United States to the Emperor of Cochin-China, Citizen of the United States, Citizen of Maine, Citizen of New Hampshire, and continued enumerating himself citizen of each of the twenty-four states; for being citizen of all, he was so of them severally. Before the sheet was half full, the mandarin exclaimed, it was unnecessary to go farther, as his titles already exceeded his own. Had he not been satisfied, Mr. Roberts intended to enumerate as many of the cities, towns and villages as he could remember, not doubting the success of this *ruse diplomatique*.



On the 20th we had another visit from the mandarins, and a present of fruit. They now told us that eleven days more must elapse, before an answer to our letter could be received.

On the 21st, the *Enterprise* arrived in a very sickly condition, which made it more necessary to seek some port where refreshments could be obtained. She had pursued the off-shore passage and had encountered very light winds and calms, which delayed her arrival.

In the evening we had another visit, to inform us that there was no one at the capital to read the letter sent by Mr. Roberts, (which we were inclined to doubt,) and the emperor had sent a high officer to Turon to ascertain the object of our visit. This officer had already arrived, and would be very glad to receive Mr. Roberts on shore, which invitation was positively declined on his part, because etiquette required that the emperor's officer should first wait upon him.

The next morning at eight o'clock, the mandarins again came on board; but Mr. Roberts was so much indisposed that he would not receive them, and they went away, evidently much displeased, not being permitted even to go below the deck, to gratify their curiosity.

---

## CHAPTER XXXIV.

### SKETCHES IN COCHIN-CHINA.

*May, 1836.*

THE general sickness of the crews of both vessels, as well as the dangerous state of Mr. Robert's health, made it imperative to seek some place promising more speedy relief than was likely to be found among the Cochin-Chinese. But, before sailing, it was desirable to ascertain, if possible, what might be the disposition of the government in respect to negotiating a treaty of friendship and commerce; so that, in case it were favorable, we might return properly conditioned and provided with interpreters, and, if not, save the time



which it might require to return. It will be seen in the sequel that very little hope could be reasonably entertained of negotiating with a people who manifested distrust and suspicion on the most trifling points of intercourse; who, however ready they be to take unfair advantage, they seem unwilling to reciprocate any thing to secure their own interest. Whether a treaty between the United States and Cochin-China, at this time, is particularly desirable, I have heard questioned by several intelligent and experienced merchants, who urged that the Cochin-Chinese are treacherous, and never would observe the provisions of any treaty; that they are too distant to enable us to bring their manufactures or produce into our markets with profit; that the existence of a treaty would not place it more in our power to obtain redress from them, for any improper treatment of our citizens, than at present; that the commercial experiments already made have proved their trade to be scarcely worth seeking; and that the only advantage of a treaty, and that, at best, problematical, would be in considering it a step towards China itself; but I leave the discussion of the subject to diplomatists, politicians, and placemen, who may discover here a means of at once advancing their own interests and their country's glory.

The English have made several unsuccessful attempts to effect a treaty with Cochin-China, and attribute their failure to the misrepresentations of the French and Portuguese, in regard to the British character. But there are other obstacles found in the low estimation at which merchants are held by the Cochin-Chinese, and the frequent civil and foreign wars by which the government has been distracted for ages. At present they are contending with the Siamese for the territory of Cambodia, which, it seems, they have long been desirous of annexing to their own.

On the twenty-second, having received instructions from Mr. Roberts, I went on shore, accompanied by Messrs. William R. Taylor and Jacobs, the Dutch passenger before mentioned, to communicate with the messenger from Hué, sent by the Emperor of Cochin-China, or, as they delight to style it, Anam.

We landed at half past one o'clock, P. M., and, following a tortuous path among wretched huts, tenanted by women and children with dirty clothes and itchy skins, halted at the town hall before described. At one end of the hall were several clerks writing, without other desk than the floor itself, and a half dozen individuals were lounging under the veranda with two of the officers who had visited the ship.



We had scarcely taken our seats at the table before one of the two officers demanded to know the cause of the treatment they had received when on board in the morning. I replied, that when the emperor's messenger, styled the Lakak, should arrive and ask the question, it would be answered.

In a few minutes, an individual, as well dressed as any of those we had seen, arrived, under a large sunshade of Chinese fashion, with numerous tassels depending from the inside, which was borne by an attendant. He at once proposed to accompany us on board, to seek an interview with Mr. Roberts; but, feeling assured that our object would not be advanced by acceding to this proposal, I stated, it would be useless for him to take so much trouble, because I could inform the Lakak of all he might desire to know; nevertheless, I should be very happy to escort the Lakak, himself, on board, where Mr. Roberts would be very glad to receive him. He replied: "This morning Mr. Roberts was sick, and refused to see those who went on board, and perhaps the same might occur again?" To this I rejoined, "If the Emperor's messenger will go on board, Mr. Roberts will certainly see him."

Tea was now served in the same rude style as on the occasion of our first visit.

The officer who last arrived inquired who of us three was highest in rank, and was told that I was. He then asked why Mr. Roberts did not receive him in the morning when on board, and was replied to, that Mr. Roberts was very unwell, and though he would be pleased to see the Lakak himself, he could not be troubled, at this time, by any one of inferior rank. This officer now remarked that the Lakak would come, in a few minutes, to speak with me himself, and again asked what was my rank. Owing to the inefficiency of the interpreters, he was given to understand that it was next to that of captain, and Mr. Jacobs gratuitously added, that, in the absence of Mr. Roberts, it was my duty to transact business for him. He again recurred to the subject of his reception on board, and was again told that, whenever the Lakak should ask it, the matter would be explained.

After a short conversation among themselves, it was again proposed that the officer should accompany us on board, and he was informed this had already been refused; and farther, if the Lakak would not see us, it was useless to remain longer; remarking, at the same time, the vessels would sail in the evening, but Mr. Roberts would regret not seeing, or hearing directly from the Lakak, before his de-



parture. We were a second time assured that the Lakak would meet us in a few minutes.

At this time a messenger was despatched, probably to inform the emperor's envoy of all that had transpired. During the pause thereby occasioned, we had leisure to observe that most of the persons present, of any distinction, wore over white silk under vestments, a frock or shirt of thin black crape, like that called Italian. Their turbans were of black Canton crape, the folds of which all crossed one above the other, about the centre of the forehead.

We were now asked, why one of the companions of the Lakak, who was on board in the morning, had been prevented from going below, which question I declined answering for the present. They then put several questions relative to our respective names and rank, which we wrote down for them.

At the expiration of about twenty minutes after the departure of the messenger, a palanquin, consisting of a net hammock, lined with rugs, slung to a single pole and shaded by an oval roof, arrived bearing a personage of perhaps forty years of age. The palanquin was preceded by a single banner, and followed by fifty men, one half of them armed with long spears, and the rest with muskets. Their uniforms were of scarlet cloth, faced with yellow and blue. The fashion of their jackets was long waisted; the nether garment was a nondescript sort of swaddling cloth or breeches, reaching to the knee. The muskets were French, and some of their locks were bandaged with blue cloth, to shield them from damp, and many were without flints. When they had reached the front of the house, within the enclosure, they divided into double files on each side of the walk, leading from the gate, and confronted each other, the spearmen in the rear. While this evolution was performing, the palanquin halted and an attendant placed a pair of ornamented slippers, with wooden soles, on the feet of the passenger. He at once alighted, and, gracefully saluting us with a nod and wave of the hand, immediately seated himself cross-legged upon the margin of the floor, next to the table. The fashion of his costume was like that of his countrymen, but of a much more costly material. It consisted of a white silk jacket buttoned to the throat, and fitting the arms and person tightly, and loose pantaloons, also of white silk, reaching half way down the calf. Over these was worn the robe or shirt of sky blue silk lace, with a vine pattern woven in it, so neatly that it might be mistaken at a short distance, for embroidery. His turban, of very fine black crape, was accurately folded; his face and head were small, and his



complexion light yellow; his beard and mustache, if a few long, sparsely growing hairs merit the name, were gray, and his finger nails were remarkable for length, and being clean. In short, the air and dress of this individual proclaimed him to be a Cochin-Chinese gentleman of *haut ton*, and of acknowledged rank.

All were silent for a few moments, when I inquired whether he were the Lakak. He answered that he was not, but was equally empowered to hear any communication I might have to make; adding, that the Lakak himself would arrive in a few minutes. He stated, that not being able to understand, or get interpreted the letter, which Mr. Roberts had forwarded to Hué, they had been despatched from the court to ascertain its import, as well as the object of our visit, and concluded by asking if I were empowered to represent Mr. Roberts on this occasion. I replied in the affirmative, at the same time remarking, we were under the impression, that there were persons in the capital who understood the French language, and for that reason a translation accompanied the original letter. He declared there was no one who spoke or read that language in the country; and demanded for what purpose I was making lead pencil notes, whether I intended to leave them behind or take them with me. I answered, they were designed for Mr. Roberts, that he might be correctly informed of all that transpired on this occasion.

At this moment the palanquin of the Lakak was seen approaching, at a short trot rather than march, which would have better comported with his dignity. Two yellow banners, suspended from cross pieces at the end of long staves, down which they hung, first appeared, followed by fifty soldiers in advance of the palanquin, which was like that above described, except that it was more gaudy. It was followed by an attendant, bearing a chunam box of Japanese laquered ware, another with the wooden soled slippers of the Lakak, and fifty soldiers. In their arms and appointments, these troops were in all respects like those who were already before us. The want of music detracted very much from the military effect which they were calculated to produce. They formed continuous files, beyond the fence of the enclosure, with those within it, and extended almost to the river upon which the hall fronts, distant between two and three hundred yards.

The Lakak, observing the same ceremony as his companion, alighted and assumed a seat on the left, and in front of me. He was not more than thirty years of age, his beard was black, and his countenance was much more intelligent than that of his companion. The



stature of neither of them exceeded five feet. His costume was only different from that of the other, in being secured by cornelian buttons. So soon as he was seated, he filled his mouth with arecanut, taken from a blue silk reticule embroidered with silver, which was presented by an attendant.

Several individuals, who might be of the rank of sergeant or corporal, gathered under the veranda, bearing long two-handed swords in wooden scabbards, the hilts of which they held uppermost. When any one crossed the open alley between the confronting files of troops, he half inclined his body, very much after the servile manner of the Siamese.

The Lakak remained some minutes silent; and, thinking he might be waiting for me to begin, I expressed a hope that he had experienced no inconvenience from his rapid journey from the capital. He made no reply, but immediately asked why Mr. Roberts would not see those who had been on board in the morning, and the same explanation was offered as before. I stated, that I was deputed to communicate with him, and inform him that Mr. Roberts was charged by the President of the United States, with a letter and presents for the emperor, and invested with full powers to negotiate a commercial treaty, or to ascertain upon what footing American vessels would be admitted to trade in the ports of Anam or Cochin-China; Mr. Roberts sincerely regretted that his own health, as well as that of the crews of the vessels, required his speedy departure; and he particularly regretted it, because, three years before he was at Vunglam, for the same purpose, and, after being delayed there a month, was under the necessity of returning to the United States without receiving a satisfactory answer.\* But he hoped to return at some future time provided with interpreters.

The Lakak inquired whether I had the letter for the emperor, and was told that the letter could only be delivered by Mr. Roberts in person. He then asked, to whom Mr. Roberts had given his letter when at Vunglam. I replied, the letter was written in Chinese, and had been delivered to a mandarin, who refused to forward it without giving it, in translation, an import different from that which it was intended to convey; but we had since learned, the emperor had punished the mandarin for his conduct. He now inquired who

\* For a detailed account of the visit to Vunglam, the reader is referred to a posthumous work, recently published, entitled, "An Embassy to the Eastern Courts of Cochin-China, Siam and Muscat," in the years 1832-3-4, by EDMUND ROBERTS.



translated the letter into Chinese, and whether the individual was not on board. Being told that he was not, he exclaimed, "How is it possible to negotiate without interpreters?" I urged that we had anticipated assistance from the French, whom we understood resided at Hué; but being, as it seemed, misinformed on this head, we should be obliged to depart a second time, which Mr. Roberts sincerely regretted.

I asked whether they were disposed to enter into a commercial treaty with us, remarking that American vessels did not visit Anam for the purpose of trade, because they did not know how they might be received, nor what the charges and duties might be upon their cargoes; but, it was expected, if a treaty were made, a commerce which must be advantageous to both countries, would soon follow, as they would bring various kinds of merchandise and dollars to offer in exchange for the products of Cochin-China. He stated, in answer, that both the French and Dutch had been here, about the same season the year before, and had made a similar proposition; but he was ignorant what answer had been given them by the emperor, adding, that he was not authorized to say whether the emperor was disposed to negotiate or not; nor was he able to say whether American vessels would be admitted to trade; but if they should be, all kinds of merchandise might be bought.

I stated, that a ship-of-war would visit them at some future period. Again the letter addressed to the emperor was demanded, and being refused, the Lakak said, if we had nothing farther to say, he would ask leave to retire.

I repeated our regret that the sickness on board of the vessels and want of interpreters required our departure; and was about to take leave, when the Lakak said, we might settle the matter at once. I told him this was out of the question, because the interpreters, who were our medium of communication, did not understand the language sufficiently well to treat on a subject of so much moment. He nevertheless repeated, we two might settle the matter now. I then inquired whether the Lakak were vested with powers to negotiate a treaty; and what was his rank. I was informed in reply, that he was the Lakak; resided in the palace with the emperor, and was superior in rank to all those persons whom Mr. Roberts had seen at Vunglam.

He again repeated, we might settle it well enough, at least verbally, and requested that the letter for the emperor might be confided to him. I replied, I would communicate his request to Mr. Roberts.



"Cannot Mr. Roberts come here?"

"It is impossible; etiquette requires that the Lakak should make the first visit to Mr. Roberts." He urged, if Mr. Roberts would come on shore they might talk the matter over. I answered, that I would report what he had said, and requested to take leave; for I felt convinced, we were spending time to little purpose.

I was fatigued by the slow pace of our intercourse, being obliged first to make my communications to Mr. Jacobs, in French, who translated them into Malay; but, as the Cochin-Chinese interpreter spoke a different dialect from himself, and mingled with his Malay many Cochin-Chinese words, there was great difficulty in possessing him of my precise meaning. When he came to translate the observations of the Lakak to Mr. Jacobs, a similar difficulty occurred, so that much time was lost through the inefficiency of the interpreters. Besides, both, in their zeal to be serviceable, were often found answering questions from their own knowledge, without considering the propriety or expediency of such conduct.

Although those under the veranda appeared to be much interested in the interview, the soldiers outside seemed to be as weary as myself. They had all gradually squatted down, and were looking heavenwards, grasping their muskets and spears, above their heads, for support.

The Lakak asked whether I would not return again the next day to talk the matter over again; I replied, I would communicate what he said to Mr. Roberts, but thought it probable we should sail in the evening. He then remarked, that in from three to five days, an answer might be received from the emperor himself, and offered to procure medicines for the sick, if we required them, for which I expressed our thanks. He said the officers would be permitted in future to roam where they pleased, for the purpose of recreation; but requested, they would not shoot animals, as difficulties might arise therefrom. As a farther inducement for the ship to remain, and which was evidently an object with him, he stated that the water we had on board was poisonous, or very bad from running over the roots of certain plants, and recommended that of the river as excellent. This was a barefaced falsehood, for the Cochin-Chinese themselves used the same water, and carried it on board of their vessels. Pointing towards the mountain, he exclaimed, with considerable animation, "*pas bon*," and then to the river, "*bon*," I immediately asked in French whether he spoke the language. He shook his head, blushed to the eyes, and said, "*non, non*," in a bad accent, but still suffi-



ciently French to convince me, that, though he might not be able to speak the language fluently, he was quite able to read it.

During the interview, the mandarin who came under the sunshade, often had a word to interpose, but all the others, except the companion of the Lakak, were silent. They beguiled the time as they listened, by rolling up cigars in paper or corn husk after the manner of the Peruvian Spaniards, but they sadly lacked the grace which is peculiar only to fingers nourished by the rich blood of Spain and her colonies. The Lakak himself indulged in a pipe, made of speckled bamboo, the bowl of which would hold a pint, and was connected to a long slender stem. All the while he smoked, which he only did for a few rapid whiffs at a time, an attendant held a taper of oiled paper at the extremity of the stem within the bowl.

We shook hands, and I took leave impressed with the belief, that though a treaty might be effected, it would be at the expense of much time and patience, to overcome their vacillating and suspicious conduct. The desire to delay the ship probably had its origin in the expected profits arising from the sale of stock, &c. to us, for when we issued forth from the enclosure, we were met by a crowd of market women, soliciting us to purchase their truck and poultry.

We reached the ship near six o'clock, P. M., and preparations were made to get at once under way.

While we were at Turon, the weather was cool, and to us, so recently from the sultry gulf of Siam, often chilly, though the thermometer ranged from 80° to 83° F. The average height of the barometer was 29.80 inches. The clouds generally floated low, and we had one or two showers, accompanied by thunder and lightning almost every day. The close jungle and trees of the hills give shelter to a variety of monkeys, some of them of singular appearance, as well as many birds and reptiles. Fine fish were daily brought alongside, and sold to us at moderate prices.

Our movements were always closely watched, and when any hunting party strayed far from the shore, they were met by soldiers, who intimated that they were going beyond the prescribed limits.

The poultry was of very excellent quality, and after the first day procurable in almost any quantity.

“The whole of the Cochin-Chinese dominions, since Tun-quin has yielded to the arms of the late usurper, fills the space between the 12th degree of north latitude and the tropic of Cancer; but their breadth do not amount to two degrees of longitude. They are bounded to the westward by a long chain of mountains, which border on



the other side, on the kingdoms of Laos, Siam, and Cambodia. The sea washes Cochin-China, and Tun-quin to the east; the former has Tsiompa to the southward, and the latter the Cochin-Chinese province of Yunnan to the northward of it. The whole comprehends about 95,000 square miles.\*

\* Staunton's China.







## SKETCHES IN CHINA.



SKETCHES IN CHINA.



## CHAPTER XXXV.

## SKETCHES IN CHINA.

*June, 1836.*

ON the evening of the twenty-second of May, both vessels put to sea, every one on board elated with hope; the numerous sick, of reaching a place where they might recover, and all of finding letters from home at Macao. The monsoon blew pleasantly and the sea was tranquil. On the twenty-fourth we were passing Hainan, which has been long in the possession of the Chinese. Numerous fishing craft were seen in every direction, giving a sure indication of an extensive population on the land. In many places, the fishing grounds were marked by stout stakes driven into the bottom, leaving one end above the surface of the sea.

At sunset we had a last view of Hainan, which is very high. Heavy dark clouds were gathered over it, forming an immense vault, into which rose numerous mountain peaks, and a fleecy scud floated like a drawn curtain along the top of the arch. The rays of the setting sun illuminated the whole scene, tinting the clouds with a thousand colors, all as bright as our hopes. The Enterprise followed close under our stern, every sail swelling with the soft breeze of evening, and "Home, sweet home!" rose from our band on deck, as both vessels glided over the smooth, undulating sea, with a fair wind, at the rate of six miles an hour.

The twenty-fifth was a delightful day, yet our sick were augmented in number, and the cases wore an unpromising aspect. The twenty-sixth was cool, rainy and unpleasant. About midday, in the midst of a heavy shower, we received on board a Chinese pilot, an active



man, with a keen eye to profit. He was sheltered from the storm by a broad hat, and a cape of palm leaves, like a roof of thatch, which gave him, as well as his companions, who were protected after the same fashion, a very novel appearance. Their little cock of a boat had just left a pilot on board of an American ship a-head of us, bound to Macao from Batavia. The boat was brought skilfully alongside, and held on till sure of employment, when she was cast off; and dropping astern, quickly set sail by the wind, and stood away for the Enterprise.

So soon as he was on deck, the pilot produced, from a fold of his blue Nankin shirt, several certificates of capability, and honesty, and then demanded forty dollars to guide the ship to the anchorage, but consented to receive thirty, though, as we afterwards learned, his customary fee was only ten; thus adding another example to the many, that the character a man bears in his pocket is not always a guarantee of his integrity. On concluding the bargain, he insisted on shaking hands with the captain, to ratify its conditions, or, as he expressed it, "so can secure." The next moment he assumed the direction, and, in barbarous English, aided by gesture, began to issue his orders. At half past three o'clock, P. M., we anchored, about two miles from the town of Macao.

Green islands, rising high out of the sea, were seen in every direction. To the left, between two islands, was a harbor, called the Typa, full of vessels, both of European and Chinese construction, and around were many ships riding at anchor. The town of Macao was stretched along the shore of a deep cove, sheltered by high land in the rear. A church, dedicated to our Lady, much time-worn, stands on a high rock, to the left, like a small garrison in an enemy's country; and on another eminence, or rather headland, are seen a fortress and wall, marking the limits of the Portuguese possessions.

The day after our arrival, through the kind assistance of Mr. William S. Wetmore, we obtained a large house, in an airy situation, which was quickly converted into an hospital for the accommodation of the sick of both vessels. The 28th of May proved to be clear, and all of those officers and men whose situation was considered dangerous were moved on shore, and made as comfortable as kind attention and ample means would permit.

In the memory of the toils and anxieties necessarily attending on the circumstances in which we were placed at that time, is mingled



a grateful recollection of the active sympathies of the British residents, who were ever ready to assist us, and whose untiring hospitality leaves us a debt which we never can, but shall always wish to pay. To Sir George Best Robinson, Bart., H. B. M. Chief Superintendent of British trade in China, to T. R. Colledge, Esq., Surgeon, the Rev. G. H. Vachell, Chaplain of the establishment, we are particularly obliged.\*

On the Sundays, while we remained, divine service was performed at the hospital, by the Rev. Peter Parker, M. D., American missionary, and the Rev. Charles Gutzlaff, lately a missionary, but, at present, second interpreter to the British commercial establishment—(with a pretty salary of £800 a year.)

But human effort is not equal to contend against the immutable laws which govern our organization, nor to restore it in every instance from a deranged to a normal condition. It has been decreed, from the beginning, that man must die, and, at the same time, that he shall seek to avoid Death, yet, double as we may, he hunts us down at last. We may give a tear to a departed friend, but let us not murmur against the Divine hand which gathers him from us to a brighter world. Our sympathies are more required by the living, who mourn the loss of son, husband, father, or brother.

On the 3d of June, Lieutenant Archibald S. Campbell, commanding the U. S. schooner *Enterprise*, fell a victim to disease, contracted at Bangkok, which he bore with a fortitude becoming an officer. He was an amiable and worthy gentleman, and, as such, lamented by us all.

In token of respect, a monument was erected over his remains, which were deposited in the British burial ground, with the sacred and military honors befitting the rank of the deceased. The stone bears, on opposite sides, the following inscriptions:—

“THE REMAINS  
OF  
ARCHIBALD S. CAMPBELL, Esq.,

WHO DIED AT MACAO, IN COMMAND OF THE U. S. SCHOONER  
ENTERPRISE, JUNE 3, 1836.”

\* This very expensive establishment, for the superintendence of British trade in China, has been abolished since we left Macao.



## "ERECTED TO THE MEMORY

OF

LIEUTENANT-COMMANDANT ARCHIBALD S. CAMPBELL,

BY THE OFFICERS

OF THE

U. S. SHIP PEACOCK AND U. S. SCHOONER ENTERPRISE,

1836."

A few days more, and another fellow voyager was gathered to his fathers. Edmund Roberts, Esq., Special Agent of the United States, died at the residence of Mr. William S. Wetmore, at Macao, on the 12th day of June.

A long exposure in the climates of the East, actively engaged in the service of his country, proved too much for his age and constitution. He had been long out of health, and, at Bangkok, was attacked with the prevailing disease, which he at first neglected, through his desire to lose no time in discharging the duties which had brought him to Siam.

Mr. Roberts had the honor of negotiating and concluding the treaties which have been given in a former part of this volume; and in this, proved himself useful to his country, without reaping a full reward.

Making a good commercial treaty, is not among the least difficult negotiations in diplomatic transactions, and few men combine all the qualifications for such a task. "Besides a general knowledge of the trade and reciprocal interests of the contracting parties, he ought to be acquainted with their several kinds of industry and skill; to discover their wants, to calculate their resources, and to weigh with nicety the state of their finances, and the proportionate interest of their money: nay, farther, he should be able to ascertain the comparative population and strength of each country, together with the price and quality both of first materials, and also of the labor bestowed upon them: for this purpose he should inquire into the operations of every class of merchants and manufacturers concerned in the trade; should consult their expectations on each of its several branches; and collect their hopes and fears on the effect of each



commercial revolution, on the competition of rival nations. A good treaty of commerce, independent of the art of negotiation, is pronounced by one who well knew the extent and difficulty of the subject, to be a "*master piece of skill*."\*

In honor of his memory a stone was placed over his remains, bearing on the opposite faces, the following inscriptions.

"THE REMAINS

OF

EDMUND ROBERTS, ESQ.,

SPECIAL DIPLOMATIC AGENT TO SEVERAL ASIATIC COURTS,

WHO DIED AT MACAO, JUNE, 12TH, 1836.

*He devised and executed, to their end, under Instructions from his Government, Treaties of Amity and Commerce, between the United States and the Courts of Muscat and Siam."*

"ERECTED

TO THE MEMORY

OF

**Edmund Roberts, Esq.,**

OF

PORTSMOUTH, NEW HAMPSHIRE, BY THE AMERICAN

MERCHANTS, RESIDENT IN CHINA."

The simple inscriptions of these monuments, tell us, that both gentlemen died, far from their families and homes, but not unmourned, nor without the sympathies and respect of those around them.

Their loss cast a shade of melancholy over us all, and produced several changes in the squadron. But owing to a happy circumstance in the constitution of the human mind, of speedily becoming

\* Historical and Political Remarks on the Tariff of the French Treaty, by Mr. Eden, afterwards Lord Auckland, quoted in M'Culloch's "Commercial Dictionary." London, 1835.



reconciled to whatever is inevitable, the depression had worn away when the vessels again put to sea, with the sick reduced in number, and those who were not yet well, very much benefited by the short stay at Macao. We had been subject, too long, to the influence of the tropics in the narrow confines of a ship, and had suffered too severely from a succession of epidemics, to recover entirely in the short period of three weeks.

During our sojourn in China, we were constantly under the careful surveillance of the Chinese. Whenever a boat landed from the ship, a petty mandarin was at hand to take note of all who came or went. And the hospital was carefully watched, and we were often asked when we were to depart. The lively interest excited among the Chinese by our presence, attributable rather to their suspicious fears than benevolent sympathies, may be gathered from the following document, addressed to the American Consul.

“ TO MR. SNOW:

“ We beg to inform you we have received a communication from the Hoppo, with orders to make known to you its contents, which are that the cruisers, Sze-kin-lun and Kum-mar be ordered to depart from their anchorage and return to their own country, the moment their sick sailors have recovered their health, as they will not be permitted to loiter where they are, which might give rise to *business*.

“ For these reasons we make this known; and with compliments remain,—

HOWQUA,	SUNSHING,
MOWQUA,	MINGQUA,
PWANKEQUA,	FOOTAI,
GOWQUA,	ASSOWQUA,
KINGQUA,	

Taou-Kwang, 16th year, 4th Moon, and 20th day, (June 3d, 1836.)

“ Wan Hoppo, &c., &c., to the Hong merchants.—A despatch has been received from the Wei-Yuen of Macao, stating that he had been informed by the pilots, Chang-Too-Fang and Yang-Yuh-Tae, that on the 13th day of the 4th moon, 16th year of Taou-Kwang, the American cruisers, Kum-mar and Sze-kin-lun, anchored in the offing near the Nine Islands, and on inquiring of the captains of the two vessels, the reason for so doing, they were informed, that they were from their own country on a voyage to other ports, but that contrary winds had forced them to anchor where they then were, and that they had no special object in view. In addition to this, they



took a correct account of the force of these vessels, which is submitted, and is thus:—

Kum-mar's Ship.	{	60 Sailors,	{	190 Sailors,
		10 Great guns,		22 Great guns,
		50 Muskets,		100 Muskets,
		50 Two-edged swords,		100 Two-edged swords,
		500 Catties powder,		800 Catties powder,
		500 Cannon balls,		800 Cannon balls.
		Sze-kin-lun's Ship.		

“Strict orders were given to the pilots to keep up a guard over these ships, and control them well, and haste was made to communicate this information.

“Another despatch was soon received, stating, in addition to what had been communicated, relative to the two American cruisers, Kum-mar and Sze-kin-lun, having anchored near the Nine Islands, the pilots had farther made known, in a communication of the 14th day, that three boats from the cruisers, containing fifty-two men, had on that day pulled into the landing at Praya Grande, and on examination they discovered, that of these men, thirty-seven belonged to the cruiser Sze-kin-lun, and fifteen to the cruiser Kum-mar; moreover, that these men had all become sick on board their ships, being removed on shore to Macao, to dwell in houses, and receive medical treatment and advice, and it was intended to take them again on board, when they had recovered.

“The sailors had the appearance of being sick, and none were strong or robust. “We again enjoined watchfulness, and to make known every circumstance.”

“While in the act of deliberating upon these news, I received a communication from the Governor, stating that on the 15th day of the 4th moon of the 16th year of Taou-Kwang, he had received a despatch from the Admiral, which made known:—That Sen-keen-ching the Hee of Hang-Shan had received an express from Yu-ching-ting, acting Pa-Tseang, which states, on the 13th day of the present moon, two foreign vessels were seen to come in from sea, and anchor near the Nine Islands, and that the pilot above named, immediately reported that they were American cruisers; that the largest was named Sze-kin-lun, and carried a crew of one hundred and ninety men, that the force was twenty-two great guns, one hundred muskets, one hundred sharp-edged swords, eight hundred catties powder, and eight hundred cannon balls. That the smallest was named Kum-mar,—her crew consisted of sixty men, her force was ten great guns, fifty



muskets, fifty two-edged swords, five hundred catties powder, and five hundred cannon balls; and on inquiring the reasons of their anchoring where they were, the captains replied, that they were from their own country, bound to other parts; but that contrary winds had forced them to their anchorage, and that they had no special object in view. By farther investigation, it was discovered that Sze-kin-lun, the largest vessel, had three masts, that she was about fourteen changs long, and three changs broad. On either side she had bulwarks pierced for twelve guns, but eleven only were mounted. The small ship was about seven changs long, and two changs broad: on either side she had bulwarks also, pierced for five guns, and these were all mounted. Both ships were quiet at anchor.

"These statements are similar, but the dispositions of foreigners are unfathomable, and it became necessary to order out many war-junks to keep a strict watch, as well as to send an officer to order them at once to leave the port, and not to loiter about, and report their different movements. Now these two American cruisers, arriving at so early a period, and anchoring where they are, is duly made known.

"This coming before me (the Admiral) I find on examination that these foreign cruisers, have heretofore arrived about the 6th moon, either as convoy to, or to protect vessels trading with the port; but these two cruisers, thus strangely coming in, and anchoring merely from contrary winds, leads me to doubt their intentions. Orders were consequently issued to the various war-junks of the right and left, and centre divisions, to keep up a strict guard. I have also ordered instant preparation of the forts and garrison for defence, and also returned an answer to Sen-king-ting, requiring him to keep a constant look-out; on no account to allow boats to communicate with the vessels, for the purposes of buying or selling; likewise to insist upon their setting sail, as consequences might arise from their loitering about.

"Uniting with this intelligence, the report made by the Hee of Hang-Shan, I have replied to all in ordering an active guard to be enforced, all the naval forces of the three divisions to be in readiness, and the forts on the great Tiger-Island, Wang-tong, Sha-keo and Ta-kes, and other defences of the river, to be put in a state of defence,—to inquire again into the reasons which led these cruisers here, whether their statement is correct, whether they really came from America, or if they have been driven here from other provinces; at the same time upon no account to allow them to remain, to



discover also to what other places they are going, and if they have a design to enter the port, let the truth be discovered, and every thing in readiness to act, as circumstances may require. They must not be allowed to enter the port, or the consequences may be severe; and should they design to go towards the coast, intelligence must precede them, that preparation may be made to keep them off.

“These various statements coming before me, the Hoppo, I find, that as these vessels are not trading vessels, it is inconvenient for them to remain where they are, as disturbances might arise, yet, as many of their sailors are sick, and have been removed to houses at Macao for medical advice, in addition to giving orders to the Wey-yuen and pilots at Macao, to watch them strictly, and when they have recovered, to insist upon their being carried back to their ships, that they may return to their own country. I also issue this to the Hong merchants, that they may immediately make known to the superintendent of affairs of that country, that so soon as the sick men have recovered, it is necessary that they be taken back to their ships, unfurl their sails and return home; they will not be permitted to delay and loiter about, and the day of their departure must be made known. Hasten, hasten!

A Special Edict.

“Taou-Kwang, 16th year, 4th moon, 20th day. June 3d, 1836.”

The Peacock, after landing the sick, sailed for the anchorage of Kum-sing-moon, opposite to Lintin, for the purpose of taking in water and provisions; the Enterprise remained at Macao a few days longer.

## CHAPTER XXXVI.

### SKETCHES IN CHINA.

June, 1836.

In the appearance of Macao from the roads, there is something to remind one of Rio de Janeiro, without there being any thing, which



is particularly semblable. After having been so long from any Christian settlement, we looked upon it with pleasure, probably arising from the hope of relief which it promised for the sick; and this feeling was rendered more gratifying, by the hospitalities and attentions extended to us on all hands. I landed on the afternoon of our arrival, and was agreeably surprised to find the place superior to its appearance from the ship. It is clean, and there is an air of snugness and quiet, attributable to the almost entire absence of commerce, which gives an appearance of the unmolested retirement of those, who fly here at certain seasons, from the drudgery of business and the confinement of the close factories at Cantòn.

The houses are built on a curve, following the sweep of the shore, with a broad terrace in front; they are two stories high, in the Portuguese style, with large windows for ventilation, shaded by Venetian shutters. Penetrating the town from the playa, we find the streets crossing each other irregularly, now rising abruptly and again descending, and roughly paved with broken pebbles.

Macao was founded early in the sixteenth century, on a peninsula of an island, called Heanshang, a short distance from the southern shore of China.

This site was originally granted by the Chinese emperor, in consequence of important services rendered by the Portuguese at that period. A celebrated Chinese pirate named Tchang-si-lao had become so powerful, as to get possession and hold this island, whence he distrained the commerce of China, and blockaded the port of Cantòn. In their difficulties the mandarins sought and obtained aid of the Portuguese, who were then trading at Sanshan, a town about fifty miles south-west of Macao, giving the gold of Africa, the spices of the Moluccas, and the ivory and gems of Ceylon, in exchange for the silks and teas of the celestial empire. They quickly gained a complete victory over the pirate, who, it is said, committed suicide in consequence, and the emperor, in token of his gratitude, presented the peninsula to the Portuguese, which afterwards became of great advantage in the trade, which they established with Japan, Cochin-China and Siam.\* But the prosperity of Macao, following the fortunes of the mother country, has fallen, and is now of little importance to the Portuguese.

A wall, built in 1573, separates the Portuguese possessions from

\* Establecimientos Ultramarinos. Chinese Repository, vol. iii.



the Chinese, leaving them a space of one mile by three, but their jurisdiction is not even here exclusive. There is a Portuguese governor, and a garrison of about two hundred men, kept in good discipline; but the Chinese have also their mandarins, who exercise all the various functions of office. The only privilege the Portuguese possess, is that of governing themselves; while the Chinese population of the town is entirely under the control of the mandarins. The Portuguese pay regularly an annual ground-rent of 500 taëls for the temporary use and profit of Macao.

The population of Macao is estimated at twenty-five thousand, of which twenty thousand are Chinese.

#### PORTUGUESE POPULATION OF MACAO, IN 1835.

##### Free white Females.

From birth to 7 years old,	355
“ 7 to 15 “	345
“ 15 “ 30 “	643
“ 30 “ 60 “	600
“ 60 and upwards.	139
	— 2082

##### Free white Males.

From birth to 7 years old,	277
“ 7 to 15 “	322
“ 15 “ 30 “	417
“ 30 “ 60 “	381
“ 60 and upwards.	41
	— 1438

##### Slaves.

Males,	448
Females.	836
	— 1284

Total Portuguese pop.	{ males, 1816, }	4804
	{ females, 2918, }	

Marriages, in 1835	48
Baptisms, “ “	142
Deaths, “ “	127



The annual mortality, then, is 2.64 per cent., or about one in 38, which is less than that of most of the cities of Europe; in Paris, Strasburg and Barcelona, it is one in 32; in Rome 1 in 25, in Amsterdam, 1 in 24 and in Vienna, 1 in 22½, while in London, it is 1 in 40.\*

A large portion of the baptisms are of illegitimate children. The proportion of males to females is very unequal, and the mass of the population is wretchedly poor, which may account for the absence of chastity, said to prevail. We were told that mothers unhesitatingly sell their daughters into concubinage, at very low prices, and often degrade them by forcing them to marry Chinese.

In this view of the population, neither the troops, nor the inmates of convents, friars and nuns, are included. In 1822, the population was 4315, showing an increase of 489 in 13 years.

Macao is exposed, during the summer months, to severe hurricanes, called typhoons, which occur almost every year, and occasionally leave fearful marks of their violence: windows are sometimes blown in, roofs carried away, and the very white-wash and plastering are occasionally swept off from the outside of the walls, leaving the town in a wretchedly piebald condition. While we remained, there occurred several storms accompanied by rain, lightning and thunder, and in one, two persons were killed in the streets. But with all this, it is remarkably healthy, and provisions of all kinds are abundant and cheap. It is a favorite resort for invalids from all parts of India, who generally find a short residence here of great advantage. Vessels from Batavia usually arrive in a sickly condition, and depart again with their crews very much improved in health, for which they have been heretofore indebted as much to the kind and skilful attentions of Dr. T. R. Colledge, as to the salutary influence of the climate.

There are several public buildings and churches in Macao, but I did not find leisure to examine them.

Among the most interesting spots here is the aviary of Mr. Beal, an English merchant, who has been long a resident. It contains a variety of birds, among which is a bird of paradise; but we were disappointed to find it was not in feather at this season. It has a keen eye, and is bold and rapid in its motions. It is kept separate, in a large wire cage, into which a servant was tossing insects; the bird never allowed them to fall to the bottom of his habitation, always

\* Hawkins' Medical Statistics.



catching them very skilfully in his strong beak. One regrets that so much beauty and fierceness should be united, as there is in this and many other instances in nature. A splendidly feathered krokatoa, of very large size, swung in a hoop, beneath the shade of a tree in front of the aviary; and a gibbon and a monkey were chained hard by.

A great variety of flowers, in pots, and shrubs and trees formed the garden, where there is a miniature representation of time-worn, craggy rocks, a species of work for which the Chinese are celebrated. It stood on one side of a little pool of gold fish and silver fish, with double tails, which were seen shooting through the tiny caves and fissures at its base. The aviary, or great bird cage, encloses two trees, more than twenty feet high, and has, within it, sundry smaller apartments; and, in one corner, is another specimen of rock-work, with a pool at its base, for the use of individuals of the duck tribe. Within this wire prison a variety of small singing birds caroled as blithely as if their songs were the songs of liberty; gold and silver pheasants strutted about vauntingly in the pride of beauty, unmindful of their durance; the crown pigeon, as large as a peacock, with a high crest of feathers spread out like a fan, sat high upon a limb, to attract attention; ducks of various kinds chatted amicably in the pool; partridges and quails, at our approach, skulked away beneath the bushes, and the startled moose deer of Java, fled over the ornamental rock work, the diminutive size of the animal being in perfect keeping with the tiny crags and ravines, among which it sought to hide. All here lived harmoniously together; but the squalling, quarrelsome disposition of the parrots excluded them from fellowship with the rest. They were kept far enough apart to prevent them from blows; but, nevertheless, like a set of termagants, they contended at a distance, no doubt mutually bestowing very harsh epithets, if we might judge from their tones. Pretty polly is, like certain maidens, only amiable when solitary, or enjoying the undivided attention of those around her.

The cave of Camoens, the celebrated author of the *Lusiad*, is situated in the rear of the town, in a garden, where the gravel walks, shaded by trees, follow the sloping hills in such a manner as to seemingly multiply the extent of the grounds. The spot called the cave, which term conveys a very erroneous notion of it, is on a height. It consists of two perpendicular rocks, standing on the brow of a hill, about two feet apart, and each ten feet high. A heavy rock rests transversely on the top of them, like the lintel of a ponderous door-frame. The cave is two feet wide, by five long, and open at both



sides. Here, it is asserted, the poet communed with nature, and poured forth the inspirations of his muse—

“Here repair  
Many familiar with his well sung woes,  
The pilgrims of his genius.”

Upon the transverse rock is erected a light summer house, accessible by an ascent from the garden. It commands the view of an extensive prospect and beautiful scenery, including, on one side, the inner harbor and the Chinese burial-ground, which is comparable to a common, full of misshapen rocks; on the other, the outer harbor; and between the two, the town of Macao, below, affording a bird's-eye view of its several streets and buildings.

The British burial-ground is in the neighborhood, and is kept in neat order by the Superintendents' chaplain, who, regarding it much in the light of a cabinet of curiosities, never willingly permits a specimen to be deposited without being properly labelled, and marked by cubes of Portland stone, or marble, for the amusement of those who delight to wander among the tombs, not always with a view, however, to brighten their morals from the rottenness of the grave. We may gather some notion how many worldly hopes and aspirations have been concluded here, from the pompous show of grief for the departed, recorded, in marble, by the living, because more tenacious than the natural memory of ordinary men.

To glance back from the last resting place, to the living world;—The Portuguese in Macao have preserved their national fondness for music and society. The piano and guitar are heard from the houses in almost every street at night, and on one occasion, I met a masquing party, bound upon a serenade. It consisted of a dozen individuals, grotesquely dressed, the females, as I was told, being represented by young members of the other sex, marching in procession accompanied by music, and the occasional discharge of fire works, and followed by a crowd of admiring rabble. Another evidence of fondness of amusement, I saw in a company of amateurs who enacted plays and parts of operas, with much credit to themselves.

The females, seen on their way, to and from church, have strongly the appearance of being grand-mammas, and, to judge alone from their costume, so far is it in the rear of fashion, that one might imagine no innovation had been made in a hundred years. They wear loose figured calico gowns and mantos or scarfs over their heads,



and are usually followed by a slave bearing an umbrella, and a rug whereupon to kneel before the shrine at which they worship.

Like most Spanish and Portuguese towns, this has a place of common and general resort, in the "praya," facing the bay. In the evening ladies are seen here, in sedan chairs, taking the sea air, and gentlemen promenading for the sake of exercise. Wheel carriages are unknown, and the space for riding on horseback is very limited.

There is a very agreeable European society shut up in Macao, almost from the world. The ladies are left here, often for months together, while their lords are toiling for cash in the factories and close atmosphere of Cantón. This is usually the case in the season of trade, from June till March or April.

On landing at Macao for the first time, from a christian country, one is struck with the sight of many novelties. Chinese servants in white cotton leggings, secured at the knee with a blue silk garter; wooden soled shoes, full white breeches, white frock falling below the hips and buttoned over on the left breast; more remarkable, however, for the shaven front and long tail of hair almost sweeping the ground, and the imperturbable quiet and self-possession written on the countenance, are seen, here and there sauntering before a gentleman's door. Now and then you pass a pair of brawny limbed coolies, staggering under the weight of a box or bale suspended from a bamboo between them, clothed in blue shirts, short trowsers and straw or glazed flats, tied under the chin to shelter them, either from sun or rain. Again, you may encounter an individual sauntering along, now and then casting a glance at the houses, and startling you with a whur, made by separating, with the thumb, the legs of a pair of coarse tweezers, and causing them to vibrate violently as he swings his hand. This is the barber, announcing his presence, and readiness to perform the depilatory operation *à la Chinoise*, for any who may need this service.

Before leaving Macao I visited a Chinese school, taught by the (lately) missionary, the Rev. Mr. Gutzlaff and his wife. There were seventeen pupils reciting their lessons in turn, conveying to my unaccustomed ear, a sound resembling that of a simmering tea-kettle. I was interested in a child, totally blind, that was telling the alphabet to Mrs. G., who seems to be devoted to her pupils. It may be proper to state, that though Mr. Gutzlaff, strictly speaking, is no longer a missionary, he devotes all his leisure to laboring actively in the cause.

He introduced to me three Japanese youths who had been wrecked



on the *Pacific coast of America*, and afterwards found their way to China, on their route to Japan. From them he had gained a colloquial facility in their language, which he hopes some day to turn to account in visiting that strange country.\*

## CHAPTER XXXVII.

### SKETCHES IN CHINA.

June, 1836.

On the fifth of June, I determined to accompany a gentleman in a "fast-boat," to Kum-sing-moon, where the Peacock was lying at anchor, to join there a party going to Cantòn. At the place of embarkation, we were interrupted by a surly young mandarin, who, according to usage, demanded a dollar of each of us previous to going afloat; a tax levied on all foreigners who have not their own, or as the Chinese express it, 'Europe boat,' to carry them off. The mandarin treated us with an air of contemptuous condescension, and examined our dollars very carefully, first rejecting one and then another, because he found some point or figure more worn than pleased his fancy. At last we cut short his examination, by leaving him the sum in hand, putting the rest into our pockets.

While we were thus engaged, the tindal or commander of the 'fast-boat,' engaged by our comprador, Hardfacey, had called for a sampan, a short, flat boat with a bamboo cover. Sampans here are navigated exclusively by women, and are used as passage boats from the shore to ships in the roads. Their shape is not unlike the half of a water-melon. Each one is usually managed by three Tartar women, who are short, stout, ugly viragos, and live in their boat, which they keep remarkably clean; the wood being daily scoured with sand,

\* A mission ship has lately sailed from Macao for Japan, with these persons on board.



wears the cleanly appearance of a well kept milk-pail. An oar, made of two pieces, one end lapping the other in the centre, resting at this point upon the round head of an iron pin in the stern, extends into the water: one end, is constantly beneath its surface, while the other is connected by a long rattan to the bottom of the boat. The chief of the women stands on one side of the oar, and pushes it backwards and forwards, or rather from side to side; which, from the mode of the contrivance, causes the oar-blade to turn so as to offer itself diagonally to the water, and produce the effects of a skull. A second oar is pulled by a woman, sitting on a low stool near the bow. Their costume consists of a pair of broad pantaloons, of a black stuff which turns water, worn under a long blue Nankin frock or jacket, fitting closely round the neck, and a handkerchief, folded diagonally, is worn over the head and tied under the chin. The passengers are accommodated with stools in the centre of the boat.

The call for a sampan brought a half dozen to the beach, from their place of anchorage, a short distance off; all, eager for employment, plying their skill to reach the shore first, and at the same time calling out, "my boat, good boat; me know you, sir." Some of these water nymphs had very white teeth, which they displayed, wreathed in smiles, in order to obtain our custom. One was at last selected, and we were soon alongside of the 'fast boat,' our women shouting triumph over their competitors, who retorted most lustily, until we were beyond ear-shot; but, fortunately for us, perhaps, in a language we did not comprehend.

One might imagine that the fast-boat obtained its name from its qualities of swiftness. This one was a rude vessel of ten or eleven tons, with a single mast of bamboo, on which a coarse mat sail was hoisted. The interior was comfortless in the last degree, offering no other accommodation than some rush mats spread in the hold, to which we were invited to descend. No sooner was she under way, and her side offered to a stiff breeze, than she began to careen fearfully, and dance merrily over the waves. A small box of large pebbles stood in the stern, by way of moveable ballast, or arms and ammunition to fight their way, in event of being opposed.

On reaching the roads, we were rejoiced to find the *Enterprise* just about to sail for Kum-sing-moon, and got quickly on board without regretting the exchange of quarters. In a few minutes she was put before the wind, and, passing several vessels in the track, anchored close to the Peacock, about four o'clock, P. M.

Kum-sing-moon is the anchorage of vessels trading to Cantòn,



during the S. W. monsoon, the season of typhoons, and is considered more safe than that at Lintin, which is at no great distance. Either at one or at the other, one or two vessels remain throughout the year, used as depôts for the opium of India, whence it is smuggled into China, in very large amounts, affording those who engage in the trade, ample profits; and, if they be not too frequently unsuccessful in their smuggling expeditions, large fortunes are speedily acquired. The use, or rather, the intemperate abuse of opium among the Chinese is not less baleful in its effects, than are those of alcoholic spirits among christians. Strong edicts are frequently issued by the emperor against its introduction, and occasionally boats are caught and the opium confiscated. The inferior officers of the customs, employed to prevent this trade, find their interest in conniving at it, and now and then only, assuming a virtue they have not, making a seizure to keep up an appearance of vigilant honesty.

The India opium, from Patna, Benares, and Malwa, finds its way from the deposite ships to all parts of China. Its price varies, according to the quality, from \$500 to \$800 the chest, of lbs. 133½, the old being considered most profitable. The quantity consumed, and its estimated value for nine years, is stated in the following table, from which we may conjecture the number of opium eaters in the celestial empire.

ESTIMATE OF THE QUANTITY AND VALUE OF INDIA OPIUM, CONSUMED  
IN CHINA FOR NINE YEARS.

Season.		Chests.	Value in Dollars.
1827-28,		11,111,	10,425,075,
"	1828-29,	11,409,	12,533,105,
"	1829-30,	15,643,	12,057,157,
"	1830-31,	20,108,	12,904,263,
"	1831-32,	15,823,	11,501,584,
"	1832-33,	21,279,	15,352,429,
"	1833-34,	20,213½,	11,006,605,
"	1834-35,	21,653,	11,758,779,
"	1835-36,	26,200,	17,106,903.

About six o'clock, P. M. our party got on board of a pilot boat schooner, comfortably arranged for passengers, being one of several, which form a packet line between Macao and Cantón. One leaves each place daily, according to the newspaper, but there is no regularity in their departure. They are all manned by Hindoos or Bombaymen, who conduct their vessels with skill and propriety.



We got under way in a heavy rain, and it speedily became dark, leaving us to pass the time, in the cabin, either in conversation or sleep. At seven o'clock the next morning we anchored; the tide was against us, and it had fallen calm. We were in sight of the Boca-Tigris, or Bogue, which the Chinese consider to be the mouth of Pearl River, on the north bank of which is seated the commercial capital of the celestial empire.

The Bogue is defended by two forts, built without those precautions which are indicative of military science and skill. It is the site of most of the wars, waged between foreign navies and the Chinese; and its historical importance has been lately enhanced by the blundering exploits of the late Lord Napier, who, in consequence of failing in his objects, died of chagrin; and not by any atrocious cruelty of the Chinese, as has been, we are sorry to think, somewhat maliciously alleged. A perusal of the English reports of this matter, leads us to suppose, they are purposely couched in bombastic grandiloquence, in imitation of Chinese edicts, to excite a strong feeling at home, and induce the king and parliament, to batter the forts and houses about the ears of the inhabitants, in revenge for not being permitted to break with impunity the Chinese customs and laws. How far they will succeed, time will discover.

His Excellency, Governor Loo, managed the affair as he would have done a game of chess. Looking forward to his object, he disregarded the pawns and smaller pieces, which may represent the 'broadcloths, camblets, and watches,' as 'unworthy a serious thought,' and pushed my lord until he was checkmated. In vain may England, in conformity with the petition of her merchants resident at Cantòn, endeavor to wipe away the disgrace of the foil. Her force cannot do any serious injury to China, as a nation, though she may destroy millions of property and human lives; because, in China, humanity does not enter into the policy of her government, and, in all probability, it would cost England more, in life and treasure, than the trade she might afterwards obtain therefor would be worth; and it will take cunning argument to induce the Emperor to wipe from his records, that the British king had submissively sent him tribute. Nor can she hope to gain much by negotiation. So much treachery has marked the political intercourse of England with the East, from the beginning, we ought not to be surprised, that those nations not already in her grasp distrust every overture of amity proffered from her.

A very small proportion of the three hundred and sixty millions of



China care little whether England sends them broadcloths, camlets and watches, or not; and they feel assured that England must have tea, silk, and rhubarb. And, in spite of the millions of Chinese who depend on commerce for subsistence, they think the nation can do better without foreign intercourse than foreign nations can without their trade. They have learned, too, that their trade is so important to foreigners, they have heretofore invariably gained the ascendancy by interrupting it, always more successful in their contests by an appeal to the pocket than to arms; thus proving the assertion of a great English writer, that "Nothing dejects a trader like the interruption of his profits. A commercial people, however magnanimous, shrinks at the thought of declining trade, and an unfavorable balance."\* The English merchants will probably find it their interest to submit to the terms of the Chinese for the next half century, or sacrifice the trade. It seems out of the question to attempt to gain privileges here by force. Heretofore they have been invariably foiled. To be successfully exercised against the Chinese government, the force must be grand, perhaps equal to one-fourth of the collected power of England, and brought forth deliberately, without anticipating much from *coup de main* warfare; and "a commercial people, however magnanimous," can do without national glory, when there is no certainty of obtaining it speedily, and, at the same time, with a favorable balance. The knightly lance and the leger are never quartered in the same heraldic field. Had they followed a more simple course, and remained satisfied, after the expiration of the Company's charter, with sending to Cantòn the lowest grade of consul, without parade or ostentation, the trade would not have been interrupted, the nation would have been spared the mortification which Lord Napier's expulsion must have occasioned, and the twenty-five thousand pounds a year, paid, in salaries, to those of the Superintendent establishment, might have been appropriated to some more useful purpose. In corroboration of this opinion, we find that the American consul is recognised by the authorities at Cantòn, and all goes on smoothly.

I am glad the Americans there had shrewdness enough to pursue a course of policy in the late affair, which kept their interests distinct from those of the English; for neither party would have gained by the union: besides, however close their connexions in social intercourse and individual friendship ought to be, commercial and national interest must be a thing apart. No man should forget his nationality.

\* Taxation no Tyranny.



To do so, for an instant, is to be recreant to his country, and to prove himself unworthy to retread her soil. Still, I would not have him forget the maxim, "*à Rome comme à Rome*," but, when he cannot, with propriety, conform to the laws and customs of the country he visits, let him retire to another, or seek his native skies, without expecting to change a nation's customs and policy to suit his peculiar views.

"J'aime qu'un Russe soit Russe,  
Et qu'un Anglais soit Anglais.  
Si l'on est Prussien en Prusse,  
En France soyons Français.

\* \* \* \* \*

Mes amis, mes amis,  
Soyons de notre pays,  
Oui, soyons de notre pays."

The third volume of the "Chinese Repository" contains a circumstantial account of Lord Napier's failure, and of his melancholy death, with a number, if not all, the documents in relation to the whole affair. His lordship was a worthy, amiable man; but, unfortunately, not of a disposition to meet the temporizing measures which are the great weapons of the Chinese. We doubt, however, whether the writer, or writers of those articles be free from prejudice; for they are evidently warmed with the subject, almost as much as if it had been a personal affair of his or their own. They are thoroughly English; indeed, the character of the Repository is so entirely British, that we should never suspect the editor to be an American of the United States. It is a work that would give reputation to any man, without considering the benevolent and laudatory objects which it has in view. Its pages contain more information, in relation to the East, embodied in a pleasing form, than can be found in the range of many large libraries. It deserves success, and I should be glad to see its list of subscribers increase.

The continued calm did not accord with our impatience to reach Cantòn. For several hours we had nothing better to do than occupy ourselves looking at the Bogue and the forts. The scenery is mountainous and varied.

Several sampans approached, skulling and rowing. Their navigators were talking loudly, and, when not bickering among themselves, they levelled their abuse at us, the tone of which was alone



comprehensible. The youngest of the crew was always in the bows; and, when there were children on board, they held out their hands, crying "Cumshaw—present."

About three o'clock in the afternoon, the tide being favorable, we got under way with a very light breeze, and slowly passed the Bogue, where the Chinese gunnery astonished the Imogen and Andromache. By ten o'clock, we had reached the anchorage at Whampoa, forty *le* or twelve miles from Cantòn, where we were again obliged to anchor.

The flood tide, at two o'clock the next morning, brought with it a light wind, and we again made sail. Daylight came gradually on, and discovered, on our right, low meadow land, verdant with rice plants, and fringed to the water's edge with shrubbery. In the back ground, where not concealed by their vapory clouds floating between us and their summits, the mountains rose in broken and undulating outline against the sky. The stream was pressed by numerous sampans, and cargo or chop boats of large size, moving in different directions. As the sun rose, the scene grew more animated, and his increasing beams seemed to infuse new life into those laboring at the oar. Two chop boats of not less than a hundred tons, propelled by three large skulls over the stern, each managed by one or two men, were side by side, trying their speed. They glided swiftly along, and the rowers were in high spirits, who, for the sake of coolness, wore nothing but a pair of loose short drawers. One of them rushed across the deck of his vessel, always tossing a leg in the air behind him, as he gave a sudden and strong impulse to his oar in pushing it from him, before applying his force in the opposite direction. The race was pretty equal for some time, until a more than ordinarily energetic push broke my man's oar: there was a boisterous laugh, and the other boat glided a-head.

We were now in sight of two tall towers, divided into several stories by corridors or roofs, turning up in points. They are white, but in many places have patches of green vegetation upon them, imparting the appearance of considerable age. They are usually termed pagodas by foreigners, though they are not resorted to as places of worship, but appear to have been originally designed for watch towers. "The one, called *Hwa-ta*, was built more than thirteen hundred years ago; it has nine stories, is octagonal, and 170 feet in height. The other called, *Kwang-ta*, was built in the time of the Tang dynasty, which closed, A. D. 906. It is broad at the base and slender towards the top. Its height is 160 feet. Anciently it was surmounted by 'a golden cock, which turned every way with the wind;' but



that was broken down and carried off to the capital, and its place afterwards supplied by a wooden one, which long since disappeared.”\*

We advanced slowly. Every step of our progress was marked by increasing numbers of boats, plying in different directions. Large junks, either riding at anchor or skulling with the tide, became more frequent. As we drew nearer to the city, vessels with oval or arched decks, curiously carved, were anchored along the shores. These are the permanent abodes of many people, and some of them are employed as salt stores. We had passed a fort, called Howqua's, and were not far from another, named Dutch Folly. The flags flying in front of the several factories were now in sight, but the tide was running so strongly against us, we got into one of the many sampans that had been some time hovering round us, soliciting our custom. We moved along very comfortably, and soon entered a narrow passage, between a line of junks, moored head and stern, close to the shore, and another line at anchor at no great distance. This seemed a perfect labyrinth of sampans, moving and turning in every direction, and the confusion was not a little increased, in our minds, by the hum of voices and rushing of the tide. Yet on we moved, turning now to the right and now to the left, to avoid sampans passing within a few inches of us, keeping me in constant apprehension that we should come in contact and capsize; but the admirable skill of our river nymphs saved us from all rencontres.

We saw on our way, in the galleries of the junks, or in light flat boats beautifully fitted and ornamented, Chinese females gaily dressed, seated in the cabins or apartments, which are tastefully arranged. Some of them we passed very closely and attracted their attention. We observed that the hair was prettily disposed on the back part of the head, being formed in an oval braid round a centre knot, through which was a broad skewer of metal—gold, silver, or brass—passes to secure the whole. It was nicely oiled, shining, black, and comparable to a duck's back. The hair was combed backwards from the forehead, and, in some instances, a small flower was so placed as to give a pleasing finish to the head-dress. It was very perceptible, that they were indebted to the toilet for the roses of their cheeks; and, in some, the centre of the lower lip was colored of a bright pink. In spite of their exquisitely long finger nails and ample dresses, these *demoiselles* possess nothing to attract one from the countries of the West.

After a pull of about two miles through an indescribable scene—

\* Chinese Repository.



Reader, imagine 84,000 boats, either at rest, or moving in all directions, inhabited by men, women and children, the infants having gourds tied to their backs to buoy them in event of falling overboard, making up a floating population of not less than one hundred and fifty thousand; imagine this, and you will then have a very faint idea of Pearl River, where it passes Cantòn. We landed, in the midst of a heavy shower, in front of the factories, and soon entered the dwellings of our respective friends. The area before the factories, was occupied, in part, by several huge umbrellas, used as tents to shelter fruit, &c., offered for sale, under some of which were huddled together, some more than half naked China-men, and all dripping with rain, while others were hurrying in opposite directions in search of shelter.

---

## CHAPTER XXXVIII.

### SKETCHES IN CHINA.

*June, 1836.*

CANTON, or as it is written on the native maps, Kwang-tung Sang-ching, that is, "the capital of the province of Kwang-tung," is built on the northern bank of the Choo-keang or Pearl River, sixty miles inland from the "great sea," and about eighty from Macao. The foreign factories, already alluded to, are situated a short distance from the south-west corner of the city walls, in  $23^{\circ} 7' 11''$  north latitude, and in  $113^{\circ} 14' 30''$  east longitude from Greenwich.

The scenery in the neighbourhood of the city is rich and diversified, but does not present any thing bold or grand. The country to the north, and north-east, is hilly and mountainous. A wide prospect opens in every other direction. The numerous rivers and canals abound with fish, and are covered with an almost endless variety of boats, which are continually passing to and from the neighboring towns and villages. Southward from the city, as far as the eye can see, the waters cover a considerable portion, perhaps one-third of the



whole surface. Rice fields and gardens occupy the low lands, with only here and there a few little hills and small groves of trees, rising up to diversify the otherwise unbroken landscape. The city itself, including the suburbs, is not of very great extent; and though very populous, derives its chief importance from its extensive domestic and foreign trade.

The city of Cantòn is among the oldest in this part of the empire. It is not easy, and perhaps not possible, to determine its original site and name, or to ascertain at what period it was first built, though the historians date its foundation about 2,000 years ago.

That part of the city which is within the walls, is built nearly in the form of a square, and is divided by a wall, running east and west, into what are termed the old and new city. The streets are numerous and very crooked, varying in breadth from two to sixteen feet; but are generally six or eight feet wide, and every where flagged with large stones, chiefly granite. The entire circuit of the walls, which are built of sand-stone and bricks, varying in height from twenty-five to forty feet, and in thickness, from twenty to twenty-five, is estimated at about six miles. The walls are pierced by sixteen small gates, which foreigners are never permitted to pass, except in case of fire, when their aid is eagerly sought. The suburbs, taken collectively, are scarcely less populous or less extensive, than the city itself, and in their general features, are alike.

The foreign factories, or buildings occupied by foreign factors or merchants, cover a plot of ground, extending about two hundred yards from east to west, fronting on the river, and a hundred and thirty yards north and south. They are either of granite or brick, two stories high, and present a substantial front, which has a veranda, supported by pillars, the spaces between which, are closed by Venetian shutters. They form, with the American and several foreign flags in front of them, a striking contrast with the scene around. They face upon an open area, equal to their length, and perhaps fifty yards wide, which is crossed in front of the buildings, by a broad pavement, which is stated to be the limits allotted to foreigners for taking exercise, though they may be seen pulling on the river in their own boats, occasionally visiting Honan, and the Fa-ti gardens, besides perambulating the streets of the suburbs, and the grounds about the walls of the city.

The factories are the property of the Hong merchants, a company of twelve Chinese, through whose medium all intercourse between foreign residents and the Chinese government must take



place. The factories are thirteen in number, and are styled the "Thirteen Factories;" besides, each has a name intended to be indicative of good fortune. The first, on the east, is the factory of "Justice and Peace," but known to foreigners as the "Creek Factory." The second, or Dutch, is the "Factory of collected Justice;" the third, the British, or "Factory that ensures Tranquillity." This is separated from the fourth, or "The great and affluent Factory," by a narrow street; the fifth, is the "Old English Factory;" the sixth, the "Swedish Factory;" the seventh, the "Imperial Factory;" the eighth, the "Precious and prosperous Factory;" the ninth, the American, or the "Factory of wide Fountains." China Street separates this from the tenth, which is occupied by a Hong merchant, Mingqua. The eleventh, is the French; the twelfth the Spanish, and the thirteenth, separated from the last by New China Street, is the Danish.

Each of these factories, or, as they are commonly spoken of in Cantòn, Hongs, is divided into five or more houses, by narrow courts. A broad arched way leads through the middle of each Hong, from front to rear, by which the several houses or factories are accessible.

I have given thus much of the topography, for the better understanding of my readers, and beg to refer those who desire more local information, to the second volume of the Chinese Repository, which I have freely used.

On landing, I entered the "Imperial Hong," and was met at the entrance of the thoroughfare by a number of Chinese servants, in clean white garments, wooden-soled shoes, and hair nicely braided, and almost sweeping the ground. An old man, with a pencil in his hand, quickly appeared from an office on the left, and gave some directions to those around who were accustomed to obey, and we were led up stairs to receive the welcome of an old acquaintance. A servant was appointed for each of us, and in a few minutes we were comfortably disposed of for so long as we might remain in "the provincial city of the flowery land," as the Chinese, in their grandiloquence, delight to distinguish it.

Though "ladies, great guns, and other military weapons" are not permitted to be brought to Cantòn by foreigners, they manage to obtain all the luxuries of the table, and a large share of domestic comfort. The system of the establishment is similar to that of India, except that the steward, there called a dubash, is here a comprador, and the host is entirely dependent upon him for every thing con-



nected with the household. The compradòr has a special license for his vocation; he engages the servants, supplies the table, and controls every thing connected with housekeeping. Besides, he is a banker, and, on the order of his employer, pays for all purchases, so that one may live in Cantòn for years, and never have occasion to defile his fingers with cash. To us visitors this was very convenient; for, instead of carrying a weight of money in our pockets, for the purchase of trifles, we made a deposite with the worthy compradòr, and drew occasional drafts on him, which, with the shopmen, were as current as cash.

The foreign society is limited; the number of residents, including clerks, does not, probably, exceed one hundred and fifty. Social visiting and dining are frequent, but we are not certain that the society is bound more closely by the bonds of viands and wine. The "Union Club" is established for the purpose of bringing together, more frequently, the foreigners, where they efface any unpleasant feelings which may be excited in the rivalry of business. The older residents, generally, abstain from wine, on account of its unfavorable effects upon the health; and, in lieu thereof, drink tea, which appears on the table in such guise that the eye uninitiated may readily mistake it. Wine is brought in quantities to Cantòn, where the climate operates very much to its improvement. Besides other good things of the table, we see here the famous China capon and delicious broad-tail mutton, from the cape of Good Hope; and almost any tea-drinking old lady, by a visit to Cantòn, would be rendered miserable for the rest of her life; the flavor and bouquet of the China herb loses so much in crossing the broad seas.

Our first intercourse with the children of the "flowery land" was held with a tailor and a shoemaker. They speedily answered, in person, to our summons. The tailor came first. He was a small, round-shouldered man, in white costume, bearing a bundle under his arm, tied in a handkerchief. He bowed as he entered, or, rather, quickly ducked his head, saying, "Chin, chin,"—your most obedient.

"Are you a tailor?"

"Yes, sir; you have got make some pigeon with me? Me glad see you—me make all true pigeon. What thing you suppose you wantshey?"

"Grass-cloth jackets and pongee pantaloons."

"Have got—have got—suppose you wantshey lookey muster;" at the same time untying his bundle, and producing a variety of patterns of grass-cloth and silk pongee; he displayed the first, saying, "This grass-cloth good thing,—number one, first chop—wantshey?"



"How much for a dozen jackets?"

"One dozen piece jacket," looking thoughtfully for a moment, and then adding, "one dollar one make twelve dollar—can do?"

"How soon will they be finished?"

"When he wantshey?"

"Very soon."

"Suppose next day to-morrow?"

"Yes!"

"Can do—can do—me make measure," which he did in the usual way, and took an old jacket as a guide by which to fashion the new ones. This done, he went on;—"No wantshey pantaloon pongee,"—at the same time displaying the article—"one good thing—number one good thing, first chop—can secure—me no speaky two tongue." In this way he despatched business, taking each article separately, and deciding all in relation to it before proceeding to inquire whether other garments were wanting.

The above is a specimen of Anglo-Chinese, as it is spoken and understood, not only by the Chinese shopmen and merchants, but by the foreign residents holding intercourse with them. This strange mongrel is regularly taught in the Chinese elementary schools, as a branch of education, and it would be difficult, perhaps, to exchange ideas with them in any other.

The shoemaker next appeared, and began with the salutation, "Chin chin," and was soon despatched. In both instances, these men were prompt, and gave satisfaction in their respective contracts. Indeed, such is the general character of this class of people; but all hold it a point of honor to get as much in a bargain as possible, but, when that is made, the terms are rigidly adhered to in most instances.

The imitateness of the Chinese is proverbial, and it is stated, that some years since, tailors would imitate an old garment even to the patches and darns; but such instances are at present rare. Something of the kind occurred to me. I directed an ivory-dealer to have two seals cut, and told him in what manner I wished them executed. When these were finished, I ordered a third, and with a pencil, carelessly wrote the letters to be engraved thereon, directing that it should be executed like the others.

"Very well—he wantshey all same, same?"

"Yes."

When presented, it was a fac simile of my careless writing, and when I explained the mistake, he defended himself, saying, that I had ordered it to be "all the same, same."



After dinner, we adjourned to the veranda, from which we had a bird's eye view in front. The shower had passed, and several groups of Chinese were standing and chatting together. One group held birds, in cages, which they bring out every day for the sake of an airing. Another party were squatted in a circle, seemingly in idle conversation, where they remained for a half hour, and then went their respective ways.

Here and there was seen a Chinaman, in blue, seated on a pyramidal red stool with several drawers below the top, and near to him, a small bucket with a long staff fixed to one side of it. These are barbers; a class of artists, which numbers in Canton no less than 7,300, and, as in other countries, it is asserted, their success in business depends upon their talent for talk and gossip. At this hour few were employed; but in the early part of the day, they are all busy shaving the heads and dressing the long cues of their countrymen. A Chinaman will defend this appendage till the last, its loss being a disgrace which cannot be readily washed away. If he lose it when absent from the empire, he never returns until it has acquired a legitimate length. I have watched the barbers at midday when the sun was shining in full blaze, to see them follow the long shade of the flag-staff in front of the factory, as the advance of the sun caused the shadow to change its position, thus securing the advantages of an airing. Towards sunset, the chest of drawers and bucket were secured to a shoulder stick, and they moved off shop and all.

Along the pavement, foreign clerks were promenading up and down for the sake of exercise; while here and there, a pair of Parsees, the finest-looking people in the East, were sauntering to and fro. The river was alive with boats, and one or two trim-built wherries were seen gliding in the throng, pulled by English gentlemen, for the sake of health.

The morning after our arrival, we set out to see whatever was to be seen of the "flowery land." We were met at the door by a Chinaman, with a basket of ivory toys, who, with a smiling face, solicited our patronage; but finding his articles did not please us, as a last test of our taste, he inquired, "No wantshey big mandarin sodger knife," at the same time exhibiting a short sword, in a scabbard, ornamented and covered with tortoise-shell.

The barbers were busy all over the area, and people were hurrying in every direction in pursuit of trade. Some with umbrellas, and others content to shelter the head from the sun, by holding up a fan. Along the wall, near China Street, a number of old women,



miserably clad, their little feet bandaged and protruded into notice, sat busily sewing with a bag of rags beside them. The corner of the street was covered with red placards, containing edicts in Chinese characters, reminding one of the vicinity of a theatre at home. At this spot, too, sat several people with coops and cages, which we found, on examination, to contain cats and dogs, fattened for the table, which were in their respective ways testifying their desire to be enlarged from prison. The purchasers were always particular to look closely at puss'-eyes, the state of which is considered to be the criterion of the healthful condition of the animal. Eat cats and dogs! Whether delicious or not, I am not prepared to say; but I know of no good reason against eating them. Education and habit have decided the matter for most of us. If we be disgusted with these as articles of diet, I am sure few of us will turn from the fatted capon, the duck, the goose, or the turkey, the dressing of which the Chinese cooks understand as well as any people living. Indeed, if the state of the art of cookery in a nation were to be received as a criterion of its civilization, I should vote the Chinese the most civilized people on earth. Birds'-nest soups and jellies, bichos do mar, sharks'-fins, and sea-weed, are made palatable; fruits and vegetables of all sorts are converted into sweetmeats of all kinds; among which ginger, oranges and bamboo are not the least sapid.

Before entering China Street, several shopmen had put their respective cards into our hands, assuring us, in a confidential tone, "You come my house, you find all true pigeon; me no speakey two tongue." China Street, the widest in the suburbs, is twelve feet wide, well paved, and, perhaps, three hundred feet long. It is lined on each side by narrow stores, two stories high, having verandas in front, and all painted green and black. In these shops are chiefly kept samples of goods, where you may purchase a yard or a cargo at nearly the same rate. They are very damp, at least at this season, and the shelves upon which the silks, &c., are placed, are made in gratings, and their front is usually closed by wooden shutters. Two or three times a week charcoal fires are set beneath, and the heated air permeates the goods, and corrects the dampness of the atmosphere. Neat laquered signs hang at the doors, done in simple English, as "Washing, Dealer in Silks," &c.

On entering one of these shops, you are welcomed with "Chin, chin," and a door which separates the shop from a small vestibule in front, is closed to shut out intruders, and prevent the gathering of a curious crowd in the street. Besides, beggars are wont to take this



opportunity to enter, and it is against the custom to send them away empty-handed; nor can they be persuaded to move without some trifle, but remain, stunning the ears by striking together two pieces of bamboo, until bribed to depart.

A counter six feet long and one and a half wide, covered with oil-cloth, stands a little in front of the shelves. Before it is a table, on each side of which are seats for the purchasers, that they may examine the goods at ease. Beneath the table is an altar of the Chinese *penates*, consisting of a sheet of red paper inscribed with Chinese characters, before which continually burns a red wax taper or a small lamp.

Almost every thing is sold by weight, whether silk or poultry, vegetables or silver, by the following table:

10 Cash, ( <i>le</i> ,)	1 Candareen,	=	5.7984 grs. Troy.
10 Candareens, ( <i>fun</i> ,)	1 Mace,	=	57.984 grs. Troy.
10 Mace, ( <i>tseen</i> ,)	1 Tael,	=	579.084 grs. Troy.
10 Tael, ( <i>leang</i> ,)	1 Catty,	=	1 $\frac{1}{3}$ lb. avoird.
100 Catties, -	1 Pecul,	=	133 $\frac{1}{3}$ lbs. "

It is to be observed that the words Cash, Candareens, Mace, Tael, Catty and Pecul, are not Chinese words, and are never used by the Chinese among themselves; and why foreigners have employed them instead of the legitimate terms, it is difficult to conjecture.\* The above, with slight modifications, are the standard weights, both of money and of commerce. Though the shopmen tell the prices in dollars, they keep their accounts decimally according to the following table.

10 Cash,	-	-	-	1 Candareen,	
10 Candareen,	-	-	-	1 Mace,	
10 Mace,	-	-	-	1 Tael,	= \$1,38.

On every counter is seen an instrument, called a "swan-pan," or *counting board*, with which the Chinese perform calculations in numbers with surprising facility. This abacus, or arithmetical board, consists of an oblong frame of wood, about a foot long, having a bar running lengthwise, about two-thirds its width from one side. Through this bar, at right angles, are inserted a number of parallel wires, having moveable balls on them, five on one side of the bar and two on the other. The principle on which computation is made is this; that any ball in the larger compartment, being placed against

\* Chinese Repository.



the bar and called unity, decreases or increases by tenths, hundredths, &c.; and the corresponding balls in the smaller division, by fifths, fiftieths, &c. If one in the smaller compartment is placed against the middle bar, the opposite unit or integer, which may be any one of the digits, is multiplied by five.\*

This method is of Tartar origin, and was used in Russia until Ferguson, a Scotch mathematician, introduced arithmetic. Arabic numerals found their way into Europe in the ninth century, through the Spaniards, who were the first to adopt them. The Russian empire received the Arabic method of counting a thousand years afterwards; and even to this day, the ancient method of counting is met with among its people. Such is the fate of the arts; they slowly find their way round the world:

When several articles are purchased by an individual from one shopman, he customarily makes the purchaser a present, which goes under the name of "cumshaw," and is equivalent to the per centage deducted in some cases with us for cash. The Chinese shopmen are very adroit in putting up packages, and if they be opened by foreigners, it is rarely they can be again put into the same neat form.

The shops are nearly all alike, both in China and in New-China Streets. We find in them dealers in ivory, in silk, silver and gold, laquered ware; &c.; shops for birds and bird-cages, shells, fireworks and insects, which are not worthy separate description.

Both China Streets are crowded during the early part of the day, and we see here the stalls of the medical fraternity. They are usually seated in the midst of little baskets of dry herbs, which they are always compounding in a rude mortar, when not engaged with the complainings of a patient. Their prescriptions seem to be as much esteemed for quantity as quality, some of the doses resembling more a mash for a horse than a potion for a man.

A narrow street, crosses, nearly at right angles the heads of China streets, where the concourse is always very great. Here we see men with flat baskets of fish hung at each end of a shoulder staff; sedan chairs, which foreigners are not allowed to use; and some with umbrellas, all moving in opposite directions, and yet avoiding collision. Like the other two, this street is filled by various small shops. At one end of it we find the cabinet makers, collected together, busily employed, fashioning ebony, rose and camphor woods, into desks, chairs, trunks, &c., which have found their way all over the world.

\* *Establecimientos Ultramarinos*. Tom. iv. Madrid, 1788.



Like the mechanics in other parts of the East, we find these making almost as much use of their feet and toes as of their hands. Even a small writing desk goes through a process in the manufacture which might be termed building, for their work-shops have nothing like a bench or table for tools, or any contrivances for abridging labor. The mechanics are usually seated flat upon the floor with their task between their legs and the very few tools they use, scattered on either side of them within reach.

There is another street, inhabited chiefly by tinkers, who produce many household utensils, from a metallic compound, closely resembling silver, known in commerce as tutenague, or China spelter. It is an alloy of iron, copper, and zinc; but in what proportions is a secret not yet discovered by Europeans. "It is harder than zinc, though less so than iron, sonorous, compact, and has some malleability. The fresh fracture is brilliant, but soon tarnishes. Till superseded by spelter, from Silesia, it was exported in large quantities to India; but on account of its high price, is now seldom or never shipped; spelter being, on the contrary, imported to compete with it in China."

We must pass by many things which we might remark, but our stay was too limited to enable us to see all which is accessible to foreigners; and we are happy in having so valuable a work to refer all who may be interested to know more of Cantòn, as the Chinese Repository.



## CHAPTER XXXIX.

## SKETCHES IN CHINA.

*June, 1836.*

ONE afternoon we set off to cross the river to visit the Buddhist temples at Honan, but were unable to procure a boat, an edict having been issued the day before inhibiting foreigners from visiting it, and the boat-people from hiring their boats to them. So severe are the inflictions of Chinese law generally, that no ordinary bribe will induce their infraction by Chinese citizens. Nothing can be more effectual than their mode of operation. Several instances might be adduced; but the following extract in relation to Lord Napier, is sufficiently illustrative of the style of these decrees or proclamations, and its success proves how strictly it was observed.

“From the period of this proclamation, mercantile people of this inner land are not permitted to buy or sell to the English nation, any goods or things whatever, large or small; and all manner of workmen, boatmen, &c., are also not allowed to receive hire or employ of the said barbarians, (foreigners?) Should there be any clandestinely having dealings or receiving hire, let the local officers immediately examine and seize them, to be punished according to the law against holding clandestine intercourse with foreign nations. In this the said barbarian eye Lord Napier, has cut himself off from the celestial empire. It is not all that we, the governor and lieutenant-governor, have liked to do.

“The barbarian merchants of all other nations are still permitted to trade as usual. They need have no suspicion or anxiety. Let all with trembling awe obey. Oppose not. A special proclamation.

“Taoukwang, 14th year, 9th moon, 29th day.”—(September 2nd, 1834.)

“When the Chinese soldiers appeared about the foreign factories, on the publication of this order, and all the native servants and por-



ters were withdrawn from the British factory, Lord Napier requested a guard of marines from the ships of war at the Bogue, to come up to the city. All natives were forbidden, on pain of death, to sell any provisions to the British factory; and all foreigners to furnish supplies, on the penalty of suffering like restrictions themselves. At the same time, the passage of foreign boats between Cantòn and Whampoa was forbidden; allowing the departure of foreigners, but the return of no one whatever.”\*

Thus operated on, more by stern necessity than any apprehension of the exercise of physical force against him, Lord Napier took his departure, and the Chinese gained their point.

Unable to hire a conveyance, one of our party applied to a Hong merchant for his boat, in which we hoped to evade the law; but he not only loaned the boat, but accompanied us himself. He would not consent, however, to visit Honan, but instead, carried us to see a tea garden, which to me, was quite as interesting.

We soon entered a canal, along which the boat was poled. Houses of bluish bricks, the color of which is owing to being baked without the contact of fire, or to some peculiarity of the clay, rose immediately from the water on each side. We passed numerous boats, and wherever there were children, they hailed us in tones of derision, crying as long as they could be heard “fan-qui,”—foreign devils. Along the canal were several public tea-houses, apparently neat within, where the Chinese resort to play, drink tea, and smoke opium. At one of the miserable bamboo huts on the canal bank, resembling a sty, more than the habitation of human beings, we saw a woman preparing a large rat for cooking. After passing nearly a half mile through contrasting scenes of opulence and misery, the boat stopped at a stair, and we entered a garden, adorned with summer houses, and several large fish ponds. The walks between the latter were paved, and a balustrade of porcelain ran along on either side. Numerous dwarfed trees, planted in pots, were growing along the walks. The practice of the art of dwarfing plants, appears to be confined to the Japanese and Chinese.

“The general method of obtaining vegetable dwarfs is said to be the following: a quantity of clay, or mould, is applied to the upper part of a trunk of a tree, from which a dwarf is intended to be taken, and close to its division into branches. The mould is to be confined to the spot by coarse hempen, or cotton cloth, and to be carefully kept

\* Chinese Repository.



moist by water. In consequence of this application, continued sometimes above a twelvemonth, small tender fibres shoot down like roots from the wood into the mould. The part of the trunk emitting those new fibres, together with the branch arising immediately above it, is then to be carefully separated from the rest of the tree, and planted in new earth, in which the fibres become new roots, while the former branch is now the stem of the vegetable thus transformed in some measure. This operation does not destroy or alter the productive faculty which those parts enjoyed before their separation from the parent root. That, which, while a branch of the original tree, bore flowers and fruit, continues to produce the same, though no longer supported upon any stock. The terminal buds of such branches of trees as are meant to become dwarfs, are torn off; which circumstance prevented the farther elongation of those branches, and forces other buds and branches from the sides. These branches are bent by wires to whatever form the operator wishes; and when the appearance of age and decay is meant to be given to a dwarf tree, it is repeatedly smeared with treacle or molasses, which attracts multitudes of ants, who, in pursuit of those sweet juices, attack the bark, and, by a gradual corrosion of it, produce the desired effect. These different processes are sometimes attempted to be kept secret by the gardeners, and they vary designedly in the mode of carrying them on: but the principle upon which they are founded is sufficiently apparent from what is related here; and the contrivance argues ingenuity and perseverance, rather than the practice does true taste, which consists in assisting nature in its most favorite works; not in counteracting its operations or distorting its productions.”\*

In our walk through the garden we saw much to admire. We were led from it into an open field, and, following a path along a ditch, met a number of women tottering along, owing to the deformity of their feet, produced by bandaging. They were just returning from the packing and sorting houses, where they had been employed. About three hundred women are attached to each tea-establishment, and receive for their respective labor about six cents a day, without other emolument of any kind. Those we saw were miserably clad, and their feet were bound with bandages, and in little shoes. If the bandages be left off, the feet very soon spread; and by doing so they would become more useful and trustworthy members, but this would be at the cost of pride.

\* Staunton's China,—vol. I. p. 212. Philad. 1799.



We entered a building where tea is manufactured. The people were just departing from their labors. On the second floor were apartments, wherein the leaves are sifted and sorted by hand, and then packed, after coming from an apartment below, where they undergo the process of manipulation, in cast iron pans, set diagonally in blocks of masonry about breast high. These blocks are arranged in rows, and each one has four pans with a furnace beneath them. The method of manufacturing tea has been already mentioned in a former part of this work.

We noticed here, among other things, a winnowing machine, in all respects like those used in the United States; and were informed, that it is employed in separating the several sorts of tea. The imperial, being the heaviest, falls first; next, the young hyson, then the gunpowder, and so on.

Green teas are very little used by the Chinese, though the "cup that cheers but not inebriates," is universal throughout the whole of the celestial empire, and is brought forward on all occasions and at all times of the day. Public tea houses are found in every town, and in every village in China. On remarking to a Hong merchant that the Chinese only use black tea, and asking for what reason, he replied, in a tone plainly showing in what estimation it is held, "What! me drink that poison stuff?" Ladies at home may take the hint.

Tea was introduced into England, by the way of Holland, in 1666, by Lords Arlington and Ossori, and through the influence of their ladies, became fashionable in the society to which they belonged. At that period a pound weight of tea sold in London at nearly seventy pounds (Tournois,) though at Batavia it cost no more than three or four. But this exorbitant price, which fell very slowly, did not impede the way of this beverage into favor. It appears, however, that it did not come into general use before the beginning of the eighteenth century, about 1715, at which period the green tea was first employed in England. Before that time, Bohea only was used.\* In the last hundred years the use of China tea has rapidly advanced throughout the world, to an extent which may be estimated from the following tabular statements.

\* *Establecimientos Ultramarinos*—Tom. II.



COMPARATIVE VIEW OF THE EXPORTS OF TEA FROM CANTON TO  
THE UNITED STATES, SINCE JULY 1ST, 1830.

DESCRIPTION.	1831.	1832.	1833.	1834.	1835.	1836.
Young Hyson, - - -	25,528	40,065	51,363	86,115	76,557	76,045
Hyson, - - - - -	7,147	9,346	14,248	23,787	16,509	14,599
Hyson Skin and Twankay,	5,447	20,883	36,608	34,368	16,982	23,372
Gunpowder, - - -	2,019	4,603	6,614	10,154	7,335	7,786
Imperial, - - - -	1,934	4,514	5,939	9,424	7,736	7,149
Souchong, - - - -	16,955	37,351	34,815	52,278	35,245	60,612
Powchong, - - - -	559	2,245	4,723	9,181	5,733	4,385
Pecco, - - - - -	200	517	2,563	2,192	1,030	2,212
Bohea, - - - - -	3,592	12,182	13,665	1,445	779	871
Total, - - - - -	63,381	131,706	170,538	228,944	167,906	197,031
GREEN, - - - - -	42,075	79,411	114,772	163,848	125,119	128,951
BLACK, - - - - -	21,306	52,295	55,766	65,096	42,787	68,080

“The tea plant is a bushy, evergreen shrub, which, if permitted to attain its greatest natural size, will grow to the height of about twelve feet. In botany, it belongs, according to the artificial system, to the class and order of Monadelphia Polyandria; according to the natural order of Linnæus, it belongs to the Columniferæ; and, according to that of Jussieu, to the Aurantiaceæ. It constitutes, by itself, a distinct genus, of which there is but a single species; the plants yielding the different kinds of black and green tea, being, in reality, according to the Chinese, always, and now, according to the admission of European botanists, no more than permanent varieties, the result of long culture, as is the case with many other plants useful to man. The leaves are alternate, on short, thick, channeled foot stalks, of a longish elliptic form, with a blunt, notched point, and serrated, except at the base. To a careful observer, these characters will always serve to distinguish the tea leaf from that of all other plants, except one of the Camellias, the *Sesangua*; for the Camellias are of the same natural family, and, indeed, in China, are not unfrequently used as tea.

“The tea is, probably, an indigenous plant of China. This may be concluded, not only from its long culture in that country, but from its being found there in a wild state, and from the Chinese names for it having been borrowed by almost all foreign nations. These names are *Cha* and *T'he*. The first of these is the general term throughout China; and the last belongs to the dialect of Fokien. Most of the Asiatic nations have adopted the former, having received their knowledge of the plant from inland communication; and most



of the European nations, their acquaintance with it having been derived directly from Fokien by maritime communication, the latter. The exceptions among Asiatics are the Malayan nations, and among Europeans, the Portuguese. The plant has been cultivated in China from time immemorial, and its use is as much buried in fable as that of wheat or barley, or the vine, in European or western Asia. As a branch of husbandry, in China, it is at least as important as the culture of the vine in the southern countries of Europe. The latitudes in which it thrives best are from  $23^{\circ}$  to  $30^{\circ}$  north, or from the sea on the south to the great river Yangtse Kiang on the north. The northern limits of its culture, however, extend much beyond that river; and there are, in fact, few provinces or districts of southern and central China, in which the tea plant is not extensively cultivated, at least for domestic use. The tea, like the vine, is cultivated on the sides of hills, in preference to the plains. It is raised from the seed, and yields its first crop in from two to three years. Where the best teas are raised, the plant is carefully pruned, and prevented from attaining a height exceeding two or three feet. The production of good tea depends upon soil and locality, fully as much as that of good wine; like it, too, the produce varies according to the care with which the crop is collected and prepared for use. The quality of the crop varies, also, with the nature of each season, like the vintage. From the same plant are commonly taken, in each season, four crops; a circumstance which is another cause of variety in tea, as it appears in the market. The younger the leaves when taken, the higher flavored the tea, and the scarcer, and, consequently, the dearer the article. The earliest crop is taken in the beginning of spring, just when the leaf-buds are opening; and the last crop in August, when the leaves are coarse, abundant, and deficient in aroma and astringency.

“The green and black teas present a parallel case to the white and red grape, which yield wine of their respective colors. In both cases they are only varieties of the same species. The growth of teas of sufficiently high flavor to keep for a considerable time, and fit, in consequence, for exportation to foreign countries, was, for a long time, confined to two provinces, or rather to a few districts of those provinces; for, in China, provinces, in so far as extent and population are concerned, are extensive kingdoms. These provinces were Fokien, which yielded black tea, and Kiangnan, which yielded green; the southern boundary of the first being in about the 24th degree of latitude, and that of the last in about the 30th. Of late years, and



in consequence of the great demand for teas in Europe and America, the culture of the plant for exportation has been extended to three additional provinces, namely, Canton, Kiansi, and Chekiang, all lying between the 23d and 30th degrees of latitude. The provinces which produce good tea for exportation may, in fact, be described as the Bordeaux, the Burgundy, and the *Midi* of China. By far the best teas are still brought from the two original provinces; and the worst from the district of Woping, in Cantòn.

"In China, contrary to the universal usage of the other great despotisms of Asia, the soil is private property; and, in consequence of the nature of the law of inheritance, and of the tyranny which hinders the accumulation of property, the land is very minutely subdivided, and the proprietors are little better than peasants or cotters, each, with the assistance of his family, cultivating his own farm. This, of course, applies, equally to the tea districts as to the other parts of the empire; and the tea is, consequently, cultivated only in small patches, or gardens, not exceeding, in extent, the holding of an ordinary market gardener among ourselves. The leaves are picked by the cultivator's family, and conveyed at once to the market, where they are purchased by a particular class of dealers, who dry them under a shed, and, in this imperfect state of preparation, dispose of them to a second and higher class of traders, who sort the teas according to their qualities, and, after completing the process of manufacture, pack them in chests, dividing them into lots of from 100 to 600 chests, which are known in the Cantòn market under the name of Chops, from their bearing the signet, or mark (in Chinese, *chap*,) of the merchant who makes them up.

"The tea arrives in Cantòn about the middle of October, and the busiest period of the trade extends from that time to the end of December. The commodity is conveyed, for the most part, by land carriage and by porters, and, generally speaking, from 400 to 700 miles; and the owners accompany it. The traders in green tea amount, in number, to not less than 400. The dealers in black tea are less numerous, but more wealthy. Both are in the habit of receiving advances, to some extent, from the *Hong*, or security merchants of Cantòn.

"In the market of Cantòn, the sorts of tea quoted for exportation do not, generally, exceed fourteen or fifteen in number; about eight of which are black and six green. They are as follows, with their respective ordinary prices.



## GREEN.

					Taels per Pecul.
Twankay,	-	-	-	-	24 to 28.
Hyson Skin,	-	-	-	-	24 to 28.
Young Hyson,	-	-	-	-	44 to 54.
Hyson,	-	-	-	-	44 to 54.
Imperial,	-	-	-	-	50 to 60.
Gunpowder,	-	-	-	-	59 to 62.

## BLACK.

					Taels per Pecul.
Bohea,	-	-	-	-	12 to 15.
Congo,	-	-	-	-	24 to 28.
Campoi,	-	-	-	-	24 to 28.
Souchong,	-	-	-	-	20 to 36.
Ankoi,	-	-	-	-	20 to 24.
Caper,	-	-	-	-	24 to 25.
Orange Peko,	-	-	-	-	25 to 26.
Flowery Peko,	-	-	-	-	50 to 60.

“In round numbers, one tael per pecul may be considered as equivalent to one half penny per pound, in estimating these prime costs. The terms under which the different sorts of tea are here described, are for the most part European corruptions, and some misapplications of Chinese words; but as they are of long established use, and perfectly well understood both by the European and Chinese merchant, they describe the commodities intended with sufficient accuracy for all practical purposes. The European nations, however, do not among themselves uniformly agree in the use of these terms; thus, what the English and Americans call Hyson Skin, is called by the Dutch and Germans simply *Schin*; and what the first two call Young Hyson, is called by the last *Uxim*. What the English call Imperial, is called by the Dutch, Germans, and French, Pearl tea, and by the Americans occasionally, Gomee. The Russians, moreover, import, by their caravans, some teas altogether unknown by name or kind to the other nations of Europe except through them.

“The highest quality of black tea is Peko, or more correctly, Flowery Peco. This consists of the early spring buds of the finest black tea plants, intermixed, as is commonly believed, with the flowers of the fragrant olive, which is discoverable in the form of small white particles. This, as will be seen by reference to the price current, runs up to the price of 60 taels per pecul, equal to 2s. 6d. per lb. The very same plant, in its second and more abundant crop, may yield



Souchong, at 36 taels per pecul, or 1s. 6d. per lb. Its third crop may consist of Congo, Campoi, or low Souchong, bearing no higher price than 10d. per lb.; and its fourth and last crop may consist of Fokien Bohea, worth no more than 15 taels per pecul, or 7½d. per lb. The coarsest Boheas in the market, which are rated above at 12 taels per pecul, or 6d. per lb., are, however, frequently found as low as 5d. per lb.; and some very coarse teas, used by the Chinese themselves, are cheaper than sloe leaves could be brought to market in this country. The lowest Boheas of the Cantòn market consist of the refuse or sweepings of superior black teas, or of the inferior tea of Woping, in Cantòn. It may be remarked, by the way, respecting this word Bohea, which is now applied by Europeans to the lowest denomination of black tea, that it was, and still is, applied by the Chinese to the finest description of it, that which grows on the mountain Vu-i-shan, in the province of Fokien, as noted for its production of fine teas as the estate of Clos-Vougeot for its Burgundy, or that of the Chateau-Margot for its claret.

“Similar observations apply to the green teas; although the range of qualities and prices here is not so great as in the black. The difference between the highest and the lowest quality of green tea, is not so much as in the proportion of two to one; while that between the highest and lowest of the black, is as much as four to one. The highest quality of green tea, is Gunpowder. This consists of the first leaves of the vernal crop of the green tea plant. As it comes to us, it is not mixed with the flowers of any foreign plant, as Peko is; but such is the case with some of the finest green teas imported by the Russians, called Chulan, Imperial, and Hyson, and Young Hyson, compose the second and third crops. The light and inferior leaves separated from Hyson by a winnowing machine, constitute Hyson Skin. The fourth and last crop constitutes Twankay, Singlo, &c. With respect to the last word, the same observation applies to it, as to Bohea. Singlo, or more correctly Songlo, takes its title from a mountain of that name in the province of Kiangnan, where the finest green tea has been long produced.

“China, although the only country in which tea, fit to become an article of commerce with foreign nations, is produced, is very far from being the only one which yields it. It is extensively cultivated for domestic use throughout the Japan islands, Corea, Tonquin, and Cochin-China; that is, from about the latitude of 13° North, up to 40°. By far the best of these teas is that of Japan, which, however, is not manufactured in such a way as to enable it to be kept for any



length of time. The Dutch occasionally bring small quantities of it to Batavia. The tea of Tonquin and Cochin-China consists of a large coarse leaf, which undergoes no other preparation than that of being dried under a shed. It possesses, contrary to what might be expected, so little aroma or astringency that it is necessary to boil, instead of infuse it, as is done with the Chinese tea. In the mountainous parts of some of the northern portions of the Burman territory, where the plant, judging by its native name, appears to be indigenous, tea is cultivated for a use to which no other nation puts it. The leaf is preserved in oil and eaten as a dainty, pretty much after the manner in which European nations use olives.

“The tea plant will thrive under the equator; that is, it will grow vigorously, and produce flowers and fruit. It is found again blowing in the 40th degree of latitude, and it is a sufficiently hardy plant in the green-houses of Europe up to the 50th degree of latitude. It might have been expected from this, that like the coffee of Arabia, it should long ago have been propagated in many regions of the new world, as well as in the settlements of the European nations in Asia. This, however, is very far from being the case; and after two centuries’ acquaintance with the plant, the production of it for foreign consumption, is still confined to a few districts of its original country, China. The fact seems to be, that, like growing the vine for good wine, the growing of the tea plant for the production of good tea, is a matter of considerable uncertainty and difficulty. Except a few provinces of France, Germany, and the Peninsula, there are no countries which produce wines good enough, generally speaking, for a foreign market. A peculiar soil and climate seem, in the first instance, indispensable to the successful culture of the tea plant. These may, no doubt, be found without difficulty; but there are other indispensable requisites not so easily attainable—a skilful culture of the plant, and a skilful preparation of the leaf; and above all, a low rate of labor, to meet the numerous manipulations which the plant requires, especially in the gathering and manufacture. It is not likely that the culture will succeed, on this last account, in any of our colonial establishments, where, it may be observed, that neither the rearing of silk worms nor the culture of the vine, both of which imply the necessity of cheap labor, have yet been prosecuted with any decided success. The culture of the tea plant has been tried in Brazil for the last twenty years, but apparently without any profitable result. It has been tried also on a larger scale in the island of Java, within the last seven years; but there too, according to all accounts, with-



out much success, although carried on with the advantage of Chinese from Fokien to superintend and conduct it. It is scarcely reasonable, indeed, to expect that a plant which thrives best between the 24th and 30th degree of latitude, and in a country of primitive formation, should succeed in a country between the 6th and 7th degrees of latitude, and of volcanic formation. It is true that the experiment is made in the mountainous part of the country, at an elevation of between two and three thousand feet above the level of the sea, and where the heat is consequently not very great. This, however, is not sufficient. In such a country, there is neither a summer nor a winter like those of China. There may be the same average heat throughout the year; but a delicate and capricious plant, like tea, in so far at least as the quality of its produce is concerned, may require a very different distribution of it, from what the climate of Java can by possibility supply.

“The experiment is about to be tried under more favorable circumstances in Hindostàn; a country which affords many situations in which the soils and climates approach nearly to those of the tea provinces in China, and where the price of labor is as low as in China itself. The inhabitants, indeed, want the skill and enterprise of the Chinese, but these may be furnished by European direction. The governor-general has, in fact, deputed a gentleman of great spirit and intelligence to China, in order to bring to India tea plants and natives of the country accustomed to their culture, and considerable hopes may be entertained of the ultimate success of the project. There are countries nearer home, in which the culture of the tea plant might be carried on to advantage; such as some of the warmer parts of Spain, Portugal, and Greece. The habits of the tea plant appear to bear some analogy to those of the myrtle; and the experiment might be tried in those situations which the myrtle in its natural state is found to affect.

“With regard to the consumption of tea in different countries, a few observations will here be made. The whole of the nations of Asia, east of Siam and Cambodia, are what may be termed habitual and immemorial consumers of tea. It is to them what beer is, or more correctly was, to the northern, and what wine is to the southern nations of Europe. First, then, with respect to the Chinese themselves, the tea-pot is in constant requisition, from morning till night, with persons of both sexes, and all ages, and of all conditions. The higher classes only use the good teas; and it is perfectly well known that what is used by the lower is often of a very execrable quality,



and sometimes is not tea at all, but some coarse and rude substitute. The Chinese use it always without milk, and sometimes without sugar. The Chinese people, in round numbers, and by the most authentic and recent census, are 370 millions in number; and if they consume only in the same proportion as the inhabitants of the United Kingdom, or at the rate of 40,000,000 lbs. per annum, for a population of 25 millions, which, under a system of free trade, would probably be the lowest consumption, their annual consumption will amount to more than 246,000 tons; but, if they consume, and that is more probable, twice as much as the average consumption of this country, then the whole will approach to near half a million tons a year. Let the value of the smallest of these amounts be taken as equal on an average only to the price of the lowest black tea in the Canton market, or 7½d. per lb., and it will be found to amount to the sum of eighteen millions and a half sterling. This is, no doubt, a great quantity, and a great value; but still it will not appear extravagant, when it is considered that the same people consume a foreign drug and luxury, opium, to the annual value of £3,000,000. sterling.

“The next greatest consumers of tea are the Japanese, who use it to nearly the same extent as the Chinese, and whose number has been computed at 60 millions of people. The Coreans, the Tonquinese, and Cochin-Chinese are also considerable consumers of tea. The Japanese receive some of their finest teas from China; and the other two nations, all that is good of theirs. Throughout Mongolia and Siberia, among all classes of the people, tea is nearly as much an article of necessity as in China itself. The tea made use of by these, commonly called brick tea, is extremely coarse, and made up into hard cakes in the form of a parallelopipedon, about eighteen inches long, ten broad, and near an inch thick. This is boiled in milk, thickened with rye meal, and seasoned with salt. In short, the Tartars make a meal of what the Chinese sip as a beverage. The whole of this tea is brought from China, and although coarse, it consists of the genuine plant.

“The Chinese colonists in the eastern Archipelago, in Tonquin, Cochin-China, Cambodia, Siam, and the country of the Burmese, use tea as excessively as the inhabitants of the mother country, and from them its use has been borrowed by the native inhabitants of these countries respectively, among whom, however, it is confined to the wealthy. Tea, is therefore, a considerable article of export to all the countries in question; and it is conveyed to them all by the junks, except to the Burmese dominions. These receive the com-



modity over land from the province of Yunan, packed in parcels of a globular form, about the size of an eighteen pound shot. This, as may be seen by the works of the Jesuits, is the shape in which the coarse tea of Yunan has always appeared. The natives of Hindoostàn, Persia, Arabia, and Turkey, are not unacquainted with the use of tea; but have recourse to it, for the most part, only for its supposed medicinal virtues. The Turks or Turcomans of Trans-Oxiana and the neighboring countries, however, use it far more extensively, and, indeed, with the exception of the Chinese and their immediate neighbors, seem to be among the greatest consumers of tea. It is remarkable that the tea used by these people is all green, and a great deal of it of a very fine quality. As may be seen in the narrative of Lieutenant Burnes, the article is brought to Trans-Oxiana by the routes of Yarkand and Badakhshan. To these places it is conveyed by Chinese caravans, and there purchased by the Moslem merchants, who convey it to Bokharia. It is made use of always without milk, and generally without sugar.

“After the Chinese and Japanese, the greatest consumers of tea are the English, and these are followed by their descendants in America, by the Dutch, and the Russians. These are the only nations of the European stock that are considerable consumers, the use of coffee or chocolate predominating among the rest. The following is an approximation to the quantities of tea consumed by the respective countries of Europe and America, with the settlements and colonies of the former:—

	lbs.
Great Britain, - - - - -	40,000,000
Russia, - - - - -	6,500,000
Holland, - - - - -	3,000,000
Germany, - - - - -	2,000,000
France, - - - - -	250,000
United States, - - - - -	10,000,000
British America and West Indies, - -	1,500,000
British settlements in India, - -	1,000,000
British Australian Colonies, - -	250,000
	<hr/>
	64,500,000

“Besides the quantities here enumerated, there are exports to the Cape of Good Hope, to the Spanish and Portuguese settlements in India, and to South America, together with some to Denmark and Sweden; so that, upon the whole, the total consumption of the Eu-



ropean and American nations, will probably not be overrated at 65,000,000 lbs. The value of this, in China, will not be less than £4,000,000 sterling.

“Will China be able to supply any great quantity of tea, on the increased demand which the European and American nations are certain in no long period of time to make? There is no doubt but it will. The consumption of tea among the European nations, commenced about one hundred and eighty-five years ago; and in this time it has risen from a nameless fraction, to near 30,000 tons a year. Our descendants in America, who hardly existed when the tea plant first became known to Europe, now consume upwards of 5,000 tons of it. In the commencement of the eighteenth century, the consumption of tea in England did not exceed 100,000 lbs. weight. In the commencement of the nineteenth century, it was 20,000,000 lbs.; and these 20,000,000 lbs. will probably be doubled in the first year of the system of free trade. In all this time there appears to have been very little variation in the price of tea in China, beyond the effect of variety in the seasons. This assertion is of easy proof, and the proof, as a matter of satisfaction and curiosity, may be given. The following statement contains, in two columns, the prices of tea in China in 1747 and 1827. The first of these is taken from a work, published in London, in 1762, called “A Voyage to the East Indies;” and the second from the printed Cantòn price current of the 14th December, 1827.

Teas.	Tael per Pectil.			
	1747.		1827.	
	From	To	From	To
Bohea, - - - - -	13	15	14	15
Congou, - - - - -	25	30	24	28
Souchong, - - - - -	35	75	26	27
Hyson, - - - - -	45	60	48	58

“In 1747, the quantity of tea consumed in the United Kingdom, was short of 2,400,000 lbs. weight, and in 1827, very nearly 30,000,000 lbs.;\* yet this immense increase had in eighty years’ time produced no sensible effect on the price in China. The only remarkable discrepancy regards the tea called Souchong; and this is very easily accounted for. The finer description of this class of tea has, in fact, of late years, according to the official statements made by the East

\* First Report of the Commissioners of Excise Inquiry, 1833, p. 70 and 73.



India Company and their officers in China, disappeared altogether from the market. "We are unable," say the supercargoes in a letter to the directors, "to account for the entire disappearance of Souchong."\*

"Even the extraordinary demand which the opening of the trade in this country has given rise to, has enhanced the price of tea in the market of China, by no more than six or seven per cent.; and this amount has only been produced by the exclusion from England of the supply which the overstocked markets of Europe and America could easily have furnished. The capacity of China to furnish a great supply of tea, is very strikingly illustrated by the facility with which it has furnished that of green tea, an article not used by the Chinese themselves at all, except rarely for medicinal purposes; which no foreign Asiatic nation, but one, consumes at all; and, which, in fact, may be said to be grown for the exclusive use of the nations of the European stock. Green tea did not come into use among European nations until many years after black had been in pretty general use; and yet, at present, the quantity of this commodity exported from China is not short of 15,000,000 lbs. weight, and at its average value is greater than that of black tea; this cannot be estimated at less than a million and a quarter sterling. The enhanced price of teas in China, produced by the opening of the English trade, it may safely be predicted, will be of very short duration. Less tea will be sent to the continent of Europe and to America, until the stocks there are diminished, and, in the mean time, the Chinese will be stimulated to plant more tea; and the new plantations will yield their first crop, as already stated, in so short a period as from two to three years. The culture, it has been before stated, has already been extended from two to five provinces; and, if requisite, may be extended to many new ones. The land in which tea is cultivated, consists of hills or mountains of no remarkable fertility, and not suited for the production of corn. Of these, notwithstanding the highly cultivated state of the plains and valleys of China, there is much unoccupied, and, in fact, in a state of nature. Indeed, it should be remarked, that of the five provinces in which the culture of tea is at present carried on, four are the most populous of the whole empire; while that in which the greatest part of it is conducted, Fokien, receives much of its supply of food from abroad. The fear, then, of China's being unable to furnish an increased supply of tea, is only

\* First Report of the Select Committee of the House of Commons, 1830. Appendix, p. 71.



an idle chimera, originating in the ignorance of fraudulent representations of monopolists. But for argument's sake, let us suppose that there was some physical obstacle to the production of tea being at all increased, as there may possibly be to the production of Tokay; and at the worst we should have the old quantity of tea, at a price lowered by the difference of all that is now got by the monopoly.

"The effects of tea upon the human frame, are those of a very gentle stimulant, producing an exhilaration of spirits. It is to this alone that it owes its general adoption. With the exception of coffee, and even this is not so generally congenial, it is the only stimulant which, taken in considerable quantity, is in no respect deleterious. The diversity in the flavor of the different varieties is probably fully as great as in the different varieties of wine. The flavor, and the stimulant quality also, are most distinct in the green variety of the plant, and it is this, consequently, which is most apt to disagree with some constitutions. Even to the use of this, however, custom soon reconciles the human frame. In the relative quantities of the two kinds consumed by different nations, accident, caprice, or fashion, appear to have a very large share. The Chinese themselves, and the oriental nations generally, hardly consume any thing but black tea. The English consume in the proportion of but one part of green to four of black. The Americans, on the contrary, consume two parts of green to one of black. The English in Bengal, and in the Australian settlements, scarcely consume any thing but green. The English at Bombay and Madras, hardly use any thing but black tea. The English merchants and other residents settled at Cantòn, follow the example of the Chinese, using black tea alone. In Holland, the proportion of black tea used, is much greater than of green; and in Russia, nearly the whole consumption consists of black."<sup>\*</sup>

In the evening we were visited by our Chinese friend, who carried us to the Garden, and were informed that he was a physiognomist. At our request, he declared, after a close scrutiny of the countenance, what he thought to be the character of several persons present. He gazed at the individual under examination for some time, and then began, "Me think you good man," and, after a second look, continued, "but you be more better in ten year more." A second individual, he declared, would be "more better" in twenty years, and a third one, who was 'one of your fat men who sleep o'

\* Boston Evening Gazette.



nights,' he pronounced to be a very good man, saying, "Me think you very contenty inside—in fifty year more you be more better."

These examinations afforded us much amusement; but the physiognomist was much struck when I explained to him the general principles of phrenology, and illustrated them by an examination of his head, expressing my opinion of him from its result. He frankly admitted all I said to be true, but seemed very much puzzled to comprehend how I could speak so minutely of his character.

He departed, perfectly delighted with phrenology, and gave us an invitation to visit him the next day.

According to the appointment, he received us at his residence at twelve o'clock. We first entered an open court, which led to the inner apartments, or offices, on the ground floor, through one of which we were conducted up stairs, into a room plainly furnished with bamboo sofas, chairs and mahogany tables. Large sheets, filled with the sayings of Chinese sages, hung upon the walls, in lieu of pictures, a fashion which is common throughout the empire.

Our host was a man of about thirty-five, of pleasant and gentlemanly manners, and possessed the reputation of being a literary man. After some common-place observations, we were offered Havana cigars; and, in a few minutes afterwards, a table, loaded with a variety of delicious sweetmeats, was placed in the centre of the room. Tea, of delightful flavor, followed, served in fine porcelain cups, without milk or sugar, and in the bottom of each were several expanded tea leaves. Instead of a saucer, the cup was sustained in a silver tray, so fashioned as to embrace the cup very much as the calyx embraces the corolla of a flower; one leaf, or petal of the calyx being turned down, answered as a handle to support the whole.

Remarking upon the excellence of this tea, our host told me that it was not the best tea procurable in China; that the choicest teas were all consumed at home; some of which sold, in the great cities of Peking and Nankin, at thirty dollars a catty, equal to one pound and a third: that only the commonest sorts reach the Canton market; that the connoisseurs in tea possessed an exquisite nicety of taste; from his account, equal to that of the gentleman who detected, in the flavor of wine, the taste of iron and leather, derived from a key, with a leathern tally, which had accidentally dropped into the tun.

After this entertainment, cigars were again served, and our host, and several Chinese merchants who were of the party, recurred to the subject of phrenology. From the accounts which our host had given them of the subject, these gentlemen were curious to witness,



for themselves, what they had heard of at second hand, and our host was anxious, perhaps for the sake of his veracity, that they should be convinced his relations were true. The subject was again explained to them, and, after examination, an opinion of the leading points of individual character was expressed. Those who knew the individual under question decided, that the opinion was correct, and he himself, acknowledged it to be true. In the same way, several were examined with a like result. The interest in the subject increased, and all present became, suddenly, converts to the doctrine; and at once placed such implicit faith in phrenology, that they sent for their clerks, here termed pursers, and requested me to express my opinion of their respective characters, without reserve. One wished to know whether a young man, who had just submitted his head to examination, might be safely trusted, if sent into the country to collect money. Another asked, in relation to his clerk, "Can me trust that man go Nankin for pigeon—buy silk—suppose he no stop talk with gal, and no make he pigeon?" Another inquired if I could determine, positively, by examining a married lady's head, whether her issue would be "one gal or one bull child." Being very anxious for the latter, and having offered up many prayers to the goddess Kuan-yin for a son, he was much disappointed to learn that the practical application of phrenology did not extend quite so far.

Our visit lasted more than two hours, and I received many thanks, and many apologies were offered for troubling me with so many examinations.

After this, I was daily visited by numbers of Chinese gentlemen, always for the object of a phrenological examination. Before leaving Cantòn several small presents of choice teas were sent us as a complimentary acknowledgment; but none, I suspect, worth thirty dollars a catty.

On the day of our departure from "this inner land," our baggage and purchases were collected at the entrance of the Hong, and the custom-house mandarins were sent for to examine it. The shopkeepers usually pay the export duties, and give a draft on themselves, called a chop, for the amount: this chop is given to the mandarin, who afterwards collects it. The mandarins were content to see the trunks open, without any scrutiny of their contents, saying that we were, also, mandarins, meaning to express thereby that they were sensible to a courtesy of fellow feeling. When they had departed, with their hands full of "chops," we embarked every thing on board of a packet-boat for Macao.



## CHAPTER XL.

## SKETCHES IN CHINA.

*June, 1836.*

LIKE the people of every nation, the Chinese have their eulogists, and their detractors, and few nations are more variously estimated at a distance, than that of China.

The history of nations which have attained to refined civilization, is properly the history of man. States and nations spring from each other as in the case of individuals; with the difference, that in families, the place of those removed by death, nature supplies by the birth of others in constant and regular succession. But in states, society disturbs and breaks through this law by some fortuitous commotion; and in this manner, ancient monarchies have overturned republics in their infancy; an erratic and savage people, by their eruptions of violence, have dismembered, broken and finally swallowed up, in their course, multitudes of nations. China has as yet resisted this fatality. Her empire, whose boundaries on the north, are Russian Tartary, on the south, the Indian islands; Thibet on the west, and the ocean on the east, occupies nearly the whole of the eastern extremity of the Asiatic continent. To frequent wars, to their position, and other causes, may be attributed the comparative short life and small extent of European nations, which have destroyed and succeeded each other in turn; but the Chinese, shut up and protected on all sides, either by oceans or deserts, have succeeded in establishing a permanent state, which claims the astonishing antiquity of four thousand years. They never speak of their conquests, but of the wars they have endured; more happy in civilizing their conquerors than in destroying their enemies.

In a region so long civilized, deep and ancient traces of industry



should be perceptible; and we accordingly find, the plains have been levelled, preserving only an inclination sufficient for irrigation, which is justly considered a grand resource and means of agriculture. Few trees are met with, because they would absorb the juices of the soil at the expense of the nutritious grains. Nor do we see here, parks or extensive woods, destined to be the nursery and shelter of wild beasts, for the sport of princes and patricians, to the detriment of husbandmen.

In China, the only requisites of a pleasant country retreat, are a convenient location, an agreeably varied cultivation, a few trees, irregularly planted in imitation of nature, and a few mounds of porous stone, which, at a moderate distance, may be mistaken for rocks or mountains. The slopes are terraced; and to detain the rain and spring waters, there are reservoirs, formed with great skill: even the canals and rivers, passing the bases of hills, are made to irrigate their summits and declivities, by the application of means, which simplifying and multiplying machinery, diminishes the labor of men, enabling two to accomplish what a thousand might otherwise hesitate to undertake. These heights ordinarily yield three crops a year. A sort of plant yielding oil, is followed by the harvest of cotton, which is succeeded by that of potatoes: though not universal, this routine is almost invariable.

In most of the mountains, unsuited to tillage, we find forest trees, convertible to the purposes of civic and naval architecture. In many are found mines of iron, *white copper*, supposed to be a natural alloy of iron and zinc, copper, and tin, which are wrought with considerable activity; silver mines also exist; gold mines have been abandoned, either because enough of that precious metal for commercial purposes was gathered in the mountain torrents, or because they were not sufficiently productive to pay the expense of working them.

The sea once rolled over the sands, where now stand Nankin and Che-kiang, the largest provinces of the empire. The Chinese repulsed, restrained and lorded it over the ocean, as the Egyptians domineered the Nile; they have joined to the continent lands, which were separated by the waters; the reaction of their industry has been successfully opposed to the action of the elements, producing results which might appear supernatural, were they not continuous and sensible. In an equal degree, they have forced the capabilities of the waters and the fertility of the soil. In the midst of rivers, which intercommunicate by canals, and traverse most of their cities, are seen floating towns, formed by an affluence or assemblage of boats, full of



people, who, devoted to fishing, are born, live and die upon the waters. The coasts are swarmed with thousands of vessels, their masts appearing like moving forests. Anson wondered that fishermen, thus established, were not diverted for a moment from their labors, to admire his ship, the largest, perhaps, that had, at that time, ever touched in those places. This indifference only proves, they deemed their occupation of fishing too important to be neglected for the gratification of unprofitable curiosity.

The mode of cultivating the earth is not the same throughout the empire; but varies with the quality of soil and diversity of climate. In the lower and southern provinces, the land requires a rice continually submerged, which is coarse and affords two crops a year. In the dry and elevated sections of the interior, the rice, which is of less volume, taste and substance, yields but one harvest. In the north, all the grains of Europe grow, and of very good quality. From one extremity to the other, the empire abounds in vegetables, more particularly in the south, where they form, with fish, the chief articles of diet, but in other provinces the use of meat is common.

The practice of improving lands by manuring is universal; indeed, this great system by which nature is made to rise up out of her own ruins, is better understood, and followed at a greater expenditure of time and labor, in collecting the materials for compost, which the Chinese draw from every source, than in any other country in the world.

The great origin and support of rural economy in China are found in the industrious disposition of the people. They are probably the most laborious people on earth, and their physical constitution seems to require less repose. They labor every day in the year except the first, appropriated for reciprocal visiting among families, and the last, consecrated to the memory of their ancestors; the first is an obligation imposed by society, the last by domestic worship or religion. They look upon religion, as the bond which unites and civilizes man; and their religion consists in nothing but the practice of the social virtues. Some view them as a wise and rational people who act correctly without requiring the curb of law: their private worship is the love of their fathers living or dead; their public worship is the love of labor, and the labor most religiously honored is that of agriculture.

Agriculture is held in such high esteem in China, that those emperors are most revered, who, preferring the good of the state to that of their own house, excluded their own sons from succession, to place



upon the throne men taken from the plough. The memory of those illustrious agriculturists is revered, who sowed the seed of the permanence and felicity of the empire, by securing the fertility of the soil, the inexhaustible source of harvests, and of the multiplication of men. All the emperors of China are husbandmen by the law of the land. One of his public duties is to open the soil in the spring, with a pomp and circumstance which attracts all the farmers in the neighbourhood of the capital. Great is the concourse to witness the honors which the Prince accords to the queen of arts. He is not, as in the fables of the Greeks, a god who tends the flocks of the king; he is the father of his people, who, taking the plough in his own hands, points out to his children the true treasures of the state. Soon he returns to sow the field he has worked; and the example of the sovereign is followed in all the provinces, and at the same period, the viceroys or governors, repeat similar ceremonies in the presence of assembled multitudes. Europeans who have been present at these ceremonies speak of them in terms of admiration. But we must not suppose from this, that the court of Peking is seriously devoted to the labors of the field: the arts of luxury are too far advanced, for these demonstrations to be more than mere ceremonies. This homage of the sovereign to public opinion, contributes towards its perpetuation; and the influence of opinion is the first and best protection of government.

This influence is sustained by bestowing honors upon those who distinguish themselves in agricultural labors. Any one making a useful discovery is brought to court, and on communicating it to the Prince, is sent, at the expense of the government, through the different provinces to teach his new method. Agriculture has been thus fostered from time immemorial. Every agricultural region, enjoying a long period of peace, must abound in inhabitants. China is very populous, and enjoyed or was rather incumbered by her immense population when conquered by the Tartars: many, therefore, infer that the laws of the empire were very wise because they were adopted by the conquerors; but the Tartar consent to the government of China, does not prove the goodness of its laws. The law of nature is, that large masses shall control the small, which law obtains as well in morals as in physics. If we compare the number of the conquerors with that of the conquered, it will be seen, that for every Tartar there were at least fifty Chinamen. One individual cannot change the manners, customs and laws of fifty men; then how could the Tartars do otherwise than adopt the laws of China, whether good or bad, particularly as they had none to institute in their stead.



This conquest is worth comparing with that of the Spaniards in the New World, where, in exception to the general rule, a handful of men imposed laws and customs, at the point of the sword, upon a great number of nations, which were without both, or, those found among them were badly constituted. The extraordinary revolution of China, demonstrates the cowardice of the nation, and the indifference towards its princes is characteristic of a state of slavery.

The immensity of its population tends to annihilate the sentiment of tenderness for offspring, which is common to man and brute, and disposes parents, from selfish motives, to destroy their own children, without the feelings of the public being outraged, almost making us doubt the existence of an innate perception of right and wrong.

May the slow advancement of the arts and sciences in China be attributed to the excessive population? Properly speaking, there is no machinery nor extensive manufacturing establishments in the empire, similar to those, which, in modern times, have sprung up all over Europe. They know nothing of the economy of time. Most of the manufactures, required to supply the commercial houses of Cantón, are made at Fu-shaw, a large town situated a few miles to the westward of the city: still, the number of hands and the amount of labor performed is by no means inconsiderable. There are annually employed in weaving silk, about 17,000 individuals, men, women and children, which number is increased when there is a pressing demand for their labors. From the prevalence of a utilitarian principle, always crying *cui bono?* their improvements have generally halted at a point, far short of perfection. It is an evidence of culpable indifference—a state of mental repose, worthy the name of lethargy, so contrary to the natural inclination of man, may be attributed to the overgrown population; since their urgent necessities require that all their powers should be directed to the acquisition of the common sustenance of life, leaving them but little time either for reflection or retirement. The population of the empire is reckoned at 360 millions, and it is supposed one hundred millions are capable of bearing arms. Supposing China to be the most populous region of the universe, does it not follow, as a natural consequence, that it is the most corrupt? Experience teaches, that the vices of communities are in proportion to the number of individuals composing them. Can we suppose, that the customs of the Chinese, throughout their extensive empire, are more unchangeable than in great European cities, where honor, a sentiment unknown in China, lends splendor to virtue, and, to a great extent, tempers vice?

It does not appear that these people possess the refinement which



has been claimed for them. Impunity of crime is rather the distinguishing mark of a barbarous than of a civilized nation. Though every circumstance suggests to them colonization, they do not comprehend its policy, or they disdain resorting to a means so simple and so safe, to drain the surplus population, preferring their everlasting distress. What neither the providence nor prudence of the government will undertake, circumstances have compelled many to attempt. Necessity has driven thousands from their homes in China, to seek a livelihood in other countries. They are found at Batavia, where, for a century past, thousands annually arrive, but, comparatively, few return. In Banka, they are employed in the tin mines; at Singapore, they are mechanics or traders; and in Borneo they are numerous, and variously employed; in Bangkok, they compose four-fifths of the population: in short, they are scattered from Bombay, through India, both continental and insular, scarcely a town in the vast extent being without them. They are superior to all the other people of the East, on account of their habitual industry, and their labor is more profitable! The relative value of the labor of Chinese, Malays, and Chouliahs, (natives of the Malabar and Coromandel coasts,) at Penang, or Prince of Wales' Island, is thus stated by Mr. Crawford, in his "Embassy to Siam and Cochin-China:" a Malay field laborer works but twenty-six days in the month, and receives \$2.50 wages; a Chouliah works twenty-eight days, and receives \$4.00; a Chinaman thirty days, and receives \$6.00. Therefore, the labor of a Chinese is worth fifty per cent. more than that of a Chouliah; a Chouliah's seventy-five per cent. more than that of a Malay, and the Chinese one hundred and twenty per cent. beyond the latter.

A love of his native soil, a common feeling to all men, induces many of these Chinese adventurers, after acquiring a little property, to return to their respective provinces, where they are, in general, soon despoiled, under some miserable pretext, by the Chinese authorities. On emigrating, they join some one of the secret societies, found every where, existing as branches of the great Triad society, the object of which is to overthrow the Tartar government; and if the branch to which they belong happen to be fewer in number than others in the place where they return, they become subject to false accusations, which are sworn to by hundreds of that society, while those of their own brotherhood are afraid to step forward in their behalf. They do not murder, but their victims are occasionally enticed to the hill country, and there flogged to death.



Nobility, in China, does not consist in ancestral and hereditary honors, but in personal rewards; the simple title of noble does not give distinction, which is here the meed of merit alone. Many magistrates, and persons in dignified situations, are selected from families whose only occupation is the labors of the field. The merit of a son ennobles the father, but this pre-eminence ends with him. This law may be admired, though we know that hereditary nobility, also, possesses advantages. Where is there an individual so base, who does not feel the weight of a name, descended through a long line of distinguishing ancestry, and feel emulous to preserve his honors, and hand them down to his descendants unstained. But nobility in China is not what it is in Europe. The mandarins, and people in high office, are almost universally selected from a certain class, called the literary, so that the pursuit of letters is the high road to official preferment. The literary institutions of China are the pillars of the government. Her military forces are inadequate to hold together the numerous and extensive provinces and territories that constitute the wide domain of the reigning dynasty. Both the army and navy have become enervated and dissolute. "As police-men, in the capacity of lictors, thief-takers, and executioners, they are not less detested than feared by the common people. They are, in fact, for all purposes of defence, little better than *dead men*; nay, were they stricken from the catalogue of the living, we can scarcely doubt that the stability of the empire would remain unimpaired."\*

High rank in the state is the greatest glory to which this people aspire; and, because it brings them within reach of that dazzling prize, learning is chiefly valuable in their eyes. Strict examinations, regulated by a fixed code of laws, have been instituted and designed, solely to elicit from the body of the community, 'the true talent' of the people, with the ulterior intention of applying it to purposes of government. At these examinations, which are open to all except menial servants, lictors, play-actors, and priests, it is determined who shall rise to distinction, and shed glory back on their ancestors, and forward, upon their posterity, and who shall live on in obscurity, and die and be forgotten. The competitors at the Olympic games never entered the arena before the assembled thousands of their countrymen with deeper emotion than that which agitates the bosoms of those who contest the palm at these literary combats. The days on which they are held, and their results published in Cantòn, are the proudest its inhabitants ever witness.

\* Chinese Repository.



“The highest literary examinations in the empire, are triennial, and take place at Peking. Besides these stated, there are also occasional examinations which are granted by special favor of the emperor. Up to these contests the most distinguished scholars go from all the provinces. This privilege is not gained without long, patient, and successful endeavor; the examinations, at which it is determined who shall enjoy it, occur also triennially, and are held in the metropolis of each province. These examinations are of incomparable interest to great multitudes of people in every department and district of the empire. High honors, rich emoluments, and, in a word, every thing that the young aspirant and his numerous kindred most esteem, are at stake.”\*

Though many thousand candidates offer, only a limited number can obtain the degree which entitles them to the highest trial in the capital of the celestial empire. Many individuals spend their lives in anxious study, and submit to frequent examinations, without ever reaching the goal of their ambition. Hence it is, that the most respectable families destine one or more sons to become competitors for literary distinction; but often leave the rest uneducated, and ignorant even of reading and writing.

Whatever, from its nature, cannot be divided, as the sea, rivers and canals, is common property; navigation, fishing and hunting are free; the domain of the citizen is not subject to feudal laws. This is a rational state of things; but in a densely populous country, people cannot forego their crops, to convert their fields into parks or hunting grounds, nor can the wealthy arrogate to themselves exclusive privileges of wilds and waters: these laws, then, are rather the result of necessity than prudence.

The eulogists of China declare, that the priests dare not assert odious pretensions over men or property, nor have they ever attempted to do so. They are certainly very numerous, and enjoy, even the mendicants themselves, large possessions, but without any perceptible tax on citizens: they would hold the priest to be insane, who should support himself, whatever he requires being due to the sanctity of his character. This, however, others deny, and tell us, the priests are more intriguing, more dissolute and more idle than those of any other country, besides being the most importunate beggars in the world.

Toleration in China only extends to the religions anciently esta-

\* Chinese Repository.



blished in the empire; christianity has been proscribed, and edicts are fulminated against it from time to time. For this reason, accounts of the success of the missionaries in Cantòn are not published in the "Chinese Repository," fearing that their converts might be seized through such reports and banished to Tartary.

With the exception of the customs, collected in the sea-ports, only two taxes are known in the empire; one, a personal tax, paid by every individual according to his means, from the age of twenty to that of seventy years, and the other upon produce, which is either a tenth, twentieth or thirtieth, according to the qualities of the soil. The manner of collecting these taxes is as paternal as the contributions themselves. The only charge of the public on those of small means, is to billet upon them the aged, the sick, and the poor, until their tax be thus paid off.

The mandarins receive the tithes in kind, and the capitation tax in money; the municipal officers deliver these to the treasury, through the hands of the provincial treasurers. The destination of these revenues precludes mal-practice in their collection. It is known that one part is devoted to the maintenance of the magistrates and military; the proceeds of the part sold is not issued from the treasury, except in case of public necessity; and, finally, the remainder is stored for time of need; so that what they *loaned* in times of abundance is again paid back to the people. Yet in spite of these precautions, and the encouragement given for the importation of rice, severe distress often falls upon the poor. Death by starvation amongst the indigent about Cantòn, is of almost daily occurrence. We occasionally see notices of donations to provide for the burial of the poor, who have thus miserably perished, and for the support of those, who, with life, have overcome the horrors of their condition; but the pittance given is often beneath contempt.

The eulogists of the Chinese contend, that man must multiply prodigiously, in a nation enjoying so many advantages; a nation remarkable for the fecundity of females; where libertinism is very rare; where the extension of paternal rights and authority, necessarily inspires a passion for a numerous offspring; where rights are equal; where the mode of life is simple, and always conducted with a strict view to economy; where bloody wars are not frequent; where custom inhibits celibacy; where the climate is healthy, and epidemics almost unknown. As no country is more favored in these respects, no country is more populous; and, indeed, it is too much so; for the annals of the empire prove, that a failure of the crops rarely occurs



without being followed by popular commotions. It is not necessary, they continue, to seek farther for the causes that restrain the march of despotism. These frequent revolutions suppose a people sufficiently civilized to know what respect is due to property; that the submission they concede to the laws are secondary obligations, subordinate to the unalienable rights of nature, which have constituted society only for the convenience of all its members; and the moment they are in want of necessities, the Chinese acknowledge a power which does not support them, for the obligation of preserving the people constitutes the rightful duty of sovereigns.

The emperor is aware, that he reigns over a people who observe the laws no farther than these contribute to their happiness; that if he should act in a tyrannical spirit, he would run the risk of being hurled from his throne. In this, there is no great difference between the Chinese and Europeans, as is abundantly seen both in modern and ancient history. The sovereign placed at the head of a people, who observe and judge of his acts, does not erect himself into a being to whom every thing is permitted; he does not break the sacred contract under which he holds his sceptre; he is so well convinced, that the people understand their rights, and possess the power of defending them, that, when they join in opposition to the mandarin governing a province, he at once displaces him, and delivers him over to trial, without any previous investigation of his case; and even if acquitted, he does not send him back, because it is considered a crime to have incurred the displeasure of the people. This complacency, which, in other countries, is a constant source of intrigue and discord, is found not to be inconvenient in China, because its inhabitants are naturally of a mild disposition and lovers of justice. Since necessity forces the prince to be just, it ought also to make him prudent and foreseeing.

It seems, that both the laws and customs of China join in establishing it as a fundamental principle, that the Chinese nation is one family, of which the emperor is the patriarch. He exercises his authority as a father, and not as a conqueror, nor as a legislator; and it is impossible to imagine the high respect and love the Chinese bear their sovereign, or, as they style him, their common, their universal father. This popular homage is founded on that established by domestic education. In China, both father and mother maintain an absolute authority over their children, no matter what may be their age, or how high the rank to which they may have attained. And this is but just, because the parents are responsible for the acts of



their children. If a son commit murder and escape, the father's head may satisfy the demands of justice. Paternal authority and filial love are the walls of the empire; they are the protection and support of its customs; and the bond of union, as well between the prince and his subjects as between themselves.

The Chinese government, in its march towards perfection, has reached the point whence all other governments set out; a patriarchal government is that of nature itself.

But, on closer examination, we find the emperor of China is a despot, wearing the title of father. The Chinese live under a double despotism; parental tyranny, and the civil tyranny of the crown. Whence we may infer, what is true, that they are the mildest, the most insinuating, the most plausible, the most respectful, and, at the same time, the most vile, the most cowardly and submissive of slaves. What is the effect of paternal despotism, but to produce outward respect and latent feelings of resentment towards the parent? And what is the effect of civil despotism upon the individuals of a nation?—Baseness and the extinction of every moral virtue. A patriarchal government, according to our notions, can only exist in a tribe pursuing a pastoral life in a limited territory, and is chimerical when applied to a population of three hundred and sixty millions of people, spread over a vast empire. Neither the emperor nor his mandarins, if they possess any knowledge of themselves or their own acts, can believe in its existence. They must smile at the deception, they practise upon their slaves.

Religion exercises no influence upon the government. The differences of sects and their disputes cause neither wars nor disturbance. The literary mandarins, the body from which all civil officers are appointed, presiding at the examinations above mentioned, select those only to become members of their class, who are to their taste; nor do they permit the priests to interfere in matters of government, nor to make their own dogmas the base of public morals. Confucius, whose memory and doctrines are equally revered by all classes and sects, and whose precepts were illustrated by his own exemplary practice, founded the national religion of China. His code is the natural law in action. Confucius teaches, that reason is an emanation from divinity; the supreme law is the concordance of nature and reason, and that these guides are communicated from heaven, or God. The Chinese have no epithet for God in their language, but speak of him as "Master of heaven." The emperor is the pontiff and judge in religious matters. This unity of power might



be dangerous, were it not kept in check, by national customs and public opinion, which are ingrafted upon the minds of the people by early education.

Before five years old, the Chinese do not pretend to instruct their children. At that age they are taught to write words, or rather hieroglyphics, which are representatives of tangible things: after this, they commit to memory sententious verses, and moral maxims of the sages. At a more advanced age, they are taught the philosophy of Confucius. Such is the common education. Those who are destined to become competitors for literary honors, and a place in the class of literary mandarins, add other studies, the object of which is to point out the proper conduct of man in various situations of life.

Another branch of education is the study of the code of ceremony of etiquette, in the observance of which the Chinese are scrupulously exact. They accord a species of worship to urbanity, which, to a certain extent, conduces to the harmony of society; though it tends to repress mental activity, much in the same manner that external worship makes hypocrites while it assists true religion. There are tribunals for the punishment of infractions of the established laws of courtesy, as well as for those of moral rectitude.

There are persons who are disposed to view and extol the Chinese as a nation of sages, without pausing to consider their many crimes and imperfections. They are a people who destroy their own tender offspring; a nation wherein the most infamous crimes are common; where the crimes arising from want, are neither punished nor prevented; where the merchant cozens his fellow-citizen and the stranger; where a knowledge of the language is the remotest boundary of science; where a language and a literature, scarcely adequate to the common purposes of life, have remained for ages unimproved; where the guardians of morals are people without honor or probity; where justice is venal to an extent unexampled on the face of the earth; where the great legislator Confucius, so much revered, is unworthy perusal, unless we excuse the poverty of his writings in consideration of the ignorance of the times in which he lived; where a chain of beings, from the emperor to the lowest vassal, live by preying one upon another; and where the sovereign permits no one to fatten, except with the design of sucking his blood, when it may suit his imperial appetite; and who, by despoiling those who have abused power under him, has obtained the title of avenger of his people!

Those who have visited China unanimously agree, that the great-



est caution is requisite to avoid being cheated; in fact, "As great a cheat as a Chinaman," has become a proverb.

A European merchant, after receiving on board his vessel the goods he had purchased, discovered that he had been deceived both in their quality and price; but as he asked a small deduction on this account he did not doubt, the Chinaman would readily come into his views. The European began, "You have sold me merchandise of a very inferior quality."

"That may be, but you must pay."

"You have treated me unjustly and abused my confidence."

"That may be true, but you must pay."

"Then you are a cheat and a scoundrel."

"That may be, but you must pay me, nevertheless."

"How do you wish me to speak of the Chinese in Europe, where they are supposed to be virtuous? I will say you are a set of cheats."

"You can do that," coolly replied the Chinaman, "but you must pay."

The European, after heaping abuse upon the fellow, and fretting himself into a rage, without obtaining any thing farther than the calm reply, "you must pay," was forced to count down the money. On receiving it, the Chinaman said, "Instead of getting yourself into a passion, would it no be more better, you no have speaky, and begin where you have finish?"

Not long since, a gentleman met at Honan, opposite to Cantòn, an unfortunate Chinaman, who had broken an arm. Compassion for his situation induced him to carry the poor fellow to a physician across the river to dress the fracture. The gentleman for some time paid the fellow's daily ferriage, but as the arm had improved, ceased to do so. One day he asked the patient why he had neglected to visit the physician. "Because," he replied, "you no have give money, pay sam-pan. This one very fine thing *for you*, to have make well my arm this fashion; but me no come doctor house no more, you no pay."

Such is the shameless effrontery and cool impudence of the Chinese, which seem to be also parts of their education.

Their notions of justice may be gathered from the following anecdotes related to me by the parties concerned.

A lady at Macao put into the hands of a Chinese tailor, materials, valued at forty dollars, to be made into a garment. At the appointed



time, it was brought home, but to her mortification, the material had been completely spoiled, and the habit was not fit to wear. It was returned upon the workman's hands, and the husband of the lady applied to the Portuguese authorities for redress; but was put off, under one pretext or another, from time to time, till his patience was exhausted. He now applied to a mandarin, and offered to give him the material in the tailor's hands, provided he should succeed in making him pay twenty dollars as damages, which were also to belong to the officer of justice. The Chinese officer willingly undertook the case, and in a day or two, reported somewhat in the following manner: "Me have squeezey that tailor-man that silk, and that twenty dollar, me thinkey you one very good man, one man what know justice, and law; me likey you; suppose you please, me give you my son, for one servant, so he learn justice all same from you!"

On another occasion the same lady employed a tailor to make two dresses. He brought home one of them and demanded pay for making both. The lady told him she would do so when the other dress was finished. "How can finish that other one piece dress—some man steal him, now me no got the silk."

Of their mode of reasoning we may form some idea from an anecdote in relation to the late Lord Napier, who was termed by them an "eye," it would seem the only word they could find in their language equivalent to the term superintendent; and certainly it is sufficiently symbolic of the superintendent's official duties.\*

The British merchants were anxious to impress upon the Chinese that Lord Napier was a man of exalted rank, and consequently could not submit to the indignity of communicating with the government through the medium of the Hong merchants. They told them, he was a lord, a nobleman, which the Chinese, having no hereditary nobility except in the family of the emperor, could not clearly comprehend. They remarked, "He is a nobleman in your country; how many men are there, of the same rank?" and were told, "a great many, perhaps a thousand."

"Are there any people of higher rank?"

\* There is a remarkable disposition on the part of the English translators of Chinese to be literal; and hence it is, we find "barbarian" for foreigner, "eye," for superintendent, &c. Would it not be better in these cases to forego the ridiculous, and render the Chinese words by the English equivalents, as is practised in translating other languages? What would be said of one who should seriously set down *ground apple*, as the English of *pomme de terre*?



" Yes, Viscount."

" Well; how many Viscounts have got?"

" A great many."

" Well, any of higher rank than Viscounts?"

" Yes; Earls."

" Well; any more?"

" Yes; Marquises."

" Well; any more?"

" Yes; Dukes."

" Well; any higher than dukes?"

" None except the king and royal family."

" Well, then, now me know, this eye, Lord Napier, all the same as one common mandarin!"

The charity of the Chinese, to judge from their charitable institutions at Cantòn, is not very active. There is a foundling hospital, an alms-house, and an hospital for lepers, which are supported by duties levied on foreign ships. Within a few years, a dispensary, under the successive care of European or American physicians, has been opened. At present it is under the management of the Rev. Peter Parker, M. D., who is indefatigable in his exertions, and, thus far, his surgical operations, chiefly for diseases of the eye, have been very successful. I paid a short visit to the establishment, when there were from eighty to one hundred patients, receiving, in turn, professional advice and medicine.

Patriotism, if such a sentiment exist, displays itself in making roads, planting trees on the roads, and erecting lodges to shelter the traveller. They esteem China and its inhabitants to be superior to all the rest of the world, and treat all foreigners with contemptuous condescension. Wedded to their own country entirely, the Chinese neither derive from, nor lend aid to other people. It is difficult to form an accurate opinion of this nation; for strangers are not allowed to enter it, nor are its own subjects allowed free egress and return. But, we may doubt their pre-eminence until they bring us works in philosophy superior to those of Locke, Descartes, or Spurzheim; works on mathematics, equal to those of Newton, Leibnitz, and their successors; works in general literature, worth perusal; or painting, statuary, and architecture that may claim admiration. What is Confucius when placed beside Franklin, Bacon, or Montesquieu?\*

\* In compiling this chapter, Staunton's China, the Chinese Repository, and La Historia de los Establecimientos Ultramarinos have been the chief sources of information, and have been freely used.



SKETCHES  
IN THE  
BONIN ISLANDS.



SKETCHES

BONIN ISLANDS



## CHAPTER XLI.

## SKETCHES IN THE BONIN ISLANDS.

*July, 1836.*

At five o'clock, P. M., on the 23d of June, the Peacock got under way, in company with the Enterprise, and both vessels stood seaward, among the Ladrões, a group of small islands in the vicinity of this part of the coast of China. The name is derived from the Portuguese, and given by them from being a lurking place, from the remotest period to the present time, for hordes of Chinese pirates. In 1809-10, the pirates navigated 1800 vessels, large and small, manned by 70,000 individuals;\* a numerical force greater than that of the British navy at the present day.

For the first few days the weather was a succession of squalls, rain, calms, and hot sunshine, and the wind prevailed from the northward and eastward. We came in sight of the island of Formosa, and had determined to pass through the Formosa passage, and enter the Pacific Ocean by doubling the north end of the island; but, fortunately, the wind proved more favorable, and we were enabled to follow the Bashee passage, between the south end of Formosa and a group of small islands called the Bashee.

Formosa is mountainous, and sustains a numerous population, estimated at between two and three millions. In 1683, after the conquest of China by the Tartars, it fell into the hands of the Chinese: previous to that time, however, the Dutch had established themselves, and were expelled (1624) by the Chinese conquerors. The western side of the island, alone, is under the Chinese yoke, and seems not to be held quietly; for, constant struggles are made by the aborigines from the eastern side of the mountain chain which divides the island,

\* Chinese Repository, vol. iii.



to free themselves. The island is considered as a department of the province of Fuh-keen; it supplies China with sugar, rice, and camphor, in large quantities.

Formosa is admirably situated for trade. It is within ninety miles of China, and four hundred and fifty of Japan, and still less of the Philippines. Should any European power desire an insular position, with a view to commerce with China and Japan, a more desirable one cannot easily be found.

We scarcely entered the Pacific Ocean before we found a general improvement in the sick, though the weather was not uniform, or remarkably pleasant. On the evening of the 14th of July, we made the Bonin Islands; and the next day, at half past two o'clock, P. M., piloted by Mr. Savary, who came off to us in a canoe, we anchored in Port St. William, as it is to be in future called, though formerly known as Port Lloyd, or Port St. George.

The Enterprise, Captain G. N. Hollins, had anchored about three hours before us.

“ Oh, had we some bright little isle of our own,  
In a blue summer ocean, far off and alone,  
Where a leaf never dies in the still blooming bowers,  
And banquets on through a whole year of flowers;  
Where the sun loves to pause  
With so fond a delay,  
That the night only draws  
A thin veil o'er the day;  
Where simply to feel that we breathe, that we live,  
Is worth the best joy that life elsewhere can give.

“ There, with souls ever ardent and pure as the clime,  
We should love, as they loved in the first golden time;  
The glow of the sunshine, the balm of the air,  
Would steal to our hearts and make all summer there!  
With affection, as free  
From decline as the bowers,  
And with Hope, like the bee  
Living always on flowers,  
Our life should resemble a long day of light,  
And our death come on, holy and calm as the night!”

Thus sang and sighed a half dozen hardy sons of the ocean, about the year 1829. They had tried their fortunes in every clime; they had attempted continents and isles; but Dame Fortune always frowned upon their efforts. They were at the Sandwich Islands, tired of the



world, when they heard the Bonin Isles were a paradise, not only of the mighty Pacific, but of the whole world. Its waters were represented, truly, to abound in fish and turtle, and its wilds in game, its shores with safe harbors, its mountainous surface in beautiful valleys, and its soil was capable of producing every thing without cultivation or toil. The Bonin Islands offered them, then, a place where they might retreat from all the cares and vexations of the world, and for the future be free from all anxiety. They flattered themselves, that the soil would produce so abundantly, that they would be soon enabled to supply vessels employed in whale fishing, with fresh fruits and vegetables, which in a short time would result in competency and even fortune to themselves, when they might return again to the society of the world.

In this mind, Mathew Mazarra, a Genoese, Alden B. Chapin, Nathaniel Savary of Massachusetts, Richard Millechamp of England, and Charles Johnson of Denmark, set sail from the Sandwich Islands, accompanied by several of the natives, male and female, who served them as servants and wives. In June, 1830, they arrived at the haven of their hopes, and before reaching the land, they found they had been misled, but it was too late to retreat. They landed and began the settlement of that island of the group, called by Captain Beechey, Peel's Island.

"These islands, which are about twenty-nine degrees east of Canton and eight south from Jeddo, are most conveniently situated for watching the trade of China on the west, the Philippines on the south, and Russia on the north; and if any intercourse is soon to be opened with the Japanese, they form the position from which it could be most easily effected. The earliest account which we find of the Bonin Islands, is contained in Kœmpher's History of Japan. 'About the year 1675,' says the historian, 'the Japanese accidentally discovered a very large island, one of their barks having been forced there in a storm from the island of Fatsisio, from which they computed it to be three hundred miles distant towards the east. They met with no inhabitants, but found it to be a very pleasant and fruitful country, well supplied with fresh water, and furnished with plenty of plants and trees, particularly the arrack tree, which, however, might give room to conjecture, that the island lay rather to the south of Japan than to the east, these trees growing only in hot countries. And because they found no inhabitants upon it, they called it *Bunin Sima*, or the Island Bunin, (in Chinese *woojin*—without people,) the uninhabited island. On the shores they found



an immense number of fish and crabs, some of which were from four to six feet long;”\* probably turtle.

In September, 1825, the port was visited by an English ship, named the *Supply*, and in 1826, the *William*, a whale ship belonging to London, was lost here, owing to neglect. In June, 1827, the port was visited by Captain Beechey in H. B. M. Ship *Blossom*.

When he arrived off the harbor, they met two individuals in a boat, who proved to be a part of the crew of the unfortunate *William*. “This ship, which had once belonged to His Majesty’s service, had been anchored in the harbor in deep water, in rather an exposed situation, the port then not being well known, and had part of her cargo upon deck, when a violent gust of wind from the land drove her from her anchors, and she struck upon a rock in a small bay close to the entrance, where in a short time she went to pieces. All the crew escaped, and established themselves on shore as well as they could, and immediately commenced building a vessel from the wreck of the ship, in which they intended to proceed to Manila; but before she was completed, another whaler, the *Timor*, touched there and carried them all away, except our two visitors, who remained behind at their own request. They had been several months upon the island, during which time, they had not shaved, or paid any attention to their dress, and were very odd-looking beings. The master, Thomas Younger, had unfortunately been killed by the fall of a tree, fifteen days previous to the loss of the ship, and was buried in a sandy bay on the eastern side of the harbor.”†

The *Blossom* remained from the 8th till the 15th of June. Captain Beechey took formal possession of the island in the name of His Britannic Majesty, and nailed to a tree a sheet of copper, with the necessary particulars engraved thereon. He named the harbor, in compliment to the Bishop of Oxford, Port Lloyd, and the island in which it is situated Peel’s Island.

In August, 1834, the American barque *Volunteer* touched at the Bonin Islands to procure supplies. Having been informed, at the Sandwich Islands, that the settlers had gone to the south island, she made for that first, and, after a fruitless search for them of three days, found them on the south of the north island; and on the 24th, under the pilotage of Mr. Mazarra, the ship was worked into the harbor, now named by the settlers Port St. George. The latitude is

\* Chinese Repository, 1835.

† Beechey’s Voyage to the Pacific and Beerings’ Straits. Philadelphia, 1832.



27° 6' 30" north, and the longitude 142° 16' east.\* Their position, on the most modern chart, is very much to the westward.

We found the entrance of the harbor, the approach to which is very pretty, to be on the south-western side of the island. The rocks are, in many places, castellated, and some of them, on close examination, present the appearance of rude masonry, wherein the stones had been piled up loosely together, and a mortar, or cement, afterwards poured in amongst them. Within a few miles of the coast are seen, here and there, a fragment of rock standing above the sea, like a sentry-box, or watch-tower.

The general outline of the bay is oval, being about a mile and a half long, and three-quarters of a mile wide, having the entrance towards the southern end, which, between the promontory, on the south side, and the quoin-shaped rock, mentioned by Beechey, we estimated to be half a mile wide. The breadth of the channel, however, does not exceed a quarter of a mile. The land round the bay is broken into numerous angular hills by ravines, rather than valleys, beautifully green with close-growing trees and shrubs, which flourish to the water's edge. The average height of the hills is, perhaps, four hundred feet; and the highest point does not, probably, exceed six hundred. The shore of the harbor is broken into several small bays, or coves, bounded by white sand beaches, which, contrasting with the blue sheet of water, and, here and there, the white spray dashing over a dark rock, imparts a picturesqueness to the whole scene.

However bright the picture to a sea-weary voyager, or however fit for the pencil, Mazarra and his followers saw nothing in the deep ravines, and fan-leaf palm, and cabbage-tree, to invite them to establish their home upon this uninhabited island. But it was too late to turn back. Though disappointed to find there were no plains of any extent, and the small basins of level land among the hills were covered by a close jungle, they set to work, and now show, with no little satisfaction, the result of their tedious and painful toil. The same industrious perseverance in the 'far west' would have made them comparatively rich men; but here their snugly thatched cabins are valueless, in the event of their leaving the island, which is not improbable, and then their six years' labor is thrown away. Nor have they been free from those difficulties from which they fled. They found here, as every where else, that man is doomed to earn his bread by the sweat of his brow. Until their first harvest, their

\* Chinese Repository, 1835.



food consisted almost entirely of turtle and the pith of the cabbage-tree, which no one eats except from necessity. Instead of a mild and benignant clime, every year has brought typhoons and earthquakes, and the numerous upturn trees bear testimony of the violence of these storms. Indeed they have never been able to obtain bananas, for the reason that, about the period of their maturity, the plant is destroyed, or torn away by a typhoon. Neither the phases of the weather nor the prevalence of the wind have been regular in their succession any two years.

Besides these difficulties, dissensions crept into their little community, and still exist. They have been several times annoyed by refractory seamen, turned on shore by the masters of whale-ships, where, being without a fear of punishment, they have committed outrage and violence to an extent seriously detrimental to the prosperity of the settlement. In 1833, the whaler *Cadmus* left fifteen men on shore, among whom were some of daring character, who put the settlers at defiance: eight of them perished in an attempt to leave the island in a whale-boat, and the rest have been since taken away.

Within a few days, a written code has been agreed to by all the settlers, now fourteen in number, the principal features of which are, that all disputes shall be decided by the opinion of the majority; that, henceforward, no individual shall instruct or assist any vessel in taking turtle, nor shall any one, in future, sell turtle, or feed his hogs upon it; no one shall maltreat the slaves or servants of another, or endeavor to seduce any woman from her lord; nor shall any one encourage men to desert from ships arriving at the island; but, on the contrary, use every effort to apprehend and return every deserter to his vessel. This code is signed and sworn to by all; and it is remarkable, that only three of the fourteen are capable of writing their names: Mazarra, the most respected among them, is not one of the latter number.

The morality of the community is, I fear, of a low grade, and religion is out of the question. Most of the white men have one or two wives, natives of the Sandwich Islands. In all, there are nineteen women on the island, among whom infanticide and infidelity, which they are at no pains to conceal from their husbands, are common: and this in a population not exceeding forty souls!

On the evening of our arrival, I accompanied several officers in pursuit of turtle. We landed on one of the sand beaches in the bay, under the dark shade of the high land. We had scarcely sprung on shore, before a turtle weighing between two and three hundred pounds



was found, and turned upon his back. Encouraged by this success we searched the whole beach very carefully, but without finding any thing. We now divided the party, and took our stations along the sand to await until the animals should come up from the deep, as they are wont to do at night to deposite their eggs. The sky was bright with stars, and there was a dead silence, only interrupted by the sullen splash of the sea: we lay shrouded in the shade of the rocks beneath wide spreading trees; and the whole scene disposed the mind to wander from present objects. I gazed upon the heavens, and wondered that man could become so lost to his own interest, and in affection for friends at home, as to prefer an exile "The world forgetting, and by the world forgot," on an isle like this,

"In a blue summer ocean, far off and alone,"

to pursuing an honest life beneath his native skies.

The revery was broken by a canoe gliding gently upon the sand, and two athletic forms leaped silently upon the shore, and drew their frail bark after them. They advanced towards us without speaking, and we could discern through the deep shadow of the hills, that they were seamen in coarse shirts and trousers. They proved to be Americans who had been nearly a year on the island; and were now on the same errand with ourselves. They told us they were out every night, and the beach we were upon, was a very good one for our purpose. They led us into the edge of the bush where the turtles go to lay their eggs, and after a little while, we found one as large as our first prize.

A fellow feeling and sociability had suddenly grown up between the newcomers and our boat's crew. The two quondam whalers at once aided them in dragging the turtle to the boat, and assumed a generous contempt for an animal, over which an alderman's eyes would have sparkled, when some one gave a hint about "the poor fellows having a share." "Why, we have it every day," said they, as they launched their little canoe, and with one or two strokes of the paddle urged it out of sight, though not out of ear shot; for the stroke of their paddles and the sound of their voices were heard some time afterwards.

After watching another hour we returned on board, and found another party had been more successful, having taken five.

From February till August, great numbers of turtle visit the sandy beaches, where they deposite their eggs in the sand beyond the reach of the tide. In a few weeks the process of incubation is completed



by the heat of the sun alone; and the young turtles, numbering from one to five hundred in each nest, betake themselves to the water. The half grown turtles may be taken on shingle and rocky shores, but never on sand beaches. After the season they disappear, and, from some of them having been taken with Japanese hooks in them, are supposed to visit the coast of Japan. Dampier, speaking on this subject in his voyages, expresses his opinion that the habits of turtles are migratory.

While here, we caught about forty, any two of which furnished ample food for one hundred and eighty persons during a day. Notwithstanding the innumerable eggs deposited and hatched, the settlers think the number has in the past years diminished, and hence the regulation above mentioned in relation to them. They suppose the turtle does not attain its full size in less than five years. When they first escape from the egg, they are about the size of a dollar; and when full grown, from four to six feet long.

The next day we pulled ashore, and landed near a mass of rock standing apart from the shore and connected to it by a flat of broken stones, over which we made our way to the beach. It is narrow, and forms a dividing line between Port William and a small bay, which opens more to the southward. Here Mr. Mazarra met us, and led us towards the little village, at the entrance of which are several broad leaved trees. Several Sandwich islanders, men and women, were lounging on some rough hewn logs, beneath their shade. We halted here for a moment, and Mr. Chapin and an Englishman came forward to welcome us. The latter was tremulous, and had a wild expression, which betrayed his fatal addiction to the abuse of intoxicating spirits. We learned afterwards, that three barrels of New England rum had been lately obtained; and, having been nearly a year without any thing of the kind on the island, it had met with rather a hearty reception. "Nothing will be done," said the 'old gentleman,' as Mazarra is respectfully styled, "until it be all gone, and that will be in a few days."

We were now led through the village, consisting of half a dozen comfortable huts, each fenced in with vertical posts of cabbage tree, including a small garden in front. We were conducted to the dwelling of Mr. Chapin, and ushered into a square apartment that betrayed the professional taste of the tenant. On our left stood a table, covered with newspapers and writing materials, and over it, upon the wall, hung a spy-glass, and a thin manuscript, headed "Laws of the Bonin Isles." A sea chest stood on each side of the room, and a



bed with calico curtains, filled each corner. A few French prints, and a shelf of fifty or sixty miscellaneous volumes, occupied rather than adorned the walls. A chair of home manufacture, and a three-legged stool completed the furniture.

A door between the beds communicated with two inner apartments, half the size of the first, in which were women engaged in affairs of the household. The roof was thatched with fan-palms, and the walls hung with coarse mats. Such is the general style of the huts of this new settlement, which is called Clarkston.

Mr. Chapin, barefoot and in shirt and trousers, his face shaded by a broad hat of sennate, invited us to be seated; and as he conversed, with folded arms, walked the floor as if he had been upon a quarter deck. He was polite and intelligent. He showed us his corn field, and a saline spring close at hand, and assisted us in picking up some small shells from a fresh water stream. Melons, yams, sweet potatoes and taro were abundant, and the Indian corn was flourishing.

Among the vegetable productions of Bonin, are several varieties of wood well suited to cabinet work; but difficult to get at, from the almost impenetrable jungle in which they grow. It was said that camphor and spice trees abounded, but the settlers have not yet met with either.

Hogs and goats are numerous, and many are running wild in 'the bush.' Domestic fowls, in spite of feeding and kind treatment have forsaken the village, and subsist wild in the jungle.

When the settlers came to the island they found the house-fly in great numbers, and to their surprise, more numerous in the interior of the island than upon its coasts. Small lizards, crows, and a species of *ptyropus*, called flying fox, were very numerous. The latter were very troublesome to the products of the gardens. While here, we got two of the foxes on board; one alive, which in the course of two days became tame and fond of being caressed. It ate melon and sweet potato, and remained in the cabin suspending itself by its hind legs. One day it alighted on the stuffed skin of its mother, when it manifested much sensibility, and clung to it with seeming affection. This is the animal, erroneously mentioned in Beechey's Voyage, as a Vampire bat. It is of a blackish gray color, and has light chestnut colored irides; but in other respects does not differ from that seen in various parts of India.

On a second visit to Clarkston, we found our acquaintances on the beach with a number of dogs, which they found of very great use in



their hunting of hogs and goats. They had instructed the dogs to catch fish, and two of them will plunge into the water and seize a shark, one on each side, by the fin, and bring it ashore in spite of resistance. One of these dogs had several scars, which he had received in contests with wild boars; and on one occasion was so severely wounded, that his master carried him home on his back, a distance of several miles.

I embarked with a friend in a small canoe, paddled by two Sandwich Islanders, and, crossing the bay, ran through a natural tunnel, or rocky cave, open at both ends, which pierces the southern promontory of the small bay. The passage was perhaps thirty yards long, and there was just room for the canoe with its wide-spreading out-rigger to pass. The water within the cave was smooth and of considerable depth, but so transparent, that various sea-shells and different colored marine growths were seen among branching coral at the bottom. Emerging on the other side we were in the open Pacific. Next we entered a little bay, wherein a number of porpoises were sporting gaily in their native element; and the canoe was paddled to shore and drawn up on a pretty sand beach, which at this point was not more than ten feet wide, dividing the blue waters of the ocean from a stream, which, from its stagnation and greenish color, might be mistaken for a pool. A canoe loaded with melons and pumpkins, floated on its surface; and a Sandwich Islander, asleep in the shade of a rock hard by, declared it to lead to some habitation or cultivated ground. It is emphatically called *the river*. In a moment our light bark was carried over the sand and launched upon its peaceful bosom. We again embarked and pursued its windings for half a mile. It was perfectly calm and silent, and no animated thing except ourselves, was abroad. On one side, the rocky bank rose perpendicularly three or four hundred feet; on the other, it spread out into a level plain, a quarter of a mile in extent, covered with trees and wild brush wood. Presently we espied, on a point stretching into the stream, a little terrier, that stood with ears erect and one foot raised, regarding us with attention. We had no sooner doubled the point than we met Mr. Mazarra in a canoe. He had been to his plantation; but kindly turned about, and we paddled on together for a quarter of a mile, and landed.

This plantation, where we saw corn, yams, sugar-cane, and taro (*arum esculentum*) growing luxuriantly, extends on either side of the stream to a considerable distance. The soil is rich, and the hills rise on all sides forming a long narrow valley. After examin-



ing the farm, we entered the dwelling of our host, which resembled the huts at Clarkston, and refreshed ourselves with a fine melon. I observed here a great number of spiders, and wondered they were permitted to infest the domicile, till Mazarra said, "We find them very useful in killing the flies about the house, and are glad to see them."

We returned as we came, and not finding our boat at Clarkston, spent some time wandering over the rocks, which the tide had now left, in search of shells.

I have sometimes asked myself, whether our friends who have conchological propensities, ever think of the labor and peril often undergone to obtain the specimens which they desire for their cabinets. Many a severe illness have I known to result from expeditions of this sort, the individual being alternately drenched by the sea, and exposed to the blaze of a tropical sun; and, at the same time, perhaps, snuffing up the morbiferous effluvia from some neighboring marsh. Then, one's hands are often severely cut and scratched by efforts to detach the animals from their place of abode.

We found specimens of beautiful limpets, turbo, and the giant clam (*tridacna gygas*.) Those of the last genus, nine or ten inches long, were usually found between rocks, secured by the peduncle or foot below, and the zig-zag mouth gaping open an inch wide, the thin membranous portion of the animal, which is of a purple color, floating over the margin of the shell. When disturbed, the membrane was immediately drawn in, and the shell closed, at the same time spirting a fine thread of water, ejected as it might be from a syringe; sometimes air bubbles alone escaped. A half hour's hard labor was not unfrequently expended to obtain one.

By surprising them, limpets may be easily detached; but if they ever take the alarm at your approach, their resistance often foils your wish to obtain a perfect shell. They are furnished with a thick fleshy belly, which, on occasion, applies its edges very closely to the rock, while the centre is raised so as to produce a vacuum; then, the weight of the superincumbent atmosphere is sufficient to press them with great firmness to the spot of location. Chitons offer the same kind of resistance. I have often watched these latter animals, and observed their movements. Locomotion in them, is effected by undulating the surrounding fleshy rim, which binds their several pieces together, and is much more rapid than one would suppose. I have seen them on a smooth rock, drive off every other sort of shell. Indeed, it would seem that all the marine animals of this character are



gregarious. Those of the same class are found in groups, waiting to receive the food, that the water may cast in their way, or deposit around them when it recedes.

By some process, the smooth shells are covered with a slime, which enhances the brightness of the colors in the young individuals when recent, which is somewhat diminished after the animal is killed, and the shell cleaned. In the old shells, the slime attaches to itself particles of sea-weed, sand; and sometimes small shells of different species, which give it a coating that in time becomes a part of the shell.

These animals do not labor all for themselves. The small ones are destined to become food for the larger; and their habitations often become homes of a kind of crab, which manages to remove the owner and architect, and take possession himself. From this circumstance, sailors call them pirates. They usually select some univalve shell that has an inner chamber, in which they accommodate the soft part of their bodies, leaving their heads and claws outside, to seize upon their prey and drag their habitations after them. On this island, there are two species of land helix; but I could not find a single one alive. The pirates had taken possession of them all. On a distant part of the island I found, one day, hundreds of pirates, clothed in almost every species of univalve, feasting on the remains of a dead turtle. They appeared like people of every nation in their respective costumes, congregated at a fair. There was one thing in common; they were all rapacious, and all had red claws. My approach gave them alarm, and they hurried away in all directions to escape. Some little crabs had got into shells disproportionately large, and waddled off like a boy under a man's hat and coat; while others had lived so long in their shells as to outgrow them: these found their houses no impediment to rapid flight. The villains seemed to possess a sense of right and wrong, and fled, because they knew they had been guilty of murdering the innocent, to appropriate their homes. I could show them no quarter; though I presume, they only pursue the instincts of their nature.



SKETCHES  
IN THE  
SANDWICH ISLANDS.



THE  
JOURNAL  
OF  
THE  
SANDWICH ISLANDS  
1822

THE  
JOURNAL  
OF  
THE  
SANDWICH ISLANDS  
1822

THE  
JOURNAL  
OF  
THE  
SANDWICH ISLANDS  
1822

THE  
JOURNAL  
OF  
THE  
SANDWICH ISLANDS  
1822

THE  
JOURNAL  
OF  
THE  
SANDWICH ISLANDS  
1822

THE  
JOURNAL  
OF  
THE  
SANDWICH ISLANDS  
1822



## CHAPTER XLII.

## SKETCHES IN THE SANDWICH ISLANDS.

*September, 1836.*

ON Thursday, the twenty-first day of July, at six o'clock, A. M., the little squadron got under way, and bade farewell to the Bonin Isles. For the first few days the wind prevailed from the northward, and was accompanied by rain.

On the 25th of July, at meridian, (latitude  $31^{\circ} 50'$  N., longitude  $150^{\circ} 28'$  E.,) the remains of Mr. J. Dickinson Mendenhall, acting purser of the *Enterprise*, were committed to the deep. Mr. Mendenhall, for several years a valetudinarian, was taken ill at Bangkok; but sailed from Macao in a state of convalescence. A few days afterwards he suffered a relapse, and for the sake of better accommodation, was received into Captain Stribling's cabin on board of the *Peacock*, on the 28th of June, in the China Sea.

A funeral at sea is always impressive: the present was particularly so; for we were paying the last tribute to one who had been generally beloved and respected by the officers of the squadron.

The flags of both vessels were at half mast; the coffin, covered by a flag, was placed in the lee gang-way; the tolling of the ship's bell summoned the officers and crew on deck; a solemn silence everywhere prevailed, broken now and then by a slight swash of the sea against the vessel's side. While the service of the church was being read, the *Enterprise*, with tolling bell, passed under our stern, and came close under our lee. Her bell was silent; the officers and crew were gazing from deck; one plunge—and the broad blue bosom of the Pacific Ocean closed over the mortal remains of one much loved, leaving no trace to mark his grave.

His friends have the consolation of knowing, that his illness was smoothed by every possible attention; and that his last moments



were as tranquil as sleep. His exemplary moral life should make us hope that when the sea shall give up her dead, he will wake in the mansions of the blest.

Between the latitudes of  $32^{\circ}$  and  $34^{\circ}$  north, we saw many large shoals of flying fish; and now and then a dark-colored albatross, circling and sailing through the air with easy motion, now pausing and again shooting ahead, as if to show how impossible it was for the ship to follow in his flight. The weather was cool, and every one found cloth clothing comfortable, though the thermometer still ranged above  $70^{\circ}$  F. The crew, long saddened by scenes of sickness and death, now resumed its wonted cheerfulness, and again the joyous song, the dance and merry fife, which from the time of sailing from Bombay had been silent, were nightly heard upon the forecastle. On a foggy night (August 3d,) we had parted company with the *Enterprise*, and were now alone; yet, there was 'a little warlike world within,' which put at defiance the loneliness of the waste of waters. Carpenters, tinkers, and coopers plied their respective trades, and all the routine of ship's duty was carried on with more cheerfulness than it had been for many months.

On Wednesday, the tenth of August, at meridian, we found the latitude to be  $32^{\circ} 24'$  north, and the longitude  $178^{\circ} 51'$  west. We had passed the 180th degree, and were therefore more than half way round the world, eastward from Greenwich. In order to make our reckoning of time correspond with that between us and it, the following day was also reckoned, Wednesday the tenth of August; so that each of us may exclaim with the noble Roman, "I have lost a day."

On the morning of the seventh of September, after a tedious and unpleasant passage of forty-nine days, we descried the island of OAHU, one of the Sandwich group. As we drew nearer we found it mountainous, rising about four thousand feet above the level of the sea, barren and forbidding in its aspect. A low coral reef, a mile distant from the shore, surrounds the island, and a white line of foaming breakers, on the southern side, every where meets the eye.

About four o'clock P. M. we doubled Diamond point, a hill, formerly the crater of an active volcano, marked by gullies, which may have been formed by streams of overflowing lava, and opened the village of Waititi, four miles from Honolulu. Presently a pilot boarded us, and we learned, that the *Enterprise*, now in sight, had arrived the day before. Our expected arrival had been announced by the schooner *Honduras*, which, by running as far as forty degrees



north, had made the passage from Canton in forty-five days. About sunset we anchored in the outer roads.

The harbor of Honolulu is peculiar. A deep cove or bay is formed between Diamond and Long points, which are fifteen miles apart; but with the exception of a deep hole or basin, the whole space is filled by a plain, or reef of coral, which rises to within a few feet of the surface of the water. Between the above named points is stretched a line of breakers, interrupted by a channel, one hundred and sixty-seven fathoms wide and four and a half deep, which forms the entrance to what is termed the inner harbor.

At daylight the next morning, the anchor was weighed and the ship was towed into the channel. Long track-ropes were carried to the reef and about two hundred Sandwich islanders, wading knee deep in the water, upon the field of coral, seized them, and, cheered by their own song and chorus, drew or tracked the ship to the anchorage which is close to the shore. The basin is always smooth, being effectually protected by the coral reef to seaward.

The town, as seen from the ship, presented several comfortable-looking houses, and in the rear, there is a beautifully green valley which throws it into strong relief. The belfry of the seaman's chapel stands conspicuous, and imparts an air of civilization, which one would scarcely expect to meet at a place so recently emerged from barbarism. A small white fort stood upon our left, from which our noisy salutation was returned by an equal number of guns, and on the left was a fish-pond, formed by a wall of stone one or two feet above the surface and enclosing a sheet of water, several acres in extent. An extinct crater, in the rear of the town, familiarly called the Devil's punch bowl, overlooks the bay, which, by mounting a few pieces of ordnance around its edge, has been converted into a respectable fortress.

Honolulu is not only the capital of the island of Oahu, but being the chief residence of the king, also of the Sandwich Isles, though Hawaii is the largest and most populous; and with the natives gives name to the group and to their inhabitants. It is irregularly laid out, and from the houses being enclosed by fences of 'adobes'—large blocks of sun-dried clay—and the place being almost entirely without trees, its aspect is cheerless. Most of the houses are composed of a sort of thatch, and, in form, closely resemble ricks of sun-burnt hay. They are floored with mats, and, internally, have an air of snugness rather than comfort. The few dwellings occupied by foreigners, built either of blocks of coral cut near the beach, or of adobes, or



wood, are tolerably comfortable; some of them, for elegance and neatness, might be compared with well appointed cottages. The population of the town is estimated at between six and seven thousand, of which number about two hundred are foreigners, chiefly Americans engaged in trade.

The Hawaiians are an imitative people, and as far as their means allow, ape the costumes of foreigners. Hence life in the streets is as various as it is grotesque. Here we see a group of men, some wearing an ancient cloak, consisting of a square piece of native cloth, either yellow or parti-colored, worn under one arm, generally the right, and the ends knotted on the opposite shoulder; some place it over, instead of under the arm, and many of them possessing fine muscular forms, are perhaps not inaptly compared to the old Romans in their togas, whom we are taught to admire. Others are entirely naked with the exception of a garment, termed 'maro,' which, like the 'langote' of India, is very small, being merely a string about the loins, to support a fold of native cloth worn perpendicularly between the limbs. Others, again, add to this some single cast garment, as a vest, a coat, pantaloons or shirt; and with either one, esteem themselves in full dress. The women usually wear a loose slip or gown, and are very fond of stringing flowers into necklaces or fillets for their heads. Some even wear supple twigs full of green leaves. Those who have been improved by the instructions of the missionaries, if they be chiefs, wear silk dresses and straw bonnets; but instead of encumbering their feet with shoes or stockings, display well tataüd ankles.

The Hawaiians of the plebeian classes are of moderate stature; but the chiefs, male and female, are remarkable for their great size and flabby obesity. Their heads are proportionably small behind the ears, possibly owing to a custom of sustaining them, while infants, by resting the back of the head upon the hand, and stroking it upwards, to secure a flattened occiput, which is considered a mark of beauty. Their hands and feet, among the females at least, are of aristocratic smallness. Their faces are rather flat and broad; the lips are full, and the nose spread; but it is without the peculiar flatness which distinguishes this feature in the negro. When in repose, their countenances are grave, but are easily lighted up by smiles, and are, on the whole, agreeable. Their complexion is olive, and their general appearance resembles that of the Siamese more than any people I have seen; and as, with them, the chiefs are very large: one measured six feet four inches high, with a frame developed in excellent proportion, and was not considered, by the Hawaiians, remarkable for size.



Though few years have elapsed since the introduction of horses, which are now numerous on the principal islands of the group, the Hawaiians have become dexterous horsemen, and have learned to wield the *lazo* with a precision only excelled by the gauchos of Buenos Ayres. Both men and women assume the masculine posture when mounted, and are now seen riding through the streets of Honolulu at all times, more particularly on Saturdays, and always at a rapid rate. But none, as yet, aspire to drive wheel carriages for pleasure.

The Hawaiians are now a mild race of people, tolerably docile, and capable of improvement. They are expert at all athletic exercises; and, as swimmers, they are unrivalled. Like their monarch, they are disposed to run to excess in all that engages their attention, which, however, is not easily roused. The British Consul told me, that when marbles were first introduced by him, those in his neighborhood did scarcely any thing else than play with them for two or three months, and the same thing happened with kites. That they are honest, there can be little doubt, for the foreign residents make very little use of locks and keys. Riding, one day, in the country, I lost a glove, which was brought to me three days afterwards, in the town. They occasionally display humor, and laugh heartily at a joke. The officers of H. B. M. ship *Blond*, when here, were anxious to procure some of the ancient idols, to carry home as curiosities. The demand soon exhausted the stock on hand: to supply the deficiency, the Hawaiians made idols, and smoked them, to impart to them an appearance of antiquity, and actually succeeded in the deception. A boy who had observed this *penchant* for the curious among the officers, obtained a chicken's foot, and, having smoked it well, carried it to the distinguished virtuoso of the ship, saying, as he worked the toes by pulling at the ends of the tendons, "Wont you buy this; see how curiously it moves;—you have nothing so strange as this."

There are several pleasant rides in the vicinity of Honolulu; *Eva*, or *Pearl River*, a beautiful valley; the *Salt Lake*; the valley of *Manoa*, and the *Pari*, or *Precipice*. The latter is the termination of the fine green valley of *Nuanu*, the sides of which are almost perpendicular, and highly picturesque, from a mingling of the pale leaves of the *tutui* with the darker foliage of the surrounding vegetation, and occasional rills and cascades, which fall several hundred feet. This valley crosses the island, and terminates abruptly by an almost perpendicular precipice, several hundred feet high, celebrated in the



wars of Tamèhamèha. From its brink there is a fine view of the fertile district of Kolau and the Pacific ocean, chafing itself into foam on the shore, and thence stretching itself away till its blue bosom kisses the sky.

Though the elevation, probably, does not exceed four hundred feet, the climate is very different from that of the plain whereon stands the capital, and is, therefore, a favorite resort for invalids and valetudinarians. In the high ground, the air is tempered by almost daily showers, and, by the trade wind sweeping freshly, in strong currents, between the hills; while, on the plain, seldom visited by rain, it remains, pretty constantly, dry and warm. During our stay, the thermometer ranged from 70° to 90° F., though its average yearly range is stated to be from 70° to 80° F.

The soil is fertile wherever reached by water, and yields yams, taro, (*arum esculentum*,) potatoes, pumpkins, corn, melons, bananas, grapes, pine-apples, &c. The domestic animals are horses, bullocks, hogs, goats, dogs, &c. Sheep do not thrive, but the beef is excellent. Sugar, coffee, cotton, silk, and salt, may be produced abundantly; and, in time, will become the great sources of the nation's commercial wealth.

There are no reptiles upon the island, nor, indeed, upon any of the group; except scorpions and centepedes, introduced from the Society Islands, cockroaches, flies, and mosquitoes,\* the insect tribes are few. Birds are not numerous, and the few found here are not remarkable for their plumage. There is one species, which has one or two yellow feathers under each wing, which are much prized for making a sort of tippet, or fillet, for the neck or head.

The waters afford several varieties of excellent fish, and the rocks are inhabited by many very pretty shells. There are several species of land shells, and two or three species lately found in the fresh water streams.†

Besides the active trade of the place, and the continuous change

\* The facetious editor of the "Sandwich Island Gazette" informs us that mosquitoes have been recently introduced by a gentleman from New England—*de gustibus*, &c.

† I saw, here, a species of spondylus, nine or ten inches long, and five or six broad, having a semicircular cavity, or chamber, in the lower valve, capable of holding one or two table-spoonfuls, containing water, said to be fresh, which may be seen flowing beneath the transparent nacreous lining. The whalers, by whom the specimens are brought here from the Society Islands, call it the "shoe shell."



of costume, there are other evidences to the transient visiter, that the people are emerging from barbarism, and advancing towards a state of civilization. A weekly newspaper, entitled the "Sandwich Island Gazette and Journal of Commerce," in English, was begun on the 30th of July, 1836. An attempt was made to suppress this paper in its infancy, by Kinau, the Governess of Oahu. She put her veto upon its publication, and shut up the printing office. The editor applied to the king, then on a visit to one of the windward islands, for his authority to publish it, and received a note from His Hawaiian Majesty, of which the following translation appears in the Sandwich Island Gazette.

"TO STEPHEN D. MACKINTOSH.

HONOLULU, OAHU.

I assent to the letter which you sent me. It affords me pleasure to see the works of other lands, and things that are new. If I was there, I should very much desire to see. I have said to Kinau, make printing presses. My thought is ended. Love to you and Reynolds.

By King KAUIKEAOULI.

There is another in the native language, entitled, "Ke Kumu Hawaii," which will be referred to in the sequel.

There are three practitioners of medicine, one English, and two American, residing here; there is a seamen's chapel and a reading room, as yet almost without readers; to which may be added, as additional evidence of the march of civilization, billiard tables, bowling allies, grog shops, livery stables, and *restaurants*, both foreign and native, and they all meet with a sufficient patronage, because the vices are more aptly acquired than the virtues of civilized life.

The grog shops are licensed, but it is to be regretted that they have not been suppressed in compliance with petitions signed by eighteen masters of whale ships, and two thousand eight hundred native chiefs. These shops are the bane of his subjects as well as of the foreign seamen coming to the islands; the king would be consulting his own interest and the welfare of his people, by inhibiting the sale of spirituous liquors at retail. Many whale ships, rather than incur the risk of difficulties arising from this source, have ceased to visit the port, and now resort to other places for the purpose of refreshing their crews, and the king thus loses an amount of revenue equal to the port charges, &c., of all these vessels.

On several occasions I passed a Hawaiian restaurant's—a straw hovel in which were assembled numerous guests, enjoying themselves



after the fashion they admire most, while as many, in the various costumes described above, were gazing wistfully in upon them from the outside. The earth floor was covered by mats. Groups of more than half naked men, squatted in a circle with gourd plates before them, supplied with raw fish and salt water, and by their side an enormous gourd, of the dimensions of a wash tub, filled with poë, a sort of paste made of taro. They ate of the raw fish, occasionally sopping the torn animal in the salt water as a sauce, then sucking it, with that peculiar smack which indicates the reception of a delicious morsel. Next the fore and middle fingers were dipped up to the knuckles in the tub of poë, and by a dexterous twirl made to convey the food to the mouth. At the proper moment the head is thrown back, and the mouth is opened to receive the fingers, which are now sucked clean of their load. Alternating one or two mouthfulls of raw fish with as many of poë, they thus feed until satisfied, for which they pay six and a quarter cents. This charge includes the feeding of the children and dogs of the guest, which must be a considerable drawback upon the profits, if we may judge from the number of children and lank curs mingled among the groups.

Of this revolting feast, in which the face and hands are pretty well smeared, we were invited by a smile and a gesture to partake. Though I had, before witnessing this scene, argued with myself, that eating raw fish was not a more violent practice, than eating raw oysters, the invitation caused me to turn away in disgust. The sight was nauseating. It may do in theory, but in practice the stranger will find such feeding out of the question.

At night the billiard tables are resorted to by foreigners and natives. At one or the other, one is sure to meet His Hawaiian Majesty King Kamehameha, attended by some of his high chiefs. He has recently come out of his minority, a stoutly limbed young man five feet seven or eight inches high. His face is flat and broad, and his countenance mild. He is fond of athletic exercises; plays skilfully both at billiards and bowls; rides well, hunts well, and readily joins his lowest subjects in the severest toils. Not long ago a ship was cast away near Diamond point, and the king, in a tarpaulin and sailor's shirt and trousers, assisted actively in saving the cargo. He is of a cold temperament and not easily excited; but whatever he undertakes, he executes with enthusiasm. He is fond of ships, and delights in navigating among the several islands of his dominions.

I had the honor of an introduction to His Majesty on the night of our arrival. We found him bowling for a bottle of wine with seve-



ral chiefs. He was dressed in white drilling pantaloons, without suspenders, and a white jacket, wearing a neatly plaited parti-colored straw hat, set knowingly on one side of his head. To measure him by the social code of refined life, his manner of receiving us was frank and unassuming, while it partook something of *mauvaise honte*. He speaks English intelligibly, but prefers his own language, and it is difficult to get him to talk in any other in the presence of more than one or two persons. After the usual salutation, he seized a ball in his left hand and resumed his game with great energy. He wants dignity. The commonest skippers that visit the port, familiarly address him by his name, Kauikeaouli, and do not hesitate even to put their arms about his neck, which he very good-naturedly submits to, without thinking that it derogates any thing from royalty. I saw him thus solicited to give up bowls for a game of pool, and he led the way to the billiard room, where he was playing when the clock struck eleven. He threw down his cue at once, though in the middle of the game, and the lights were extinguished in obedience to a curfew law made by himself, to restrain dissipation of this sort.

On the tenth of September, we saw His Majesty under different circumstances. Commodore Kennedy, with many of the officers of the Peacock and Enterprise, paid him an official visit. We were received in a stone or rather coral house, by a chief in a blue military frock coat, who led us to the second story and introduced us into a plainly furnished room. Here we found the king, his sister Naiheanaina, and his two half-sisters, Kinau the governess of Oahu, and Auhea, commonly spoken of by her cognomen, the big-mouthed queen. The king wore a blue coat with two gold epaulets, white pantaloons and vest; and the ladies were in black silk. They received us standing, but in a few minutes seated themselves on a sofa, in front of which stood the Rev. Mr. Bingham as interpreter. A common-place conversation occurred, and a glass of wine was offered.

These feminine chiefs, all of them of Herculean form, had an air which may be styled shabby-genteel, evincing at the same time a desire to comport themselves as became their station; and, considering their opportunities, succeeded remarkably well. At the expiration of twenty minutes we took leave, followed by a number of foreign residents, who had accompanied us.

Kauikeaouli is a son of the famous Tamèhamèha, and brother of the late King Riho'riho. He is genteelly dissipated, but not vicious. Though capable of reading both English and Spanish, his general



knowledge is very limited; his reading, like that of most of his subjects, being merely a mechanical operation. He has probably read very little besides his school books. He was educated under the surveillance of the missionaries, but at the same time influenced by the advice and example of evil-minded strangers, who delighted to thwart the efforts of his pious tutors; and we must not therefore be surprised, that he is not so well educated as he might have been under different circumstances.

A few days after this interview, the Princess Naiheanaina, gave birth to a son, and, in consequence of imprudently indulging in a cold bath, became dangerously ill, and her medical attendant, Mr. Rook, desired me to see her with him. The child lived but a few hours. The public expressed a doubt whether her husband, or her brother, the king, were the father; but in either case the child would have been heir to the throne. It must be borne in mind, that very few years have elapsed since incestuous connexions among the nobles were not considered criminal, because they were common, and even legal; and that Kauikeaouli and Nainheanaina were affianced when young, according to the ancient custom of the nation.

On reaching the gate of the enclosure in which stood the dwelling of the princess, we were obliged to wait until announced, before the sentry would open it. The house, which was a very large one, had several small ones in the vicinity for the accommodation of her household. Beneath a thatched shed at one side of it, were lounging twenty or thirty men and women on newly cut grass. One of these came forward and took our horses. We entered a large apartment, the floor of which was covered with mats, and the thatched roof was lined with the same. The posts and rafters were bare, showing the sinate lashings which held them together. Two female chiefs were seated near a small table covered with red cloth, in the middle of the room, listlessly fanning themselves and smoking short pipes. Small gourds, with a few blades of fresh grass in the bottom of each, were on the table, and used as spittoons.

The king, attired in a short blue military jacket, white pantaloons, and cloth cap of naval pattern, received us, and at once led the way to the apartment of his sister. It was separated from the other by a chintz screen. We found the princess lying upon a soft mattress, which rested on a pile of fine mats, eighteen inches high, and about twelve feet square. A quantity of white tapa-cloth, covered her royal person. Around her were reclining several females gently fanning



her with kahiris\*, assisted by her husband, the young chief Lelehoku, a son of Karaimoku, celebrated as the Wm. Pitt of Hawaii. Several fat chiefs, weighing not less than eighteen stone each, in shirt and pantaloons, were stretched upon the floor, solacing themselves either with pipes or poë. The countenances of Kauikeaouli and Lelehoku betokened a tender solicitude for the princess who was suffering pain.

On a second visit a few days afterwards, we found a change in the decoration of the apartment. Green boughs were suspended from the ceiling to within three or four feet of the bed, and a pink satin counterpane, bordered with black velvet, hung by a cord from its centre so as to fall over the bed in loose folds, somewhat like a tent. The chamber was fragrant with the fresh limbs and flowers; and, altogether, might be compared to a grateful shade beneath some wide branching tree.

After expressing our opinion of the case, various subjects were talked of, and amongst them that of phrenology. The king, who had been told of the unwillingness of the Siamese princes to permit any one to lay hands upon their heads, said that a similar custom had prevailed in the Sandwich islands; and the prejudice was so strong that the roof of a house in which a king resided never could be repaired in case of necessity, because the workmen would be obliged to mount above the king's head. If the roof leaked, the house was deserted, or torn down and built anew upon another site.

One of the big chiefs offered me, in a spoon, some hœ—a paste prepared from yams, in the same manner as pœ from the taro—which he took from a small calabash, into which he had been dipping his fingers. On tasting it, I remarked that it wanted salt. He then presented a saucer of tutui nut mingled with salt, which, added to the hœ, rendered it more palatable. I told him it was very good. “Ah,” said he, smiling, “if you were to reside with us for a time, you would become civilized, and learn to appreciate what is good.”

On taking leave, the princess declared that our visit had been of much service, because our conversation had served to divert her

\* The kahiri is a slight staff about three feet long, having feathers, black, yellow, or red, attached to it for about two-thirds of its length, while the other is covered by numerous rings of polished tortoise shell, so neatly joined as to appear a solid casing. The handle is of ivory, (whale's tooth,) and highly polished. Kahiris were much used as badges of office; and for that purpose made of large size, and borne in procession before the chiefs upon occasions of ceremony.



thoughts from her uncomfortable situation. Before our departure, on both occasions, wine was offered at a table in the apartment.\*

The king accompanied us to the door, and cordially invited us to call whenever we could make it convenient. As we passed, we had leisure to observe the sentry at the gate, and seldom have we seen so perfect a personification of laziness. His musket stood against the wall on one side of the gate, while he rested his person against it on the other, with folded arms and half-closed eyes. This warrior was completely attired in a white shirt and a straw helmet, the rest of the Windsor uniform, in which the king's troops were wont to parade, according to Mr. Stewart, having yielded to the devouring effects of time; or, perhaps, they were in reserve for gala occasions.

An opportunity of seeing and tasting food *à la Hawaii* was afforded us on the 20th of September, by an invitation to a Luäü, or feast, prepared by native cooks, given by the foreign residents to Commodore Kennedy and the officers of the squadron. At three o'clock P. M. I found the company assembled, at Makiki, about a mile from Honolulu, in front of a large house of dry thatch, *à la Oahu*. Fresh cut grass was strewed about where the guests were promenading away the "interminable half hour before dinner." A little beyond were the horses of the company, held by their servants, among which were mingled numbers of idle spectators. In a few moments after my arrival dinner was announced, and we penetrated the hay-stack-shaped edifice. Two long tables, loaded with various viands, stretched along its whole length on each side. The floor was of mats, and the walls and beams and posts were garlanded and bedecked with green boughs and flowers. The British consul, assisted by the American acting vice consul, presided. The number of guests, including the

\* I am informed by Mr. J. K. Townsend, recently returned from the islands, that the Princess fell a victim to her own imprudence in a similar illness, on the 5th of January, 1837. The Hawaiians recognise two deaths; one of the mind or soul, and the other of the body; therefore, the tomb of Naiheanaina informs us that her death took place on the 30th of December, 1836, the day upon which she became delirious. On this occasion, the multitude, in token of their sorrow, knocked out their own front teeth; some only one, some more, in accordance with the ancient manners of the island. The operation is performed by driving a wooden wedge between the front teeth with a stone, while the patient lies stretched upon the ground.

Mr. Townsend intends to give the public the notes of his travels and adventures across the Rocky Mountains, in California, the Society and Sandwich islands, &c.



king, several of his chiefs, many of the most respectable foreign residents, and a Tom-Dick-and-Harry company, might have been seventy-five, all shuffled together at the tables, without observing the least ceremony in regard to rank or place.

The tables and benches were built up for the occasion on the spot, and by some oversight the benches were so weak that several of the guests were nearly overturned. Both were covered with fine white tapa cloth—made by beating the macerated bark of a mulberry tree—and in a *fête champêtre* answered very well the place of a more costly material.

The feast consisted of dogs, poultry, pigs, &c., luäued; that is, after being carefully wrapped in leaves of the *ti* plant, cooked by being buried amidst stones heated for the purpose. They were then served up with boiled taro tops, which are a good substitute for spinach. Meats cooked after this manner, have a slight taste of the *ti* plant, and are very savory. This mode of cooking fish—the mullet particularly, is preferable to any other that I have seen. The Hawaiians take great pains to have fine fish. They take them when small, and convey them from the sea to a pond of salt water, where they are fed for several months; thence they are carried into brackish water, and finally introduced into fresh ponds, where they are carefully tended.

Near my place at table was a fine young dog luäued, the flesh of which was declared to be excellent by all who partook of it. To my palate, its taste was what I can imagine would result from mingling the flavor of pig and lamb, and I did not hesitate to make my dinner of it, in spite of some qualms at the first mouthful. I must confess, when I reflected, the puppy now trussed up before us might have been the affectionate, and frolicsome companion of some Hawaiian fair—they all have pet pigs or puppies—I felt as if dog-eating were only a low grade of cannibalism. What! eat Poor Ponto?—

“——the poor dog, in life the firmest friend,  
The first to welcome, foremost to defend,  
Whose honest heart is still his master's own,  
Who labors, fights, lives, breathes for him alone,  
Unhonored falls, unnoticed all his worth,  
Denied in heaven the soul he held on earth—”

However, the edible dog is not one of your common curs, but a dainty animal, fed exclusively on vegetables, chiefly taro in the form of pöe, and at the the age of two years, is considered a dish wherewith to



regale royalty. Indeed, Kauikeaouli, I suspect, would be always well satisfied to see it before him, in spite of the assertion of Dr. Kidd, that "it is worthy of consideration that the flesh of those animals whose living services we stand hourly in need, as the *horse* and the *dog*, are so unpalatable that we are not tempted to eat them unless in cases of dreadful necessity."\* Has the doctor ever assisted at a luaü, or associated with the trappers upon the prairies of the 'far west?'

The feast won through its phases; toasts and healths were drunk, and about eight o'clock P. M., the field was left in possession of some of my Tom-Dick-and-Harry platter companions, who had gradually imbibed an unusual degree of self-esteem, and were now kicking up their heels to the notes of a gigging fiddle and a crack-voiced clarionet, like so many "jolly tars capering ashore."

We were complimented by this mark of attention from the residents, many of whom must have done violence to their own feelings in being present.

---

## CHAPTER XLIII.

### SKETCHES IN THE SANDWICH ISLANDS.

October, 1836.

SINCE the arrival of the missionaries in 1820, and the publication of "Stewart's Residence," the Hawaiian Islands have attracted a large share of public attention. Various accounts have been given to the world, but they have all been *ex parte* statements. The friends of the missionaries have drawn overwrought pictures of the prosperity and prospects of the islands; while, on the other hand, their opponents charge them with the tardy advancement of the

\* "On the Adaptation of external Nature to the Physical Condition of Man." Bridgewater Treatise.



islanders in social and civil knowledge. Both parties have based their reports on partial facts, and colored them to suit their own views, without that strict observance of full accuracy which is desirable.

In 1831, a former missionary, Mr. Stewart, published an account of a visit to the islands by the U. S. ship Vincennes, which seems to be rather a work of the imagination than a faithful description. All who are acquainted with the author fully acquit him of any intention to deceive, and attribute the unfaithful, though agreeable picture, which his work leaves upon the mind of the reader, to a happy facility of writing and perceiving beauties in common place things, for which he is distinguished. Though we are all ready to accord our praise to the pleasing fictions of a novelist, we expect rigid accuracy from the pen of the divine, and are not disposed to allow him to envelop facts in the glowing language of a poetic fancy. Mr. Stewart talks of fashionable drives; of Windsor uniforms; of the advance of civilization, of the successful efforts of the missionaries, and defends his friend, Mr. Bingham, from an attack made upon him by Captain Kotzebue, in his "New Voyage round the world." The missionaries are now sensibly feeling the injurious effects of the overpraise of this pleasant work. The "Visit to the South Seas" was followed by the "Cruise of the Potomac, by J. N. Reynolds," which is charged with various trifling inaccuracies of description, and sweeping censure of the missionaries, as well as of the foreign residents of Honolulu. Mr. Warriner's account of the same cruise has passed almost unnoticed.

Whether I shall be successful in conveying a clear and correct idea to the reader of the state of these islands I cannot decide; but I feel an honesty of purpose in making the attempt, and will not desist in the middle of the operation in pity for the cries of the patient. The pain necessarily inflicted, in bringing to light the latent disease of the system, is often requisite to its removal, without which we cannot hope to secure a robust and flourishing state of health.

From the time of their arrival, the missionaries have pursued one course and one policy, the propriety and expediency of which have been much questioned. Their plan was to impart to the islanders a knowledge of the doctrines of their own sect, which the islanders were, in a measure, prepared to receive, because they had, of themselves, thrown down the gods, and abandoned the religion of their fathers in 1819. With this view primary schools were established, at which adults and children, of every age and sex, almost constantly attended. They were taught to write, to sing religious songs, and



read tracts and portions of scripture as fast as translated. The number of the schools rapidly increased, and children were more attended to; and within about two years a high school has been established, from which I have seen an atlas, engraved on copper, of a very respectable character. During the first ten years of the mission, religious instruction alone was given; but since, arithmetic, geography, and some other branches have been added to the studies. Not less than one-fifth of the time is now occupied in the study and practice of "sacred harmony." Indeed, the whole system of instruction is so entirely religious in its nature, and so entirely appropriated to the performance of Calvinistic worship, that, thus far, it has proved of less social advantage to the nation than might have been expected.

To the missionaries is due the credit of reducing the language to writing, and of translating both the Old and New Testaments, twenty thousand copies of which are now in circulation, making one copy for every *five individuals* of the population. A gazette, neatly printed at the mission press, is published, under the title of "*KE KUMU HAWAII*,"—the Monitor or Teacher. Four thousand copies are circulated, each receiver paying something, though there is no stated subscription price. Its pages are filled with extracts from the scriptures, scraps of natural history, &c., well calculated to interest those for whom it is intended.

The following report of schools in 1835, is found in one of the numbers.

#### HONOLULU, 1835.

Teachers,	45	
Pupils.	{ Adult male,	194
	{ " female,	404
	{ Male children,	55
	{ Female do.	27
		—
Number of readers,	680	680
" Arithmetic,	448	
" Writing,	405	
" Primer,	258	
	—	
Total number of pupils,		680

At present the mission consists of fifty-eight individuals, exclusive of children. The missionaries are placed in a position entirely above the every-day concerns of the world, and have only to declare



their wants to a fiscal agent of the Board of Missions to have them supplied. In this respect they are entirely independent, and could not be more so, had they fortunes at command. This arrangement is defective, because it abstracts them too much from the world. Would it not be more politic to pay them stated salaries, and thus impose upon them the care of providing for themselves? The expense of the mission might be thus increased, but its object would be better answered; because the missionaries, by dealing with the world, would feel more sensibly the interests of the social community in which they are placed, and meet with frequent opportunities of correcting evils which must now pass unnoticed. I would not give them salaries so large that the business of a missionary should become a profitable profession; but their stipend should be sufficient to enable them to possess a small surplus at the end of the year, to be appropriated to the education of their children, instead of turning them, in infancy almost, as must often be the case under the present system, beggars upon the world, dependent upon its charities. No man would willingly place his children in such a predicament. And it is too much to ask any man to do, for his mere daily bread, and the prospective benefit of yet unborn savages. Those who know the arduous life of the missionary, the perils to which he is often exposed, subjected frequently to scornful vituperation and misrepresentation, will not deny him a trifling reward, which may enable him to fulfil his duty towards his little ones. It should not be put upon the missionary to gratify the ambition of outdoing each other in sustaining privations; rather let him feel gratified with displaying the greatest comfort, or even luxury, if you will, with the most moderate means, and thus become an example to the society wherein he is "the observed of all observers," teaching one of the social advantages of the religion he labors to inculcate. "*Cosa Apostolica es misionar,*" says one of the fathers of the Roman church;—"Cosa Apostolica es misionar, recibiendo el sustento mendigando; mas tambien lo es misionar, proveyendose à si, y à los suyos con el trabajo de sus proprias manos, sin mendigar."\*

Under the present system, from conscientious motives, many missionaries, particularly valetudinarian females, live in want of articles

\* "To serve as a missionary, depending upon alms for sustenance is an apostolic thing; but it is likewise an apostolic thing for one to serve as a missionary, providing for himself and those depending upon him by the labor of his own hands, without begging alms.



absolutely necessary to their comfort, rather than apply for them. The houses of these people present only those appliances, which are common in the houses of the industrious day laborer; and in many instances their food is of the poorest kind.

The missionaries inhibit their children from acquiring the Hawaiian language, because, it is asserted, they can acquire no useful ideas from the natives, while they would be exposed to the injurious effects of constantly hearing grossness of expression. As yet I have heard of no missionary's children acting as assistant teachers in the schools. At an early age they are sent to the United States for education; but none have ever returned.

The labors of the missionaries consist exclusively in preaching the gospel, and teaching schools. They are distributed at fifteen stations, as follows: three on the island of Kauai; four on Oahu; one on Molokai; three on Maui, and four on Hawaii. The mission consists at present of twenty-eight men, and thirty women from the United States. Their maintenance is estimated at five hundred dollars annually for each family, or \$15,000 in the aggregate. Besides this, the buildings, the printing, medical and school departments, cost an additional sum of about \$16,000. To this may be added about \$4,000 annually, for the support of the high school at Lahainaluna: so that the entire annual expense of the Sandwich Island mission will not be less than \$35,000.

At the head of the schools is that at Lahainaluna, of which a very graphic description, by its principal, the Rev. Lorrin Andrews, may be found in the appendix of the "Twenty-sixth Annual Report of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions." (Boston, 1835.) Mr. Andrews appears to be a man of unquestionable and untiring benevolence, and possessed of practical good sense. He has discovered that, in general, the art of reading and writing was among the islanders merely mechanical, and that they have not yet learned to look upon it, only as a means of acquiring knowledge. He has recognised the great principle, that men must doubt and think for themselves before they can become learned; and acts upon it, as may be seen in the report above referred to.

This high school was first formed under a shed, and afterwards taught by Mr. Andrews beneath the canopy of heaven, unsheltered from the blazing rays of a tropical sun for some time, while the school house was yet incomplete. It was begun in 1831, but the foundation of the school was not securely laid before 1834.

The high school of Lahainaluna is on the island of Maui, and con-



tained, in 1835, one hundred and twenty-three pupils. There are three missionaries employed as teachers, one as a printer to the establishment, besides an artisan, (not a missionary,) who receives a salary as superintendent of the manual labor department. Free inquiry is encouraged among the pupils. The branches of education at present attended to, are arithmetic, mental and written, geometry, trigonometry, modern and ancient geography, Scripture chronology, and church history. Some of the pupils attend to composition, grammar, engraving on copper, and other useful arts.

At the station schools taught by the ladies and gentlemen of the mission, there are two thousand one hundred and thirty-five pupils; of which number, five hundred and thirty-five, more than one-fourth, are adults. They receive instruction in the first principles of morality and religion, reading, writing, arithmetic, geography, natural history and psalmody. For those who are learning to sing, a small work of three hundred and sixty pages, containing a gamut, hymns and tunes, has been recently published.

The missionaries instruct six thousand eight hundred and forty Sabbath school pupils. In these, Scripture history, and Christian doctrines and duties are carefully inculcated, and in a more familiar manner than can be done by ordinary preaching. Most of the missionaries attend individually to three schools, and some of them meet bible classes on a week day.

In every district of the Sandwich Islands, both adults and minors, in great numbers, receive instruction by the aid of native teachers, in reading, writing, and the first principles of religion, as expressed in catechisms, tracts, &c. Mr. Bingham, to whom I am indebted for most of my information in relation to the mission, tells me, that the adults do not probably spend more than four hours a week under the eye of their teachers. Those of the native teachers, who are diligent and faithful, receive a trifling compensation from the mission; but their support is mainly derived from the chiefs or headmen.

The adults, generally, who attend school, are not expected to do less in their respective avocations on this account. The primary object of the adult schools taught by natives, is to render the missionary publications, particularly the Scriptures, available to them, by imparting to them the art of reading. Mr. Bingham estimates, that twenty to twenty-five thousand, or about one-fifth of the whole population, give some attention to schools.

Where missionaries preach, an aggregate number of from fifteen



to twenty thousand Hawaiians attend regularly. The largest congregation is at Honolulu, where the average attendance is about two thousand. Since 1825, the number admitted into the church, is one thousand and seventy-eight; of which two hundred and sixty-six belong to Honolulu.

As collateral with the instruction communicated by the above system, the missionaries have endeavored to encourage the people in acquiring some of the mechanic arts; as those of the carpenter, mason, turner, tailor, braider of hats, &c. A few have been taught to spin, knit, and weave.

The printing establishment of the mission is well conducted. The whole business of printing, composing, pressing, folding, binding, is performed by natives. The number generally employed is thirty. The nature and extent of their publications may be found in the twenty-sixth annual report already referred to. The mechanical execution of those works which I saw here, is equal to what is termed "common work," in the United States.

There is also at Honolulu, a charity school for the instruction of half-caste children, supported by donations from foreign residents. I visited it, and one of the mission schools; and I am sorry to say I was disappointed, not that there was any unusual deficiency on the part of the teachers or pupils; but, because I had formed an over estimate of them from reading various reports of their condition. They are probably equal to the commonest primary schools in the United States.

I have thought these details will be interesting to those benevolent individuals in our country, who contribute \$35,000 annually, for the purpose of diffusing general and christian knowledge to the inhabitants of the Sandwich Islands, and perhaps all may be satisfied, that every effort is made to disburse this money in the most advantageous manner for attaining the objects of the missionary society and its friends. But, with proper deference to older and wiser heads, I believe a strict investigation would show, that the same means might be made to achieve greater ends—I mean in temporal affairs; for the government of the islands is, in all respects, the same that it was the day on which the missionaries landed.

Exclusive of Roman Catholics, Quakers, and Jews, the number of religious ministers or preachers in the United States, is stated, in a volume entitled "Protestant Jesuitism," at 12,670 of various sects. Let us estimate the ministers of all denominations at 14,000, in the United States, and the population at 14,000,000, and we have one



teacher of religion for every fourteen thousand of our population; while in the Sandwich Islands, there are twenty-eight preachers, in a population of 108,393, or one to each number of 3,871 individuals, including infants. Yet the missionaries have made requisition for 13 more, besides 21 lay teachers, and two physicians; which, on the most moderate estimate, will add ten thousand dollars to the annual expense.

If forty of these sixty-four teachers of religious doctrine and elementary education were skilful mechanics, and agriculturists, possessed of good hard sense, a moderate capital and the generous benevolence of the missionary, they would do more in ten years, towards ameliorating the condition of the islanders, by teaching their several arts, by their moral deportment, and the example of the thrift which must crown their industry, than an army of twenty thousand preachers, devoted exclusively to religious pursuits, could possibly effect in double the time. It is questionable whether the doctrine of christianity alone is capable of leading a barbarous people to a condition which we might call civilization. The Hawaiians, as a nation, may be said to be christianized, but those who have visited the islands will hardly assert they are also civilized; and I doubt whether they ever will be under the present system. The rapidity of their civilization depends upon their improvement, in agriculture, the mechanic arts, and in political government, which will furnish in abundance the sources of commerce, the great civilizer of mankind; and when religion is added to chasten all, the condition of the people will be such as to enable them to enjoy the greatest possible happiness in this world, while it promises no less in that which is to come.

Those who are interested in the Sandwich Island mission, have heard, that some Roman Catholic christians attempted to establish a mission of their sect at the islands, and were expelled, as has been asserted, by the advice of those missionaries already there, which charge they pronounce to be untrue. I would let this question sleep, did I not feel that the public, and the friends of foreign missions who pay for their support, have a right to know the history of the matter, drawn from the most authentic sources on the spot.

Three missionaries, Mr. Batchelot, from France, Mr. Short, from Ireland, and Mr. Murphy, from the Isle of France, arrived at Oahu, with the purpose of establishing a Roman Catholic mission; and while they remained, they labored to this end, and gained numerous followers. The chiefs observed, their forms of worship differed from those of the Calvinistic christians already settled there, and applied to them to know who were of the true religion. As a matter of course, they



were informed the Calvinists were the true worshippers. "Then," said the chiefs, "these new comers must go away, because we do not want two religions, and we are satisfied with our old teachers." "About this time," says a leading member of the mission, in a letter to me, replying to several questions in relation to the mission, "About this time the people were reminded of the sanguinary character of the power that had attempted to exterminate protestants by the bayonet, the inquisition and fire," and it was thus insinuated, that the course of the Roman Catholics, should they remain, would be likely to be marked by blood. But applications of this nature were made by "several English gentlemen;" whether these were interested in the protestant mission is not stated. "A few historical facts, such as are alluded to in a letter, addressed by Dr. Jones King, of Greece, to his friends in Palestine, as reasons why he could not be a Roman Catholic, were not very favorable recommendations of the true sons of Rome, as propagators of the *benevolent and pacific gospel of grace*." This letter, which, to use the expression of one of the mission, arrived at Oahu, 'just in the nick of time,' was speedily translated, printed and circulated amongst the chiefs and people.

Under the excitement, thus produced, upon their fallow minds, the chiefs imperatively ordered the Roman Catholics to leave the islands. They replied, that they were ready to go, but the means of departure were not at hand. Under these circumstances, the chiefs fitted out a vessel, put the three obnoxious missionaries on board, and ordered the commander to land them at the nearest Roman Catholic port. This was San Pedro, on the coast of California, a miserable waste of sand, many leagues distant from any considerable population. During the voyage, they were so well treated by the captain, that they preferred no complaint against him.

Several of their converts were seized and imprisoned in the fort, "not for opinion's sake, but because when ordered to cease worshipping according to the precepts of the Roman church, they refused to obey, and were therefore punished for insubordination and disrespect to their chiefs." Such was the explanation offered, when the protestant missionaries declared, that it was improper to punish or persecute men on account of the religious opinion they might entertain.

The above is the substance of the history of the expulsion of the Roman Catholic missionaries. Were the protestants instrumental in their expulsion? The missionaries positively declare, that they never advised it directly, or had any direct agency in it. But a leading member of the mission told me, he had no doubt, but



the answers which he gave to questions on the subject by the chiefs, had very considerable influence upon their determination. From all the information I was able to collect upon this subject, it is clear to my mind, that the missionaries embraced every opportunity to state the cruelties of the religious wars of by-gone days, and present the Roman Catholics in the hideous aspect in which they themselves view them, and, carefully abstaining from a declaration of what must have been their secret wishes, pursued the *laissez aller* system of policy, which finally resulted in the expulsion of the catholics.

The protestants, not only those connected with this mission nearly or remotely, but also many in the United States, and Europe, regard all those of the Roman faith with feelings of reproach, or, at best, with a sort of contemptuous pity. On one occasion at Oahu, hearing a lady express herself of the catholics, in terms of horror, I asked, "How do you know, madam, that you are not speaking in the presence of a Roman Catholic?"

"Oh! I am sure, I am not; for no sensible man can be a Roman Catholic?"

In addition to this instance of prejudice, I beg to quote the following passages from the letter already referred to.

"They (the Catholics) were regarded by the people as French worshippers of images, and servants of the Pope of Rome, and not propagators of the true gospel." Whence did the islanders, who derive their religious information entirely from the missionaries, obtain such a notion, if not from their protestant teachers? Whence could they learn any thing of France or Frenchmen, of Rome, of her Pontiff, places and people, they never before had occasion to hear of, except from the same source?

"We could not condemn the rulers for exercising a natural and just right, in excluding unwelcome strangers, where they had reason to suspect their pursuits would prove a national calamity. Nor could we honestly recommend the introduction of Romanism, or any other system which *authorizes* and *requires* punishment to be inflicted by the civil power on subjects for any religious opinions they may hold, and which those in power claim the right to pronounce heresy."

I should be glad to be informed where such a system exists. Do the Romanists in France, in Great Britain, in Spain, or Mexico, or in any one of the Roman Catholic countries of South America, "authorize and require" of their "respective governments," punishment to be inflicted by the civil power on the subjects for any religious opinions they may hold?"



"We cannot, of course, invite or welcome any who teach intolerance and persecution as a *sine qua non* to salvation; nor any who are sworn to aim at the subversion of every power that does not bow to Rome." Is it not melancholy that a teacher of the enlightened truths of christianity should believe such an assertion to be true, even after making it himself? This short sentence demonstrates how very far behind the knowledge and spirit of the age the gentleman is, and shows his unfitness, on this account, to be a leader in the councils of people just emerging from barbarism.

"But we hold the rights of conscience inviolable, as protestants, and as believers in the completeness and sufficiency of the Bible as our guide. On this rock we take our stand, believing it to be immovable. Let the people be well taught to *read* and *love* and *obey* the Bible, then all is well, all is safe. The Lion of Romanism would then eat straw like the ox, and no longer war for prey, or find delight in blood. Let the Bible be every where known and followed, and it is of little consequence who publishes it!"

Thus speaks a distinguished leader of the mission, who denies having interfered or told the chiefs to expel the catholics! I am convinced, that the missionaries were the cause of the expulsion of the three Roman catholics named; and I think, that few persons who have followed me thus far, can fail to arrive at a similar conclusion. Yet at the moment of finding them guilty of this charge, I believe they pursued a wise and justifiable policy, because the introduction of various religious sects might have induced the islanders, not much skilled in polemics, to reject christianity altogether.\*

After comparing the state of the islands, as it was twenty years ago, with their present condition, it will be generally acknowledged that the missionaries have exercised a very beneficial influence upon the Hawaiians. They may now be called a christian nation. There is, however, I am told, one chief on the island of Oahu, who still adheres to the idols and worship of former times. The faults of the missionaries are those of omission, and not of commission. They have christianized without civilizing the natives. In fear of popular opinion, they stood aloof, and have allowed the rulers to continue as ignorant of the art of government as they were on the day of their arrival. They overlook the fact, that the Bible neither teaches political economy nor agriculture. Nor have they ever considered any

\* A letter, dated 5th of May, 1837, informs me, that the same catholic missionaries were again at Honolulu, but under orders from the chiefs to depart.



question in regard to its expediency; governed, perhaps, under the erroneous idea, that their calling required them to forbear all interference that did not tend to religious teaching; or, they may have stood aloof under the fear of being accused of ambition to secure to themselves political importance and influence in the nation. But I never could suspect them of designs of this nature.

I regret to speak of the missionaries in any other than terms of most unqualified respect and praise; and if my remarks fall harshly, I have the consolation of feeling, they are uttered with no purpose of wounding, but because I believe them to be true, and because I believe the truth being told, may have a bearing upon the prospective good of the islands.

The missionaries stationed at the Sandwich Islands as a class, are inferior to all those whom it has been our fortune to meet at other stations during the cruise. Many of them are far behind the age in which they live, deficient in general knowledge, and I think I can trace in them more of the lineaments of the Mucklewraths and Poundtexts of by-gone days, than is desirable in divines of the nineteenth century. Belonging to a sect, many of whose members, by some unusual combination of circumstances, have been made to reflect and consequently change their manner of life suddenly, they have quitted their workshops to expound the scriptures; fancying all to be as bad as they themselves were previous to conversion, they go zealously to the work, and, feeling the deep importance of their subject, deal damnation and destruction, in a peculiar slang, to all whose opinions and course of life differ from their own. This is no sketch of fancy; and we can only lament, there is no power to shield the pulpit from the vulgar spoutings of unlettered ignorance. It is heard in the United States, and I have no doubt, but the "Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions" sends abroad the best they have at command. In some rare instances, we find combined in the person of the missionary polished manners, knowledge of the world, unimpeachable piety, and a mind firm in solid learning, and graced by various acquisitions of elegant literature. But it unfortunately happens, that such men have generally held the subordinate and least distinguished places in the missions, doomed to be ruled by the majority, and labor in the detail of systems which their intelligence will not approve. I might mention such a one, but I must not individualize.

However useful *strong* preachers may be in producing strong effects upon vulgar minds, they are certainly not better adapted than those



of refined and elegant scholarship, to teach an ignorant people the complicated science of social government.

Mr. Reynolds, in the "Voyage of the Potomac," has given a hymn in the Hawaiian language, with an English version, which he states to be a translation of the celebrated missionary hymn by Bishop Heber. Since the publication of Mr. Reynolds' work, the hymn has been printed at the mission press, as follows:—

### HAWAIIAN MISSIONARY HYMN.

AN IMITATION OF BISHOP HEBER.

Aloha ko na mauna,  
I paa mau i ka hau,  
A me ko Aitiopa,  
Ko Inia me Makao,  
Na muliwai kahiko,  
Na moku, na papu;  
Kii mai ko laila pio,  
I ola no lakou.

Auwe na lahuiaina  
O na akua e!  
Ka *make* o na aina  
I kulou i ke kii!  
Ko Aferika *pouli*!  
Ko Asia *naaupo*!  
Ko Mahomeda *pule*!  
Ko Roma *hewa hou*!

Pehea la ke hoole  
Kakou i aoia mai  
I kanaka pouli,  
Ia lama e ola'i?—  
KE OLA! O KE OLA!  
Hoolaha ae kakou,  
I lohe i ka Mesia,  
A e huli ko ke ao.

E lawe e na makani,  
I kana olelo mau;  
I uhi kona nani  
I ka honua a pau—  
E hoi hou mai ka Alana,  
I make no makou,  
Ka Mo'i ola mana,  
Ke Lii pomaikai mau.

Compassion for the people,  
Of mountains bound with frost,  
The tribes of Ethiopia,  
India and China's coast,  
And those of ancient rivers,  
And all the isles and plains,  
Whose captives seek our succor,  
To free them from their chains.

Alas, for the vast regions,  
Which strange gods still retain!  
The *ruin* of the nations  
That bow to idols vain!  
For Africa's deep *darkness*!  
And Asia's *moral gloom*!  
The *worship* of Mohammed!  
The dire *relapse* of Rome!

How then, shall we, enlightened,  
Ungratefully deny,  
To men who are benighted,  
The torch of Life's blessed ray?—  
SALVATION! O SALVATION!  
We'll publish all abroad,  
That hearing of Messiah,  
The world may turn to God.

Far, bear ye winds the story  
Of His Eternal truth;  
That soon Jehovah's glory  
May cover all the earth—  
Return, our great Oblation,  
That once for us, was slain,  
The risen, mighty Sovereign,  
For ever blest, to reign.



The insertion of the above hymn will serve as a specimen of the language, and, at the same time, to disprove the charge of plagiarism indirectly alleged against the missionaries in the faulty version published in the work referred to.

The views of the missionaries and foreign residents at Honolulu, on subjects of worldly interest, are very much at variance; and there are several of the latter, (whose opinions, however, are worthy of no respect,) who speak in the most reproachful terms of these christian teachers. Yet, in spite of all the complaints against them, the missionaries should be cherished, because they aim at the well being of the islands, both temporally and eternally, and if they draw the restrictive cord too tight, it is not through malicious intent.

The trading community, in the past few years, has increased rapidly, both in number and respectability; and, for its extent, contains comparatively few disreputable people. We had every reason to be gratified by the hospitality and kindness extended us while here by all parties, and did not leave without regret.

---

## CHAPTER XLIV.

### SKETCHES IN THE SANDWICH ISLANDS.

*October, 1836.*

THE islands, named in honor of his patron, the Earl of Sandwich, by their discoverer, Captain Cook, stretch in a north-westerly and south-easterly direction, and lie between  $18^{\circ} 50'$  and  $22^{\circ} 20'$  of north latitude, and between  $154^{\circ} 53'$  and  $160^{\circ} 15'$  longitude west from Greenwich. Though first revealed to the christian world by Captain Cook, in 1778, it is more than probable they were known to the Spaniards, who traversed the Pacific, between the Philippines and Acapulco, long before that period; and we are told that a Spaniard, Juan Gaytan, visited them in the year 1600, and named them *Islas de la Mesa*; he describes them as situated in about the twentieth degree of north latitude, and about one thousand leagues west of the



meridian of San Blas;\* and if we bear in mind the imperfect state of navigation at that period, we must conclude the "Islas de la Mesa" and the Sandwich Islands to be one and the same. Besides, the islanders have a tradition of vessels having been wrecked upon their shores, previous to the arrival of Captain Cook, and from the description they give of the costume, and other particulars relating to the strangers thus thrown among them, they could have been no other than Europeans. Nor is it probable that ships should sail directly in their track, for two hundred years, without falling in with them. It is pretty satisfactorily ascertained, that Japanese junks were more than once stranded, not only upon the Sandwich Islands, but also on the coast of California; and we have one very recent instance in the case of the Japanese at present residing with the Rev. Mr. Gutzlaff, at Macao. Have these facts any bearing upon the very interesting question of the origin of the aboriginal inhabitants of the islands, and of America?

The islands are ten in number, and are larger than the Society, or any other group of islands in the Pacific Ocean. They are all, unquestionably, of volcanic origin. The island of Hawaii contains the largest active crater in the world; the circumference of which, according to the estimate of Mr. Ellis, (*Polynesian Researches*), is not less than six miles. The highest points on Hawaii, as recently determined by Mr. Daniel Douglas, (who was lately killed by falling into a bullock pit,) are Mouna Kea and Mouna Roa; the former is 13,764, and the latter 13,430 feet above the level of the sea. Though earthquakes are here common, they are very rarely severe.

Of the ten islands, seven are inhabited. In 1836, their population was as follows:—

HAWAII,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	39,193
OAHU,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	27,798
MAUI,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	24,195
KAUAI, OF ATUI,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	9,927
MOLOKAI,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	6,000
LANAI,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	1,200
KAHOOLAWE,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	80
									<hr/>
Total population of Sandwich Isles in 1836,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	108,393
Total population in 1832,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	129,814
									<hr/>
Decrease in four years,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	21,421

\* Noticias de la provincia de Californias, en tres cartas de un Sacerdote Reli-



The relative number of births and deaths may be estimated from the following statements, copied from the pages of the "Ke Kumu Hawaii."

In the province, or district, of Wailua (Oahu) the deaths for the year ending July, 1835, were 136, and the births 45. The population of this district was,

In 1831,	-	-	-	-	-	-	2,640
In 1835,	-	-	-	-	-	-	2,415
							<hr/>
Decrease in 4 years,	-	-	-	-	-	-	225

The marriages in this district, according to the christian form, in 1834, were 29; and in the whole group of islands 1,125. In 1835, the missionaries, at all the stations collectively, solemnized 1,390 marriages. These are exclusive of those by the Rev. I. Diell, the seamen's chaplain, who marries, annually, a few foreigners to native women. In some cases the ceremony is performed by the chiefs.

In the district of Eva (Oahu) the population was,

In 1831,	-	-	-	-	-	-	4,015
In 1835,	-	-	-	-	-	-	3,423
							<hr/>
Decrease in four years,	-	-	-	-	-	-	592

In the district of Waianae, (Oahu,) the population was,

In 1831,	-	-	-	-	-	-	1,868
In 1835,	-	-	-	-	-	-	1,654
							<hr/>
Decrease in four years,	-	-	-	-	-	-	214

In the district of Kauai, (Kauai,) the deaths in the year 1835 were 164, and the births 80, in a population of 8,934.

In the district of Kohala, (Hawaii,) the population was

In 1832,	-	-	-	-	-	-	8,679
In 1836,	-	-	-	-	-	-	6,175
							<hr/>
Decrease in four years,	-	-	-	-	-	-	2,504

gioso, Hijo del convento de Predicadores de Valencia, à un Amigo Suyo—Valencia, 1794.

The ancient Spanish charts describe islands in the same latitude, but different longitude, which are called Ulloa, Desgraciada, Mira, and Monge. See, Establecimientos Ultramarinos.



In the district of Hamakua, (Hawaii,) the population was,

In 1832,	-	-	-	-	-	-	4,786
In 1836,	-	-	-	-	-	-	4,015
							<hr/>
Decrease in four years,	-	-	-	-	-	-	771

From these data, allowing for the inaccuracy to which they are liable, we may estimate, that the births are to the deaths as one to two, and the decrease of the total population at the rate of six per centum in four years, or one and a half per cent. per annum. The decrease does not appear to be confined to one island or to one district, but to prevail, pretty equally, in the whole group.

If these data be correct, and we have every reason to believe they are, and no means be taken to arrest this alarming decrease, it is clear, the Sandwich islands, in the course of time, must be entirely depopulated, though centuries must elapse before the last man of the nation expires.

We naturally ask what are the causes of this decrease of population, in a salubrious climate, where the people have never been afflicted by any desolating epidemic? It is difficult, if not impossible, to give a definite answer to this question, though we may offer something which may assist in its solution.

It is clear, that this decrease is not owing to any one cause, and may, therefore, be attributed, with more propriety, to the joint effects of several causes. Infanticide, intemperance, bad living, change in social habits, the state of political oppression, and, perhaps, we may add, civilization; for it has been remarked that savage tribes fall before the march of improvement, in spite of every caution in feeding and lodging. Every one of these causes must operate upon the physical condition, and consequently affect production.

It is not doubted, that the population has been decreasing ever since the discovery of the islands by Captain Cook; and perhaps at a more rapid rate, than since the introduction of christianity; though we have no positive data by which to verify such a supposition. Previous to the establishment of the missionaries in the islands, added to the causes of depopulation already named, were human sacrifices to the gods, and cruel and exterminating wars; and child-murder was practised to a great extent. As far as these were concerned in the depopulation, the efforts of the missionaries, we must suppose, would positively check it.

Infanticide was perpetrated upon infants from the fourth or fifth



month of utero-gestation, until they had attained the age of one or even two years. The causes alleged by the mother for this unchristian act, were either the trouble of nursing, or that they were annoyed by their offspring's cries. If a mother found her infant fretful, instead of soothing it with a mother's fond and tender caress, she forced a piece of tapa-cloth into its throat to stifle complaint, and then buried it alive, not unfrequently within the house, and close to the mat upon which she slept. The act was committed with indifference and without any hesitation or misgiving.\* How can we reconcile to these facts, the notion that love of offspring is innate and necessary to the human breast? The love for children results from the education of the parents in the first place, and from their intimate association with them in the second. From longer and closer intimacy with her children, the love of the mother is much more tender and enduring than that of the father, and increases with their age. Hence it is, the death of an infant a few days old, is a trifling loss to the parent, when compared with that of a prattling child, or of a youth just verging into maturity. In this way, too, we may account for the fact, that fathers often manifest a total indifference towards illegitimate offspring.

Infanticide is still practised, but not to the same extent as formerly, nor is the deed committed openly. At the imminent peril of the mother, children are now destroyed about the fourth or fifth month of utero-gestation, almost entirely in cases of illegitimacy, and but very rarely after birth. Infanticide has been made a crime by the civil law; and it is to be hoped, that these people will soon feel it to be an offence, equally against social and moral rectitude, as well as detrimental to their political condition.

The history of infanticide in these islands, shows a progress in the sense of right and wrong. In their remote time, and until within a few years, infanticide was not a crime, nor did it draw reproach or disapprobation upon the mother. Consequently, the life of the child was taken, and neither the mother nor any of her friends perceived any thing right or wrong in the act, which was followed by no feelings of remorse, or dread of punishment. The act brought no dishonor, and its memory never excited a pang. Unlike the deluded victim of the seducer in civilized life, the Hawaiian mother is never haunted by the spirit of her murdered babe. She perpetrates the deed, uninterrupted by an agonizing contention of love and honor in

\* Polynesian Researches by William Ellis. Vol. iv. London, 1831.



her breast.\* This sense, then, of right and wrong, cannot be innate, or it must be very weak, where the mother prefers committing murder, to bearing the petty annoyance of a crying child. This sense of right and wrong is rather a sense of safety and of danger, and results from the love of life and its pleasures, or the instinctive movement of a perceptive intelligence towards self-preservation. This instinct is common to man and animals.

"It is an undeniable fact," says M. Cousin, "that when we have done right or wrong, when we have obeyed the law of justice or have broken it, we judge that we merit reward or punishment. It is, moreover, a fact that we do indeed receive reward or punishment: 1. In the approbation of conscience or in the bitterness of remorse: 2. In the esteem or censure of our fellow-men, who, themselves moral beings, judge also of good and bad as we do, and, like us, judge that right and wrong merit reward and punishment; and who do punish and reward according to the nature of our actions, sometimes by the moral sentence of their esteem or blame, sometimes by physical punishments and rewards, which positive laws, the legitimate interpreter of the *law of nature*, hold ready for actions: 3. And finally, if we raise our thoughts beyond this world, if we conceive of God as we ought, not only as the Author of the physical world, but as the Father of the moral world, as the very substance of good, and of the moral law, we cannot but conceive that God ought also to hold ready rewards and punishments for those who have fulfilled or broken the law."†

\* She has no thought like this:—

"Oh! Tu, que sin nacer moriste;  
Confusa union del ser y de la nada,  
Infausta aborto; prole aun mal formado,  
Que del ser y no ser, despójo fuiste;  
Tu que de un crimen vida recibiste,  
Y de otro crimen, muerte acelerada—  
De Amor, obra funesta y desgraciada;  
De Honor victima, cruel, infausta y triste—  
Deja el susto calmar, que me intimida:  
No clames à mi pecho, filicida;  
Dos tyranos juzgáron de tu suerte;  
Amor, contra el Honor, te diò la vida,  
Y Honor, contra el Amor, te da la muerte."

† Cousin's Elements of Psychology, by C. S. Henry.



This sense of right and wrong is not innate, and does not depend upon a *law of nature*; it is rather a sense of safety and of danger, and depends upon, and always has reference to special codes of law. It was in consequence of the special law or injunction not to eat the apple, that Adam and Eve felt the sense of wrong and hid themselves to avoid the infliction of punishment; for it is fair to presume, that previous to the injunction not to do it, they might have eaten the apple without emotion of any kind. There was nothing intrinsically wrong in eating the apple; it was the law which made it so. It is not the sense of wrong that suggests stealth to the thief or murderer, but the instinct of self-preservation which teaches him to avoid detection to escape the punishment of the law. Give him sufficient force and take away the law, and he will enact his deeds openly. Where there is no law, physical or moral, there can be no such thing as merit or demerit; and of course, no place for reward or punishment, nor ground for peace of conscience or the pains of remorse. Do the Dayaks of Borneo think they are doing wrong when they hunt their fellow men to obtain human heads wherewith to court their sweethearts? Do the Chinese women feel they are doing wrong when they perpetrate infanticide? Does the Turk think he is doing wrong when he cozens the Christian? Do cannibals feel they are doing wrong when they feed on human flesh? To each and all of these questions the answer is, No! And the reason why these acts do not bring with them a sense of wrong, is that with those people there are no laws, either physical or moral, against them. The same was also true of the Sandwich Islanders, in respect to infanticide, previous to the institution of the law against it; but since its institution, the act of child murder is accompanied by a sense of wrong, or rather a sense of danger, a fear of punishment; and hence it is, the deed is no longer committed openly. Indeed, infanticide and adult murder, are opposed only in those communities whose intelligence has pointed out the principle of common good, and where the preservation of society and the increase of the population are recognised as political desiderata. It is a mistake, to suppose that there is a code of moral or physical laws universally applicable to the human race in its present condition, to explain the phenomena of human nature, unless we except that of self-preservation. Ideas of duty, and the consciences of men, depend upon education, or upon the manners and customs of the people amongst whom their first lot or birth may be cast. The Hindoo wife perishes upon the same funeral pile that consumes the dead body of her husband; Mohammedans who



break the law of their prophet, are as much conscience-stricken, feel as much remorse as Christians or believers in other religious creeds, when they transgress the rules and precepts of their respective faiths.

It is clear that what M. Cousin states as an 'undeniable fact,' in the above quotation, is only partially so; and is only true of christians and men who are reared in christian communities.

But, to return from this digression to the consideration of other causes of decrease of the population: Intemperance in diet and the abusive use of ardent spirits, which is their first acquisition from intercourse with christian strangers, affecting as it does, very considerably, both production and duration, by inducing premature exhaustion of the vital forces, and consequently a host of active diseases, must powerfully oppose the increase of population. The fact is so well known, that it requires neither proof nor illustration.

When we see the manner in which many of the Hawaiians live, we wonder how it is possible for human beings thus fed or rather fasted, thus lodged and not clothed, nor sheltered either from sunshine or rain, or chilling blasts of the mountain winds; we wonder how they have resisted in their childhood, the causes of destruction, amidst which they first see the light, and in spite of them not only arrive at adult age, but even live to a comfortable senectitude. In the valley of Ma-noa, I saw several families residing on spots of earth, sheltered from the damp ground and vicissitudes of the weather, by a hovel of mats, just large enough for them to crawl into. Yet in this, as in all the valleys, there are showers almost daily, and the atmosphere is so cool that Europeans find blankets not only bearable but necessary. The food of these natives consists almost exclusively of taro, and when they occasionally get a little meat or fish, they esteem themselves fortunate.

A change has taken place in certain customs, which must have influenced the physical development of the islanders. I allude to the variety of athletic exercises, such as swimming, with or without the surf-board, dancing, wrestling, throwing the javalin, &c., all of which games, being in opposition to the severe tenets of Calvinism, have been suppressed, without the substitution of other pursuits, to fill up the time. Whether sinful or not, will depend upon the religious code by which they are measured. But let this be as it may, these exercises and games affect the health and longevity of the people, because, being deprived of these sports, they labor only to obtain food, which may be two days in the week, and having no mental relaxa-



tion, the remainder of the time is devoted to sleeping, or drinking and other vicious practices. It must be borne in mind, that we are speaking of people whose blood has always moved beneath a tropic sun, from their remotest ancestry to the present time. They cannot endure the same uninterrupted and incessant labor as Europeans or Americans, without a very much greater wear and tear; and though capable of very severe toil and great physical achievement, it is only for a short time together, and is generally followed by long periods of rest. Within the tropics, the inhabitants require longer periods of relaxation, both from mental and physical employment, than in temperate climates; and there are few who have not heard of the dangers which environ those of high latitudes, who reside in, or even visit the equatorial regions of the earth. Now, simply desisting from labor is not rest; particularly in young subjects; people, to enjoy life, require more; they want amusement, without which they flag, the spirits droop, disease follows, and they drag on a miserable, misanthropic existence till death closes the scene. The practice in the middle and northern sections of our country, must not be taken as a rule, for there is perhaps no civilized people on earth, with the same opportunities, who spend so little time in sports and amusements. They all fix upon a time to come for enjoyment, which generally arrives when the vivacity and elasticity of mind and body have already disappeared, and the organism is no longer sensible to pleasure.

Would these games have been suppressed had the missionaries never arrived at the islands? It is fair to presume that they would have continued in use. Can the missionaries be fairly charged with suppressing these games? I believe they deny having done so. But they write and publicly express their opinions, and state these sports to be expressly against the laws of God, and by a succession of reasoning, which may be readily traced, impress upon the minds of the chiefs and others, the idea that all who practise them, secure to themselves the displeasure of offended heaven. Then the chiefs from a spontaneous benevolence, at once interrupt customs so hazardous to their vassals.

On one occasion in Honolulu, I was present at a *soirée* where several persons of the mission were in company with ten or eleven ladies, and a number of gentlemen, many of them officers of our little squadron. A few songs were sung accompanied by the piano. Dancing was proposed by some of the young persons, and presently one of the officers managed to obtain a violin. The bow was drawn sportively across the strings outside of the door, to announce the 'glad tidings.'



The missionaries took the alarm, and, with all regard to decorum, took a speedy leave. Of course there was no impropriety in this. The party continued dancing till a late hour, and none of us had reason to complain of the pleasures of the evening. A few days afterwards, we were informed through a respectable native woman, who speaks English, that one of the missionaries took occasion to allude to this party in his sermon, in which he set forth the sin of dancing, and rebuked all such pastimes, and concluded by reminding his hearers that they never saw the missionaries do such things. It is offered as an apology for alluding to the subject from the pulpit, that a number of natives were looking on from outside, and the missionaries apprehended their own characters for consistency might suffer from being seen in such festive company.

That the missionaries are correct according to their own consciences and the tenets of their faith, I presume no one will deny; and they of course believe they are acting for the general good; but some will think, nevertheless, that such a course is highly ill-judged and impolitic, as applied to the social condition and worldly prosperity of the nation, as well as opposed to the advancement of civil and political knowledge among the people and their rulers.

A glance at the political government of the islands will be sufficient to show under what oppression the common people live.

"The Hawaiian system of government," says Mr. Ellis, "whether derived from the country whence the first settlers emigrated, or established by warlike chieftains in a subsequent period of their history, as an expedient to secure conquests, to command the services of their tenants on occasions of war, and to perpetuate the influence which military prowess or success in the first instance had given them, exhibits, in its decided monarchical character, the hereditary descent of rank and office, and other distinguishing features, considerable advances from a state of barbarism, and warrants the conclusion that they have been an organized community for many generations. But whatever antiquity their system may possess, they have made but little progress in the art of good government. The well-being of the subject seems to have been rarely regarded by the rulers, who appear to have considered the lower orders in general as a kind of property, to be employed only in promoting the interests of their superiors; and the ardent love of wealth, which an acquaintance with the productions of foreign countries has excited in most of the chiefs, has not improved the condition of the people. Industry receives no encouragement; and even those whom natural energy of character would



induce to cultivate a larger portion of land than was absolutely necessary for their bare subsistence, are deterred from the attempt by the apprehension of thereby exposing themselves to the rapacity of avaricious or necessitous chiefs. Nothing can be more detrimental to the true interests of the chiefs, and the civilization and happiness of the people, than the abject dependence of the latter, the uncertain tenure of lands, the exactions of the chiefs, and the restrictions on the trade with the shipping which they impose."

The government is a pure hereditary despotism, the will of the monarch in all cases being the law. Heirship is not confined to the male line, but in most instances female descent gives rank, which was explained to Mr. Canning by the late king Riho'riho when in England: he stated, that in the Sandwich Islands, a man never certainly knew who was his father; but, in regard to his mother, doubts seldom existed.

The system of government in its details is complex. There is no written code; though a few of the laws have been lately published. At the market the prices of every thing are fixed by the chiefs, who require one half of the receipts of the common people as their own perquisite. Their exactions upon the produce of the soil is in an equal ratio; so that a day laborer, who obtains one or two days' employment in the week, is equally well off with him who manages a little farm. Besides paying these exactions, the common people are obliged to render man-service to the king, five days in fourteen. There is also a poll tax, levied at a dollar for every man; a half dollar for every woman, and a quarter of a dollar for every child four feet high.

The soil is recognised to be the sole property of the king. It was divided out amongst the chief warriors at the time of the conquest, and for its use they pay a tax in produce; but at the will of the king they may be deprived of their possessions at any moment. No measure of land has yet been established, but districts or portions of soil are marked by natural boundaries. In the same way each island has a governor who pays the king an annual contribution in produce and dollars.

Such then are the influences combined against the increase of the population of these islands, which, under a different state of things, might become a seat of arts and of learning, and crowded with opulent people. Their position is very favorable for trade. Lying in the route between the western coasts of America and China, they have become an entrepôt for merchant vessels, and the fur traders of the north-west coast of America, as well as a place of refreshment for



the great American whale fleet of the Pacific. When the laws shall be so modified as to encourage labor, and the soil shall be put under cultivation, large crops of sugar, cotton, coffee, tobacco and silk will form the staples of a valuable commerce.

It is difficult to estimate the value of the present trade of the islands. The capital constantly changing hands may be annually \$300,000 dollars, and always at an advance of from one to two hundred per cent. Bills of exchange either on England or the United States, are at a discount of from fifteen to twenty per cent.

The value of real estate owned at Honolulu by the Americans and English is estimated at \$100,000; and the whole amount of property of every description exclusive of shipping, thus owned, is not less than half a million of dollars, of which four-fifths are American.

There are nearly two thousand tons of shipping owned by the foreign residents of Oahu, said to be worth \$90,000.

In the year 1834, 95 American whale ships, 17 English whale ships, and 36 merchant vessels visited the port of Honolulu. In 1835, the number of whale ships was 72, and that of the merchant vessels 36.

#### STATEMENT OF IMPORTS AT HONOLULU, FOR THE YEARS 1834 AND 1835.

From the United States, in merchant vessels,	\$162,000
Chile and Peru, " "	56,000
England and America, in whale ships,	40,000
	<hr/> \$258,000
Consisting of bleached and unbleached, and blue cotton cloth, prints, chintz, hardware, sheathing copper, cordage, canvass, naval stores, paints, iron, bread, salted provisions, brandy, rum, wines, gin, furniture, soap, and oil.	
From China—blue nankins, cotton goods, silks, teas, sugar, &c.	97,000
From Upper California—sea-otter skins, bullocks' hides, horses, lumber, &c.	104,000
From Columbia river, and Russian settlements on the north-west coast—salmon, lumber, spars, &c.	33,000
From the north-west coast of America—furs,	29,000
From Mexico—specie,	20,000
From New South Wales and New Zealand—spars, lumber, hardware, cotton goods, &c.	16,000
From the Society, Friendly, and Caroline islands—pearl shells, turtle shell, sugar, arrow root, cocoanut oil, &c.	15,000
From Belgium—laces, gin, beer, &c.	3,000
	<hr/> \$575,000



In the above statement no account is made of the large quantity of merchandise brought to Honolulu, destined for other markets, and, of course, carried away without landing or changing hands. The statement shows the actual business operation.

STATEMENT OF THE EXPORTS FROM HONOLULU FOR THE YEARS  
1834 AND 1835.

Sandal wood, 9,500 peculs,	\$60,000
Furs—sea and land otter skins, beaver skins, &c.	109,000
Bullocks' hides,	26,000
Oil—Spermaceti, cocoanut, and Kukui oils,	20,000
Turtle shell, \$6,000—pearl shell, \$6,000,	12,000
Salt, \$6,000—goat skins, \$7,000,	13,000
Arrow root, \$2,000—Tobacco, \$2,000,	4,000
Foreign merchandise—chiefly exported to California, the Russian settlements, Mexico, and islands in the South Pacific,	100,000
Provisions and supplies to whale ships, which are paid for in barter and bills of exchange on the United States and England,	140,000
Specie,	10,000
	<hr/>
Total amount of Exports,	\$494,000

Bills of exchange, drawn by the governors of the Russian colonies on the imperial government, and by masters of ships on their owners, afford the means of remitting a large amount, annually, to the United States, China, &c.

For the above statements I am indebted to Mr. H. A. Pierce.

As will be seen in the following memorial, our trade is, at times, interrupted, and requires the occasional presence of a ship-of-war for its protection.

“OAHU, SANDWICH ISLANDS, }  
September 16th, 1836. }

“TO EDMUND P. KENNEDY, Esq.

Commanding U. S. Naval Forces, of the  
East India and Asiatic Station.

“SIR,

“The undersigned, citizens of the United States of America, resident at the Sandwich Islands, beg leave respectfully to represent to you:

“That we are all, directly or indirectly, interested in the commer-



cial operations conducted from the United States, China, and these Islands, to the coasts of California and Mexico:

“That many serious outrages and unjust acts have been committed by the governmental authorities of those countries upon American vessels and seamen, and great losses and damages sustained in consequence.

“In the summer of 1833, the brig *Loriot*, Gorham H. Nye, master, Alpheus B. Thompson, supercargo, was unwarrantably seized in the harbor of St. Francisco, and detained several months. The sails of the vessel were unbent, her rudder unhung, and carried on shore, the master and crew were confined on board, and the supercargo committed to prison, whence he was not allowed his liberty for many months, nor until he had procured heavy bonds not to leave the country. He still remains under those bonds, if not in prison.

From intelligence recently received from California, we believe that a vessel, owned by John Coffin Jones, Esq., U. S. Consul, at this place, has been seized, and is, at present, detained, under similar circumstances of injustice, for alleged violations of the laws of the country, while she was under the direction of her previous owners, and in command of her former master. We refer to these as *instances* of grievous embarrassments arbitrarily imposed on our commerce.

“We believe that no vessel of the United States government has, for many years, visited Upper California; and we have great confidence that, were a naval force to appear on that coast, and visit Lower California and Mexico, it would render valuable service to our citizens residing in those countries, would afford needed succor and protection to American vessels, at present employed there, and be attended with results peculiarly advantageous to the general interests of our national commerce.

“With these statements and views, we have to express the hope that you may find it in your power to visit those coasts with the force under your command, before you shall leave the Pacific.

With due considerations of respect,  
we remain, sir, your fellow citizens,

PIERCE & BREWER,	LADD & Co.
JOSEPH MOORE,	SHERMAN PECK,
WILLIAM PATY,	HINCKLEY & SMITH,
A. H. FAYERWEATHER,	A. C. DAVIS,
THOMAS CUMMINS,	JOHN PATY,
HENRY P. STEVENS,	SAMUEL A. CUSHING,



ELIAB GRIMES & Co.	WM. FRENCH, BY J. J. GREENWAY,
THOMAS MEEK,	I. R. THOMAS, Jr.
HENRY PATY & Co.	J. EBBETTS,
J. PEABODY,	STEPHEN D. MACKINTOSH,
ELI SOUTHWORTH,	WILLIAM H. PEARCE,
JOSEPH NAVARRO,	CORNELIUS HOYER,
D. OWEN,	NELSON HALL,
SAMUEL F. SHAW,	CHARLES TITCOMB,
WILLIAM C. LITTLE."	

Our commercial interests at the Sandwich Islands require a consulate on a footing different from the present one. The consul should be placed, by a competent salary, beyond the influence of personal interest in commercial transactions, that his opinions may be as free from bias as those of a judge on the bench. This has been urged, again and again, for the past seven years, and merits investigation, at least, by the proper branch of our government. The gentleman who at present fills the office is a favorite with all parties, and we regret that he was absent, engaged in his commercial affairs.

It was said, that a vice-consul here displayed too much energy among seamen; and when a vessel arrived, of which the crew was, from any cause, discontented, he went on board, and said, "Now, men, there are three things I won't hear a word about—you mustn't say you are worked too hard, that you are ill treated, or haven't enough to eat. If you have any thing else to say, I'll listen to you."

If, on the contrary, the commander preferred charges against any of his crew, this vice-consul, arrogating to himself the final power of a court of *oyer et terminer*, condemned the charged seamen to labor in the fort at Honolulu; excusing the irregularity of the act with a sage apothegm, that those who eat must work, for he was not authorized to support any body in idleness.



## CHAPTER XLV.

## SKETCHES IN THE SANDWICH ISLANDS.

*October, 1836.*

WHEN foreigners first settled in the islands, the king or chiefs allotted to each one, upon application, a site for building a house, for which they paid neither tax nor lease-rent. But when they left the islands, the privilege of transferring tenements or improvements by sale or otherwise, was denied; and the chiefs, in several instances, directed the owners to remove their houses, and then proceeded to take them down, and, piling the timber where the house stood, ordered it to be taken away. The Hawaiians were, and still are treated in like manner. From this custom several disputes have arisen, the foreigners insisting upon their right of selling or otherwise disposing of their property, at any time, to any person or persons, which the king denies. The American residents complained of several grievances of this kind, and others under the following treaty.

## HE OLELO KUIKAHI.

Articles of arrangement made and concluded at Oahu, between THOMAS AP CATESBY JONES, appointed by the United States, of the one part, and KAUIKEAOULI, King of the Sandwich Islands, and his Guardians, on the other part.

Na olelo keia i hooponoponoia'i a hoopaaia'io Oahu nei e THOMAS AP CATESBY JONES kekahi, ko Amerika luna i hoounaia mai nei mai ka United States mai, a me ke alii o ko Hawaii nei pae aina o KAUIKEAOULI o laua me ona kahu kekahi.

## ARTICLE I.

The peace and friendship subsisting between the United States and their Majesties, the Queen Regent and Kau-

## PAUKU I.

Eia kekahi olelo; ke olelo pu nei ka. kou e hoopaa loa i ke kuikahi pu ana a me ke aloha pu ana o ko Amerika a me



ikeaouli, King of the Sandwich Islands, and their subjects and people, are hereby confirmed and declared to be perpetual.

#### ARTICLE II.

The ships and vessels of the United States (as well as their Consuls and all other citizens,) within the territorial jurisdiction of the Sandwich Islands, together with all their property, shall be inviolably protected against *all* enemies of the United States in time of war.

#### ARTICLE III.

The contracting parties, being desirous to avail themselves of the bounties of Divine Providence, by promoting the commercial intercourse and friendship subsisting between the respective nations, for the better security of these desirable objects, their Majesties bind themselves to receive into their ports and harbors all ships and vessels of the United States, and to protect to the uttermost of their capacity, all such ships and vessels, their cargoes, officers and crews, so long as they shall behave themselves peacefully, and not infringe the established laws of the land; the citizens of the United States being permitted to trade freely with the people of the Sandwich Islands.

#### ARTICLE IV.

Their Majesties do farther agree to extend the fullest protection within their control to all ships and vessels of the United States, which may be wrecked on their shores, and to render every assistance in their power to save the wreck, and her apparel and cargo; and as a reward for the assistance and protection which the people of the Sandwich Islands shall afford to all such distressed vessels of the United States, they shall be entitled to a salvage or a portion of the property so saved; but

ko Hawaii kahu alii wahine a me ke alii nui o Hawaii nei o KAUIKEAOULI, a me ko laua poe kanaka a me pa makaaianana a pau loa; eia ka hoailona e mau loa'i ua kuikahi nei.

#### PAUKU II.

Eia hou neia, a o ko Amerika poe moku mai a me ko laila kanikele, a me ko laila kanaka ma keia pae aina a me ko lakou waiwai, a i hiki i ka wa kaa, e pau ia mau mea i ka malama pono ia o ko Hawaii nei i ko Amerika enemi a pau loa.

#### PAUKU III.

Eia hou neia, e makemake ana keia mau poe e loa mai ia lakou ka waiwai a ke Akua i haawi mai ai, i ka hookuia pu ana a me ke aloha pu ana o na aina o ka poe nana keia oleolo, nolaila hoi no ka paa pono ana o keia mau mea mahalo, e ae mai ua mau alii o Hawaii nei, e pono ia laua e komo no iloko o ko laua awa a me ko laua mau wahi e ku ai ka moku, o na moku Amerika a pau, a e malama nui aku i ua mau moku la a me na ukana maluna a me na alii a me na kanaka o ua mau moku la oi hana pono mai lakou a i haki ole ia lakou na kanawai o keia aina i kau ai, e kuai no hoi ko Amerika, me ko Hawaii nei poe kanaka.

#### PAUKU IV.

Eia hou neia; ke olelo io nei ua mau alii nei, e malama nui laua i ko Amerika poe moku ke ili mai ma ko laua pae aina, e hooikaika pono aku laua i pakele ai ka moku ili a me kana mau mea a pau a me kona ukana. He pono no e loa mai i ko Hawaii nei poe ka uku no ko lakou hooikaika ana i pakele ai au moku ili la a i malama pono ia ai ka mau mea ana.—Eia ka uku, he mau kala paha a i ole ia, o kekahi puu o ka waiwai i hoopakele ia ai, ka uku. Ina ekolu puu waiwai ua like, hookahi puu



such salvage shall in no case exceed one-third of the value saved, which valuation is to be fixed by a commission of disinterested persons, who shall be chosen equally by the parties.

#### ARTICLE V.

Citizens of the United States whether resident or transient, engaged in commerce or trading to the Sandwich Islands, shall be inviolably protected in their lawful pursuits; and shall be allowed to sue for and recover by judgment, all claims against the subjects of his Majesty, the King, according to strict principles of equity and the acknowledged practice of civilized nations.

#### ARTICLE VI.

Their Majesties do farther agree, and bind themselves, to discountenance and use all practicable means to prevent desertion from all American ships which visit the Sandwich Islands; and to that end, it shall be made the duty of all governors, magistrates, chiefs of districts and all others in authority, to apprehend all deserters, and deliver them over to the master of the vessel from which they have deserted; and for the apprehension of every such deserter, who shall be delivered over as aforesaid, the master, owner or agent shall pay to the person or persons apprehending such deserter, the sum of six dollars, if taken on the side of the island near which the vessel is anchored; but if taken on the opposite side of the island, the sum shall be twelve dollars; and if taken on any other island, the reward shall be twenty-four dollars, and shall be a just charge against the wages of every such deserter.

paha ka uku, aka aole loa e nui aku ko lakou uku i kekahi o ua puu waiwai akolu la.

A o ka mea nona ka moku a o ka poe i hoopakeleia ai ka waiwai, e kuhikuhi pu lakou i kekahi mau kanaka e aole no lakou ka waiwai na lakou hoi e hoike mai i ka nui o ka waiwai i malamia ia.

#### PAUKU V.

A o ko Amerika poe kanaka e kuai ana ma ko Hawaii nei pae aina, ka poe e noho ana a me ka poe e holoholo ana, e pau lakou i ka malama ponoia i ka lakou hana ana i ka mea i ku i ke kanawai.

A he pono no lakou e hoopaa i ka poe lawehala ma ke kanawai, a ma ka ahaolelo e loa mai ai ia lakou ka uku e pau ai ha aie pono a pau a na kanaka o ko Hawaii nei alii e like ai me ke kanawai pololei a me ka oihana o ka aina naauao i ike ai.

#### PAUKU VI.

Eia hou neia, ke olelo io nei ke alii nui laua o kona kahu ka olelo i paa ai laua i ka hooikaka aku laua e pau ai ka mahuka ana mai o na kanaka o ko Amerika mau moku e hiki mai ana i ko Hawaii nei pae aina, e alai aku no i ka mahuka ana mai.

No ia mea, he pono no na'lii malama aina, a me na kilo, a me na kiaaina, a me na kaualii a pau e hopu aku a paa ka poe mahuka a pau, a e hoihoi aku i ka mea nona ka moku i haalele ia aku ai.

A e ukuia mai ko onei poe i hopu aku, e ka mea nona ka moku. Ina ma ka aoao o ka aina e ku ai ka moku e paa ai ka mea i mahuka, eono kala ka uku. A ina ma kela aoao o ka aina e paa ai umi a me kumemalua kala ka uku, a ina ma ka aina e i moku i ke kai e paa ai a i hoihoi i kona moku, iwakalua kala a me kumamaha ka uku no loko pono keia uku o ka waiwai a ka mea mahuka i hoolimalimaia'i malaila e kau ponoia'i.



## ARTICLE VII.

No tonnage duties or impost shall be exacted of any citizen of the United States, which is not paid by the citizens or subjects of the nation most favored in commerce with the Sandwich Islands; and the citizens or subjects of the Sandwich Islands shall be allowed to trade with the United States and her territories, upon principles of equal advantage with the most favored nation.

Done in Council at Honolulu, Island of Oahu, this 23d day of December, in the year of our Lord 1826.

THOMAS AP CATESBY JONES.

## PAUKU VII.

Eia hou neia; aole io aku ka uku mai no ke awa o ko Amerika poe kanaka i ko ka aina punahele kanaka e kuai ana ma ko Hawaii pae aina, aole kii hou ia aku ka uku nui a e o ko Amerika kanaka.

A e kuai no ko Hawaii nei poe kanaka me ko Amerika, e like ka oihana a me ka pono e pono ai ko ka aina punahele loa i ke kuai pu ana mai me ko Hawaii nei pae aina.

Ua hoopaaia i ka ahaolelo ma Honulu, i ka aina Oahu nei, i keiala 23d o Dectemaba, i ka makahiki o ko kakou Haku 1826.

ELISABETA KAAHUMANU,  
KARAIMOKU,  
BOKI,  
HOAPILI,  
LIDIA NAMAHAHA,  
THOS. AP CATESBY JONES.

With a view to the adjustment of these differences, Commodore Kennedy waited upon Kinau, the governess of the Island of Oahu. We found her at her house, near the fort, with her husband and several of the chiefs. The house has adobe walls, and a native roof, lined with mats. One side of the apartment in which we were received, was occupied by a pile of mats, which served as a divan or a bed, according to circumstances. A board partition, neatly painted, separated it from the sleeping apartment of Kinau. The furniture consisted of a table, a China desk, Windsor chairs, and arm chairs for the king, governess and Commodore.

It had been improperly given out that the interview was to be public, and as the subjects to be discussed were of much general interest to the foreign residents, a considerable number attended at the several interviews which took place.

We were politely welcomed, and learned that the king had deputed Kinau to act for him, as he was too unwell to attend.

The first complaint preferred, was, that American vessels had been prevented from trading at the Island of Maui without justifiable cause, which act was in violation of the third article of the treaty.

Kinau stated that one vessel had been prevented from trading at Maui, because the Captain, in open violation of the law, after having been duly informed of it, continued to sell ardent spirits, which the



king had prohibited in all the islands except Oahu. Nor does he allow it to be distilled except on this island. This explanation was received as amply satisfactory.

The next subject brought up for consideration was, whether the king had a right to prevent American residents from transferring houses, &c., by sale or otherwise. Kinau urged, that the king had never, in any instance, alienated his right in the soil, and when lots of ground were assigned to foreigners, it was always understood, either on the departure of the individual from the islands, or at his death, such ground reverted to the king, and that it must be cleared. That the king would give his consent, were it asked, to the sale or transfer of houses, &c., provided he should deem the person to whom the transfer was to be made, respectable, and likely to be a good citizen.

The next day another interview occurred, and the subject was again discussed. The king was now present. He argued, that if he yielded the right of free transfer, without consulting the government, he virtually resigned his right in the soil, which was unalienable, as well as all authority or control over it, and thus he might be deprived of all his country. He was asked how that could be the case, so long as he received a rent or tax for it; and we were told in reply, that he had in no instance received rent or tax for lands hitherto granted to foreigners. There was no representative value affixed to land; and keeping this fact in view, we are not surprised at His Majesty's argument. The subject of leasing lands for the purpose of cultivating sugar, cotton, coffee, tobacco, or silk, was talked of, and the king expressed himself decidedly in favor of the principle; but wished to be expressly understood, that in recognising the principle of lease, he did not feel bound to grant lands to all who might apply. He was unwilling to give this in writing, because, he said, it was a new thing, and required more consideration than he had yet been able to give it.

On both of these occasions, the Rev. Mr. Bishop acted as interpreter. His constant attention, his gentlemanly demeanor, and his enlarged views of the subjects under discussion, as well as the knowledge he displayed of the language, commanded the praise and approbation of all the officers present. He was equally desirous with our commercial countrymen here, to settle the question of the right of transferring property, because the property of the mission was not more secure than that belonging to other foreigners.

Some questions were asked in relation to the authority of American consuls. An English cockney who was present, and who volun-



teered to give us information on the subject, afterwards asked, "Have you attorneys or lawyers in America?" I mention this because it reminds me that a gentleman of the same tribe asked me, at Valparaiso, in 1827, what we did in America when we wanted a coat;—then pausing, and perhaps perceiving my astonishment, added—"Ah! but I imagine some English tailors have gone out there by this time."

A third interview took place the following day, on which occasion, Mr. Chamberlain, the fiscal agent of the mission, acted as interpreter. I was surprised to find that he, as well as several others of the mission, entertained a notion, that if foreigners were allowed to lease lands, there would be a risk of the king losing all control over the islands, and for that reason opposed the principle which had been recognised.

Messrs. Ladd & Co. have already leased a tract of land on the island of Kauai, for cultivating sugar-cane and making sugar. They pay a rent for it, and besides granting them some privileges, pay the natives whom they employ, daily wages of about twelve and a half cents each, and their poll tax. The king declares, his revenue from this one plantation, is greater than that which he previously received from the whole island.

An old claim of \$60,000 was admitted, and the king offered to liquidate it within two years, provided the claimant would receive it in any articles produced upon the islands, which should be left to his selection, and he would commence the payment at once; but the gentleman was absent, and his agent did not think proper to accept the terms; we afterwards saw him, and he told me he would have gladly acceded to the proposition, had he been present.

A very much smaller claim of another American was also recognised.

Though nothing was settled, it must be plain to those who reflect upon the subject in all its bearings, that the mere discussion of the several points, so entirely new to the mind of his Hawaiian Majesty, must have a beneficial effect; particularly if negotiation should be in future attempted by any one clothed with proper authority. Nor were these interviews to no purpose, since they resulted in a formal acknowledgment of American claims to a very considerable amount, for which the gentlemen most interested must feel entirely indebted to the kind interference of Commodore Kennedy. He could not, consistently with American principles of honor and justice, make use of threats, or force, to bully



these people into an acquiescence with his views, as a British Captain, Lord Edward Russel, we are informed, has since done. Perhaps he regarded the king and chiefs as rebellious subjects of His Britannic Majesty, inasmuch as the celebrated Tamèhamèha ceded these islands, through Captain Vancouver, to Great Britain, which cession was confirmed by the late King Riho'riho, when in England.

But as Americans never resort to the force of arms to corroborate their arguments in diplomacy, particularly when no such appeal is necessary, Commodore Kennedy left them to learn the advantage and importance of the subjects urged upon their consideration.

Before sailing, the following letters, which explain themselves, were directed to the authorities.

" U. States Ship Peacock,  
Honolulu, Sandwich Islands,  
October 7th, 1836.

" TO HIS MAJESTY,

KAUIKEAOULI, King of the Sandwich Islands,

" HAVING indulged the hope that the negotiations which have been pending for the past week, would have terminated in the formation of more intimate relations, and some new ties of friendship between our respective countries, which would be advantageous to American citizens as well as to your own subjects, I cannot refrain, on leaving these islands, from expressing in a concise manner, my sentiments with regard to several subjects of importance, upon which we have not been able to come to a definite conclusion.

" The first, which is in my opinion, at present, of paramount importance, is the right of American citizens to transfer to other American citizens, any property, rights, or privileges, which may have been derived from the government of these islands, either by purchase, gift, or lease.

" This right is so essential for the protection of the interests of residents, that although not *expressly stated* in the Treaty made by Captain Jones, it may be very easily inferred from it, and as it is equally necessary for the interests of these islands, that every foreigner's right should be distinctly stated and carefully preserved, I have to express the hope that you will, at an early period, adopt some plans which will prevent farther occasion of dissatisfaction in this respect, both with regard to those now holding lands, and those who may hereafter become tenants. Unless this should be the case, it cannot be



expected that any one will be disposed to invest their property in buildings on government lands, and consequently the natives will be deprived of a considerable amount of property, which is now expended by settlers from abroad, in erecting durable dwelling-houses or stores, and all improvement in the appearance and convenience of the dwellings must speedily cease.

"I beg also that the subject of leasing or renting lands to our citizens for agricultural purposes, may receive your best attention; being fully convinced, that the prosperity of this nation can in no way be more speedily promoted, than by encouraging the growth of sugar, coffee, silk, hemp, indigo, and other articles of commercial importance.

"The increase of revenue to the government from this source, might alone form a sufficient inducement for the promotion of agricultural interests; but to this may be added the increase of industry, health, happiness, and comfort to the population generally, in case the lands now lying without benefit to any one, should be brought into active cultivation, by the labor of the natives. It will not only bring to your ports ships of all nations, for the purpose of carrying away the produce of your lands, but afford the natives generally the means of procuring those manufactures of other countries, which will increase their usefulness and knowledge; and which add so essentially to the happiness of civilized nations.

"With regard to the imprisonment of American seamen, who have been charged by the captains or officers of merchant vessels with mutiny, and other offences of a serious character, I have to request that as no authority is vested by the United States of America, in any person which empowers him to punish American citizens, you will be careful, in every instance where such persons are placed in your custody by the consul, that they are not in any manner ill treated, or compelled to labour for the government, as I am informed has formerly been the practice, but merely detained until an opportunity occurs of sending them home for trial.

"I wish also to observe, that although as king of these islands you have a right to make any particular religion the standing religion of the land, you have not under the Treaty now existing between your government and the United States, any right to expel from your land, or prohibit from landing, any American citizen or citizens, whatever may be his or their religious opinions, so long as they conform to your laws; as in the United States, every person is at liberty under our laws, to worship God in his own way, and every denomination, whe-



ther Christian or Jew, is eligible to the highest office in the government.

"The recognition of Mr. Paty's case, subsequent to our conference, will prevent the necessity of any farther interference on my part; and I have now only to express my best wishes for the welfare and prosperity of yourself and the Sandwich Islands.

I have the honor to be,

Very respectfully,

Your obedient servant,

EDMUND P. KENNEDY.

Commanding the East India and Asiatic squadron."

"U. S. Ship Peacock,

*Honolulu, October, 1836.*

"To KINAU,

High Chief of Oahu,

&c. &c.

"I have thought a few remarks from me at this time would not be unacceptable to you. I have long felt the deepest interest in the happiness of the people over whom you preside as chief and governor.

"I visited these islands seven years ago, and was much gratified with what I then saw. Your people had made considerable advances in morals and religion; and I was particularly pleased with the zeal and fidelity of the missionaries residing among your people. I then hoped a few years more would see the Hawaiian people a christian and civilized nation. I did hope, that as soon as the chiefs embraced the christian religion, they would see the importance of elevating the character and condition of the common people; and that they would be induced to this course by motives of christian philanthropy, as well as by motives of worldly policy.

"It is remarked in all christian and highly civilized nations, that the power and wealth of the rulers of every country increase with the morality, intelligence and wealth of the commonalty; and it is also remarked that the stability and permanency of the government become more secure as the morality, religion and intelligence of the mass of the people become general.

"From careful accounts which have been taken of the births and deaths, it appears that the population of the islands is decreasing with fearful rapidity. What is causing this decrease, I will not venture to say; but I beg to suggest a few changes in the condition of the people, which, if adopted, will, I have no doubt, soon change the condi-



tion of the nation, from its present depression to one of high prosperity.

"1. *A fixed and certain rent upon land.*

"If the cultivators of the soil are satisfied, after paying a proper rent to the owner of the land, in money or produce, that all the produce left is their own, they will have an inducement to labor, which does not at present exist.

"2. *Security for person and property.*

"Unless the people are secure in the enjoyment of the fruits of their labor, it will be in vain to attempt to improve their condition. No man will work more than he is compelled to, without he has a reasonable security that he will be permitted to enjoy the fruits of his labor, without fear of being deprived of his property by the chiefs or the government.

"As the improvement of the islands is mainly dependent on trade, every protection should be afforded to all foreign residents, as well to their ships as goods, so long as they act correctly. They should be permitted freely to buy, sell, or exchange any kind of property. Nothing short of this, will be such a protection as will induce foreigners of property and respectability to remain on the islands.

"3. *An entire abrogation of all compulsory labor.*

"When the chiefs or government require work to be done, let the laborers be paid the full market price for labor.

"4. *Taxes.* They should be equal throughout the islands, and so moderate as not to distress the people. *A poll tax*, if possible, should be avoided, for the rich and poor pay the same amount.

"The cultivation of cotton and coffee can be carried on without any capital, and a ready sale for all that can be produced cannot be doubted. Sugar-cane can also be cultivated by the small land holder; but it requires a large capital to procure all the machinery required to manufacture sugar from cane. It would therefore be well to encourage and permit capitalists to have establishments on each of the islands, similar to that of Messrs. Ladd & Co. on Kauai. It would also be well to encourage the establishing of one or two cotton manufactories.

"By the adoption of measures like these, the wealth of the king and chiefs would be vastly increased, and the continuance of the government secured. The happiness of all would be promoted, and the desire of your friends in all parts of the world would be accomplished.

"By adopting these few changes, which do not affect the right of the



king or chiefs to the soil, or their jurisdiction over the people, a stimulus would be given to industry, which would in a few years change the face of the country from barren wastes to fruitful fields and smiling villages, teeming with a happy, prosperous and numerous people.

"If something be not done speedily, to bring about a salutary change, I shall indulge the most gloomy reflections as to the continuance of your race and nation.

"I regret that we cannot converse together, for there are some things here suggested which I should like to explain more fully.

"Excuse the freedom which I have taken in thus addressing you. Your good and the good of your people are my only motive.

"That God may enable you and others in authority, to come to a right and speedy determination in these important matters, is the prayer of one, deeply and feelingly interested in your happiness, for time and eternity.

"Permit me to close these remarks by subscribing myself your friend and brother,

C. K. STRIBLING."



## SKETCHES IN THE CALIFORNIAS.



## SKETCHES IN THE CALIFORNIA



## CHAPTER XLVI.

## SKETCHES IN CALIFORNIA.

*October, 1836.*

ON the 26th of September the *Enterprise* sailed for Mazatlàn, accompanied by two American merchant vessels, bound to that place.

In compliance with the memorial of the American residents, given above, Commodore Kennedy determined to visit Upper California; and on the 9th of October, sailed from the harbor of Honolulu. We did not lose sight of the island until the second day, when we encountered a light gale from the northward and westward. The wind continued fresh from that quarter until the 24th, when after a passage of fifteen days and seven hours, the ship anchored in the harbor of Monte-rey, the capital of upper California. The passage was pleasant. The thermometer fell gradually as we increased our latitude, from 80° F. to 58° F.; and one morning, at Monte-rey, was as low as 49° F. To us this temperature was uncomfortably cold; but it operated like a charm upon those on board who had been enfeebled by disease.

On approaching the coast we fell in with large beds of beautiful sea-weed, which is occasionally met with in such heavy masses as to impede a vessel's motions. The leaves are two or three feet long, and two or three inches broad in the centre, and tapering towards the end like the blades of Indian corn. They are of a yellowish brown color, crimped like crape, and soft and velvety to the touch. On the stem of each leaf there is attached an air vessel, joining it to the stalk, which serves most effectually as a buoy.

The harbor of Monte-rey is situated in 36° 36' north latitude, and 121° 42' west longitude. It was discovered in the year 1602, and was named in honor of Don Gaspàr de Zuñiga, Conde de Monte-rey, at that time Viceroy of Mexico. It is very large, open to the north-west, from which point a very considerable swell at times sets in to



the anchorage. The water is deep, and ships usually anchor in about ten fathoms close to the shore. The land around the bay is high and covered by a growth of pine trees, which circumstance has given name to the southern point of the harbor—Punta de Pinos.

The town is a scattering village, containing not more than five hundred inhabitants, among whom are fifteen or twenty foreigners, Americans and Englishmen, engaged in trade, which chiefly consists in exchanging European goods for hides and tallow. The hides are purchased at one dollar and a half each, in cash, or at two dollars in goods, and are sent to the United States. Tallow is at one dollar the quintal, (100 lbs.,) and is disposed of in the Lima market.

We found four merchant vessels and two whale ships, all American, in the harbor. One of them had been, for some months, going from port to port, on the coast, collecting hides and depositing them at Santa Barbara, where they are prepared by salting, &c., and thence shipped to the United States.

The trade is so closely connected with that of the Russian settlements on the north-west coast of America, that no estimate of its value at Monte-rey alone can be easily made. There may be from six to eight American vessels on the coast, every year, which visit San Francisco, Monte-rey, Santa Barbara, and some other ports in Upper California, and exchange goods in each for hides and tallow, and, occasionally, a few beaver and otter skins. They sometimes convey horses and bullocks to the Sandwich and Society Islands.

Our trade with Mexico, at least on the west coast, is much oppressed by the heavy charges to which it is subject. Besides duties on their cargoes, amounting almost to a prohibition on some articles, ships are charged an anchorage fee, no matter under what circumstances they may enter a port, of seventeen reals (\$2,12½) a ton, amounting to \$637,50 on a ship of three hundred tons. It is true, after paying this sum, a vessel may go from port to port, in Upper California, as often as may be found desirable, without paying any additional anchorage fee, on exhibiting her register, countersigned by the captain of the port she may have left last.

Our treaty with Mexico is on a footing with the most favored nation. It requires revision and correction in several particulars. In one point of this instrument the Mexican diplomatists have been an over-match both for the American *Chargé* and the British Envoy, possibly owing to a want of a critical knowledge of the Spanish language on the part of those gentlemen.

It has been a usual, and but too frequent practice of the Mexican



government, when in want of funds, to exact heavy loans from foreign merchants residing in the country; which are seldom, or never, repaid. To relieve them from such an oppression, the diplomatist negotiated an article, which, in English, exempts them entirely from forced loans; but the Spanish reading implies that American merchants shall not be selected or distinguished from Mexican merchants, and alone forced to loan money to the government; but they shall be subject to the same contingencies equally with them.

Upper California possesses a fertile soil and a good climate. Its population is very much scattered, and consists almost entirely of native Indians, whose numbers are supposed not to exceed ten thousand. They cultivate a few vegetables, but obtain their chief subsistence by the chase. They associate in tribes, or bands, of one or two hundred, seldom in greater numbers, because larger companies cannot readily supply themselves with sufficient game, within the extent of a day's hunt. They plunder the farms of the colonists of horses, which they eat in preference to beef, though horned cattle are more abundant: this fact contradicts the assertion of Professor Kidd, that no people eat horse flesh through preference.

Not long after the Spanish conquest, these Indians became objects of solicitude with the fathers of the church, and they soon established mission stations for their conversion to christianity. The Indians were caught, and carried to the church, *vi et armis*, and baptized, and thenceforward distinguished as rational people—*gente de razon*. But, feeling little confidence in the controlling influence of baptism over their erratic habits, the priests usually kept them prisoners until they acquired some handicraft, and in this way some few were civilized.

At this time there are twenty-one missions in Upper California, all of which are in a state of decay. I visited that at Cormelo, which I found in ruins, and almost abandoned. It is about four miles from Monte-rey. The road to it is easy, and agreeably varied by hill and dale, every where covered by pine and other forest trees, and remarkably free from undergrowth.

The mission building is, perhaps, a hundred yards square, one story high, and roofed with tiles. We rode through the gate, which was just ready to fall from its hinges, into the great central court, round which it is built, where we found eight or ten Indians engaged in repairing the roof. They informed us that the Padre was at the presidio, or garrison, and that there was no one to show us the church, which, exteriorly, was in a dilapidated state. All the win-



dows opened in upon the court, and were heavily barred with iron, with the design of preventing the escape of the christian neophytes, who were locked up at night in apartments to which these windows give light and air. Some of those were open. They were strewed with rubbish and filth, and, altogether, in a worse condition than the commonest stable should be.

The vicinity of Monte-rey, and, indeed, all Upper California, abound in game, rabbits, hares, squirrels, quails, snipe, ducks, &c.; and bears and deer are shot within a few miles of the town. While here, our tables were well supplied, as our chief amusement consisted in sport. The bay abounds in excellent fish, and a variety of shells are found upon its shores. A large species of *haliotis*, the internal nacre of which is beautifully iridescent, abounds: the animal is eaten, but, unless great pains be taken to beat it well, before cooking, it is tough and unpalatable. It forms, occasionally, a large black pearl, which is, by some persons, much admired.

The government of Upper California is, at present, administered by Lieutenant Colonel Don Nicolas Gutierrez. Don Nicolas resides at the presidio, or garrison, where he commands, without other assistance than that of a major of artillery, a captain and a lieutenant of infantry, and one or two corporals, fourteen men, and two field pieces. At the time of our visit they were nightly on guard, expecting an attack from some disaffected rancheros (farmers) and Indians. The day after our arrival we saluted the place, which was regularly acknowledged from the garrison. The whole military force of Upper California does not exceed one hundred and fifty men.

The judiciary consists of a Juez de Distrito (District Judge) and a number of Alcaldes. From the unsettled state of this part of the country, as well as all Mexico, these worthy dispensers of justice are not unfrequently seen upon the bench with a brace of pistols and a sword before them, instead of a mace, as badges of office. Of their intelligence not much can be said, but an idea of it may be gathered from the following case.

Two common men, one named Juan and the other Pedro, had a difference. Juan lodged a complaint that he had loaned to Pedro a sum of money, some time before, but could not persuade him to pay it, though he was passing rich in flocks, and horses, and oxen. After a little deliberation, the Alcalde declared that Pedro must and should pay the money, even if he forced him to sell his cattle. Accordingly, Pedro was summoned to the presence of the man of law, when Juan again stated the case, and appealed to Pedro for the truth of what he had said, which was readily acknowledged.



"Then," said the Alcalde, "since you owe this debt, why do you not pay it?"

"Because, Señor," replied Pedro, "I have no money."

"But," interrupted Juan, "tienes tu una manada, caballos, buyes y cuanto hai—thou hast a flock, horses, oxen, and every thing."

"Well said, Juan," exclaimed the Alcalde, "and he shall sell them and pay the debt, or I will teach him what is law, and what is justice."

"Vuestra Merced, Señor, es un hombre de bien y sabio—your worship is an honest and a wise man," said Juan, with a bow.

Pedro looked a little puzzled at this decision, and after twirling his hat a moment, bowed, and said, "Puez Señor, con licencia, una palabra—But, sir, a word by your leave; "then, turning to Juan, continued," ¿Puez Juan, me presteis à mi el dinero, ô lo presteis à mis buyes, ô mis caballos, ô à mi manada?—Well, Juan, didst thou lend the money to me, or didst thou lend it to my oxen, or to my horses, or to my flock?"

"I lent it to you, Pedro."

"Thou sayest well; if you lent the money to me, then, of course, I am responsible, and I must pay; but if thou didst lend it to my oxen, or to my horses, or to my flock, it is clear, they are responsible, and they must pay;" and as he finished the argument, he turned triumphantly to the Alcalde, looking as if it were unanswerable.

The worthy magistrate had listened attentively, and after a few moments' pause, reversed his decision; showing, that with him at least, a sense of right and wrong was not innate. He drew himself up, and said with much gravity, "Pedro, tu tienes razon, y no se puede vender sus bienes—Pedro, thou art right, and thy property cannot be sold."

"And what then am I to do?" asked Juan.

"Wait," said Pedro, "till I get money to pay you."

"That is all can be done according to law in the case," said the Alcalde, and dismissed the parties.

This Alcalde may be paralleled with the Delaware judge, who, having listened only to one half the case, was about to pronounce sentence, when he was interrupted by the counsel for the defendant, exclaiming, "But your Honor has not heard the other side of the question!"

"Nor do I mean to hear it, for when I hear both sides of a case,



it always puzzles me, and I am not able to pronounce the sentence half so well."

While at Monte-rey, the ship was visited by several trappers or fur hunters of the 'far west.' Those who came on board were from Tennessee, and had never seen a ship nor salt water until they beheld the North Pacific Ocean.

Armed with rifles and their traps, these daring sons of the forest, leave the western frontier, in bands not exceeding twenty or thirty, mounted on mules, for the reason that horses are found to be incapable of bearing the fatigues of the journey. They travel across the vast prairie lands of the west to Santa Fe, and thence to Upper California, trapping beavers wherever they find them.

In their marches they often meet with tribes of unfriendly Indians, and almost as often have rencontres, which usually end fatally to some of the parties. The Indians invariably scalp those whom they kill; and the trappers often imitate this barbarous custom of savage warfare. We asked a Tennessean trapper whether he had ever killed an Indian?

"Ay, many a one."

"Did you always scalp them?"

"No. I never could do that, because when I have killed a man, I think I have troubled him enough, and I don't like to disturb him after that!"

On their march the trappers often separate, and are alone in those unfrequented wilds, for one, two or more days together, with no other protection, or means of obtaining food than the rifle, without which they never move any where, even to the shortest distance from their camps, which are usually so appointed that they may be readily found. A trapper does not like to stroll alone from the camp, more than thirty or forty miles; because, said my informant, "he might find himself surprised by them Indian Devils." On these occasions, they never think of sleeping without shoes or moccasins; and the rifle always reposes beside them. Whenever a trapper is surprised thus alone, by a party of Indians, "he makes for the bush, and shoots the first Indian that approaches, and then shifts his hiding-place."

"But do they not follow into the bush?"

"No, the devils dar'n't, because they know there's a rifle in the bush," said the trapper with a knowing smile, "and I guess one of us would be afeard to go in the bush, when one knows there's a rifle in there."



"Do you never take any provision with you, when leaving the camp alone?"

"No, what does a man want better to feed himself with than a rifle?" His companions would laugh, if he carried provisions from the camp."

Our informer stated, that he had been twice from Tennessee to Monte-rey, and 'the travel' was made in about two years. During their journeys they live chiefly on buffalo-beef, and venison, which they eat without either bread or salt. They very soon learn to do without salt, and seldom think it a privation. And what is very remarkable, this man said, he had never known an instance of sickness among the trappers, though they sometimes quarrelled and shot each other. So accustomed are they to the open air, and so uncomfortable do they find themselves in a closed atmosphere, that one who went by sea from Monte-rey to San Francisco could not be induced to stay in the cabin of the ship *upon* which he had embarked, "What," said he, looking down the companion-way; "What! go down into that hole; I should smother to death!" He slept on deck, using no other bedding than a blanket, and no other pillow than his arm.

This passenger was loath to believe, that each rope composing the rigging, to him a confused mass, had its respective name, and appealed to the commander to ascertain the truth;—"I say, Captaining, your mate tells me you have names for all these here ropes?" and and when told that such was the case, he declared, "it beat all natur."

The rifles used by the trappers are of the calibre carrying thirty balls to the pound. The accuracy with which they shoot is the admiration of all, except those who, like themselves, are reared with rifles always in their hands, and taught to look upon this weapon as a source of profit, of defence and offence, as well as of amusement. One of them, premising, that he was not considered a shot either by himself or his companions, offered a bet, that he would strike a dollar at a hundred yards without once missing, for as many shots as we might please, adding, "and make the bet worth consideration, and I will shoot all day."

By way of contrast, I may mention an individual whose education and general notions had been drawn entirely from the ocean. I was introduced to an old man named Captain Smith. He had left his native town of Norfolk, Va. when a boy, in the year 1777, while the British flag still floated in the harbor. He doubled cape Horn, and remained in the Pacific Ocean, cruising among the islands, and on



the north-west coast, until 1832, when, after an absence of fifty-five years, he returned to his native land. The old man visited Norfolk, but was filled with melancholy to find every thing so changed; the relations and friends of his youth had disappeared, and he recognised nothing but a small wooden bridge which was fast falling to decay. His feelings did not allow him to remain. He visited several of the large cities, and again returned to the Pacific. Though too old to command, he continues to go to sea as passenger from port to port, now among the islands, and now on the north-west coast, and entertains his friends with stories of his voyages. He recollects Vancouver distinctly, and mentioned, that at San Francisco the Indians used to gather round his ship to see, if possible, the punishments which Vancouver daily inflicted upon his men. "He served out ten or twelve dozen every morning at the gangway."

I remarked, I should have supposed a man who had been so much at sea would, in his old age, prefer to sit down quietly on shore to spend the remainder of his days. "No, no, sir," he replied, "it would kill any man to live always on shore; he must have a brush at sea once in a while to keep his timbers from rotting."

It was mentioned in the old man's hearing, that the Catholic missionaries who had been expelled from the Sandwich Islands, were at Monte-rey, and anxious to obtain a passage to Oahu, in the hope of finding there an opportunity of proceeding to the Gambier Islands, where there is a Catholic mission. "Well," said Captain Smith, "they will cause more trouble, I suppose. The two worst things, and the two things most difficult to understand and manage, which have come in my way, are a missionary and a California saddle; you can't get along with either of them without getting rubbed."

On the 30th, the Commodore having done all that was necessary in relation to the subjects of complaints under existing circumstances, we got under way. An almost impenetrable fog overhung the harbor nearly all day, and it was late before we got fairly at sea. Our course lay to the southward, along the coast of Lower California, in order to have the advantage of the land and sea breezes.

Previous to sailing, the following letter, expressing the thanks of several American citizens for his kind interference, was addressed to Commodore Kennedy.



"MONTE-REY, UPPER CALIFORNIA, }  
October, 28th, 1836. }

SIR,—

"We the undersigned American Residents, Masters and Supercargoes of American vessels in Monte-rey, desire to return to you their humble and grateful thanks for the lively interest you have been pleased to manifest for our commerce on this coast, and that on the representations of a number of residents and others at the Sandwich Islands, you have been pleased to enter this port for the protection of our interests.

"We trust that we sufficiently appreciate the value to us of this visit so highly important to our affairs, and of the increased security we shall feel by your regard to our welfare.

"The appearance of a U. S. ship of war on this coast, after so long an interval, and after so long an intercourse between our vessels and this territory, has been highly salutary, and permit us to say, that we heartily and sincerely thank you.

"May the remainder of your cruise be pleasant, and your return to the United States all you could desire.

Respectfully yours,

NATHAN SPEAR.

JOHN MEEK.

F. D. ATHERTON.

THOS. A. NORTON.

THOS. O. LARKIN.

A. G. TOMLINSON.

JOSIAH THOMPSON.

JNO. H. EVERETT.

WM. L. HINCKLEY.

EDWD. H. FAUCON,

WM. M. WARREN.

JOS. CARTER.

WILLIAM FRENCH."

To Commodore EDMUND P. KENNEDY, }  
Commanding East India Station, U. }  
S. Ship Peacock. }



## CHAPTER XLVII.

## SKETCHES IN THE CALIFORNIAS.

November, 1836.

UPPER CALIFORNIA is but little known. It extends from the forty-second parallel of north latitude as far south as San Diego, Lat.  $32^{\circ} 39'$ , N., and possesses a coast of five hundred and sixty-one miles. Its breadth is not defined. Lower California includes from the parallel of San Diego, all the peninsula which forms the gulf of California, or, as it is sometimes called by the old Spanish historians, the Red Sea of Cortès. The southern cape of the peninsula is San Lucas, situated on the parallel of  $22^{\circ} 44'$  north latitude, and on the meridian of  $109^{\circ} 54'$  west from Greenwich.

This country is named upon the ancient maps, *New Albion*, *Caroline Islands*, and *California*. The last is the most ancient, and that which it still retains. For the name of New Albion, the country is indebted to Sir Francis Drake, who visited it in 1577, while performing his second voyage round the world. The name of *Islas Carolinas* or *Caroline Isles* was bestowed a hundred years afterwards in compliment to the king of Spain, Don Carlos the Second, because it was generally believed, until the year 1700, that California was one of a group of islands. At that period the Padre Eusebio Francisco Kino, a Jesuit missionary, discovered in one of his laborious excursions, that it is a peninsula.

Under the belief that California was a large island of a group, it was spoken of in the plural; but the name, *Californias* now includes the two divisions known as Upper and Lower California.\*

"Delighted would I be," says the Padre Venegas, "to inform the

\* *Noticia de la California y de su conquista temporal y espiritual hasta el tiempo presente. Sacada de la historia manuscrita, formada en Mexico, año de 1739; por el Padra Miguèl Venegas, &c. Madrid, 1757.*



curious, the origin and etymology of a name, which either from the extravagance of its sound, or the echo of real misfortune, or the fame of wealth, has become memorable in New Spain, and even in Europe. But I can only declare, that in no one of the native languages could the missionaries discover that any similar name is given to the land, nor to any bay, harbor or place in it. Yet I cannot adopt the etymology which some would assign, supposing the name was given by the Spaniards, who, experiencing, as is affirmed, an extraordinary heat on their first entry, called the country *California* from the Latin words, *calida fornax*—hot oven. I fear, however, that few will be disposed to accord so much grace in learning to the conquerors; and although Bernal Diaz del Castillo does not deny to Cortès the rare accomplishments among his companions of being a Latinist, a poet, and a bachelor in laws, we do not find that either he or his captains were in the habit of naming their discoveries after this plan. I judge, therefore, that this name had its origin in some accident, as might very well happen, such as among others, the words of the Indians badly comprehended by the Spaniards, as occurred in the name of Peru.”

About the year 1522, after Montezuma had succumbed to the prowess of his arms and art, Hernan Cortès heard that the land terminated not far off, and did not doubt, but the great South Sea which washed its shores, led by a short route to the Spice Islands of the East, a great object of the adventure and enterprise of the times. He at once directed the building of two caravels and two brigs, and caused the sails, rigging, pitch, anchors, and all the necessary apparatus for ships, to be transported over land from Vera Cruz, a distance of two hundred leagues to Zacatula, where every thing perishable was lost in a conflagration. But this misfortune could not turn from its purpose the energetic mind of the conqueror of Mexico. Accordingly, we find him writing from Temixtitan, or Mexico, on the 15th October, 1524, informing the Emperor Charles V., that he had already vessels constructed in the South Sea, which he designed to send in the month of July, of that year, to examine the coasts, north and south, with a hope of discovering the Strait of Magellan. At the same time he despatched vessels to examine the eastern coast of Mexico from Panuco to Florida.\*

Two or three expeditions proved to be failures from a want of harmony among the officers, and in one vessel the commander, Becerra,

\* Cartas de Cortès, in Barcia's Collection.



was murdered by the pilot Ortùn Ximenez. Afterwards the vessel reached a bay called Santa Cruz, supposed to be in the gulf of California, where Ximenez and twenty other Spaniards were killed by the natives. The sailors returned with the vessel to Chiametlà, announcing a populous land whose shores abounded in beds of glittering pearls.

Firmly persuaded in his opinion, that the Moluccas were not far distant from the western coast of Mexico, and between it and those he must discover rich islands and fertile lands, he resolved to make, in spite of all his misfortunes, a last attempt, but no longer to confide the enterprise to his captains. He announced his intended expedition, and immediately crowds of Spaniards flocked to his standard to follow the great conqueror. He directed three vessels which had been launched at Tehuantepec, to be armed and fitted, in a style which showed that he was to command. He ordered them to Chiametlà and went thither himself by land, accompanied by soldiers, clergymen and emigrants with their families. The vessels arrived at Chiametlà, and that of Ortùn Ximenez, which was found upon the coast stripped of every thing, was also fitted. Cortès embarked with as many people as the vessels would contain, leaving the remainder in charge of Andres de Tapia. He directed his course to the northward, and entered the gulf, which was called the Sea of Cortès, and sought the place where the Indians had killed Ortùn Ximenez, and landed on the first day of May, 1536. He named it Santa Cruz, and it is supposed to be the same known now as La Paz. He ordered the vessels back for those who had been left behind at Chiametlà, and they arrived after much suffering, almost exhausted from hunger, and found the soldiers in little better condition, as the country presented a steril and ungrateful soil, yielding nothing for the sustenance of man. In such a strait Cortès did not long hesitate which course to adopt, but at once set sail in search of some who had been lost, and says Gomarra, crossing the sea, run down fifty leagues of its coast. After encountering many obstacles he found those whom he sought, and returned, after innumerable difficulties to the aid of the bay of Santa Cruz, where he found some had already perished of famine, and many died after his arrival from over-eating. Then, says Bernal Diaz del Castillo, to avoid the sight of so much misery, Cortès set out in search of other lands.

In the mean time it was rumored in New Spain, that Cortès had been murdered, and it was said, that all the Mexican Caciques intended to rebel, as his presence alone kept them in subjection. The



Marquesa Doña Juana de Zuñiga, daughter of the Conde de Aguilâr, niece of the Duke of Bejar and second wife of Cortès, despatched a caravel in search of him, and a request that he would return. Immediately afterwards she sent two other vessels with letters, from herself, the Audiencia and the Viceroy Don Antonio Mendoza, in which they set forth the necessity of his presence in New Spain, as well for its tranquillity and good government, as to send the necessary succor, demanded by Francisco Pizarro, from Lima, where he was surrounded by innumerable hostile Indians. They besought him and even ordered him to return, which Cortès himself desired, for he was weary with contending in vain against sea and land, convinced, in spite of himself, that the great soldier on land cannot be the same also at sea. Perhaps he rejoiced to have so honorable a motive for abandoning an enterprise in which he had staked his credit, and returned to Acapulco in the beginning of the year 1537. He left Francisco Ulloa in charge of the people at Santa Cruz, who, seeing that it was impossible to colonize or even maintain themselves in the country, soon deserted and also returned to Acapulco.

In May, 1537, Cortès sent three vessels under the command of Francisco Ulloa, to follow up the coast. They proceeded as far up the gulf as 32° N. latitude; and returned, having seen nothing but barren hills and an inhospitable waste. In these fruitless expeditions the Viceroy expended no less than 200,000 ducats.

In spite of failures and innumerable misfortunes, the spirit of adventure and the hope of wealth kept up for nearly two centuries a succession of enterprises for discovery and conquest in California. Cortès employed all his talents and energies on several occasions; many private individuals followed his example; governors, admirals and viceroys were enlisted, and even the crown of Spain was finally drawn into preparing expeditions for the same purpose, but they all resulted in nothing.

At the close of the seventeenth century, the Jesuit missionaries determined upon the spiritual conquest of a land, which had so long and so effectually resisted the temporal power. Accordingly, after several years of preparation, in obtaining a license from the crown, two padres with a small escort set sail and landed in California on the 10th of October, 1697, a little to the northward of Loreto. After a long and painful endurance of privation and numerous strifes with the Indians, they succeeded in establishing two or three mission stations, which in the course of time became more numerous, and spread over the whole country, and at the time of the South Ameri-



can revolution might be considered in a tolerably flourishing condition; but that event has paralyzed the efforts of the church, and the missions are almost altogether abandoned.

Lower California is very thinly peopled. The soil is steril, and badly watered, and no mines of importance have as yet been discovered. Its commerce is next to nothing. A few small craft visit San Lucas and La Paz, but they obtain very little; even the water found at these ports is brackish and unwholesome.

On one occasion a missionary chided the Indians for their misconduct at mass, threatening them with the flames of hell, which he depicted in glowing language. To all this, one of the Indians remarked, that hell must be a well wooded country to keep so great a fire; and in this respect, at least, a far more desirable land than California.\*

\* Noticia de California, por el padre Miguel Venegas.



SKETCHES IN MEXICO.



SALESTONES IN MEXICO.



## CHAPTER XLVIII.

## SKETCHES IN MEXICO.

*November, 1836.*

ON the 12th of November, we anchored in the roads of Mazatlán, Lat.  $23^{\circ} 10'$ , N. Long.  $106^{\circ} 21'$  W.\*

The anchorage is about a mile and a half from the town, in an open roadstead which is obnoxious to gales from the south-east, from June until December. The rainy season sets in about the month of June, and continues through July, August, and September, and sometimes October, during which period it is very unhealthy, particularly at the close of the rains, when the sun shines upon the low plains and swamps of the neighborhood. At this season, all those whose circumstances permit, retreat from Mazatlán to the mountainous regions of the interior. For this reason the population fluctuates from two to seven thousand.

There were two Mexican schooners of war in the roads, their colors at half mast in token of the nation's sorrow and sympathy for the discomfiture and imprisonment of General Santa Anna, in Texas. But as far as we could ascertain, the General is very unpopular in all this section of Mexico.

We learned that Captain Hollins, in the *Enterprise*, arrived here on the 29th of October, and had sailed on the sixth of November, for the port of Guaymas, up the gulf of California, in pursuance of the recommendation of the following letter, thinking that he would be able to return before our arrival at this place. But after contend-

\* This part of the coast is very inaccurately laid down on the charts. The latitude above given is not far from the truth, though the chart places it in  $23^{\circ} 18'$ .



ing several days against the wind, which blew strongly down the gulf, he was compelled to return, but did not reach the anchorage before our departure.

“CONSULTATE OF THE U. S. OF AMERICA,  
Port of Mazatlàn,

*October 29, 1836.*

SIR,

“The arrival of the U. States Schooner *Enterprise*, under your command, affords me an opportunity that has long been wanting, to recommend to you the propriety of extending your visit to the port of Guaymas, where the flag of none of our vessels of war has ever yet been seen, and where there is a field gradually opening to the commerce and manufactures of the country.

“I avail myself of this occasion, to express to you the great pleasure which your arrival in this port has afforded us, and to hope that henceforth the visits of our national vessels will not be so few and far between.

I have the honor to remain,

With sentiments of respect and esteem,

Your most obedient servant,

SAMUEL W. TALBOT,  
Acting Consul, U. S. of America.

TO CAPT. GEORGE N. HOLLINS,  
U. S. Schooner *Enterprise*.”

Though we find Mazatlàn mentioned by writers more than a hundred years ago, its commercial importance dates its origin only about twelve years back. It is built upon a sandy plain, broken by small lagoons, and sheltered on the north by a high hill. It is situated on the margin of a pretty bay, which abounds in fish; but is rendered inaccessible except to very small vessels, by a sand bar which stretches entirely across its entrance, and upon which, in gales, the sea breaks violently.

The houses are all white, one story high, and built of adobes. The style of architecture is that which is common in all parts of Spanish America. A large proportion of the inhabitants are lodged in straw cabins, and live almost without what we consider the common necessities of life. Water is not easily procurable for ships, and fruit and vegetables are extremely scarce; pumpkins, beans and bananas are the only things of the sort found in the market.



Since the year 1824 or 1825, a very lucrative trade has been carried on at Mazatlán in American and European goods, which are consumed by the inhabitants of the departments of Cinaloa and Sonora, who are chiefly miners. The only exports are silver in bullion and a small quantity of Brazil wood.

We found two American merchants established in this miserable spot, and during our stay we had every reason to be gratified by the hospitable attentions extended to us. Early on a Sunday morning, the day after our arrival, one of these gentlemen sent on board to request me to visit a lady who was dangerously ill, and whose case admitted of no delay. I accompanied the messenger on shore and to the house of the patient. I was received by the family in the drawing-room, and at their request read a short statement of the case, which had been prepared by the attending physician. From it, I at once decided in my mind, that the lady, a sister-in-law of a distinguished Mexican General, must be in a very critical situation, if not beyond the art of medicine. She was young and handsome, the idol of her friends, and had been married scarcely a year. After reading the statement, which was in itself enough to convict the writer of gross mal-practice, I was requested to see the patient.

I followed to a door, which, on knocking gently, was opened just wide enough for a young man to pass out his head. On perceiving me, he opened it, and admitted me; but turned away the patient's sister, who had been my conductor. At first, I could scarcely see where I was, and some moments elapsed before I had gained my sight. I then found myself in a closed room, dimly lighted by a slender tallow candle. I was seated with the doctor near a handsomely curtained bed. At the opposite end of the apartment, two or three females, probably neighbors, were speaking very cheerfully in loud whispers.

After taking two or three hearty puffs at his cigar, as if to ensure its inflammation while talking, the doctor began; "Puez Señor, esta Señora—Well, sir, this lady;" and went on to state in prolix detail, that his patient, who had been *en cinta* for eight months, was attacked four or five days previously, with ague and fever, and, seeing no other possible means of relieving her of the disease, he had resorted to mechanical means and provoked parturition. This part of the treatment had been easily accomplished, but *por acaso—by chance*, the fever became remittent, and then continued, accompanied by mania and convulsions. When he concluded the history I inquired, "Well, sir, how is the lady now?"



"Puez Hombre! ya se ha muerto dos horas, en unas convulsiones espantâbles—Why, man! she died two hours ago, in frightful convulsions."

"The family does not know it?"

"No, Señor, and I do not intend to tell them yet."

I was silent in astonishment. As the doctor ceased speaking, he rose and requested me to look for myself. I followed to the bed. He raised the curtain, and with perfect sang froid filliped the nose of his late patient. I beheld the body of the deceased, bearing evident signs of a violent death. The arms had been blistered from the wrists to the shoulders, and the doctor declared that he had applied blisters wherever he could possibly place them; "but as you see, Señor, it was no use," shrugging his shoulders, drawing down the corners of his mouth, and throwing his head to one side, by which peculiar gesture he designed to say he had done his best, and there was no help.

He then stated, that in order to spare the family the shock which they must experience, to be suddenly informed of the lady's death, he wished to impart to them the sad intelligence by degrees. I was too much disgusted to speak; but left the apartment, followed by the professional man. The family awaited us in the drawing-room, and by looks rather than words, inquired my opinion. I could only regret I had arrived at too late a period to be of any service.

"It is my opinion," interrupted the doctor, "that there is no hope—indeed, the disease has reached a crisis. You see there was, (counting on his fingers) first, intermittent fever, then remittent fever, then continued fever, upon which supervened gastritis, enteritis, hepatitis, peritonitis and a nervous grade of typhus fever, for which the most active stimulants were indicated. This you know, Señor, is a critical day, the ninth, and it is my settled opinion that she must die precisely at eleven o'clock—à las once en punto.—" It was then nine. I said not a word, but took my leave, filled with disgust and indignation at the barefaced ignorance, and knavish effrontery practised before me.

The prognostic of the doctor, very much to his credit, of course proved true; and about twelve o'clock, invitations were issued to attend the funeral, to take place at sunset the same day. About five o'clock, P. M. a number of gentlemen, all neatly dressed in black, gathered in front of the house, each one armed with a spermaceti candle.

At the appointed hour the body was placed upon a bedstead, very



tastefully ornamented with black plumes, flowers and white lace, and borne on men's shoulders to the place of interment, preceded by a large company of gentlemen, but no ladies. They formed a single file on each side of the street, each bearing a candle, which was now lighted. The burial ground was half a mile distant. It was just sunset. No priest was present to perform the service of the dead, and it is very remarkable, that in a catholic town, where the population was estimated at four thousand, there is neither priest nor church. The remains of the lady were deposited in solemn silence on a hill-side, and after the grave was filled up, the company dispersed.

The Sabbath is in no manner observed at Mazatlán, unless it be that the evening is devoted to the fandango, which is publicly danced beneath a shed in the suburbs, where most of the population resort. The ground is covered by tables of *bon-bons*, illuminated by paper lanterns; and what with music, and lights, and dancing, the scene is not wanting either in mirth or interest.

P. S. Since the above was written, the ports of Huatulco Manzanilla, Natividad, Mazatlán, La Paz, Loreto, San Diego, and San Francisco have been closed to foreign commerce, by a decree of the Mexican government, to take effect six months after March 2nd, 1837.

---

## CHAPTER XLIX.

### SKETCHES IN MEXICO.

*November, 1836.*

AT sunset, on the 15th of November, the Peacock got under way; and on the 18th, at half past eight o'clock A. M., anchored in the roads of San Blas, situated in latitude  $21^{\circ} 30'$  north, and  $104^{\circ} 50'$  west longitude.

At this point the coast forms a deep bend or cove, but in extent too great to give much shelter to the anchorage, which at certain seasons is considered unsafe. The shore, as far as the eye can reach along the coast, presents a plain, varying from ten to fifteen miles in



breadth, and extending between a point a little to the southward of Mazatlán to cape Corrientes, a distance of nearly two hundred and fifty miles. A chain of mountains, averaging four thousand feet high, forms the limits of the plain on the east, while the west is laved by the waters of the Pacific. It is covered by a luxuriant vegetation and a variety of trees; and throughout its extent is watered by numerous rivers, the largest called Santiago, which take their rise in the mountains above alluded to. In many places near the sea, the flooding tide permeates the loose sandy soil, and, rising to the surface, forms marshes and lagoons, which, under a tropical sun, become fruitful sources of miasmatic exhalations. Accordingly, we find, at the conclusion of the rainy season, which is from June until October, that intermittents, dysentery and typhoid fevers prevail to a great extent, and San Blas is almost entirely deserted.

The town of San Blas is hidden from the anchorage in a forest of closely growing trees. It is situated about two hundred yards from the landing, which is up a strait or sound, a quarter of a mile from the sea. The houses are generally mean, cheerless huts, and the streets are narrow and sandy. Its population seldom exceeds one thousand souls.

The view from the ship is pleasant; the leafy green of the plain, bounded by long white sand beaches, broken occasionally by rocky hills, rising from the surface, and the mountains in the back ground, half concealed in vapory clouds, form a scene far more cheerful than that at Mazatlán.

The shores abound in a great variety of beautiful shells. The *Venus dione* is found in great numbers; and the common people, as well as some intelligent foreigners, state that they are found in greater abundance in some seasons than in others. Of this fact there seems to be little question; and we might infer therefrom that they are migratory in their habits and resort to the shores for the purpose of procreation.

The commerce of the place, being the chief port of the department of Guadalupe, which contains a large population, is considerable. Its exports consist entirely of bullion, which is smuggled on board of English men-of-war, one visiting the port yearly about the month of February for the purpose.

In the prosperous days of the Mexican viceroys, San Blas, known in early times, probably, as the port of Xalisco, was of considerable importance. It had a dock-yard, and arsenals provided with stores for building and refitting vessels, the ruins of which establishment



are still seen. But it was not until after the commencement of the revolution of Mexico that it enjoyed any commercial consideration. When Vera Cruz and the Atlantic ports were in the power of the Spaniards, in order to supply themselves with foreign productions, the patriots opened a trade from Chagres and Porto Bello over land to Panamá, and thence to San Blas, whence goods were transported to Tepic, Guadalajara, Mexico, and indeed throughout the Republic. This over land commerce was expensive, and in order to lessen the cost of goods to the consumer, the ports of Mazatlán and Guaymas were resorted to by many vessels. But as the state of things which led to this indirect commerce no longer exists, the value and extent of the trade have dwindled away, because the population of the districts of Mexico bordering the Pacific is too small, too poor and too little refined to consume any considerable supplies, brought direct from India and China, or around Cape Horn. Two or three entire cargoes a year would probably supply the demand: more than this would scarcely yield a profit.

One of the objects of our visit to San Blas, was to land an officer who had been long in ill health. He was too feeble to sit a horse or mule, and it was therefore necessary that he should be transported to Tepic in a litter. After some little difficulty, we mustered twelve men, who agreed to carry the litter for one hundred and eight dollars: though they were then idle, and usually worked for less than a dollar a day, they thought nine times this sum was small compensation for two days' labor.

On Saturday, the 19th of November, at twenty minutes past two o'clock, P. M., we set off. The road led over a plain, many places knee deep in mud and water; at best it is only a rough bridle-path, shaded by the branches of trees, thickly growing on each side, and interlocking over head. At night we were favored by a bright moon, but this did not protect us from disagreeable incidents. Sand-flies and mosquitos assailed us from all sides, and in one place we rode a mile through a swamp knee deep to the horses. Here one of the baggage-mules strayed into the thicket, which caused some delay. The woods rang with the maledictory shouts of the muleteer and the encouraging cries of the litter-bearers, and for twenty minutes the sand-flies and mosquitos performed their *divertissemens piquans*, much to our annoyance and expense. At last the mule made his appearance, moving at a leisurely pace, in spite of cudgeling and curses, which, from long habit, he had learned to bear with meek indifference.

It was now eight o'clock at night, and we again moved on, en-



couraged by the declarations of the muleteer, as well as of the guide, that we had not more than a league and a half to ride, before we should reach the halting place for the night. We crossed a deep brook, and found ourselves on firmer ground and on a better road; and, with the view of making all ready for the reception of our sick friend, pushed on at a trot. This league and a half led us past several ranchos, where we were saluted by dogs; and it was eleven o'clock before we reached what is termed the Rancho de Manuela, a miserable farm house, where travellers usually stop, but where they obtain very little accommodation. We entered the ruined gate, and found several men, rolled in their sarapes,—a long poncho—sleeping on the ground in front of the house. At a few yards distant from them, was placed a number of pack saddles, ranged in regular lines, guarded by dogs. We were directed to call at a hut of the establishment, on our right, where the hostess had retired for the night. Our guide explained our situation and our wants, and after some little delay she opened the door,—a fat, nut brown widow of forty,—and issued forth with a candle in her hand, which, for a moment, she held above her head to see what manner of guests we were, and then crossed the area to the main building. We found two or three stout muleteers asleep in the apartment, but the hostess compelled them to vacate in our favor, and then retired, leaving us the light. Antonio, our guide, a thin-visaged, half Indian person, bustled about, unsaddled our horses, and made a fire; and soon after the arrival of our sick friend, gave us some tea and fresh eggs, which, added to sundries from our scrip, furnished forth no despicable repast to men whose appetite had grown on a long fast, stimulated by a ride of ten leagues.

The floor was the hard-beaten earth. Our apartment contained, besides a rude table and three or four heavy chairs, three board platforms, which were to be our beds, unless we came provided. It was long past midnight before we retired, and when the candle was extinguished, the moon found her way through the walls, which were composed of upright posts, driven into the ground. Our beds were hard; the air was rather cool; mosquitos, sand-flies, and fleas, were heard and felt; yet, in spite of all, we fell asleep, lulled by the sound of our horses and mules, discussing their fodder and corn only a few feet from us.

At four o'clock the next morning, the watchful Antonio brought a light, and roused us to prepare to set forward again. A breakfast of Pouchong and eggs, fresh as the morning, and boiled not a single



bubble too much, was placed before us; and by the time we had finished our meal, and got the horses saddled, the moon and stars had faded from the skies, and it was broad day light. Our sick friend set forward in his litter, and we remained to bring up the baggage-mules.

The muleteers were now on their feet; and while some were rubbing sleep from their eyes, others were loading their beasts. Close to a shed, near the gate, stood a well-conditioned mule, with the reins hanging on the ground, looking as if he had been unwillingly deprived of slumber. The trappings and ornamented caparisons of the animal showed that the master was a man well to do in the world, and who cared a good deal for comfort and something for appearances. Presently, he issued from the rancho, and stood smoking a paper cigar, the end bent downwards, while he cast a thoughtful glance towards the rising sun. This individual was not more than five feet six inches in height, but well proportioned, and his frame promised strength and activity. A broad-brimmed, low-crowned hat of felt, ornamented by three turns of a jaunty gold cord, shaded a deeply bronzed face. His eyes were sharp, and surmounted by heavy black brows; the upper lip sustained proudly a pair of curling mustaches, and the growth upon his chin indicated that he had been on the road more than a day. The costume was to us novel. A jacket of embossed russet leather, very short in its fashion, ornamented with silver buttons; a pair of overalls of the same material, cut at bottom so wide as to be the length of the foot, were sustained by a red silk sash above the waist, allowing the shirt to appear between it and the jacket, and a pair of huge silver spurs rattled at his heels. A long straight sword hung from hip to heel, which might have served a Paladin; it was evidently for service: the scabbard was of plain black leather, and a thong or noose of the same, to secure it to the wrist, swung from the hilt.

"I should expect to find a bandit in such a man," said my companion; and I wondered what he could be waiting for. At that moment he made a slight salutatory inclination of the head. I advanced towards him, saying, "You have a fine macho there, Señor?"

"Yes, Señor, the beast is not a bad one, and—raising his hat high above his head—very much at your service."

After accepting his invitation to take "*un traguito de mascàl por las nieblas de la mañana*—a small swallow of mascàl for the morning fogs," he informed me in the course of conversation, that he resided near Tepic, and was on his way to Santiago, with his mules,



laden with corn. He kindly suggested that we should stop at his house to rest, and requested that we would demand there whatever we might desire.

Our muleteer had already disappeared up the mountain side, and Antonio called us to mount. We obeyed the summons, and, receiving the god-speed of the traveller, followed. The character of the road had entirely changed. The path, still shaded by trees, chiefly of the *Acacia* tribe, was rugged and frequently interrupted by boulders of porphyritic stone. Our progress was necessarily slow, and gave us full time to listen to the stories of Antonio, or the song of our muleteer, in which he frequently stopped short to bestow a blow of his cudgel, and some round objurgations, to mend the pace of his mules. In spite of all his epithets and beating, the animals were stimulated only for a short time, and relapsing in their leisurely steps, again required their application.

Antonio rode on before, mounted upon a thin gray mare. His entire dress consisted of a pair of duck trousers, a cotton shirt which revealed his tawny skin in several places about the shoulders, and a broad-brimmed hat slouched over his face. His stirrups were very short, and one naked heel was armed with an iron spur, which was pretty constantly used, and he seemed buried almost to the shoulders in bags, and cloaks, and bottles, that were secured to the saddle. I soon discovered that Antonio was the only leech in San Blas, and possessed of all the gossip of the road. Every one who met us seemed right glad to see him, and saluted him with the kindly appellation of "*compadre*"—friend or god-father. We passed many rude crosses, set up on heaps of stones by the way-side, to commemorate the perpetration of murder on the spot, and Antonio was ever ready to recount the history of these sad events, the most recent of which had taken place more than fifteen years back, at a time when this road, called *El Espino*, was frequently travelled by mules laden with treasure.

Though we frequently descended into valleys, the ascent was continuous. At eleven o'clock, A. M. we entered a scattering village, named *La Presa*, or *Rancho de Gutierrez*, situated in a barren vale; and here it was determined, that we should breakfast. But the place could boast no inn, no house of common resort, and in order to find some spot where to bivouac, Antonio rode from hut to hut, inquiring whether they had any eggs, and at each one generally obtained a few. When his hat was full, he halted before a rancho, which promised most accommodation, and requested permission to cook the eggs as



well as to take shelter beneath a shed of thatch in front. This was hospitably conceded, and we at once dismounted.

The host and hostess were sitting upon a dry bull hide spread on the ground, alternately scrutinizing each other's heads, while their fingers held aside their uncombed locks to facilitate the operation. Both rose, and the man brought us seats, while the woman, more thoughtful of our wants, called two or three boys, and with their aid succeeded in cornering two or three half-grown chickens, which she speedily had frying over a fire. By the time our sick friend had come up, breakfast was ready, but the house furnished forth few appliances of the table; one tumbler, one tea-cup, two knives, and a half dozen plates, being all we could muster. While eating, a number of lank curs gathered around, and almost took the food from the table in spite of us. The misery of the poor in Spanish countries may be estimated with tolerable accuracy, by the number of dogs they entertain.

No sooner had the litter bearers arrived, than they sat down upon the ground a few feet from us, and made their breakfast of thin cakes of maize, tortillas, and *charque*—jerked beef—toasted over a fire. These provisions each one had tied in a handkerchief; and the bundles were all carried together in panniers on a jackass. When they had finished their humble fare, they stretched themselves on the ground in the shade, smoked paper cigars, and chatted cheerfully, till they fell asleep.

Just as we finished our meal, a lieutenant of the Mexican army, attended by a servant and a lancer, rode up to the hut and requested to be accommodated with breakfast. The costume of Mexico is picturesque. This gentleman wore a broad-brimmed glazed hat, with a silver stud upon one side of it, a short jacket, a pair of overalls trimmed with round silver buttons from the hips to the heels, which were armed with large spurs. No sooner had he alighted than these were removed by his servant. The horses were unsaddled, and the party sat down and began smoking paper cigars. He had left Tepic four hours before, and was on his way to Santiago. He remarked, that in order to avoid the bad effects of the cold mountain winds upon our sick friend, we ought not to enter Tepic in the evening, and if we were forced to do it, we should be "*medio trastornado de aguardiente*—half upset with brandy."

At one o'clock we again set off, leaving the Mexican at breakfast, and soon began to ascend the side of a barren hill. Half way up we passed a collection of huts, called "*el pueblo de Lajitas*." The



road was now much more frequented, and we met numbers of droves of mules laden with corn. One mule at least in each drove carried a small stone tray, used in making tortillas, having legs of such length that when set upon a level, the tray itself stood at an inclined plane with the horizon. Later in the evening we saw the bivouacs of the muleteers by the road; the pack-saddles were ranged in a row by the way-side, and while the men were caring for their mules or lying on the ground smoking paper cigars, the women were making tortillas.

To make tortillas, almost the only bread used in this part of the country, the corn is first infused in cold water with a small portion of lime, to remove the outer coat or pericarp. It is then placed upon the stone tray, and the woman kneeling in front, by the aid of a stone cut for the purpose, reduces it to a paste, which is then beaten to a proper thickness between the palms, and baked upon a stone girdle.

When we reached the summit of the hill upon which Lajitas is situated, we looked back, and being at least three thousand feet above the level of the sea, had a bird's-eye view of the plain we had traversed the evening before. It appeared of a dark green, with here and there a patch of white sand, or a silvery thread of water meandering towards the sea. One or two islands upon the coast were dimly seen, and the horizon seemed to be formed in a line whereon were blended the plain, the ocean, and sky.

The valleys in sight now began to wear the smiling features of cultivation, and Palo Alto and La Meda, two picturesquely situated hamlets, presented a cheerful and comparatively thriving appearance. The little fruit shops and tippling shops were open; the usual work was going forward; and nothing indicated that the day was the Sabbath. We now came in sight of a depression or gap in the mountain chain—in the Alps termed a *col*—through which the road disappeared from our view. On our right the mountain of San Juan rose slopingly, perhaps, two thousand five hundred feet above the road, but the elevation to the left was very much less. The peak of San Juan was clothed in green to its summit, which is, according to Captain Beechey, by trigonometrical measurement six thousand two hundred and thirty feet above the level of the sea. Just beyond this *col*, Antonio informed us, was Tepic, and as we had ridden at a pretty good pace, we were in advance of our sick friend. We, therefore halted, and sat down by the road-side, where Antonio interested us for an hour with a detailed account of a French seaman,



whom I had seen at San Blas. He had been disemboweled by a knife, in an affray with a Mexican, three weeks before, and the intestine had not been replaced. Antonio declared that he did not know what to do in such a case, but knowing that brandy was good for fresh wounds, he had washed this one freely, and bound it up with a bandage; but the Frenchman, impatient of the pain, very soon removed it. When I saw the case, it was in my opinion hopeless.

At sunset my sick friend came up, and we pushed on. The moon, nearly at her full, rose very clear, and when we descended upon the plain of Tepic, I was almost certain we were riding upon a bed of chalk. We were informed that it was marle. The road was crossed in several places by broad ravines, from twenty to forty feet in depth, with perpendicular sides, which had been formed, evidently, by torrents. In one or two places, the road ran along the bottom of these ravines for a mile. In passing the *col*, or mountain gap, the soil was softer than it was in any part of the road which approached San Juan from San Blas, after leaving La Presa. This would seem to be in accordance with the remarks of Mr. Robert Bakewell in relation to the Alps.\*

When about three miles off, we saw a white haze, which Antonio said hung over the town. At seven o'clock we entered Tepic, and were followed by hundreds of dogs, all barking and growling, and snapping at our horses' heels, as we rode through the streets to the corner of the plaza, where we were hospitably received and entertained in the house of our countryman, Mr. J. L. Kennedy. Our sick friend had not suffered by the journey, which by the road of El Espino is at least seventy miles. The other road, called Los palos de tres Marias is fifty miles; but is so narrow that a litter could not pass. The bearers had kept up with us remarkably well, and on their arrival manifested signs of very little fatigue.

The city of Tepic stands on a plain, forming the bottom of a plateau or basin, nearly surrounded by mountains. The soil is fertile, and the surrounding scenery agreeable. The city, according to Captain Beechey, is two thousand nine hundred feet above the sea, in  $21^{\circ} 30' 42''$  north latitude, and twenty-two miles in a direct line to the eastward of San Blas, though more than double that distance by either road. At present, it is estimated to contain from ten to twelve thousand inhabitants. The streets are paved, and cross at right angles. Most of the houses are but one story high. The

\* Bakewell's Geology, p. 353. New Haven, 1833.



plaza, or public square, has a portico on one side of it, and the church on the other, and is ornamented by trees and stone seats in their shade. The town contains a theatre and a cock-pit, and the people are famed for hospitality and sociability.

Tepic was founded towards the close of the seventeenth century, at the time of establishing the dock-yard or marine department at San Blas, as a place of resort for the officers during the rainy and sickly seasons. But Tepic does not boast a climate remarkable for salubrity. There are several swamps and lagoons in its vicinity, and, at certain seasons, it is obnoxious to marsh fevers of a typhoid character, intermittents and dysenteries. Yet at a short distance of two leagues, there is an ancient Indian village, Xalisco, which is so healthy as to be the resort of invalids from Tepic. The temperature at this season ranges from 60° to 70° F.

The day of our arrival was a feast day of the church, and the whole world had gone to Xalisco to celebrate it in a bull-bait and ball; and the next day being rainy they did not return, so we saw Tepic under unfavourable circumstances. The following day, however, we rode to Xalisco. We mounted at six o'clock A. M. and found the morning pleasant, and the ride agreeable. At the entrance of the village we passed the plaza de toros, which had been temporarily erected for the occasion, of palm leaves and branches; and if we may believe those who were present, answered the purpose of the entertainment admirably well. We visited the church, and were showed a stone in the wall, bearing a very perfect foot track, which is said to be that of San Matias. This impression was probably made when the stone, the character of which was concealed beneath a coat of white-wash, was soft. The population of Xalisco does not exceed fifteen hundred. It is pleasantly situated, and is supplied with water from a mountain by a wooden conduit, several miles in length, supported on posts about five feet high.

We breakfasted with the British consul, Mr. Barron and his interesting family, and at twelve o'clock took leave of them, regretting that we were not allowed a longer time to enjoy their very agreeable society. In order to spare our horses, Mr. Barron very kindly sent us to town in his carriage, drawn by seven mules, guided by two postillions.

At two o'clock, P. M. we took leave of Tepic, and returned by the shorter road of Los Palos, and reached Manuela at eight o'clock. We found a party of muleteers in the apartment we had occupied in the rancho, gambling at cards for copper cuartillos, the fourth part of



twelve and a half cents. Our hostess cleared the apartment, telling them, that some "caballeros decentes—decent gentlemen," wanted it. They retreated, muttering a little, but were speedily seated round a dry bull hide upon the ground in the open air, where they resumed their game by the dim light of a tallow candle. The lady of Manuela made many kind inquiries about our sick friend, and soon gave us a very good supper, after which we retired to sleep without bed or bedding. The blithe humor of the hostess encouraged me to beg something to make my bed on the boards a little more comfortable, and she cheerfully complied with the request, remarking at the same time, that we ought never to travel without a blanket or a sarape at least. She departed, and in a few minutes returned with a bull hide, which she spread on the boards for a bed, and over it a sarape. It is true I fell asleep in spite of fleas, sand flies and mosquitos, and the incessant champ, champ, of our horses feeding close at hand; but in the morning I was not clearly satisfied that a dry bull hide is a better bed than a soft plank.

At four o'clock the next morning we were on the road. It had rained heavily in the night; the moon had not yet set, and we travelled by her light until her beams were dissipated by those of the morning sun. After a ride of ten leagues we reached San Blas, at ten o'clock, A. M., and at once embarked.



## CHAPTER L.

## SKETCHES IN MEXICO.

*December, 1836.*

ON the twenty third of November, at one o'clock, P. M., we made sail for Acapulco, in order to fill up with water, which on no other part of this coast is to be had without difficulty; here it is of an excellent quality and easily obtained.

The winds were light, and we had occasional showers. On the second of December, we were becalmed in sight of the shore, which, close to the sea was richly verdant in cultivated fields, and in the rear, the mountains rose at least 10,000 feet high. At half past eleven o'clock the next morning, we anchored in the harbor of Acapulco, so celebrated in the palmy days of Spain, as the port of her richly freighted galleons, that swept the Pacific between Mexico and Manila. The season of their arrival and sojourn here, was held as a fair, at which assembled the wealthy and the beautiful from all parts of Mexico. Here the silver of her mines and the cochineal of her fields of cactus were exchanged for the spices and muslins of India, the silks and fabrics of China, and the tobacco of the Philippines. On those occasions the little town of Acapulco was enlivened by feasts and dancing, and all was holyday. But Time, which changes all things, has also changed this. Since 1817, no galeon has appeared in this beautiful bay, which is shut in from all winds by mountains of granite, several hundred feet high. Their sides are clothed in the richest green; and the margins of these ever peaceful waters abound in an almost endless variety of moluscous animals. Since the commencement of the revolution, Acapulco has been the scene of a constant succession of war, siege and famine; and at present its com-



merce is at the lowest ebb, being seldom visited except by a few trifling coasters.

The town, which is surrounded by swamps and stagnant pools in the neighborhood, is small, miserable, and unhealthy at certain seasons. Its population is now estimated at 3,000, which it is asserted, is greater than it ever was, at any time, previous to the political separation of Mexico from Spain. With a few exceptions, the inhabitants are descended from Chinese, Malays, Mexican aborigines, negroes and Europeans, all promiscuously mingled, forming a small, feeble race of very poor people.

The place is defended by a castle which was once, like all Spanish fortresses, thought to be impregnable; but sieges, earthquakes, and neglect have left it a mere ruin. According to a statement of the governor, the guns were overturned in attempting to return our salute, but we were afterwards told, that after firing seven guns, all the powder was expended, and His Excellency thought it would appear more respectable to say, the guns were dismounted, and, therefore, no more could be fired.

Bowditch lays down Acapulco in  $16^{\circ} 55' N.$  and  $100^{\circ} 54'$  longitude west; but according to our reckoning, it is  $16^{\circ} 51' 30''$  north, and in longitude  $100^{\circ} 8'$  west from Greenwich, differing not only from Bowditch but from Arrowsmith's charts, which we found, as well as every one who visits the coast, to be very far in error, not only at this point, but along the whole Mexican coast.

One morning, I visited the shore before daylight. The church was open; bells were ringing, and rockets were firing in celebration of the day of "la purisima concepcion." A small altar was placed in the door-way, before which the Cura was officiating in his robes, though the day was not yet fairly broken. More than a hundred people of all ages and sexes, were seen kneeling in groups upon the ground in front of the church; while others, at a little distance, were standing respectfully uncovered, with their ponchos or sarapes closely wrapped about them. Those who were kneeling, placed their broad felt hats behind them upon their legs; and beside almost every female was a plate containing a few coppers. The picture was filled up by the mules and asses of the market people, standing here and there, half asleep, among the several groups. The service lasted till sunrise, and when it ended with the merry peal of bells, the scene suddenly changed. The market people spread out what they had for sale, and the women seized their plates and coppers,



and went to purchasing, and the men sauntered about smoking cigars.

Smoking tobacco is universal with both sexes. Visiting on one occasion a high officer of the government, I found him and his wife in the same hammock, while the children were running about the room, and all the family smoking. One little girl, only three years and two months old, was smoking a Guayaquil cigar, at least four inches long, and apparently with gusto. I know it is the practice of most travellers to condemn the use of tobacco in all forms in all countries, but I fear their strictures will do little to change a habit which is so universal. Staunton tells us, there is no record of tobacco having been introduced into China, and we are informed, that the Portuguese met with it on their first visit to Java. It is now used throughout Asia, Africa, America, and in a great part of Europe. If it were truly indigenous to America alone, it has spread over the world with an astounding rapidity, for its use is now more general than that of tea. We know that tobacco was first introduced into Europe from America; but it was probably known in Asia long before the voyages of Columbus were undertaken. If smoking cigars be a sin,—God help the wicked.

The market of Acapulco affords a variety of vegetables and fruits, as pumpkins, onions, sweet potatoes, (which when boiled are of a deep purple color,) tomatoes, peppers, limes, sweet lemons, pine-apples, oranges, bananas, melons, guayavas, &c., but not in great abundance, nor at a cheap rate. The beef is good, and the poultry obtained here, for richness of flavor, is probably not equalled in any part of the world.

As at the other ports of Mexico which we had visited, we here found the colors flying at half mast, in sympathy for the more than half fallen fortunes of General Santa Ana. Yet to hear some of the Mexicans upon this coast speak of him, one might suppose he had not a friend in the republic.

From the earliest struggle for her independence, Mexico has been unfortunate in her leading men. With some few exceptions, they have proved the hasty exclamation of Dr. Johnson, that "patriotism is the last refuge of a scoundrel," to have some foundation in truth. It has but too frequently happened, that not the nation's good, but personal wealth and éclat have been the objects aimed at by this class of great men. But they have been often mal-adroit; and at the moment they fancied themselves on the very brink of fortune,



the tyranny and injustice of their acts towards the people have recoiled upon themselves; for there is a point in oppression beyond which the people of no country will bear, and they have been precipitated from the height of power, to expiate their crimes upon a scaffold, or in a gloomy exile. This shows that public virtue still exists, though it struggle with numerous instances of private vice and degeneracy.

But it has not been in her leading men alone that Mexico has been unfortunate. Her custom-house officers are notoriously open to bribes. The duties are so exorbitant on foreign merchandise that no commerce paying them can thrive; and the officers of the customs, aware of this, very patriotically make such arrangements with supercargoes arriving in their ports as will secure a profit to the merchant, and something for the republic, as they emphatically style it, and no less for themselves. The naval and military officers are said to be no less discerning of their own interests at least. I have been assured that commanding officers of marine establishments are wont to sell the public stores in their charge to private vessels, and consider the proceeds as the perquisites of office. Officers of the army commanding posts have done no less. An English gentleman, who has been long in the country, engaged in mining, told me that, on one occasion, he purchased some powder for blasting, and, in a few minutes afterwards, met the commander of the place, with whom he was on intimate terms.

"Amigo," exclaimed the soldier, "sois mui ingrato en no dar à mi la preferencia—Friend, in not giving me the preference, you have been ungrateful."

"The preference in what?"

"In the powder."

"I did not know you had powder for sale."

"But I have though, in the arsenal, when a friend wants to buy; I would have sold to you at half price."

A governor of a place on this coast actually offered to sell, to the master of an American merchant ship, the brass guns of the fortress under his command.

The officers of the Mexican government, along the coast of the Pacific, are generally ignorant, and, in their deportment, tyrannical and overbearing. The Governor of Acapulco is a man who has risen from the rank and file of the army through his personal courage; he can neither read nor write. Public and private virtue, among them, is only a name, but urbanity is every thing. Though the Mexican



officer would pillage the government, he would never be guilty of a breach of decorum or etiquette; and, to send him a despatch, written on paper, without a proper margin, the width of which must be one-fourth or one-half of the sheet, according to the rank of the individual to whom it is addressed, would, probably, wound his honor more than to call him scoundrel, or tweak his nose.

Though this be not the character of the Mexicans in general, it is to be feared that such is its hue in but too many instances. Of course, there are thousands belonging to the republic whose morals are unimpeachable; but such men, I am assured by many who have had ample opportunities of knowing, are not found in the public offices: they live in retirement, lamenting the evils they cannot remedy.

Dark and melancholy is the present condition of Mexico; and the prospect of a better state of things seems to be almost as far distant as at the moment of her first taking up arms. Her limits embrace an extended territory, rich in mineral and agricultural wealth; but the population is lazy, ignorant, and, what is worse, mismanaged. Religion is at a low ebb, and education has not been long enough attended to for its beneficial effects to be sensibly felt. Her trade, compared with what it might be, is nothing. Indeed, it is impossible for the commerce of a state, weighed down by the chains of tyranny and misrule, to flourish amidst disturbances, caused by frequent revolution and anarchy. Industry thrives only when sheltered by peace; she shrinks from servitude. Genius languishes without the incentive of emulation, and expires when deprived of the pabulum of hope. There can be neither emulation nor hope where propriety and morality are not duly respected. Nothing can be a better eulogium on civil liberty, nor better show the necessity of guarantee to the rights of man than the fact, that it is impossible for man to toil successfully when his labors go solely to enrich hard masters, or tyrannical and impolitic rulers. Then, how can we expect Mexico to prosper till she be regenerated, by education, to a sense of her own condition?

These remarks may be harsh, but the reader will bear in mind they are general, and there are many, very many, bright exceptions to what has been censured. I have aimed at truth, and I believe I have hit the mark; and if I have inflicted a wound on any individual, I can only declare,

“No levell'd malice  
Infects one coma in the course I hold——”



CONCLUSION.



CONCLUSION



## CHAPTER LI.

*November, 1837.*

ON the 11th day of December, 1836, we set sail from Acapulco, and stood to the southward. The wind was light, the weather rainy and unpleasant; and, a few days after sailing, an epidemic typhoid fever appeared on board, which yielded, in every case, to the plan of treatment adopted. On the 27th we crossed the equator in 88° west longitude, and on the 3d of January, 1837, anchored at Payta, whence we sailed again on the 5th. After a tedious passage of twenty days, we arrived at Callao, and found that a war was waging between Chile and Peru, and the port blockaded by a Chilian squadron, under the command of Admiral Blanco. Owing to the period of enlistment of her crew having expired, the U. S. frigate *Brandywine*, Commodore Wadsworth, had sailed, a few days previously, for the United States, leaving our interests to the protection of the U. S. schooner *Boxer*, Lieutenant Commandant, Hugh N. Page, absent on the leeward coast of Peru.

Almost immediately after our arrival at Callao, the following communications were made to Commodore Kennedy, and we were obliged to assume the protection of our interests upon the coast, at a time when all were anxious to return to the United States. But it is vain to complain that a sailor's life is a dog's life, though we feel it so at this moment; for, "*cojegera de perro y lagrimas de muger no valen nada.*"

"LEGATION OF THE UNITED STATES.

*Lima, January 28th, 1837.*

SIR,

"I do myself the honor to lay before you a copy of a letter of this date, addressed to me by the principal commercial houses in this place, requesting my good offices with you to procure a detention of the naval force under your command, until the present difficulties



between Chile and Peru are adjusted, or there be a certainty of the early arrival of some other public vessel, competent to afford the necessary protection to our interest here.

“Without entering into all the motives set forth in the letter alluded to, for desiring the presence of your force, or intending to be understood as fully sanctioning some of them, I most cordially and unhesitatingly join in the request, that, if in your estimation it be not incompatible with other paramount objects of public service, (which, under existing circumstances, would seem difficult,) you would consent to remain at Callao until the arrival of the expected relief squadron, or of some one or more of its vessels, capable of giving to our valuable interests here the desirable security; and I think, that in so doing, you will render an important service to our commerce and common country.

I have the honor to be,

With great respect,

Your obedient servant,

SAMUEL LARNED.

TO COMMODORE EDMUND P. KENNEDY,

Commanding the U. States Naval Forces in the Pacific.”

“*Lima, January 28, 1837.*

SIR,

“The arrival of the United States Ship Peacock, at a moment so fraught with danger to neutral interests, and when, by the unavoidable departure of the Brandywine, we have been left without any efficient protection for the large amount of American property now on the coast, and shortly expected, induces us to hope, that we will not again be left unprotected, and that by a representation to Commodore Kennedy, of our situation, and of the state of affairs between Chile and Peru, he will consent to postpone, for the present, his departure from Callao.

“By last accounts from Valparaiso, war had been declared by Chile against Peru, and we have every reason to fear, that the former will soon endeavor to establish a blockade of the principal Peruvian ports.

“Several Chilian vessels of war are on the coast; some are at anchor in the Bay of Callao; others are watching the Peruvian vessels shut up in Guyaquil; so that, in case a blockade be declared, we have no hope of its being raised by any force which Peru can now oppose to the enemy's squadron.



"Most of the American vessels trading to this coast, bring a large portion of their cargoes adapted to the Lima market, and some are daily expected, known to have valuable cargoes, purchased expressly for this place. If they be turned off from Callao, the goods must be deposited at great expense and imminent risk at other ports; and, perhaps, many of them of a perishable nature, be entirely lost before they can be again brought to this market.

"It is also generally believed, that the French will not allow an immediate blockade;—and we might, in event of being without an efficient naval force, have the mortification of seeing vessels of other nations convoyed in, and those bearing our flag turned away, for want of a force to cause our rights to be respected. We deem it, moreover, extremely dangerous, at all times, to see many vessels cruising under the flags of these countries; their inability to officer them properly, and pay them punctually, always rendering their neighborhood a common danger to all who are unprotected, or weaker than themselves.

"We are aware that the Peacock is on her way home, from a long and arduous cruise; that her officers and men had no idea of being detained long here; and that the Commodore must naturally feel anxious to submit to our government the important results obtained by his cruise. But, at the same time, we are too well aware of his devotedness to the service of his countrymen, to doubt, for a moment, his desire of protecting their interests whenever he may find them in danger; and that if it be possible for him to delay his departure from Callao until the difficulties between Chile and Peru be adjusted, or until there be a certainty of the early arrival of some other American vessel of war, competent to our protection, that he will do so for the reasons already stated.

"It is with this view that we have the honor to address you, and respectfully to request, that you will use your exertions with Commodore Kennedy to induce him to remain, and afford us by his presence the protection so much to be desired for the security of American interests.

"We are, sir, with great respect,

Your most obedient servants,

ALSOP & Co.

EDWARD M'CALL & Co.

SAMUEL LARNED, ESQ.

Chargé d'affaires of the U. S.

near the Government of Peru."



On the 6th of March, the U. S. Schooner Enterprise, Lieutenant Commandant George N. Hollins, arrived at Callao from Valparaiso, where she arrived on the 6th of February, after a passage of 52 days from Acapulco. The Chilian squadron had withdrawn from Callao, and it was thought advisable, that the Peacock should visit Valparaiso. On the 13th of March, she set sail; on the 31st, anchored at the island of Juan Fernandez, and, sailing the next day, anchored at Valparaiso on the 4th of April.

On the first of May, we got under way, and, after a boisterous passage, anchored at Pisco on the 18th, and at Callao on the 21st.

In the afternoon of the 26th, the U. S. Ship North Carolina, bearing the broad pendant of Commodore Henry E. Ballard, arrived, and we all felt that we should be homeward bound, but fate determined that it should be otherwise. Our ship was required still to remain, for the trial of a seaman named Charles Field, who murdered his shipmate Blye Gryle, on board of the U. S. Schooner Boxer, on the night of the 28th of February. He was tried, condemned and executed.

The following letter, which explains itself, was received by Commodore Kennedy, to whose kindness I am indebted for a copy of it.

“United States Ship North Carolina,  
*Harbor of Callao, June 1st, 1837.*

SIR,

“My absence at Lima on public duty, for a few days past, has deprived me of the honor of sooner acknowledging the receipt of your communication of Saturday last, together with the package left for me by Commodore Wadsworth.

“I cannot deny myself the pleasure afforded by this opportunity of tendering to you my thanks, for the very important service you have rendered our country, in consenting, at the request of our countrymen resident at Lima and at Valparaiso, to assume the command of the naval station, at a moment so important to our commerce in this sea.—And I entertain no doubt but the Honorable the Secretary of the Navy, will have equal pleasure in giving credit where so much is due.

“In the conversation had with you a few days since, I adverted to the possibility of my being constrained by the urgent solicitations of the merchants of Lima and Valparaiso, to ask your concurrence in the expediency of detaining the Schooner Enterprise on this station—which is rendered, it seems to me, absolutely necessary by the belligerent attitude assumed by the governments of Peru and Chile, to—



wards each other—by the prospect of a blockade of the ports of Peru by the Chilian squadron—and by the unfortunate state of the rudder of this ship; which will preclude the possibility of my going to sea until a piece of timber can be procured from Talcahuano, sufficiently large to repair it—or until I can receive a new one from the United States.

“Under these circumstances I beg leave to ask in all frankness, whether you will have any thing of importance yet to accomplish, on your way homeward, that will be likely to suffer from my detaining the *Enterprise* in this sea; and whether you will be able to give such of her crew as may be entitled to return to the United States, a passage in your ship.

“Justice and a sense of propriety, seem to demand that the unfortunate man charged with the crime of murder should be brought to trial with as little delay as the nature of the service will allow, as well as that a court competent to try a case of so much importance, should be composed of officers of more rank than those I could control, were you to sail.

“Under such solemn considerations, I deem it a duty I owe to the service as well as to the unfortunate being who is charged with a crime that may touch his life, to take upon myself the responsibility of detaining your ship for a few days longer, until the arrival of the *Boxer*, in which vessel are all the witnesses, as well as the person exhibiting the charge.

“In rendering myself thus instrumental in detaining you a few days longer from your country and your friends—I am not without the hope, that the detention may be the means of restoring to better health, those brave fellows under your command, who have suffered so much during a cruise abounding with enterprise, and with suffering.

I have the honor to be,

Your most obedient servant, with great respect,

HENRY E. BALLARD,

Commodore commanding in Chief the  
Naval Forces of the U. S. in the Pacific Ocean.

COMMODORE E. P. KENNEDY,  
Commanding the United States  
East India Squadron.”

It was determined that the *Enterprise* should be left under the command of Commodore Ballard. All the necessary changes were made, and, on the 5th of July, the joyful cry of the boatswain, “All



hands up anchor for home," sounded through the ship; and, after we were under sail, a thousand voices cheered our parting with loud huzzas from the North Carolina's rigging, and, at sunset, we bade farewell to Callao.

The next day we anchored in the roads of HUACHO, and sailed again on the 7th, after completing our supplies of wood and stock. On the 7th of August we passed the meridian of Cape Horn; and on the 23d, after a passage of forty-six days, anchored at Rio de Janeiro.

On the 2d of September we sailed, and arrived at Bahia (or St. Salvador) on the 15th. We again got under way on the 19th, bound directly home. We now became impatient to reach the termination of our toils and privations, which had not been few. Every breeze inspired hope, and was hailed with joy; and every calm cast a gloom almost amounting to despair. Our anxieties and impatience increased as the distance lessened, and the last few days of the voyage round the world were spent in conjecturing and speculating upon the day of arrival. Every heart beat high with hope; yet there was mingled with it an emotion of fear—a foreboding that we might not meet all who were dear to us, as we had left them; eight months had passed since any of us had heard from our friends, and, in that period, how many might not have been swept from among the living? The home-staying can scarcely comprehend the emotions which sway the breast of the sea-weary voyager, as he approaches the coast of his country after years of absence, nor appreciate the gleams of joy shot up from the depths of the heart, at the cheering cry of "Land, Oh!"

The long wished-for hour arrived. On the 26th of October we descried the coast of Virginia, and soon afterwards a graceful pilot-boat caught our view. In an hour more, the pilot came on board, but could give us no information, not even a newspaper, and it was not till the next day the Peacock anchored opposite to the city of Norfolk, after an absence of more than two years and a half.

A long and weary round we have been together; but here, generous Reader, we must part, and let me indulge a hope, there is no unkindness in our parting; for I would crave thy greeting, should we meet again, to while away an idle hour in talk about other lands: and, take my last word for it, there is no realm beyond the broad seas to compare with our own, in the blessings of rational liberty, or the affluence of nature—none wherein men may be so happy and so blest.

THE END.



# APPENDIX.

## APPENDIX.

\* Did not perform the whole cruise.  
 † Promoted to higher grade during the cruise.



## APPENDIX.

---

### LIST OF OFFICERS ATTACHED TO THE U. S. SHIP PEACOCK.

APRIL, 1835.

Edmund P. Kennedy,	Commodore.
C. K. Stribling,	Commander, (acting.)
George N. Hollins,†	Lieutenant.
William Green,	"
Charles C. Turner,	"
Murray Mason,	"
W. S. W. Ruschenberger,	Fleet Surgeon.
David Harlan,	Assistant Surgeon.
F. G. M'Cauley,*	Purser.
S. W. Godon,†	Acting Master.
Addison Searle,*	Chaplain.
Charles H. Goldsborough,*	Commodore's Secterary.
J. D. Mendenhall,†	Professor of Mathematics.
John Weems,†	Passed Midshipman.
William Rogers Taylor,†	"
William Leigh,†	"
B. S. B. Darlington,†	"
John Contee,*	Midshipman.
W. S. Drayton,	"
George W. Chapman,	"
Charles Richardson,	"
E. S. Hutter,	"
S. B. Lee,*	"
R. De Lancey Izard,	"
I. C. Williamson,*	"
John Clar,	Captain's Clerk.

\* Did not perform the whole cruise.

† Promoted to higher grade during the cruise.



John Knight,*	Boatswain, (acting.)
Archibald S. Lewis,	Gunner.
James Ferguson,	Sail-maker.
William Peterson,*	Carpenter, (acting.)
Edmund Roberts, Esq.,‡	Passenger.

Whole number of souls on board, including officers, seamen, ordinary seamen, landsmen, boys, and marines, 201.

### LIST OF OFFICERS OF THE U. S. SCHOONER ENTERPRISE.

JULY, 1835.

Archibald S. Campbell,§	Lieutenant Commanding.
Richard L. Page,	Lieutenant.
John C. Sharpe,	“ (acting.)
Thomas R. Rootes,	“ (acting.)
William F. M'Clenahan,	Assistant Surgeon.
Richard R. Waldron,	Purser, (acting.)
Hendrick Norvell,	Passed Midshipman.
James J. Forbes,	Midshipman.
William Ross Gardiner,	“
William G. Benham,	“
Henry Cadwalader,	“
Holt Wilson,	Captain's Clerk.

Total number on board, including seamen, ordinary seamen, and boys, 80.

‡ Died at Macao, June 12, 1836.

§ Died at Macao, June 3, 1836.

|| Invalided, and did not perform the whole cruise.



ABSTRACT OF PASSAGES, &c., OF PEACOCK'S VOYAGE OF  
CIRCUMNAVIGATION.

Date of sailing.	From	Date of arrival at	The port of	Days at sea.	Distance run per log.
<b>1835.</b>					
April 23	New York,	June 11	Rio de Janeiro,	49	5,589 miles.
July 12	Rio de Janeiro,	Sept. 2	Zanzibar,	52	6,457
Sept. 8	Zanzibar,	Sept. 29	Muscat,	22	2,119
Oct. 10	Muscat,	Oct. 23	Bombay,	13	812
Dec. 4	Bombay,	Dec. 15	Colombo,	13	870
Dec. 24	Colombo,				
<b>1836.</b>					
Feb. 17	Batavia,	Jan. 13	Batavia,	19	1,897
April 20	Siam,	March 26	Siam Roads,	37	3,316
May 5	Pulo Oby,	May 4	Pulo Oby,	14	777
May 22	Turon Bay,	May 14	Turon Bay,	9	593
June 23	Macao,	May 26	Macao,	4	446
July 21	Bonin Isles,	July 15	Bonin Isles,	22	1,876
Oct. 9	Honolulu,	Sept. 7	Honolulu,	49	4,791
Oct. 30	Monte-rey,	Oct. 24	Monte-rey,	15	2,425
Nov. 15	Mazatlán,	Nov. 12	Mazatlán,	13	1,489
Nov. 23	San Blas,	Nov. 18	San Blas,	3	183
Dec. 11	Acapulco,	Dec. 3	Acapulco,	10	667
<b>1837.</b>					
Jan. 5	Payta,	Jan. 3	Payta,	23	2,290
March 13	Callao,	Jan. 25	Callao,	20	1,233
April 1	Juan Fernandez,	March 31	Juan Fernandez,	18	2,291
May 1	Valparaiso,	April 4	Valparaiso,	3	360
May 19	Pisco,	May 17	Pisco,	17	1,520
July 5	Callao,	May 21	Callao,	2	143
July 7	Huacho,	July 6	Huacho,	1	80
Sept. 2	Rio de Janeiro,	Aug. 23	Rio de Janeiro,	46	6,366
Sept. 19	Bahia,	Sept. 15	Bahia,	13	1,460
		Oct. 26	Hampton Roads,	37	4,031
				524	54,285 miles.
Days in port, - - - 414					



# INDEX AND TABLE OF CONTENTS.



	Page		Page
Acapulco,	536	Bankok, theatricals at,	316
Adam's peak,	155	Banquet at the palace of the Sul-	
Admiral's remonstrance,	103	tan of Muscat,	79
Agriculture of Java,	238	Banyans,	35
Ape, the white, of Siam,	298	Batavia, roads of,	216
Apothecary of Moutrah,	76	“ landing at,	216
Ambolee,	146	“ entrance to the city of,	218
American cotton goods,	47	“ old town of,	219
Amphibious child,	279	“ new city of,	221
Animal mistaken for an island,	20	“ hall of science,	222
Animals of Zanzibar,	38, 45	“ population of,	223
“ of Ceylon,	171	“ in the rainy season,	224
“ (white) of Siam,	348	“ mortality at,	224
Ants' eggs, how eaten,	296	“ climate of,	225
Arabian sea, voyage across the,	97	“ at night,	226
Arabs, character of,	86	“ China camp,	227
“ complexion of,	29	“ use of tobacco at,	218
“ costume of,	38	“ bank of,	241
Arab mode of courtship,	73	Bazaar at Muscat,	71
Arab feast at Muscat,	80	“ Bombay,	100
Arab females, character of,	73	“ Bankok,	315
“ “ dress of,	72	Bedouins visit the ship,	56
Arab hunter,	31	Bedouin warrior,	57
Arms and ornaments of Negroes		Bedouins, skirmish with,	59
at Zanzibar,	30	“ description of, by the	
Armorers at Zanzibar,	45	Sultan of Muscat,	69
Audience with the King of Siam,	330	Beggars at Bombay,	129
Aviary at Macao,	380	Beloches,	76
		“ town of the,	77
Ball on board,	19	“ hut of,	77
“ at Ceylon,	209	Birds' nests,	241
Bandora,	146	Birds of Paradise,	244
Banka, strait of,	251	Boat of ceremony,	270
“ island of,	252	Boat sent to Muscat,	58, 62
Bankok, arrive at,	275	Boats, attempt of Bedouins upon,	60
“ mission house at,	276	Boats used at the pearl fishery	
“ city of,	277	of Ceylon,	197
“ population of,	279	Bombay, harbor of,	98
“ Chinese residents at,	280	“ view of the town of,	98
“ currency of,	285	“ island of,	104



	Page		Page
Bombay, town of,	105	Ceylon missionary establish-	167
“ population of,	105	ments,	169
“ commerce of,	106	“ climate of,	169
“ government of,	107	“ productions of,	173
“ historical sketch of,	108	“ commerce of,	171
“ climate of,	104	“ minerals of,	173
“ departure from,	153	“ government of,	174
“ presidency,	109	“ revenue of,	176
“ “ population of,	114	“ history of,	179
Bonin Isles,	438	“ exports	203
Book, Siamese,	260	“ jewellers of,	205
Books, Siamese mode of reading,	314	“ spicy breezes of,	420
Books presented to Momfanoi,	347	China and the Chinese,	391
Borneo, island of,	253	Chinese females,	398
“ population of,	254	“ cookery,	399
“ products of,	254	“ weights,	402
“ dayaks of,	254	“ policy,	326
“ head-hunting in,	255	Cholera on board,	291
Boudha of Emerald,	323	Chowfaya,	117
Buitenzorg, road to,	228	Church at Bombay,	170
“ Belle Vue at,	229	Cinnamon,	207
“ garden at,	230	Cinnamon tree,	207
Bunder, the new, (Bombay,)	99	“ garden,	208
Bunder-boat,	138	“ oil,	67
Caffès at Muscat,	74	Climate of Muscat,	46
Calm,	20	“ Zanzibar,	104
Calms, effects of long continued,	22	“ Bombay,	169
California, Upper,	507	“ Ceylon,	225
“ “ government of,	508	“ Batavia,	380
“ judiciary of,	508	“ Macao,	534
“ history of,	514	“ Tepic,	526
“ expedition of Cortès to,	516	“ San Blas,	521
“ Lower,	518	“ Mazatlàn,	50
Campbell, Lt. A. S., death of,	371	Clove tree, history of,	51
Canorin, city of,	145	Cloves, value of,	207
Cantòn, approach to,	391	“ oil of,	153
“ city of,	393	Coast of Hindoostàn,	161
Cashmere shawls,	135	Cobra di Capello,	161
Caste in India,	125	“ venom of the,	349
Catholics, expulsion of, from		Cochin-China, coast of,	364
Oahu,	471	“ territory of,	369
Cave of Camöens,	381	“ departure from,	350
Caves of Elephanta,	139	Cochin-Chinese costume,	350
“ Salsette,	143	“ language,	352
“ Jogheyser,	146	“ mandarin,	352
“ India and Egypt,	147	“ soldiers,	353
Cemetery at Macao,	382	“ market women,	358
“ at Zanzibar,	39	“ punctiliousness,	354
Ceylonese, costume of the,	158	“ physical character of	357
Ceylon, approach to,	154	the,	358
“ island of,	163	“ treaty with the,	39
“ population of,	165	“ intercourse with the,	44
“ mortality in,	166	Cocoanut, oil,	45
		“ tree,	
		“ uses of the,	



	Page		Page
Coffee, export of, from Java,	239	Dutch policy in Java,	232
Coins of Muscat,	87	“ trade with Japan,	245
“ Ceylon,	208	Eclipse, Hindoo observance of,	122
“ Siam,	285	Edict, Chinese,	374
Colombo, landing at,	157	Education in Arabia,	87
“ library at,	159	Eggs, when eaten by the Cochinese,	354
“ position of,	201	Elephant-tooth, articles made of the,	204
“ inhabitants of,	202	Elephant-sword,	295
“ society at,	209	Elephant, the working,	208
“ departure from,	210	Elephant, the mad white,	320
Commerce of Zanzibar,	47	Elephants in Ceylon,	171
“ Muscat,	83	“ procession of,	321
“ Bombay,	106	“ white,	321
“ Ceylon,	173	“ spotted,	322
“ Batavia,	240	Elephanta Island,	138
“ Siam,	280	“ caves of,	139
“ Sandwich Islands,	488	Emerald Boudha,	323
“ California,	506	English, kindness of the,	371
Comoro Islands,	25	Enterprise, U. S. Schooner,	19
Conicoply,	202	“ officers of the,	551
Consultation at Mazatlàn,	523	Exchange, rate of, at Batavia,	241
Copal,	45	Experiments of Van den Bosch,	238
Coral Islands, formation of,	43	Exports from Ceylon,	179
Court of justice at Zanzibar,	42	Faces, painting those of children at Zanzibar,	39
Court of Siam,	332	Factories at Canton,	393
Cowries,	285	Fast-boat,	385
Currency of Bombay,	107	Feast at Packnam,	273
“ of Siam,	285	Feet of Chinese women,	404
Curiosity of the Siamese,	328	Fish, eaten raw at the Sandwich Islands,	458
Custom-house at Zanzibar,	34	“ fattening of,	463
Cutter, cruise of the second,	62	“ great quantities at Muscat,	75
Dâus,	48	“ places of resort of,	24
Dayaks of Borneo,	254	“ diet, effects of,	24
Debtors, how treated in Siam,	289	“ the porcupine,	22
Depopulation of the Sandwich Islands,	480	“ the sucking,	24
Devotee,	122	Fishing of sharks,	24
Dhonies,	156	Floating Islands,	257
Diamonds of Ceylon,	205	Formosa, island of,	437
Diplomacy in Cochin-China,	358	Fuel, material used for, at Bombay,	119
“ Sandwich Islands,	495	Funeral at sea,	451
Discipline, advantages of,	61	Gambling in Siam,	285
Diseases of Ceylon,	169	Gamelan,	235
Dispensary of the missionaries at Bankok,	312	Games, suppression of, in the Sandwich Isles,	485
Dockyard at Bombay,	101	Garden in Java,	230
Doctor at Mazatlàn,	523	Gold, Siamese manufacture of,	328
Dog-eating,	463	Government of Bombay,	107
Dubash,	101	Guinea worm, (disease of),	105
Duelling, an Arab's opinion of,	86		
Dung, as fuel,	119		
Dungaree town,	120		
Durbar,	124		
Dutch soldiers at Batavia,	217		
“ society at Batavia,	222		



	Page		Page
Haines, S. B. Captain, letter from,	61	Java, island of,	235
Hair, mode of dying,	29	“ population of,	235
Halil bin Hammet,	78	“ history of,	236
Hamira's house,	40	“ government of,	237
Hamira's notions of polygamy,	41	“ products of,	244
Harem at Bankok,	304	Javan costume,	219
Hassan, Captain,	28	“ prince,	233
“ house of,	37	“ music,	234
Head-hunting in Borneo,	255	“ krises,	234
Hindoo new-year,	100	Kenery, caves of,	143
Hindoos, costume,	119	Khunger,	41
“ females,	119	Khon paa,	294
“ religion,	148	King of Siam, titles of the,	289
“ gods of the,	148	“ audience with the,	330
Hindoo temple,	122	“ person of the,	332
“ observance of an eclipse,	122	“ mode of convers-	
“ devotee,	122	ing with the,	333
“ state desired by the,	123	“ presents to the,	343
Holuthuria physalis,	20	King of the Sandwich islands,	458
Holwah, (a sweetmeat,)	75	Koran, verses of, affixed to the	
Homeward voyage,	548	doors in Zanzibar,	38
Hongs,	394	“ great respect shown to	
Honolulu, harbor of,	453	the,	42
“ town of,	453	Krises,	234
India, (British) stipendiary		Lagor, king of,	326
princes of,	111	Laos organ,	295
“ subsidiary		Language, the Anglo-Chinese,	396
princes of,	112	Lapidaries at Colombo,	204
“ feudatory chiefs,	113	Lawatias, tribe and town of,	78
India, British,	115	Letter, Arab mode of folding,	41
Infanticide,	481	“ from Captain Haines,	61
Islands—Comoro,	25	“ from the Sultan of Mus-	
“ Zanzibar,	26	cat,	65
“ Pemba,	53	“ from Commodore Ken-	
“ Tumbat,	26	nedy,	65
“ Mazeira,	61	“ from Mr. Roberts,	89
“ Bombay,	104	“ to the P'hra Klang,	258
“ Elephanta,	138	“ to the King of the Sand-	
“ Salsette,	142	wich Isles,	498
“ Ceylon,	163	“ to Kinau, the high chief	
“ Java,	235	of Oahu,	500
“ Banka,	252	“ from Mr. Larned,	543
“ Sumatra,	252	“ from the American mer-	
“ Borneo,	253	chants at Lima,	544
“ Si-chang,	259	“ from Commodore Bal-	
“ Pulo Oby,	348	lard,	546
“ Pulo Condore,	349	Lingü,	141
“ Formosa,	437	Living at Bombay,	101
“ Bonin,	438	“ at Batavia,	220
“ Sandwich,	452	“ at Cantòn,	394
Janthina,	21	Lottery at Bankok,	285
Japan, Dutch trade with,	245	Luäu,	462
Japanese at Macao,	383	Luck-loi-nam, the child of the	
Java, posting in,	227	waters,	279



	Page		Page
Macao,	378	Muscat, approach to,	67
“ history of,	378	“ climate of,	67
“ Portuguese population		“ harbor of,	68
“ of,	379	“ description of, by a sailor,	72
“ morals of,	380	“ commerce of,	83
“ climate of,	380	“ coins of,	87
“ aviary at,	380	“ departure from,	97
“ cave of Camoens,	381	Museum at Colombo,	162
Malays,	219	Naiheanaina, the Princess,	460
Mangustin,	215	Napier, Lord, in China,	387
Mangouste,	160	Navy of the Sultan of Muscat,	85
Manufactures from elephants’		New year, Hindoo celebration	
teeth,	204	of the,	100
Market of dogs and cats,	398	Nobility, Siamese badges of,	303
Matchlock,	31	Nonparel,	121
“ mode of charging,	32	Oahu, arrive at,	452
Mazatlán, climate of,	521	“ climate of,	456
Mazatlán, town of,	522	“ soil of,	456
Mazeira, island of,	61	“ products of,	456
Measurement of the Maria		“ civilization of,	457
Theresa,	329	Officers of the boat of ceremony,	271
Measures of Siam,	286	Oil mill at Zanzibar,	39
Medusa porpita,	20	Oil, cocoanut,	39
Meinam river, entrance to,	263	Oil of cinnamon,	208
“ voyage up the,	274	Oil of cloves,	207
Meleagrina Margaritifera,	187	Opium, consumption of, in China,	386
Mendenhall, J. D., death of,	451	Orders, mode of conveying at sea,	19
Merchants of Siam,	281	Organ of Laos,	295
Mexico and the Mexicans,	539	Paddy mill,	267
Mission house at Bangkok,	276	Paknam,	264
Missionary school at Bombay,	124	“ Governor of,	265, 325
Missionaries at Bombay, charac-		“ lodgings at,	268
ter of,	127	“ feast at,	273
“ at Ceylon,	187	Palace of the Sultan of Muscat	
“ at Batavia,	232	at Zanzibar,	32
“ at Bangkok,	310	Palanquin,	99
“ “ reasons		Palanquin-carriage,	206
for changing their residence,	313	Parsee bible,	133
Missionaries at the Sandwich		Parsees, creed of the,	132
Islands,	464	“ character of the,	133
Missionary hymn,	476	“ history of the,	137
Missions in California,	507	“ female costume,	134
Mode of burying at Zanzibar,	34	Parel,	121
Molusca, sailors fishing for,	20	Peacock, U. S. Ship,	12
Momfanoi, “the Prince of hea-		“ “ on shore,	55
ven,”	262	Pearl River,	390
“ visit to,	292	Pearl banks,	193
“ palace of,	293	Pearl fishing,	194
“ dinner with,	296	Pearl divers,	198, 200
“ character of,	297	Pearl fishery, value of,	196
Money table of Siam,	286	Pearls of Barhein,	82
Monte-rey, harbor of,	505	Pearls, composition of,	192
“ trade of,	506	Pearls, extrication of,	200
Mortality in Ceylon,	166		
“ at Batavia,	224		
Moutrah, town of,	75		



	Page		Page
Pearls, formation of,	191	Sampan at Bankok,	278
Pearl oysters,	187	San Blas,	526
Pearl oysters, supposed origin of,	188	Sandwich Islands,	478
Pearl oysters, habits of,	189	Sandwich Islands, population	479
Pearl oysters, age of,	190	of the,	479
Pedlars at Bombay,	128	Sandwich Islands, government	486
Pedlars, aquatic,	154	of the,	488
Pemba, Island of,	53	Sandwich Islands, commerce	488
Phrenology at Zanzibar,	52	of the,	492
“ at Bankok,	297	Sandwich Islands, treaty with	492
“ at Canton,	418	the,	42
Phya Ratsa-pa-vade, visit to,	303	School at Zanzibar,	53
Phya Si-pi-pat,	307, 308	Sea, phosphorescence of the,	13
Piadadé,	266	Sea, love of the,	13
Pilot, Chinese,	370	Sea-sickness, treatment of,	33
Pilot at Zanzibar,	27	Seid Carlid, the prince,	131
Pirates, shells so called,	448, 53	Serpent-charmers,	199
Pirates, Chinese,	437	Shark-charmers,	24
Policy of the Dutch in Java,	232	Shark-fishery,	23
Poor of India,	121	Shark, mode of catching,	135
Portuguese men-of-war,	20, 21	Shawls of Cashmere,	447
Posting in Java,	227	Shells, hunting for,	54
Poultry of Cochín-China,	364	Ship on shore near Mazeira,	300
“ of Acapulco,	538	Shuttlecock, played with the	280
Prayer, Mohammedan ob-		feet,	282
servance of,	86	Siam, commerce of,	284
Presents to the Sultan of Muscat,	91	“ revenue of,	285
Presents to the King of Siam,	343	“ taxes in,	286
Press at Bombay,	102	“ gambling in,	288
Pulo Oby,	348	“ weights and measures,	289
Pulo Condore,	349	“ extent of,	289
		“ King's titles,	289
Ramparts at Colombo,	162	“ government of,	289
Rank, distinction of, in Siam,	303	“ debtors how treated in,	290
Religion at Bombay,	118	“ religion of,	292
Religion, women's influence		“ throne of,	323
upon,	126	“ library of,	336
Religion of the Hindoos,	148	“ history of,	340
“ of the Siamese,	290	“ treaty with,	344
Religious signs at Bombay,	132	“ rice not exported from,	347
Repository, the Chinese,	389	“ departure from,	348
Rice, not to be exported from		“ white animals of,	299
Siam,	344	Siamese, physical character	300
Right and wrong, the sense of,	481	of the,	260
Rio de Janeiro, harbor of,	15	Siamese, the moral character	268
“ departure from,	19	of the,	270
River Meinam,	263	Siamese book,	280
Roberts, Edmund, death of,	373	“ twins,	282
Rosary of the Mohammedans,	38	“ attention,	287
		“ merchants,	303
Salsette, Island of,	142	“ trade,	305
“ Caves of,	143	“ measure of time,	307
Salt, tax on,	172	“ badges of nobility,	
Sandals, Arabian,	29	“ ladies,	
“ removed to show respect,	40	“ sign of friendship,	



	Page		Page
Siamese manners, effects of,	309	Titles of the King of Siam,	289
“ Princess, costume of a,	324	Time, Siamese measure of,	287
“ Prince, costume of a,	324	Tobacco, the use of,	538
“ curiosity,	328	Toddy,	45
“ etiquette,	328	Tortillas,	532
Si-chang island,	259	Trade with Java,	240
Sia-Yut’hia,	320	Trade, Dutch with Japan,	245
Slave market at Zanzibar,	34	Trappers,	510
Sleep, profound of the crew,	60	Treaty with Muscat,	91
Smith, Captain,	511	Treaty with Siam, delivery of the	
Society at Colombo,	209	American copy of the,	319
“ at Macao,	383	Treaty with Siam, delivery of the	
“ at Cantón,	395	Siamese copy of the,	335
Sowalies,	46	Treaty with Siam,	340
Squirrels, white,	260	Treaty with Siam, defect in the,	344
St. Thomas’ Church,	117	Treaty with Cochin-China,	357
Sugar, export of, from Java,	239	Treaty with the Sandwich	
Sultan of Muscat, kindness of		Islands,	492
the,	63, 64	Treaty with Mexico,	506
Sultan of Muscat, letter from the,	65	Trees, dwarfed,	403
“ officers visit the,	68	Turon bay,	349
“ extent of his		Turtle-hunting,	443
dominions,	81	Tutenague,	401
Sultan of Muscat, title of the,	84	Upas plant,	230
“ history of the,	84	Venom of the Cobra,	161
“ character of the,	85	Venus dione,	526
“ take leave of the,	88	Waterloo Square, Batavia,	222
“ English Admi-		Watering at Zanzibar,	33
ral, and the,	103	Watering at Muscat,	75
Sumatra, pepper ports of,	252	Wât P’hra-si-ratanat,	322
Sunda, Straits of,	214	Wât, the Queen’s,	323
Swan-pan,	399	Weaving at Muscat,	77
Swords, comparison of, at Zan-		Wells at Zanzibar,	39
zibar,	40	Wells at Muscat,	74
Talapoints, (priests,)	290, 314	Wives, expense of in Arabia,	73
Tax on salt,	172	Xalisco,	534
Taxes in Siam,	284	Zanzibar, Island of,	26
Taxes in the Sandwich Isles,	487	“ Owen’s chart of,	27
Tayef,	49	“ vegetable products of,	44
Tea, cultivation of in Java,	231	“ position of,	44
Tea-garden, Cantón,	403	“ climate of,	46
Tea, history of,	405	“ population of,	46
Tea-plant,	406	“ harbor of,	34
Temperature is not climate,	252	“ commerce of,	47
Tepic, ride to,	527	Zebu,	46
Tepic, city of,	533		
Theatricals in Siam,	316		
Theft, Siamese mode of detecting,	301		
Throne of Siam, succession to the,	292		







BOZ. BOZ. BOZ!



CAREY, LEA AND BLANCHARD HAVE JUST PUBLISHED

AN ILLUSTRATED EDITION

OF

The Posthumous Papers of

**THE PICKWICK CLUB,**

BY CHARLES DICKENS, ESQ.

*THE NUMEROUS DESIGNS,*

ARE BY

SAM WELLER, JR., AND ALFRED CROWQUILL, ESQ.

Beautifully engraved, by Yeager, and printed on cream-coloured paper.

The whole forming a splendid volume in octavo,

*And bound in elegant embossed cloth.*

TO BE HAD OF ALL BOOKSELLERS.



## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS IN PICKWICK.

---

<p>A Display of the Principal Characters.          Portrait of Samuel Pickwick, Esqr.              "    "    Tracy Tupman, Esqr.              "    "    Augustus Snodgrass, Esqr.              "    "    Nathaniel Winkle, Esqr.          The Pickwickians at the Review.          Portrait of Dismal Jemmy.              "    "    The Fat Boy.              "    "    Lieutenant Tappleton.              "    "    Doctor Payne.              "    "    Doctor Slammer.          Mr. Pickwick attempting to drive, and Mr. Winkle to ride.          Winkle Rook Shooting.          Pickwick Drunk.          Winkle Drunk.          Cricketer.          Fat Boy and Crow, &amp;c.          Portrait of Sam Weller.              "    "    Mr. Weller, Senior.          Mr. Pickwick and his friends lunching on Weal Pie, &amp;c.          Mr. Pickwick's excited interview with Dodson and Fogg.          Mr. Weller, Senior, giving <i>two</i> or <i>three</i> to the Shepherd.          Mr. Pickwick starting for Ipswich.          The Punch Drinking after Mr. Pickwick's Sliding Adventure          The Intelligent Jury.          Mrs. Cluppins' Examination.          Portrait of Sergeant Buzfuz.              "    "    Mr. Skimpin.              "    "    Mr. Phunky.          Sam Weller and Mary shaking carpet.          The Surly Groom.          Bob Sawyer's Boy.          Pickwick with Dark Lantern.          Sam carrying Pickwick.          Pickwick at the assignation with Miss Allen.          Old Weller's interview with Mr. Pell, at the public house in              Portugal Street.          Mr. Solomon Pell and Boy.          The Cobbler in his four-post Bedstead.          Portrait of Mr. Mivins.              "    "    Mr. Smangle.          The Death of the Chancery Prisoner.          Thirteen Portraits of Prisoners in the Fleet.          Mr. Pickwick's efforts to restore the aunt of Mr. Ben Allen.          Mr. Snodgrass and Emily interrupted by the entrance of Joe.          The interview of the Wellers with Wilkins Flasher, Esq.</p>	}	<p>The          Pickwickians.</p>
---	---	---------------------------------------



Philadelphia, February, 1838.

**NEW WORK BY BOZ.**

---

Messrs. CAREY, LEA & BLANCHARD have the pleasure of announcing that Mr. CHARLES DICKENS is now engaged in the production of an entirely NEW WORK, which they design to issue in this country, *in Monthly Parts*, in the same form as *The Pickwick Papers*, and ILLUSTRATED BY PHIZ. The *First Part* may be expected about the first of May.

---

THEY WILL ALSO PUBLISH BY THE SAME AUTHOR,

**OLIVER TWIST;**

**Or, the Parish Boy's Progress.**

AND

**BARNABY RUDGE,**

**A Story of the Riots of London—1780.**

---

The following works are preparing for immediate publication:—A New Novel by the Author of "The Spy," called

**HOMEWARD BOUND.**

In 2 vols. 12mo.

---

A beautiful *illustrated* edition of

**LEILA,**

By Bulwer, in super royal octavo, with FIFTEEN SPLENDID ENGRAVINGS ON STEEL. Copies may be had elegantly bound. (Now ready.)

---

**ETIQUETTE FOR THE LADIES;**

To which is added, Advice to a Lady on Health and Beauty, The Use of Cosmetics, and The Choice of a Library. A small volume to match "The Laws of Etiquette."

---

**ITALY,**

By J. Fennimore Cooper, in 2 vols. 12mo.: being the completion of "Gleanings in Europe."



# SKETCHES BY "BOZ."

COMPLETE IN ONE VOLUME.

UNIFORM WITH THE PICKWICK PAPERS.

SHORTLY WILL BE PUBLISHED, BY  
CAREY, LEA AND BLANCHARD,  
**SKETCHES BY "BOZ;"**

ILLUSTRATIVE OF EVERY-DAY LIFE AND EVERY-DAY PEOPLE.

**A New Edition,**

COMPRISING BOTH THE SERIES, AND

**EMBELLISHED WITH NUMEROUS ILLUSTRATIONS**

BY GEORGE CRUIKSHANK.

This edition will be revised by the Author and arranged as follows:—

## SEVEN SKETCHES FROM OUR PARISH.

The Beadle.	The Parish Engine.	The Schoolmaster.
The Curate.	The Old Lady.	The Retired Captain.
The Four Sisters.		The Election for Beadle.
The Broker's Man.		The Ladies' Societies.
	Our Next-Door Neighbours.	

## SCENES.

	The Streets—Morning, Noon, and Night.
Shops and their Tenants.	Scotland Yard.
Seven Dials.	Monmouth Street.
Hackney-Coach Stands.	Doctors' Commons.
London Recreations.	The River.
Astley's.	Greenwich Fair.
Private Theatres.	Vauxhall Gardens by Day.
Early Coaches.	Omnibuses.
	The Last Cab-Driver, and the First Omnibus-Cad.
The House of Commons.	Public Dinners.
The first of May.	Brokers and Marine-Store Shops.
Gin Shops.	The Pawnbroker's.
The Criminal Court.	Newgate.

## CHARACTERS.

Some Thoughts about Some People.	A Christmas Family Dinner.
A New Year's Party.	Miss Jemima Evans.
The Parlour Orator.	The Hospital Patient.
Mr. Dounce the Widower.	The Mistaken Milliner.
The Dancing Academy.	Shabby-Genteel People.
Making a Night of it.	The Prisoners' Van.

## TALES.

The Boarding-House.	Mr. Minns and his Cousin.
Sentiment.	The Tuggs at Ramsgate.
Horatio Sparkins.	The Black Veil.
The Steam Excursion.	The Great Winglebury Duel.
Mrs. Joseph Porter.	Mr. Watkins Tottle
The Bloomsbury Christening.	The Drunkard's Death.



Philadelphia, February, 1838.

## LIFE OF SIR WALTER SCOTT, BART.

BY J. G. LOCKHART, ESQ.

HIS LITERARY EXECUTOR.

### CAREY, LEA AND BLANCHARD

Are now publishing this valuable Work, to be completed in Seven Parts, or two volumes, octavo.—Six Parts have been published, and the Seventh will be ready in April.

#### CONTENTS.

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| <p><b>CHAPTER I.</b><br/>Memoirs of the Early Life of Sir Walter Scott, written by himself.</p> <p><b>CHAPTER II.</b><br/>Illustrations of the Autobiographical Fragment—Edinburgh—Sandy-Knowe—Bath—Prestonpans.—1771-1778.</p> <p><b>CHAPTER III.</b><br/>Illustrations of the Autobiography continued—High School of Edinburgh—Residence at Kelso.—1778-1783.</p> <p><b>CHAPTER IV.</b><br/>Illustrations of the Biography continued—Anecdotes of Scott's College Life.—1783-1786.</p> <p><b>CHAPTER V.</b><br/>Illustrations continued—Scott's Apprenticeship to his father—Excursions to the Highlands, &amp;c.—Debating Societies—Early Correspondence, &amp;c. &amp;c.—1786-1790.</p> <p><b>CHAPTER VI.</b><br/>Illustrations continued—Studies for the Bar—Excursions to Northumberland—Letter on Flodden Field—Call to the Bar.—1790-1792.</p> <p><b>CHAPTER VII.</b><br/>First expedition into Liddesdale—Study of German—Political Trials, &amp;c.—Specimen of Law Papers—Burger's Lenore translated—Disappointment in Love.—1792-1796.</p> <p><b>CHAPTER VIII.</b><br/>Publication of Ballads after Burger—Scott Quarter-Master of the Edinburgh Light-Horse—Excursion to Cumberland—Gilsland Wells—Miss Carpenter—Marriage.—1796-1797.</p> <p><b>CHAPTER IX.</b><br/>Early Married Life—Lasswade Cottage—Monk Lewis—Translation of Goetz Von Berlichingen, published—Visit to London—</p> | <p>House of Aspen—Death of Scott's Father—First Original Ballads—Glenfinlas, &amp;c.—Unpublished Fragments—Appointment to the Sheriffship of Selkirkshire.—1798-1799.</p> <p><b>CHAPTER X.</b><br/>The Border Minstrelsy in Preparation—Richard Heber—John Leyden—William Laidlaw—James Hogg—Correspondence with George Ellis—Publication of the first two Volumes of the Border Minstrelsy.—1800-1802.</p> <p><b>CHAPTER XI.</b><br/>Preparation of Volume III. of the Minstrelsy—and of Sir Tristrem—Correspondence with Miss Seward and Mr. Ellis—Ballad of the Reiver's Wedding—Commencement of the Lay of the Last Minstrel—Visit to London and Oxford—Completion of the Minstrelsy of the Scottish Border.—1802-1803.</p> <p><b>CHAPTER XII.</b><br/>Contributions to the Edinburgh Review—Progress of the Tristrem—and of the Lay of the Last Minstrel—Visit of Wordsworth—Publication of "Sir Tristrem."—1803-1804.</p> <p><b>CHAPTER XIII.</b><br/>Removal to Ashiestiel—Death of Captain Robert Scott—Mungo Park—Completion and Publication of the Lay of the Last Minstrel.—1804-1805.</p> <p><b>CHAPTER XIV.</b><br/>Partnership with James Ballantyne—Literary Projects; Edition of the British Poets; Edition of the Ancient English Chronicles, &amp;c. &amp;c.—Edition of Dryden undertaken—Earl Moira Commander of the forces in Scotland—Sham Battles—Articles in the Edinburgh Review—Commencement of Waverley—Letter on Ossian—Mr. Skene's Reminiscences of Ashiestiel—Excursion to Cumber-</p> |
|---|---|



land—Alarm of Invasion—Visit to Mr. Southey—Correspondence on Dryden with Ellis and Wordsworth.—1805.

#### CHAPTER XV.

Affair of the Clerkship of Session—Letters to Ellis and Lord Dalkeith—Visit to London—Earl Spenser and Mr. Fox—Caroline, Princess of Wales—Joanna Baillie—Appointment as Clerk of Sessions—Lord Melville's Trial—Song on his Acquittal.—1806.

#### CHAPTER XVI.

Dryden—Critical Pieces—Edition of Slingsby's Memoirs, &c.—Marmion begun—Visit to London—Ellis—Rose—Canning—Miss Seward—Scott Secretary to the Commission on Scotch Jurisprudence—Letters to Southey, &c.—Publication of Marmion—Anecdotes—The Edinburgh Review on Marmion.—1806-1808.

#### CHAPTER XVII.

Edition of Dryden published—And criticised by Mr. Hallam—Webster's Romances—Editions of Queenhoo-hall; Captain Carleton's Memoirs; The Memoirs of Robert Carey, Earl of Monmouth; The Sadler Papers; and the Somers' Tracts—Edition of Swift begun—Letters to Joanna Baillie and George Ellis on the affairs of the Peninsula—John Struthers—James Hogg—Visit of Mr. Morritt—Mr. Morritt's Reminiscences of Ashestiel—Scott's Domestic Life.—1808.

#### CHAPTER XVIII.

Quarrel with Messrs. Constable and Hunter—John Ballantyne established as a Bookseller in Edinburgh—Scott's Literary Projects—The Edinburgh Annual Register, &c.—Meeting of James Ballantyne and John Murray—Murray's Visit to Ashestiel—Politics—The Peninsular War—Project of the Quarterly Review—Correspondence with Ellis, Gifford, Morritt, Southey, Sharpe, &c.—1808-1809.

#### CHAPTER XIX.

Case of a Poetical Tailor condemned to death at Edinburgh—His letters to Scott—Death of Camp—Scott in London—Mr. Morritt's description of him as "a lion" in town—Dinner at Mr. Sotheby's—Coleridge's Fire, Famine, and Slaughter—The Quarterly Review started—First Visit to Rokeby—The Lady of the Lake begun—Excursion to the Trossachs and Loch Lomond—Letter on Byron's English Bards and Scotch Reviewers—Death of Daniel Scott—Correspondence about Mr. Canning's Duel with Lord Castlereagh—Miss Baillie's Family Legend acted at Edinburgh—Theatrical Anecdotes—Kemble—Siddons—Terry—Letter on the Death of Miss Seward.—1809-1810.

#### CHAPTER XX.

Affair of Thomas Scott's Extractorship discussed in the House of Lords—Speeches of Lord Lauderdale, Lord Melville, &c.—Lord Holland at the Friday Club—Publication of the Lady of the Lake—Correspondence, concerning Versification, with Ellis and Can-

ning—The Poem criticised by Jeffrey and Mackintosh—Letters to Southey and Morritt—Anecdotes from Ballantyne's memoranda.—1810.

#### CHAPTER XXI.

First Visit to the Hebrides—Staffa—Skye—Mull—Iona, &c.—The Lord of the Isles projected—Letters to Joanna Baillie—Southey—and Morritt.—1810.

#### CHAPTER XXII.

Life of Miss Seward—Waverley resumed—Ballantyne's Critique on the First Chapters of the Novel—Waverley again laid aside—Unfortunate Speculations of John Ballantyne and Co; History of the Culdees;—Tixall poetry; Beaumont and Fletcher; Edinburgh Annual Register, &c.—Scott's Essay on Judicial Reform—His scheme of going to India—Letters on the War in the Peninsula—Death of Lord President Blair—And of Lord Melville—Publication of the Vision of Don Roderick—The Inferno of Altesidora, &c.—1810-1811.

#### CHAPTER XXIII.

New arrangement concerning the Clerks of Session—Scott's First Purchase of Land—Abbotsford; Turn-Again, &c.—Joanna Baillie's Orra, &c.—Death of James Graham—And of John Leyden.—1811.

#### CHAPTER XXIV.

The Poem of Rokeby begun—Correspondence with Mr. Morritt—Death of Henry Duke of Buccleuch—George Ellis—John Wilson—Apprentices of Edinburgh—Scott's "Nicknackatories"—Letter to Miss Baillie on the publication of Childe Harold—Correspondence with Lord Byron.—1811-1812.

#### CHAPTER XXV.

The "Flitting" to Abbotsford—Plantations—George Thomson—Rokeby and Triermain in progress—Excursion to Flodden—Bishop Auckland—And Rokeby Park—Correspondence with Crabbe—Life of Patrick Carey, &c.—Publication of Rokeby—And the Bridal of Triermain.—1812-1813.

#### CHAPTER XXVI.

Affairs of John Ballantyne & Co.—Causes of their Derangement—Letters of Scott to his Partners—Negotiation for Relief with Messrs. Constable—New Purchase of Land at Abbotsford—Embarrassments continued—John Ballantyne's Expresses—Drumlanrig—Penrith, &c.—Scott's Meeting with the Marquis of Abercorn at Longtown—His Application to the Duke of Buccleuch—Offer of the Poet-Laureateship—Considered—And Declined—Address of the City of Edinburgh to the Prince Regent—Its Reception—Civic Honours conferred on Scott—Question of Taxation on Literary Income—Letters to Mr. Morritt—Mr. Southey—Mr. Richardson—Mr. Crabbe—Miss Baillie and Lord Byron.—1813.

#### CHAPTER XXVII.

Insanity of Henry Weber—Letters on the Abdication of Napoleon, &c.—Publication



of Scott's Life and Edition of Swift—Essays for the Supplement to the Encyclopædia Britannica—Completion and Publication of Waverley.—1814.

#### CHAPTER XXVIII.

Voyage to the Shetland Isles, &c.—Scott's Diary kept on board the Lighthouse Yacht July and August—1814.

#### CHAPTER XXIX.

Diary on board the Lighthouse Yacht continued—The Orkneys—Kirkwall—Hoy—The Standing Stones of Stennis, &c.—August, 1814.

#### CHAPTER XXX.

Diary continued—Stromness—Bessy Millie's Charm—Cape Wrath—Cave of Smowe—The Hebrides—Scalpa, &c.—1814.

#### CHAPTER XXXI.

Diary continued—Isle of Harris—Monuments of the Chiefs of Macleod—Isle of Skye—Dunvegan Castle—Loch Corriskin—Macalister's Cave.—1814.

#### CHAPTER XXXII.

Diary continued—Cave of Egg—Iona—Staffa—Dunstaffnage—Dunluce Castle—Giant's Causeway—Isle of Arran, &c.—Diary concluded.—August, September, 1814.

#### CHAPTER XXXIII.

Letters in Verse from Zetland and Orkney—Death of the Duchess of Buccleuch—Correspondence with the Duke—Altrive Lake—Negotiation concerning the Lord of the Isles completed—Success of Waverley—Contemporaneous Criticisms on the Novel—Letters to Scott from Mr. Morritt—Mr.

Lewis—and Miss Maclean Clephane—Letter from James Ballantyne to Miss Edgeworth.—1814.

#### CHAPTER XXXIV.

Progress of the Lord of the Isles—Correspondence with Mr. Joseph Train—Rapid completion of the Lord of the Isles—"Six Weeks at Christmas"—"Refreshing the Machine"—Publication of the Poem—And of Guy Mannering—Letters to Morritt—Terry—And John Ballantyne—Anecdotes by James Ballantyne—Visit to London—Meeting with Lord Byron—Dinners at Carlton House.—1814-1815.

#### CHAPTER XXXV.

Battle of Waterloo—Letter of Sir Charles Bell—Visit to the Continent—Waterloo—Letters from Brussels and Paris—Anecdotes of Scott at Paris—The Duke of Wellington—The Emperor Alexander—Blucher—Platoff—Party at Ermenonville, &c.—London—Parting with Lord Byron—Scott's Birmingham Knife—Return to Abbotsford—Anecdotes by Mr. Skene and James Ballantyne—Notes on "The Field of Waterloo."—1815.

#### CHAPTER XXXVI.

Poem of the Field of Waterloo published—Revision of Paul's Letters, &c.—Quarrel and Reconciliation with Hogg—Football Match at Carterhaugh—Songs on the Banner of Buccleuch—Dinner at Bowhill—Design for a Piece of Plate to the Sutors of Selkirk—Letters to the Duke of Buccleuch—Joanna Baillie—And Mr. Morritt.—1815.

## CONTENTS OF VOLUME SECOND.

#### CHAPTER XXXVII.

Publication of Paul's Letters to his Kinsfolk—Guy Mannering "Terry-fied"—Death of Major John Scott—Letters to Thomas Scott—Publication of the Antiquary—History of 1814 for the Edinburgh Annual Register—Letters on the History of Scotland projected—Publication of the first Tales of My Landlord by Murray and Blackwood—Anecdotes by Mr. Train—Quarterly Review on the Tales—Building at Abbotsford begun—Letters to Morritt, Terry, Murray, and the Ballantynes.—1816.

#### CHAPTER XXXVIII.

Harold the Dauntless published—Scott aspires to be a Baron of the Exchequer—Letter to the Duke of Buccleuch concerning Poachers, &c.—First attack of Cramp in the Stomach—Letters to Morritt—Terry—and Mrs. Maclean Clephane—Story of the Doom of Devorgoil—John Kemble's Retirement from the Stage—William Laidlaw established at Kaeside—Novel of Rob Roy projected—Letter to Southey on the Relief of the Poor, &c.—Letter to Lord Montagu on Hogg's

Queen's Wake, and on the Death of Frances Lady Douglas.—1817.

#### CHAPTER XXXIX.

Excursion to the Lennox—Glasgow—and Drumlanrig—Purchase of Toffield—Establishment of the Ferguson family at Huntly Burn—Lines written in illness—Visits of Washington Irving—Lady Byron—and Sir David Wilkie—Progress of the building at Abbotsford—Letters to Morritt—Terry, &c.—Conclusion of Rob Roy.—1817.

#### CHAPTER XL.

Rob Roy published—Negotiation concerning the Second Series of Tales of my Landlord—Commission to search for the Scottish Regalia—Letters to the Duke of Buccleuch—Mr. Croker—Mr. Morritt—Mr. Murray—Mr. Maturin, &c.—Correspondence on Rural Affairs with Mr. Laidlaw—and on the buildings at Abbotsford with Mr. Terry—Death of Mrs. Murray Keith and Mr. George Bullock.—1818.

#### CHAPTER XLI.

May 1818—Dinner at Mr. Home Drummond's—Scott's Edinburgh Den—Details of his



Domestic Life in Castle Street—His Sunday Dinners—His Evening Drives, &c.—His Conduct in the general society of Edinburgh—Dinners at John Ballantyne's Villa, and James Ballantyne's in St. John Street on the appearance of a new Novel—Anecdotes of the Ballantynes, and of Constable. 1818.

#### CHAPTER XLII.

Publication of the Heart of Mid-Lothian—Its Reception in Edinburgh and in England—Abbotsford in October—Melrose Abbey—Dryburgh, &c.—Lion-hunters from America—Tragedy of the Cherokee Lovers—Scott's Dinner to the Selkirkshire Yeomen.—1818.

#### CHAPTER XLIII.

Declining Health of Charles, Duke of Buccleuch—Letter on the Death of Queen Charlotte—Provincial Antiquities, etc.—Extensive Sale of Copyrights to Constable & Co.—Death of Mr. Charles Carpenter—Scott receives and accepts the offer of Baronetcy—He declines to renew his Application for a Seat on the Exchequer Bench—Letters to Morritt—Richardson—Miss Baillie—the Duke of Buccleuch—Lord Montagu—Capt. Adam Ferguson—Rob Roy played at Edinburgh—Letter from Jedediah Cleishbotham, to Mr. Charles Mackay.—1818-1819.

#### CHAPTER XLIV.

Recurrence of Scott's Illness—March and April, 1819—Death of the Duke of Buccleuch—Letters to Captain Ferguson—Lord Montagu—Mr. Southey—and Mr. Shortreed—Scott's sufferings while dictating the *Bride of Lammermoor*—Anecdotes by James Ballantyne, &c.—Appearance of the Third Series of *Tales of my Landlord*, in June—Anecdote of the Earl of Buchan.

#### CHAPTER XLV.

Gradual re-establishment of Scott's Health—Ivanhoe in progress—His Son Walter joins the Eighteenth Regiment of Hussars—Scott's Correspondence with his Son—Miscellaneous Letters to Mrs. Maclean Clephane—M. W. Hartstonge—J. G. Lockhart—John Ballantyne—John Richardson—Miss Edgeworth—Lord Montagu, &c.—Abbotsford visited by Prince Leopold of Saxe-Coburg—Death of Mrs. William Erskine.—1819.

#### CHAPTER XLVI.

Political Alarms—The Radicals—Levies of Volunteers—Project of the Buccleuch Legion—Death of Scott's Mother—Her Brother Dr. Rutherford—and her Sister Christian—Letters to Lord Montagu—Mr. Thomas Scott—Cornet Scott—Mr. Laidlaw—and Lady Louisa Stuart—Publication of *Ivanhoe*—1819.

#### CHAPTER XLVII.

The Visionary—The Peel of Darnick—Scott's Saturday Excursions to Abbotsford—A Sunday there in February—Constable—John Ballantyne—Thomas Purdie, &c.—Prince Gustavus Vasa—Proclamation of King George IV.—Publication of the *Monastery*.—1820.

#### CHAPTER XLVIII.

Scott revisits London—His Portrait by Lawrence, and Bust by Chantrey—Anecdotes by Allan Cunningham—Letters to Mrs. Scott—Laidlaw, &c.—His Baronetcy gazetted—Marriage of his Daughter Sophia—Letter to "The Baron of Galashiels"—Visit of Prince Gustavus Vasa at Abbotsford—Tenders of Honorary Degrees from Oxford and Cambridge—Letter to Mr. Thomas Scott.—1820. &c. &c. &c.

### From many Criticisms the following are selected.

The appearance of Lockhart's *Life of Scott* has been looked forward to with no ordinary degree of expectation. The interest which its announcement excited was as general as it was intense. It is impossible that the task of bringing out such a book could have fallen into better hands. J. G. Lockhart is a man whose high character, independent of his relationship, insures the absence of every thing improper or indecorous in a biographical work, and whose eminence as an author is a sufficient guarantee for the good taste and ability with which the whole plan and details will be managed. If any things were wanting to prove Mr Lockhart's fitness for the duty which has devolved upon him, it is to be found in his "*Life of Burns*."—*Aberdeen Herald*.

Whether it be owing to our own prepossession, or to the skill of the writer, we find its execution immeasurably superior to that of

any similar work that has of late years issued from the press.—*Brighton Gazette*.

We have here a recurrence of that pleasing excitement, through all the reading world, which was wont to attend the appearance of each new "*Waverley* novel." The voice of the mighty minstrel again rises, as it were, from the grave, and we cease for a time in the midst of the anxious and feverish contentions of faction, to listen to the tones which delighted and astonished our earlier years. This volume, indeed, unexpectedly possesses all the interest of a new sweep from the lyre which was supposed for ever dumb.—*Dundee Chronicle*.

This is one of the most interesting publications which has for a long time past issued from the press, and will prove, if we judge from the specimen now given, a valuable ac-



cession to the literature of the day. The subject is indeed one of great interest, as a memorial of the genius, acquirements, and still more of the domestic habits and general disposition of one of the most illustrious literary characters of this or of any other age; but it derives additional interest from the manner in which it is treated—from the talent, and taste, and sound judgment displayed by the editor, Mr. Lockhart. The work is of great value, as giving such full details of the infancy and boyish days of Sir Walter Scott—of the course of his studies—of his habits, and the progress and maturity of his mind; and though last, not least, of that enviable equanimity and serenity of temper which he possessed,—those benevolent dispositions, and that blameless conduct in all the relations of life, which gave so fine a finish to his character; and is so different from others, in behalf of whose genius a sort of dispensation is claimed by their admirers from all ordinary rules, even that of morality itself. To the taste and judgment, with which the editor has made his selections, the work is indebted for much of its interest; if he has erred on any side, it is certainly not on that of prolixity, either in his extracts from letters or in his own remarks, which are always to the purpose, illustrative of some essential point, and tending either to information or amusement.—*Edinburgh Courant*.

We are certain that this work will obtain for Mr. Lockhart golden opinions from all; and not the less so for the modest place which he constantly assumes to himself throughout its pages. In doing this, he has avoided that error of overweening vanity which offends so much in Moore's *Life of Byron*. Mr. Lock-

hart's better judgment has made this strictly a biography of his illustrious relative; and we apprehend that he has executed it in such a way as will entitle it to rank in the highest class of this department of literature.—*Kelso Mail*.

The ample means of obtaining authentic materials for the composition of these memoirs, by their author, his acknowledged competence for his task, and above all, the intense interest excited by every thing relative to their illustrious subject, have combined to keep the public for a long time "on the tiptoe of expectation." This feeling is now in progress of being gratified by the appearance of the first volume of the memoirs in question. It has been remarked, that highly raised expectations are never completely realised by the object to which they are directed. In this instance, however, an exception will be found to the general truth of the observation. The Memoirs, so far, at least, as they yet extend, are calculated to gratify the most sanguine anticipations which have been cherished respecting them.—*Liverpool Mercury*.

We congratulate the reading public on the appearance of this work. Mr. Lockhart has performed his task with the judgment and ability which were expected from him; and, in his endeavour to do justice to the character of his illustrious relative, he has increased his own reputation. Of the advantages which he possessed in having access to the best sources of information, and of the communications and the correspondence of the friends of the illustrious poet, he has made a good use; and he has produced a volume of which almost every page teems with interest.—*Manchester Courier*.

## SAM SLICK—SECOND EDITION.

Now ready the second edition of THE SAYINGS AND DOINGS OF SAMUEL SLICK, OF SLICKVILLE.

"The cheerful sage, when solemn dictates fail,  
Conceals the moral counsel in a tale."

In One vol. 12mo.

### CONTENTS.

Chapter—Slick's Letter—1, The Trotting Horse—2, The Clockmaker—3, The Silent Girls—4, Conversations at the River Philip—5, Justice Pettifog—6, Anecdotes—7, Go Ahead—8, The Preacher that wandered from his Text—9, Yankee Eating and Horse Feeding—10, The Road to a Woman's Heart—The Broken Heart—11, Cumberland Oysters produce melancholy forebodings—12, The American Eagle—13, The Clockmaker's Opi-

nion of Halifax—14, Sayings and Doings in Cumberland—15, The Dancing Master Abroad—16, Mr. Slick's Opinion of the British—17, A Yankee Handle for a Halifax Blade—18, The Grahamite and the Irish Pilot—19, The Clockmaker Quilts a Blue Nose—20, Sister Sall's Courtship—21, Setting up for Governor—22, A Cure for Conceit—23, The Blow in Time—24, Father John O'Shaughnessy—25, Taming a Shrew—26, The Minister's Horn Mug—27, The White Nigger—28, Fire in the Dairy—29, A Body without a Head—30, A Tale of Bunker Hill—31, Gulling a Blue Nose—32, Too many Irons in the Fire—33, Wind-sor and the Far West.

"These sketches, which have been much quoted by all the papers of the country, have been collected and published in one volume, 12mo.

"They are well worth reading, possessing a



great deal of quaint humour, graphic and striking description, and great insight into character. The author of the book may be justly called the American Boz."—*Sunday Morning News*.

#### DR. RUSCHENBERGER.

AN EMBASSY TO THE COURTS OF MUSCAT AND SIAM; and a Voyage round the World, under the command of Commodore E. P. Kennedy, in the years 1835, 1836, and 1837; including Sketches in Brazil, Zanzibar, Arabia, Hindostan, Ceylon, Siam, China, the Bonin Islands, the Sandwich Islands, the Californias, &c. &c. By W. S. RUSCHENBERGER, M. D., Author of *Three Years in the Pacific*. In one vol. 8vo.

#### WASHINGTON IRVING.

THE ROCKY MOUNTAINS; or, Scenes, Incidents, and Adventures in the Far West, digested from the Journal of Captain B. L. Boneville, of the Army of the United States, and illustrated from various other sources. By WASHINGTON IRVING. With two large maps. In 2 vols.

*By the same Author.*

ASTORIA; or, Anecdotes of an Enterprise beyond the Rocky Mountains. By WASHINGTON IRVING. Handsomely bound, in two volumes, embossed cloth.

#### LIFE OF JEFFERSON.

THE LIFE OF THOMAS JEFFERSON, third President of the United States, with parts of his correspondence never before published, and notices of his opinions on questions of Civil Government, National Policy, and Constitutional Law. By GEORGE TUCKER, Professor of Moral Philosophy, in the University of Virginia. With an engraved bust. In two volumes.

#### LADY MONTAGUE.

THE CORRESPONDENCE OF LADY MARY WORTLEY MONTAGUE, edited by LORD WHARNCLIFFE, including upwards of 150 letters, never before published. A memoir of the Count of George I. by Lady Montague, and a Life of the Authoress, illustrative anecdotes, and notes added, and the suppressed passages restored. Handsomely bound in two volumes, embossed cloth.

#### G. P. R. JAMES.

THE LIVES OF CARDINAL DE RETZ, JEAN BAPTISTE COLBERT, JOHN DE WITT, and the MARQUIS DE LOUVOIS. By G. P. R. JAMES, Esq. Author of *Attila*, *The Gipsy*, *Life of Edward the Black Prince*, *Richelieu*, &c. In two volumes, 12mo.

*By the same Author.*

LIVES OF THE CARDINAL DE RICHELIEU, COUNT OXENSTIERN, COUNT OLIVAREZ, and CARDINAL MAZARIN. By G. P. R. JAMES, Author of *Darnley*, *The Gipsy*, &c. In two vols. 12mo.

#### MISS PARDOE.

THE CITY OF THE SULTAN AND DOMESTIC MANNERS OF THE TURKS, in 1836. By Miss PARDOE, Author of *Traits and Traditions of Portugal*. In two vols.

#### BRIDGEWATER TREATISES.

*In Seven Volumes Octavo.*

- I. The Adaptation of External Nature to the Moral and Intellectual Constitution of Man. By the Rev. THOMAS CHALMERS, D. D., Professor of Divinity in the University of Edinburgh.
- II. The Adaptation of External Nature to the Physical Condition of Man. By JOHN KIDD, M. D., F. R. S., Regius Professor of Medicine in the University of Oxford.
- III. Astronomy and General Physics, considered with reference to Natural Theology. By the Rev. WM. WHEWELL, M. A., F. R. S., Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge.
- IV. The Hand: its mechanism and vital endowments as evincing design. By SIR CHARLES BELL, K. H., F. R. S.
- V. Chemistry, Meteorology, and the Function of Digestion. By WM. PROUT, M. D., F. R. S.
- VI. The History, Habits, and Instincts of Animals. By the Rev. WM. KIRBY, M. A., F. R. S. Illustrated by numerous engravings on copper.
- VII. Animal and Vegetable Physiology, considered with reference to Natural Theology. By PETER MARK ROGET, M. D. Illustrated with nearly 500 wood-cuts.
- VIII. Geology and Mineralogy, considered with reference to Natural Theology. By the Rev. WM. BUCKLAND, D. D. Canon of Christ Church, and Reader in Geology and Mineralogy in the University of Oxford, being the last of the Bridgewater Treatises on the Power, Wisdom, and Goodness of God as manifested in the Creation. With eighty-nine copper-plates and maps.



COMMODORE BAINBRIDGE.

THE LIFE AND SERVICES OF COMMODORE WILLIAM BAINBRIDGE, United States Navy. By THOMAS HARRIS, M. D., Surgeon United States Navy, and member of the American Philosophical Society; with a portrait. 1 vol. 8vo.

JOHN BOWRING.

MINOR MORALS FOR YOUNG PEOPLE. By JOHN BOWRING. 1 vol. 12mo.

SPLENDID VOLUME.

THE PARLOUR SCRAP-BOOK, FOR 1837. Edited by WILLIS GAYLORD CLARK, embellished with sixteen engravings, beautifully executed on steel, by the first artists, forming a splendid quarto annual, superbly bound in richly embossed morocco, with gilt edges.

*Same Work, for 1838.*

THE PARLOUR SCRAP-BOOK, FOR 1838. A Quarto Annual, handsomely bound in embossed morocco, comprising fourteen engravings, beautifully executed on steel, with Poetical Illustrations.

J. FENNIMORE COOPER.

SKETCHES OF SWITZERLAND. By J. FENNIMORE COOPER, author of "The Spy," &c. &c. in 2 vols. 12mo.

A RESIDENCE IN FRANCE, with an Excursion up the Rhine, and a Second Visit to Switzerland. By the same Author. In 2 vols. 12mo.

*By the same Author.*

GLEANINGS IN EUROPE—FRANCE. By the author of The Spy, &c. In 2 vols. 12mo.

*By the same Author.*

ENGLAND, WITH SKETCHES OF SOCIETY IN THE METROPOLIS. By the author of The Spy, &c. In 2 vols. 12mo.

NEW HISTORY OF ROME.

A HISTORY OF ROME. Principally from the German of Schlosser, Wachsmuth, Heeren, Niebuhr, &c. In 1 vol. 8vo.

THE LAWS OF ETIQUETTE; or, Rules and Reflections for Conduct in Society. By a GENTLEMAN. A small pocket volume.

GOETZ VON BERLICHINGEN; with the Iron Hand, a Drama in Five Acts, from the German of Goethe.

MISS LESLIE.

THE THIRD SERIES OF PENCIL SKETCHES; or, Outlines of Character and Manners. By MISS LESLIE.

Containing The Red Box, or Scenes at the General Wayne, Constance Allerton, or the Mourning Suits. The Officers, or a Story of the Late War. The Serenades, including the Dream of Songs. The Old Farm House That Gentleman, or Scenes on Ship Board. Chase Loring, a Tale of the Revolution. Alphonsine. In 1 vol. 12mo.

Also, for sale, a few copies of the 1st and 2d series of the same work.

A USEFUL PRESENT.

SCIENCE MADE EASY, being a familiar introduction to the principles of Chemistry, Mechanics, Hydrostatics, and Pneumatics, adapted to the comprehension of young people, illustrated by numerous wood-cuts. In 1 vol., embossed cloth.

H. C. CAREY.

PRINCIPLES OF POLITICAL ECONOMY. Part the first, of the Laws of the Production and Distribution of Wealth. By H. C. CAREY, author of an Essay on the Rate of Wages. 1 vol. 8vo.

*By the same Author.*

ESSAY ON THE RATE OF WAGES, with an Examination of the Causes of the Differences in the Condition of the Labouring population throughout the world. By H. C. CAREY. 1 vol.

FLORA AND THALIA; or, Gems of Flowers and Poetry; being an alphabetical arrangement of Flowers, with appropriate Poetical Illustrations. By a LADY. To which is added, a Botanical description of a Flower, and the Dial of Flowers. Handsomely bound in embossed Morocco with gilt edges. With twenty-four Coloured Plates.



## NOVELS, ROMANCES, &c.

JOHN T. IRVING.

**THE HAWK CHIEF**, or the Hunters of the Prairie, a Tale of the Indian Country. By JOHN T. IRVING, Jr. In 2 vols. 12mo.

BOZ.

A new edition of **THE TUGGS AT RAMSGATE**, and embracing the last Sketches of Every-day Life and Every-day People. By Boz. The first edition being entirely exhausted.

*By the same Author.*

**THE PUBLIC LIFE OF MR. TULRUMBLE**, once Mayor of Mudfog; by Boz, with other Tales and Sketches from "Bentley's Miscellany," and "The Library of Fiction." In 2 vols. 12mo.

THEODORE HOOK.

**JACK BRAG**. A Novel. By THEODORE HOOK. 2 vols. 12mo.

*Second Edition.*

**GODOLPHIN**. A Novel. In 2 vols. 12mo.

**JANET HAMILTON**, and other Tales. By the author of "Slight Reminiscences," &c. In 2 vols. 12mo.

AN AMERICAN NOVEL.

**CLINTON BRADSHAW**, or the Adventures of a Lawyer. In 2 vols. 12mo.

*By the same Author.*

**EAST AND WEST**. A Novel. By the author of "Clinton Bradshaw." 2 vols. 12mo.

**HORSE-SHOE ROBINSON**, a Tale of the Tory Ascendency. By the author of "Swallow Barn." Fourth edition. 2 vols. 12mo.

DR. BIRD'S NOVELS.

**THE HAWKS OF HAWK HOLLOW**. A Tradition of Pennsylvania. By the author of "Calavar," and the "Infidel." In 2 vols. 12mo.

A second edition of **CALAVAR**; or, the Knight of the Conquest. A Romance of Mexico. 2 vols. 12mo. By the author of "The Infidel."

**THE INFIDEL**; or, The Fall of Mexico. A Romance. In 2 vols. 12mo. By the author of "Calavar." Second edition.

**NICK OF THE WOODS**; or, the Jibbenainosay, a tale of Kentucky. By the author of "Calavar," &c. In 2 vols. 12mo.

A NEW NAUTICAL NOVEL.

**THE OLD COMMODORE**. By the author of "Rattlin the Reefer." In 2 vols. 12mo.

*Second Edition.*

**RATTLIN THE REEFER**. Edited by Capt. MARRYAT. In 2 vols. 12mo.

VANDELEUR.

**VANDELEUR**; or Animal Magnetism. A novel.

"Ye shall have miracles, ay, sound ones too, Seen, heard, attested, every thing but true." *Veiled Prophet.*

Two vols. 12mo.

LADY BLESSINGTON.

**CONFESSIONS OF AN ELDERLY LADY AND GENTLEMAN**. By the COUNTESS OF BLESSINGTON. 2 vols. 12mo.

J. FENNIMORE COOPER.

**PRECAUTION**. A Novel. By the Author of "The Spy," &c. 2 vols. 12mo. (In press.)

MISS LANDON.

**ETHEL CHURCHILL**; or, the Two Brides. By MISS LANDON. In 2 vols. 12mo.

MARY HOWITT.

**WOOD LEIGHTON**; or, a Year in the Country. By MARY HOWITT. In 3 vols. 12mo.

CAPTAIN CHAMIER.

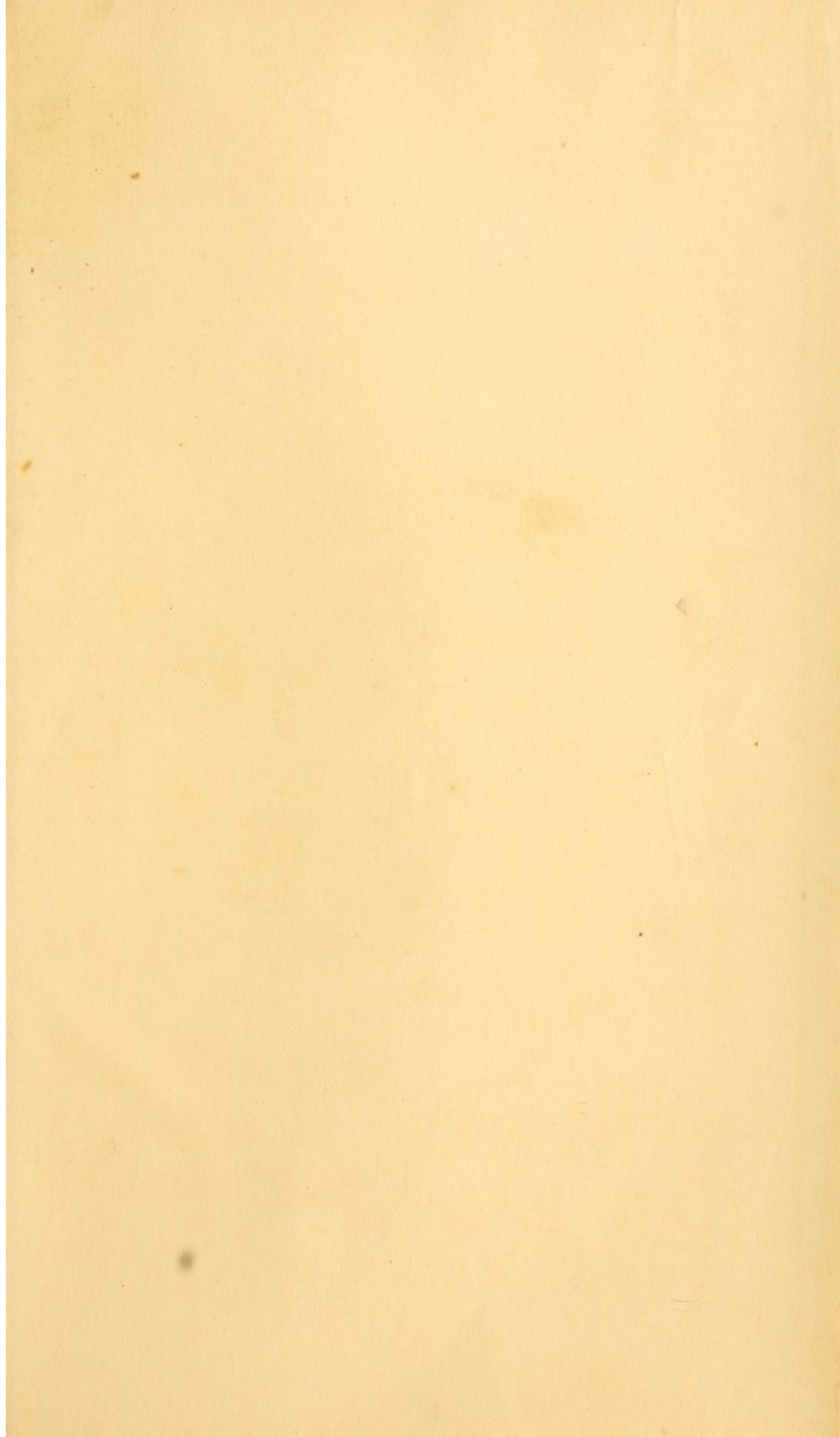
**WALSINGHAM**, the Gamester. By Captain CHAMIER. In 2 vols. 12mo. (Nearly ready.)

MISS BOYLE.

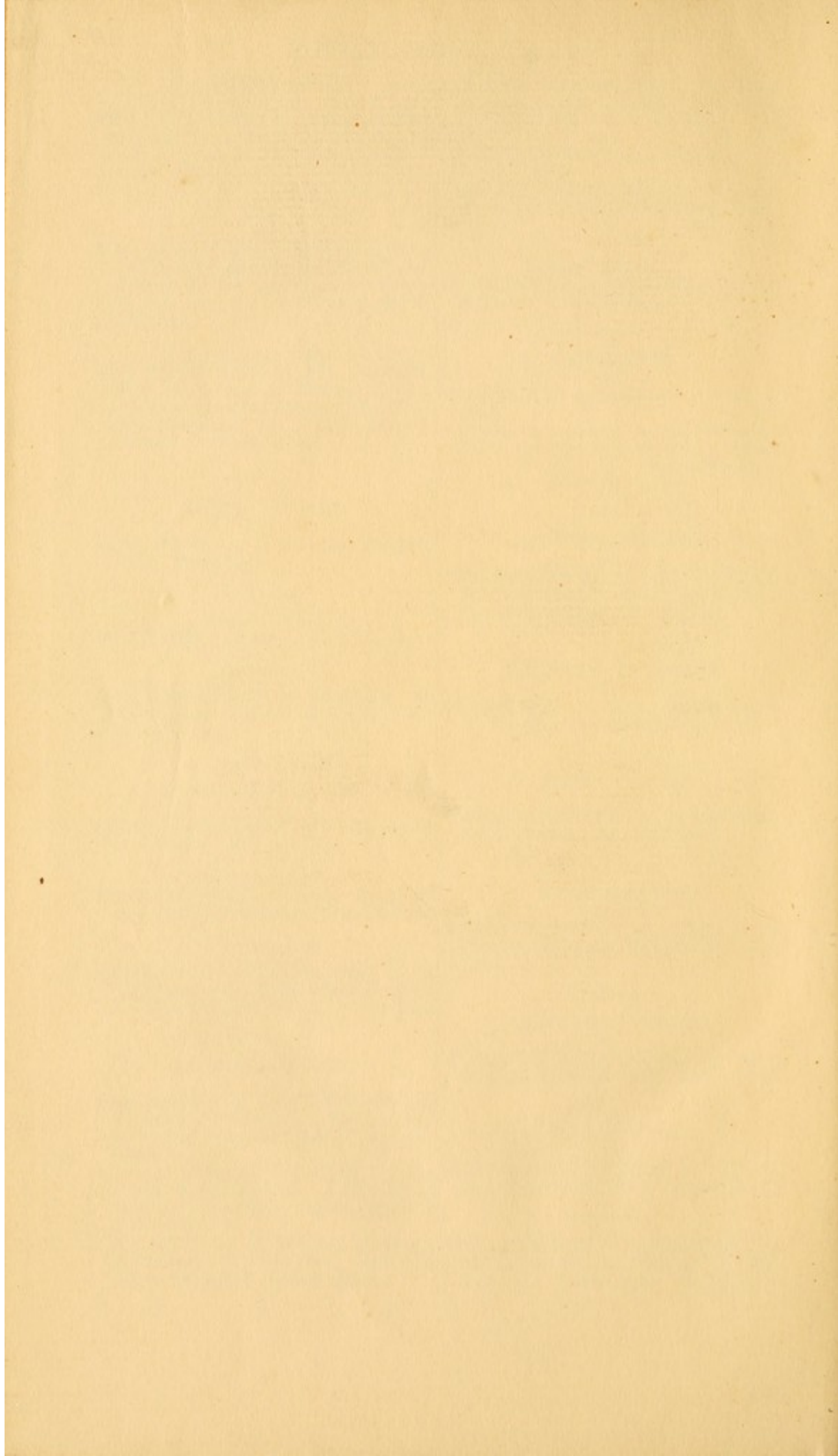
**THE STATE PRISONER**. A Tale. By Miss BOYLE. 2 vols. 12mo. (Nearly ready.)

**THE MERCHANT'S DAUGHTER** By the Author of the "Heiress," "Agnes Serle," &c. 2 vols. 12mo. (In the press.)

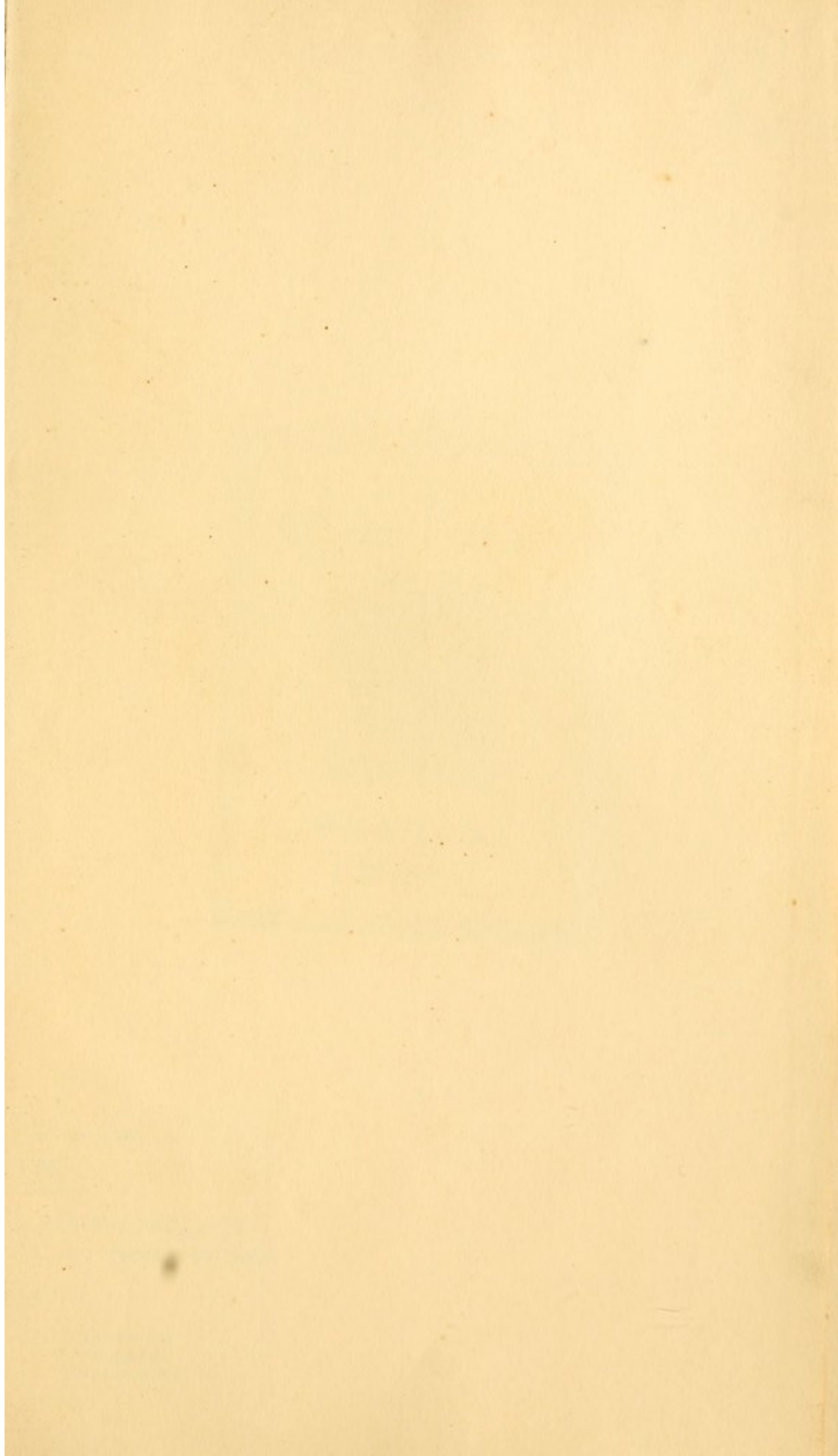














Willards Antique Shop, Hartford

\$ 1. 50

July 1937.



Hist  
G  
838 R

YALE  
MEDICAL LIBRARY



HISTORICAL  
LIBRARY

Accession no.

HC  
Author

Ruschenberger, W  
A voyage around

Call no.

MEDICINE  
IN ART &  
LITERATURE



